AGP

METHODOLOGICAL APPROACHES
TO SOCIAL SCIENCES
EDITED BY RICHARD DAVIS

**METHODOLOGICAL APPROACHES
TO SOCIAL SCIENCES
EDITED BY RICHARD DAVIS**

AGP SCIENTIFIC COMMITTEE

- Prof. Dr. Giles Chemla (Imperial College London)
- Prof. Dr. Gustavo Araújo Batista (University of Uberaba)
- Prof. Dr. Douglas E. Angus (University of Ottawa)
- Prof. Dr. Kâzım Yetiş (Istanbul Aydın University)
- Prof. Dr. Larissa Clare Pochmann da Silva (Candido Mendes University)
- Prof. Dr. Luisa Maria Arvide Cambra (University of Almeria)
- Prof. Dr. Norbert Pap (University of Pec)
- Prof. Dr. Sueli Teresinha de Abreu Bernardes (University of Uberaba)
- Prof. Dr. Babak Rahimi (UC San Diego)
- Prof. Dr. Sabit Oymael (Istanbul Arel University)
- Prof. Dr. Nurhodja Akbulaev (Azerbaycan State University)
- Prof. Dr. Richard Smiths (London Goldsmiths)
- Prof. Dr. Richard Davis (Durham)
- Prof. Dr. Şakir Gözütok (Van Yüzüncü Yıl)
- Prof. Dr. Zeki Taştan (Van Yüzüncü Yıl)

Methodological Approaches to Social Sciences

Turkish academic scene has experienced remarkable growth since the 1990s. This volume of AGP is intended as a finger on the pulse of the latest developments in the corpus as we enter a new era.

The articles in this volume have been chosen with an eye to giving the reader an idea of the current state of the mainstream of contemporary Turkish Academia. Therefore, we have not included any hackwork. We hope that this will be an important contribution to the growing field of humanities in Turkey and elsewhere.

The editors' corrections are limited to the expunction of typos and to changes for the sake of consistency. Except for these superficial changes, the text is always that of the author.

Richard Davis, London, 2016.

Table Of Contents

The Middle East and North Africa, a Region and its Peoples: "Clash within a Civilization"

Assist. Prof. Dr. Deniz Ilgaz, Istanbul Gedik Üniversitesi, İİSB Fakültesi, Uluslararası İlişkiler Bölümü

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Nesrin Demir, İzmir Katip Çelebi Üniversitesi, Uluslararası İlişkiler Bölümü

Abstract. The study analyzes the current strife in the Middle East and North Africa (MENA)[1] with respect to the region's conceptual, structural and human realities. An exposition is presented on a hybrid combination of possible theoretical approaches to conflict resolution in the MENA. There are current initiatives planned or devised to apply a Western type of social engineering to rebuild a platform of peaceful coexistence for peoples of diverse life-worlds in the region. Are these purely Western oriented conflict resolution schemes by which these peoples may be resettled through the mediation of third states, organizations or institutions? The question is whether they are going to be suited to the special needs of the MENA peoples.

There must be an effort to see the factors that can bring these peoples to live side by side in peace under better conditions than ever before and this must be followed by an effort to restructure a MENA built on a regional political system of lasting reconciliation.

Keywords: MENA, conflict prevention, resolution and peace-making, Political Science solutions.

1. Introduction

Peoples of the MENA lived for centuries in peace under the Ottoman Empire but makeshift state administrations created after the end of the First World War disturbed their lifeworlds. They have always been deeply attached to their respective culture, ethnicity[2], religious sect[3] and tradition, but now most of them are running to neighboring or far away lands to become a diaspora of Arabs among majorities of non-Arabs or non-Muslims who are mostly not welcoming them. Those who are left behind are either living as captives in the hands of ISIS (Islamic State of Iraq and al-Sham) or other banded "Tugays" or are fighting under one leadership or another, but for what causes they would find it difficult to tell. There are also peoples longing for a state of their own since past centuries, who are now activated and motivated up to the maximum level to set up their own state. [3]

Democratic ideals and practice have spread out to many parts of the world after the end of the Cold War, but democracy could not make any successful or recognizable headway in any part of the MENA region.[1] The political turmoil that shakes up the MENA currently is affecting the region's political geography while increasing insecurity in growing circles, threatening the stability of the Western civilization as well. The "Arab Spring" has started a growing anxiety even about the future of the world. Currently, no one dares to name it "Spring" and it is not meaningful any more to say only "Arab." Because the problem is now American, European, Russian, Turkish, Kurdish, Syrian, Persian, and a list of other identities as well.

For over five years, the great number of lives lost, the plight of the refugees inside and

outside of their national borders, and the ruin of human settlements as well as historic treasures bring to mind questions over the changes expected in the understanding and practice of the "State" and "political governance" in the MENA. Is there going to be a move towards peace, a greater acceptance of democracy, understanding of citizenship, human rights protection for all no matter what ethnic, cultural, racial or sectarian differences people may have (in other words, a liberal and peaceful model of a new "empire"); or is the MENA going to serve the purpose of a perpetual battle ground for the expandables of giant warring parties of the world? What formulas can be most effective in ending fierce fighting? Dawn Chatty [18] and Ayşe Betül Çelik [2-3] have suggestions in their respective works that inspire ideas about conflict prevention, reconciliation and peace-making where stakes are high and diverse.

Following a brief evaluation of the concept of MENA, an analysis is presented on traditional connections and bonds that have held the peoples of the region together or side by side for centuries. Lastly, Western oriented current efforts of conflict prevention, reconciliation and peace-making are questioned with respect to their effectiveness in the region.[4] How will the re-structuration[5] of MENA in general and specifically a part of it like Syria be achieved? How will the well-being and political reconciliation of the region's peoples be established? After all the fighting and bitter grief, the reconstitution of peace in Syria is a great issue and a mystery. [14] The present study ends with a wishful note on the writers' own terminology "MENA-as-fixity" to designate a re-constructed region where politics will be transparent and efficient in building connections between the domestic/local human level with the fixed but normative, categorical but teleological MENA realm, adjusted to the needs of the area. The aim should be a constructive move towards "MENAization,"[7] comparable to "Europeanization" in Europe.

2. MENA in conceptual, structural and human components

Despite the fact of common terminology having uniformly converged upon the term "Middle East," a more general term appears to be more suitable to designate the region where Arabs live predominantly and is characterized by the cultural dominance of Islam as the overwhelmingly prevalent religion among its peoples since the mid-seventh century: "The Middle East and North Africa (MENA)." It is an area qualified by its physical continuity and centrality, plus diversity of cultural influences, with the dominant elements as the physical geography (used here to denote climate, topography, agriculture, etc.), culture, economics, and geopolitics.

There is a hegemonic struggle in the MENA, with lucrative ethnical/sectarian/leadership cleavages among a great number of groups for domination over each other. Slogans as democracy and freedoms had been the central point of reference in the early beginnings, but it has turned into a contested, fragile and tenuous process of getting a foothold in this or that part of the region. The "Arab Spring" revolts started in December 2010 with radical political action in one state (Tunisia) to have a contagion effect spanning seventeen Muslim states (plus Western Sahara), ranging from minor demonstrations in Mauritania and Oman to bloody civil wars in Libya and Syria where the conflict continues to escalate.

The political interconnectedness of the MENA was indisputably demonstrated by this wave of popular action in which one population after another witnessed the actions of their Arab neighbors and identified strongly enough with its spirit. Each population rebelled against its own respective government, rather than a common enemy. Allowing for the possibility of confounding factors in each nation's domestic politics at the time, the reactions did not spread to non-Arab states such as Turkey and Iran which, little more than a year prior, had nevertheless been the scene of significant public demonstrations against the standing regime. [51]

Arab/Muslim culture has one pervasive trait as Arabic being the dominant language. Otherwise economically, the constituent countries of the MENA have historically been

and remain today quite varied, depending largely upon the natural resource endowments of each and their varied responses to globalization. In general, they failed to join in the new wave of global democratization the rest of the world has experienced since the downfall of the Soviet Union in 1989. Political and civil liberty scores issued by Freedom House, which monitors democracy around the globe, remains constant or have even regressed. The countries of the MENA show freedom scores of 5-7. [27]

Economies of the area have centered more on agriculture and the production and cultivation of natural resources than developed modern nations that have more directly experienced the productive benefits of trade liberalisation and capitalism. [51] To improve their countries' conditions, a number of MENA states have often attempted to engage in some form of economic planning to improve their condition, subsidizing private industry, creating public enterprises, expanding public education, and inviting foreign investments. Against the Salafist resistance to modern ways come more liberal voices of private, profit-seeking parties and organizations. Some others have a multiculturalist vision of globalization in which the character of the "Muslim World" can be retained and even emboldened in the presence of economic advances and integration with the world market. [27]

MENA countries typically tried to hold down deficits no higher than 4% of GDP as advised by the IMF and the World Bank. They removed subsidies to some extent, increased the rate of private and foreign investment in their economies, sought free trade agreements with the EU and neighboring countries, signed adjustment packages on classical macroeconomic measures such as currency devaluations, promoting exports, reducing tariffs and import protectionist measures, deregulated the banking sector, raised real interest rates, reduced budget deficits or worked on privatization. However, many challenges remained in the liberalization of their economies. The lower classes reacted strongly to the cuts in subsidies, when unemployment and poverty problems were compounded. Deregulation, privatization and decrease in public expenditures undermined the stability of the authoritarian states across the MENA. [10]

A reference to MENA based on a common economic quality, such as "oil-producing countries," does not correspond to reality since fossil fuel exporting describes a rather limited region at the core of the Middle East, excluding its rather oil-poor regions at the periphery. In general, Middle Eastern countries derive many of their finished products and what would be considered lower-order goods from foreign imports. Elias Tuma writes, "Regional underdevelopment is also reflected in the direction of trade, a large percentage of which is conducted with industrial and developed countries since no country in the region has the quantitative and qualitative capacity to satisfy regional demand for manufactured products." [25] State-society relations are not merely limited to coercive top-down arrangements in authoritarian regimes; there is room for contentious political participation within the region. It is possible to see opposition and contentious politics within authoritarian political systems. Even though MENA countries tend to be ruled by centralized, authoritarian governments not leaving room for any political activism, there are civil society and oppositional forces at work even in an oppressive state. Such forces emerge and are manifested in nondemocratic states across the region, and not all opposition forces propose the overthrow of authority. [10]

The conception of the Middle East as a geopolitical region provides perhaps the most unifying, all-encompassing context that one could apply to the region. Time and repeated political contests, however, reveal that there is inconsistency over time. Muslims are not unified on how to define the ideals of 'independence' and 'development', or what these terms mean for Muslim culture, making this conception that much more problematic. As history has witnessed from the time of the "Sykes and Picot" whose secret pact together with the Russians laid the foundations for a century of colonial conflict in the region, greater and lesser interconnectedness of politics, coalescing and dissolving of alliances, rise and fall of regimes, and migrations of a great number of people from the area abound.

In a statement made on the centenary of the Sykes-Picot agreement between France and Britain that divided Kurds behind arbitrarily drawn borders 100 years ago, the Kurdish president Mesoud Barzani said those frontiers were now meaningless. "We should admit that the concept of citizenship did not come forth, and the borders have no meaning anymore. It means Sykes-Picot is over," he said. [57]

3. Syria: An Example of a MENA Conflict

3.1. The dissidents' movement in Syria

Syria had been constantly located in the center of the chaotic Middle Eastern politics throughout years of the Cold War and it always had an important MENA regional role. By the end of the Cold War, Syria began to lose power politically and economically in its region. President Bashar el Assad taking over the power from his father in June 2000 had been seen as an important opportunity to the integration of Syria with the world system. Such expectations disappeared in a short time, in particular from the beginning of the second Iraqi operation of the USA in 2003. Throughout his term in Presidential Office, Bashar Assad who had been faced with plenty of internal and external threats tried hard to bring reforms but was faced with fierce opposition and he is still struggling against his own people to hold onto power.

The dissidents' movement in Syria in March 2011 was started by unarmed reformist people, who got together after the Friday praying in the mosques and paraded under 'Free Syria' slogans. However, such unarmed people were faced with fierce obstruction of the security forces of Bashar Assad and a number of the individual protestors lost their lives. Assad crushed an unarmed uprising in Daraa in 2011; then many different armed groups, independent of each other, started emerging. Since the early days of the civil protest, Bashar el-Assad's secular Baath Party government has tried to point its weapons at Islamist groups backed by foreign governments. Syrian opposition leaders, on the other hand, have accused the regime itself of masterminding "jihadi" operations, aiming to portray Assad as a force disrupting stability and sowing the seeds of sectarian strife.

International support, holding on to the belief that the dissenters were freedom seekers and those demanding democracy, tried to help by setting up an organization under the title "the Group of Friends of the Syrian People." The first face-to-face meeting of this social media Group of Friends of the Syrian People ("the Friends' Group"), was held in Tunisia on 24 February 2012, with the participation of more than 80 countries and representatives from the United Nations, the League of Arab States, the European Union (EU), the Organisation of Islamic Cooperation, the Arab Maghreb Union and the Cooperation Council for the Arab Gulf States to discuss the worsening situation in Syria.

The Friends' Group reaffirmed its commitment to the sovereignty, independence, national unity and territorial integrity of Syria. It expressed strong condemnation of the Syrian regime's ongoing, widespread, and systematic human rights violations, including: the indiscriminate use of force against civilians; the killing and persecution of peaceful protestors; and sexual violence and ill-treatment of thousands of detainees, including children. The Group had its second meeting on April 1, 2012 in Istanbul. The third meeting was in Paris on 19 April 2012; the fourth again in Paris on 6 July 2012, and the fifth in Rome in February 2013. Accusing the Russian Federation and the Republic of China, the two countries that did not attend the meetings, USA Secretary of State Hillary Clinton demanded these two states to be responsible and pay a price for the role they played in the Syrian conflict and called the Security Council of the United Nations to take a resolution on sanctions to Syria. [30-51]

Even before the The Friends' Group came to life, the opposition in Syria had first met in Antalya, Turkey, on 1 June 2011 in a Conference; and soon after they formed the SUK (*Suriye Ulusal Konseyi*) on 23 August 2011. [34] The Conference was repeated on 2 October 2011, and they declared themselves as the only legitimate leadership in Syria. However, deep cleavages existed among this opposition. There were religiously inclined groups, liberals, laicists, or Kurds who could not form a common platform. Muslim Brotherhood was represented in too great numbers, different ideas prevailed, and there

was no agreement on common strategies. The members in the opposition could neither agree on how to overthrow Assad, nor how to organize after his fall. There was also controversy over whether to ask for outside help or not.

In addition, the SUK, having spent a long time abroad had lost intimate contact with the people in Syria. What people demanded was improvement of the socio-economic conditions, and the raising of the living standard; they were not asking for the overthrow of the government institutions and the infrastructure of the services. However, the leadership of the SUK failed to overcome the schisms among the opposition elements and this weakened the constructive involvement of the international society. There were indecisions about military intervention into Syria, humanitarian aid corridors, construction of a security zone or other alternatives. [26-43]

3.2. The SUK, SMC, FSA, the Syria National Council, the Syrian Islamic Front, and various Tugays

The SUK met in Doha, Katar, in a Congress on 4-7 November 2012 to strengthen its power of representation of all dissenters in Syria. A new leader, George Sabra, was elected and a reunification was formed under the title "Syrian Revolutionary and Opposition Forces National Coalition." The National Coalition of Syrian Revolutionary and Opposition Forces (National Coalition), in cooperation with Turkey, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, the United States and France, sponsored the creation of the Supreme Military Council (SMC) in December 2012 in Antalya. The SMC succeeded the Joint Command and enhanced coordination among rebel groups across the country. The rebels were divided into five operational fronts: North (Aleppo and Idlib), Central, Homs, Eastern and Southern.[7]

The public face was secular, but the SMC included groups such as Liwa al-Tawhid, which was both increasingly effective on the ground and included radical affiliates. Even though overall command and control remained weak, the SMC did enhance cooperation among groups that were fighting on the same front. Its structure successfully included political figures such as Salim Idriss, the head of SMC, and respected field commanders. The SMC was particularly influential in the Aleppo region due to its proximity to Turkey, which made supplying weapons easier. [7]

In December, all flights were suspended from Aleppo International Airport when Jabhet an-Nusra (JN) declared a "no-fly zone" and threatened to shoot down civilian planes, which they claimed the government was using to transport supplies. In September 2012, a Free Syrian Army (FSA) commander with the nom-de-guerre of Abu Hashish from the Syrian Liberation Front (Previously Islamic Front to Liberate Syria) highlighted the urban-rural division in Aleppo: For decades the city, dominated by its upper middle class and bourgeois residents, became increasingly detached from its surroundings. And it was clear that Assad's regime was focused only on keeping control of urban centers and key military positions.

Supreme Military Council (SMC), included up to 15 different groups most prominently, Suqour ash-Sham (active in Idlib), Kataeb al-Farouq (active in Homs) and Liwa al-Tawhid (Aleppo). The coalition included groups with Salafi views as well as some moderates. Although this umbrella organization was separate from the FSA, on the ground, most of the groups cooperated. To make the map of armed actors even more confusing, some were officially part of both the Joint Command and the Liberation Front.

The Syrian Islamic Front, which was dissolved in November 2013, was the largest national Salafi group. It included 11 groups, most prominently, Ahrar ash-Sham, Haraket al-Fajer al-Islamiyeh (both strong in Aleppo) and Liwa al-Haqq, all of which supported a state under Islamic law. Although its proclaimed political vision of the alliance was different, it sometimes cooperated and coordinated with Jabhet an-Nusra (JN) and/or the FSA against government forces. At the same time, occasional disagreements and even clashes broke out between the Syrian Islamic Front and these two groups. Despite ideological differences, oftentimes groups from different coalitions closely cooperated with each other. Many groups joined multiple commands and coalitions at various times: the

Liwa al-Tawhid in Aleppo was in both the FSA-affiliated Aleppo Military Council and the Syrian Liberation Front. Many donors, especially Qatar and Saudi Arabia, were competing for a stronger voice in the structure of rebel coalitions, especially those affiliated with the FSA. There were individual groups who maintained their own sources of funding. All this contributed significantly to the fragmentation of the opposition. [7]

Free Syrian Army (FSA) was established under the leadership of Riyad El-Esad on 29 July 2011. FSA soon turned out to be equally responsible for the great number of deaths in the country, and was in no way an innocent organisation since it got involved in kidnappings especially those from the Shia sect of Islam, as different from Sunni sect of Islam. In many parts of Syria, different ethno-secterian groups started forming combat teams. Ensar El-Rasul, around Damascus; Faruk "Tugay"s at Humus; Sukur El-Kurd "Tugay" and Der Ez-zur Revolutionary Council were some of them. The Turkomans in Syria also got themselves prepared for fight under different titles. [44]

Independent from FSA, many other armed groups with different religious/secterian inclinations emerged and got involved in kidnapping, murder and suice-killing acts. Under the name of Ahrar El-Şam Tugays, including Abbad El-Rahman operating at Ariha region; Sariyet El-Cebel Tugay operating in Cebel-i Zaviye region; Selahattin Tugay, Cunud El-Hak Tugay and Furkan Tugay operating in Hama. With more than 3000 fighters, Sukurul Şam Tugay was centered in İdlib, but with side forces in Aleppo and Damascus. Supported by Suudi Arabia, Kuwait and Bahrain, Sukurul Şam Tugay is similar in ideology and practical formation to Ahrar El-Şam Tugays. [48]

The crisis in Syria which turned into a "civil war" also has created deep effects beyond the country's borders. Moreover, the regional strife in the MENA has inflamed a hegemonic power struggle globally. Not only shaking the ever-delicate equilibrium between the countries of the region, Arab or non-Arab, Muslim or non-Muslim, Kurdish or non-Kurdish, the situation in Syria most seriously disrupted the political balance mostly in

Turkey and deeply endangered its security. Turkey is the country which has the longest land border with Syria: 822 km., and kinship ties and cultural relations between the peoples of Turkey and Syria are very strong. Following the death of Hafez al-Assad, who was President of Syria from 1971 to 2000, quite a long period of close friendship existed between the two countries' leaders including their families: Turkish former Prime Minister and present President Recep Tayyip Erdoğan and President of Syria Beshar Hafez al-Assad paid family visits to each other.

However, Ankara has become a staunch opponent of President Beshar al-Assad in the last five years, saying Assad should step down for the sake of Syrian stability. In addition to the brutal treatment of the military forces under the Baas Party against the opponents, the Assad regime provides the Kurdish terrorist groups with arms and ammunition to prevent them from joining the opposition groups against the Syrian regime. [14] Turkey now has reasons to decrease tensions with Syria, even though it should not be expected that Turkey publicly accept the legitimacy of Assad and his regime. The gains of the Kurdish Democratic Union Party [PYD], which is affiliated with the Turkey-based Kurdistan Workers' Party [PKK], in northern Syria makes dialogue with Damascus necessary for Turkey to prevent a Kurdish statelet along its borders. Ankara fears that a Kurdish settlement, supported by the coalition of terrorist organizations PYD & PKK/KCK in the North of Syria, aims to create a territory for itself.

Northern Iraqi Regional Kurdish Administration under Masoud Barzani also tries to unify Syrian Kurds under the Syrian Kurdish National Council, since July 2012. Barzani has stressed the rights of individual nations, noting that nations have to be consulted whether they want to live within borders or separate. Concerning the Kurdish question from neighboring countries including Syria, Iran and Turkey, Barzani told Neue Züricher Zeitung that a nation of 40 to 50 million people must have its own state. He said: "Undoubtedly, we welcome the fact that our 40-50 million nation has to have a state of its own, but we must also consider the fact that we are divided into four parts. And each part

has its own situation and each should find a solution with its central governments." [60-41-55]

It is likely that a four-piece confederal autonomous/independent "Kurdistan" is planned in the restructuring of Syria, in line with Masoud Barzani's expectations. At the moment, the northern parts of Syria seem to be a movable ground, constantly in preparation by Kurds for a claim to set up their own state, while the terrorist attacks into Turkey threaten the northern neighbor's security and territorial integrity. In addition to Turkey's worries over the PYD-PKK coalition, as Syria is at the crux of Turkey's tension with both Russia and Iran, Turkey can't sustainably improve relations with either country unless it changes its existing stance on Syria. [45]

The weak opposition against the Syrian regime, due to the lack of unity among its components, has failed to show any capacity of succeeding and taking over strong and lasting power anywhere in Syria. Syria National Council was supposed to represent all the opponents in Syria, but could not include the Syrian Kurds; moreover, the Free Syrian Army was created but it was too late. The opposition fought as separate groups, uncoordinated and lacking the necessary weapons. In addition to the inefficiency of the Free Syrian Army, their presence indirectly prevented any other humanitarian intervention that was needed and necessary, and expected from the international community under the auspices of the UN.

3.3. A transition government in Syria?

When and if the the Syrian crisis will be ended hopefully in the near future, it shall be taken as an example of a MENA conflict resolution. Four possible scenarios appear: a) Setting up of a transition government representing all the different ethno/sectarian/cultural groups in the country; b) Ousting of Beshar Assad government by means of an international intervention or the enhancement of Free Syrian Army with heavy weapons; c) The continuation of the conflict/fighting process until the Syrian territory falls into pieces; d) The Baas Party Government of Beshar Assad continues to prevail in its present position even though the conflict/fighting continues.

Only the first scenario is the one that can provide the basis for a possible conflict resolution and starting of a peace process in Syria. The idea of a transition government was brought on the agenda by the initiative of the Russian Federation, and was evaluated on 30 June 2012 by the participatory states that convened in Geneva, Switzerland. Iraq, Turkey, Kuwait, Katar and the five permanent member states of the UN Security Council took place in the meeting and expressed hopes of a national unity government in Syria. The National Council in Syria supported the initiative and declared that the members of the Baas Party who had taken no part in the atrocities committed could take place in the transition government. [14] However, the hopes created over the transition government have nearly eroded over the Syrian opponents' Doha Congress decisions. The National Coalition of Syrian Revolution and Opposition Powers declared that there could be no dialogue nor a negotiation with the Beshar Assad regime. [46-15] At the stage when aggression between the warring parties reached the zenith, power mediation from an effective third state, like the intervention of the Russian Federation with air strikes in Syria, could be pointed out as being conclusive. [13]

Justified by the invitation of Syrian President Bashar Assad, rather sudden intervention of the Russians at the time into the conflict brought a forced cease-fire first and convinced the warring parties to sit at the table prepared in Geneva, Switzerland, for peace talks. The cease-fire in Syria did not cover the fighting carried on against ISIS. Although the cease-fire was short-lived, the peace-talks continue under the mediation of third parties and the United Nations (UN). As the Syrian Kurds (PYD/PKK) want to claim a territory in the north of Syria as their own, Turkey prevented the participation of the PYD to represent Syrian Kurds in the peace talks. [47] Turkish security forces, in the meantime, are deeply immersed in a 40-year long armed strife against the PKK/PYD insurgents active in own national territory and in the north of neighboring Iraq.

Following an agreement for the settlement of disputes, a long reconciliation period is expected to take place over reaching an understanding on the basic components of the

conflict: the return of the people who had been turned into refugees; recreation of social, political and economic structures and institutions; repairing of totally ruined infrastructure; concentration on human rights violations; reincorporation of former militants into society; sustainability of human security; and bringing solutions to a great number of socio-cultural and psychological trauma. Such a process naturally will take many years since the seemingly working equilibrium in the region has been severely disrupted. Some ethno/tribal/sectarian groups in the MENA had found ways and means of survival throughout the last century on pieces of territory they claimed as their own even if they could not claim it as their own "state," while they suffered social and economic exclusion from the regime in power, the unitary/central administration that had not bestowed citizenship rights to them and they lacked security.

The five-years' crust over old or recent aggression and accumulated hatred against "the other" need to be softened. [2] Political entities that approach MENA with goodwill such as the UN and the EU, as inter/supranational organizations, with their soft power capacity to lay the ground work under a democratic and participatory platform with human rights applications in place and with the right dose of pressure on the parties for reconciliation can bring together ethno/religious/sectarian groups of different though similar lifeworlds and the relationship of each group with the central state authorities as well as with the third parties involved, but such a task will indeed be quite difficult, if not impossible.[6]

4. Political Reconciliation in the MENA

4.1. What kind of political structure?

For the purposes of political reconciliation in the MENA, a hybrid and multidisciplinary academic approach is needed, including Western models of conflict resolution and peace-building as well as the structural models developed in the Social Sciences. Local and regional reconciliation methods should be studied and used as steps to help different ethnic groups find a rebalance to live side by

side. This means the employment of participatory and multilateral decision-making processes and the application of problem-solving and peace-building mechanisms. [2]

In Political Science, one finds also structural rebuilding possibilities for the solution of ethnic/religious/sectarian problems and controversies. The reference in this case is on relations between "strong group – weak group," and on the inequality in social and political structures and how to block the perpetuation of such inequalities. The scientific approach incorporates the establishment of equality in real life situations and opportunities for all. In order to prevent the recurrence of armed fighting, the state may try different ways or alternative structures, such as resorting to assimilation or geographical division and isolation, as well as employ forceful methods of aggression. Or, on the contrary, in a unitary state system, the elites may experiment with democratic applications such as fair distribution of political power, or special democratic protection for certain groups of people. Furthermore, a federal structure may bring better results in the reconciliation of warring parties due to ethnic or religious differences. [22] It is a measure that would prevent conflicts especially for peoples who live concentrated geographically in certain parts of the country. Groups would feel themselves more independent when they can use their ethnic tongue, execute their taxing, exercise their own religion or sect, and enjoy their cultural life-worlds. [32-33]

Federal solutions may be suitable in some instances or within certain time frames; however, due to the state's centralized foreign policy practices and the unequal allocation of the natural resources, friction may be created in the long run. The biggest threat comes from foreign powers that may find reason to devise political games over small federal parts and easily play according to their own interests. Especially in countries like Syria or Iraq that are situated in geostrategically important areas, the probability of intervention is likelier.

The neighboring states of the MENA often express the hope that especially Iraq or Syria will remain as integral and centralized nation states, in which all peoples live in peace,

practicing and preserving their religious/sectarian belief, living according to their cultural traditions, enjoying their language and ethnic identity. The Parliamentary Democratic System, like in Turkey for over 90 years, does offer a successful political structuration model even among peoples of ethnic/cultural/religious/sectarian diversity. Or, the system of Presidential Democracy, like in the United States of America (US), may offer possibilites for a delicate balance answering the special dynamics of the population. The US President takes her/his domestic or foreign policy decisions speedily but in consultation with US Senate and the Congress, the Pentagon, the Intelligence Units, civil society organizations and the views as well as political inclinations of the society. In brief, every format of state administration that promises democracy and freedoms has its own special benefits and difficulties.

Under any form of political restructuring, it is equally important as achieving democratic and participatory representation that there should be a system of fair and periodic elections. The existence of a general election system that is monitored and devised so as to realize the representation of all segments of the society, will ensure the rebuilding of peace among peoples torn apart by political strife and armed conflict due to ethnic/religious disagreements or leadership problems. [43]

Nohlen suggests that political effects of absolute majority voting system or proportional ballot generally show variations due to the country's socio-political character; yet, he recommends proportional ballot for problematic societies since it allows for greater fairness by letting the minorities have a voice in decision-making as well as the majority. [24] Needless to say, the greater number of political parties in the parliament may lead to greater instability in government; however, where there are pronounced numbers of ethno/religious/sectarian groups and a serious need for their respective political representation, then the election system should be fair and justly administered.

The model of consociational democracy, supported and advocated by Lijphart stipulates that a representative from each segment of the society be present in the decision-making mechanisms. In this assessment, democracy is defined simply as a system of government in which the people have the opportunity to select their own leaders and a stable democracy as "one in which the capabilities of the system are sufficient to meet the demands placed upon it." [18-8] Democracy combined with stability means that the masses should be able to select their leaders and the governmental elites should be able to meet the demands placed upon them. [9] Thus, for groups having different characteristics, even if they are locked in a fight at a very high degree of intensity, the prescription for the easiest solution comes when democratic participation of all segments in political institutions are ensured. In consociational democratic system, decisions in central state administration are taken not by majority voting but by autonomous vote. The guarantee granted to each vote ensures that a single group can not take the upperhand in a political society divided severely.

The difficulty in conflict resolution in the MENA is caused firstly by the length of time (five years from 2011) since the starting of disputes/fighting and secondly by the involvement of international institutions/organizations and third countries in the political turmoil. In the reconciliation process, the third elements that have contributed positively or negatively, neighboring regional or far-away hegemonic powers, are to be involved again in one way or another. The third parties will also need to reconstruct, resettle or renegotiate their own disputes among each other. The erosion of trust in international organizations will need to be mended.

4.2. *Some theoretical observations over conflict resolution*

Lasting, sustainable and comprehensive solutions can be found in a method that can combine the Conflict Resolution method with the scientific ways and means of Political Science. Conflict Resolution method finds it necessary to ensure the involvement of third parties in the conflict resolution process. The third parties may be other states, persons, or institutions. It may also be a coalition of third states. The part played by the third party may

change according to the nature of the conflict, its stage of development, the level of violence, and the characteristics of the peoples involved in the conflict and strife. Ronald J. Fisher and Loraleigh Keashly, studying the Contingency Theory in 1990-91, offer a variety of international models. Before starting of negotiations, relations may be strengthened between parties through advisory meetings. [52-36-42]

Conflict resolution studies also underline the need to carry on the peace process on all levels of leadership. Lederach analyzes leadership on three basic and separate levels: upper level, middle level and ground level. [38-39] These three levels use each other as stepping stones during the conflict resolution and peace-making process. Lederach especially points out the importance of middle- and ground-level leaderships in peace building, because these elements have the capacity to deal with ethno/religious/sectarian issues and settle disputes on the ground. The aim is to bring together the opposing parties, especially their top level leadership, which had taken part in the strife and had suffered the consequences of fighting, and have them build mutual trust and enter into common projects.

Examples of common projects could be the setting up of "Reality Commissions," or drawing an account of the injustices inflicted upon members of the warring parties, and starting and conducting of forgiveness processes in which former aggressors ask to be pardoned for respective cruel deeds. Such ground level interactive peace-making activity often works effectively, and is a procedure which is not taken into account in peace-making studies carried on from the perspective of political science only.

Sociologist Johan Galtung, who has contributed to conflict resolution-peace studies, distinguishes "direct aggression" from the other ethno/sectarian/cultural aggression. [37] Direct aggression stems from structural reasons. Political and economic structures in place for quite a length of time create differences among individuals or groups, excluding some from opportunities of development, from participation in political administration, and letting some

ethno/religious/sectarian groups suffer in poverty.

Such excluded groups, subjected to discrimination on ethnic grounds as well as sectarian divisions within Islam, existed in the northern borderline of eastern Middle East since the emergence of certain political divisions after the end of the First World War. Later, in the 1970s and 1980s in the social sciences there were studies that a decade or two later turned into the school of "instrumentalizm" which underlined the importance of ethnic identity and differences between individuals in starting conflict and war in a nation state. Since the Second World War, the world has witnessed a remarkable efflorescence of ethnic feeling and nationalist aspirations. [20-21-23-28-56-58] Among Bretons, Basques, Scots, Welsh, Flemish, Quebecois, Catalans, Kurds, Ibo, Somali, and a host of other communities, ethnic movements demanding much greater autonomy, or even independence, have sprung up. Ethnic separatisms and 'neo-nationalisms' threaten to undermine the fragile stability of the world order and to annul liberal and cosmopolitan dreams of world government and a universal scientific culture. What are the underlying causes of this ethnic revival? Why has it assumed worldwide proportions? [5-49] The approach of instrumentalizm fails to explain the situation from the historic/civilizational perspective of MENA since different ethnic/sectarian societies of people (*cemaat, millet*) had lived in peace side by side under a common imperial administrative system in the past.

5.   MENA-as-fixity": a Lasting Reconciliation

The Ottoman Empire had a special kind of political administration that ignored all differences among people living within its territory and included every race, religion or ethnicity under its protective umbrella. [31] In the late days of the Empire, some political forces lead the people into various ways of taking a stance against each other. These were often external movements, started by nationalistic or religious groupings, aiming to accomplish own interests, instigating aggressive behaviour among individual

members of historic MENA tribes or groups, just as they did in the Balkans. Or, the external objective was to further weaken a failing or excluded MENA group of people and to start an ethnic/religious/sectarian turmoil that would disrupt peace in the region and sap the administration's energy and resources.

Even before the "Arab Spring" eraptud in the MENA, the Western world's evaluation that the peoples of the region needed democratization and widespread respect for human rights protection, had been erraneous. The Western world's primarily individualistic interpretation of rights, liberties and democracy may not be exactly applicable among peoples of MENA. Therefore, those who prepare a peace process for MENA should stay away from any effort to impose a Western-styled democratization model that incorporates individual rights and freedoms and solutions based on majoritarianism. All the excluded parties should be encouraged to enter into discussions of how to end the conflicts and disputes. MENA-as-fixity, building a consensus on the basic understanding of justice, shall ensure that the clan's, the tribe's, the group's or a people's best collective interests should be relatively satisfied. [16]

5.1. Need for a common moral basis

Religious/sectarian groups draw their support from prevailing political, economic and cultural threats and insecurity. Religious values and a return to sectarian traditionalism are thus used as a means of expressing public protest, and of generating some element of hope among threatened and disillusioned peoples. [50] It had been possible to see "internal" reasons of conflict among the local peoples or groups, due to the measures of central state administration, or to some cultural characteristics of specific ethnic/sectarian groups. An ethno/religious/sectarian group could find itself excluded, left devoid of material support or recognition, or the leadership of the group may have changed character towards radicalism/fundamentalism. In that case, the ethno/sectarian group could have hightened its claims from the central state administration. If violence erupts, its intensity would have direct correlation to the degree of exclusion the ethno/sectarian group had been

subject to, the strength of their group identity and the radical character of their claims. [57-3] The intensity of state's resistance and counter-attack would be equally high in correlation to the ethno/sectarian group's attack/aggression level.

Canevello and Crocker state that there is a controversy here between the sovereign rights belonging to the central state, and the rights claimed by ethno/religious/sectarian identity groups, blocking an easy flow of open communication between the parties. [4] The state elites, feeling themselves as on the more powerful side, are often not ready to enter into dialogue with ethno/sectarian/separatist groups especially after a long period of brutal struggle. Even when a negotiation process is agreed upon, the state as the stronger party may cut off the communication if the weaker party seems to go too far with its requests and claims in the bargain.

In the face of such contemporary inflammatory inclinations, John Rawl's idea of democracy promises a reconciliation concerning a basic kernel of moral understanding over political foundations in order to reach an agreement even at least on the minimum level. [6] The peoples of the MENA very likely may have different undestandings over what is "the good;" and what is "good for whom." A universal but impartial rational agreement is hardly possible when individuals have different concepts of "the good." Indifferent, impartial, only procedural ways of decision making on the public good is to conceive of democracy as impersonal and much unsuitable for groups with communitarian ideals. MENA peoples need deeper, wider and meaningful forms of reconciliation, comprising a moral basis, in spite of their ethnic/religious/sectarian/cultural differences. [40-17]

"Reasonable Majority" concept of Rawls points at the possibility of a basic reconciliation in a population of peoples divided deeply among themselves due to diverse religious, sectarian, philosophical, moral teachings, like in the MENA, and feel themselves still free and equal. Political justice is needed to help build a structure where the conditions for a just social cooperation is in place. [40] Thus, "reasonable

majoritarianism" stands against "simple majoritarianism."

Even though the basic principles of political ethics can be questioned, there can be found a way of reaching a moral understanding through a consensus on justice. Rawls says, reasonable people in a "constitutional regime" based on a moral understanding of their special collective concerns that ensures each one free and equal citizenship, do appreciate its value. They willingly pay respect to this cooperation in justice; they attribute a high value to being a part of their society. Then, they confine all their differences, whether religious, sectarian, philosophical, or cultural, to the private and personal spaces in their lives. The model of liberalism suggested by Rawls is especially advised as suitable for the MENA through "MENAization"; the only problem remains over how the people should find their own ways of dealing with those in their group who are not and who do not wish to be "reasonable."

5. 2. Administration based on merit

In government, MENA states should devise mechanisms of keeping peace and order without damaging democratic principles such as the rule of law and personal freedoms, but also the essential values of public administration, such as neutral competence. In Herbert Kaufmann's definition, neutral competence is a concept that has long been regarded as an essential value in the field of public administration. He defines the concept as "the ability to do work of government expertly, and to do it according to explicit objective standards rather than the personal or party or other obligations and loyalties." [35-59]

In a Panel on "The Study of Public Administration since Woodrow Wilson" at the 52nd annual meeting of the American Political Science Association on September 7, 1956, at Washington, D.C., Kaufmann talked about the Quest for Representativeness in government in the times of colonial politics, when governors had no source of political strength. They were reduced to figureheads with little influence in the making of governmental decisions, and were elected for only one-year terms. The quest for neutral competence started to emerge

by the middle of the nineteenth century in the US. There was disillusionment with the existing governmental machinery. Neutral competence which prevales in the US today means the ability of the government to do its work expertly, to do it according to explicit, objective standards rather than to personal or party or other abligations and loyalties. With the slogan, "Take Administration out of Politics," politics and administration became distinct and separable processes that should be assigned to separate and distinct organs. The administrative mechanisms also in the MENA thus should be independent boards and commissions and the merit system; they should be designed to insulate many public officials and public policies from political pressures.

6. Conclusion

Peoples of the MENA, not being able to respond properly to the various democracy promotions of the West over the last four decades, on the contrary have been subjected to further reassertions of authoritarianism. The "Arab Spring" sprouting in 2010 in Tunisia, and in five years' time turning to bitter "winter" in Syria, killed all hopes of any democratic optimism. Violence and insecurity settled amongst peoples of different ethnic origins and sectarian divisions, while seemingly sporadic conflict transformed itself into a civil war.

In order to bring current developments in the MENA to an end in a peace accord, a hybrid prescription of a conflict resolution, in addition to a political science approach at restructuration of the region is discussed. The ancient roots of authoritarianism, instability and violence in the MENA can be eliminated or curbed through the realization of a formula, suggested as "MENAization", similar in meaning, scope and effect with "Europeanization" in Europe.

Endnotes

[1] The MENA region comprises the Arab states in the Middle East and North Africa: Algeria, Bahrain, Djibouti, Egypt, Iraq, Jordan,

Kuwait, Lebanon, Libya, Mauritania, Morocco, Oman, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, Somalia, Sudan, the Syrian Arab Republic, Tunisia, the United Arab Emirates, and Yemen—plus the Islamic State of Afghanistan, the Islamic Republic of Iran, Pakistan, and the West Bank and Gaza. The MENA is an economically diverse region that includes countries with a common heritage, at various stages of economic development, and with vastly different endowment of natural resources. A fuller discussion of the history of terms applied to the region can be found in A. Roger, British and U.S. Use and Misuse of The Term 'Middle East' in: Is There A Middle East? The Evolution of a Geopolitical Concept, M.E. Bonine, A. Amanat, and M.E. Gasper, eds., Stanford: Stanford University Press, 2012, pp. 36-55. https://searchworks.stanford.edu/view/9399018

[2] Although no common definition of ethnicity exists, it is generally described as the awareness on the part of a particular community of having a separate identity on the basis of common history, race, language, religion, culture and territory. Ethnic groups are often oriented towards recognition and expression of their cultural identity and the protection of their rights as a group to share in the benefits of the state in which they live. Ethnic resurgence occurs when and if, as in the case of Syria, there is the lack of or the slow development of democratic forms of government, and an equitable distribution of resources and opportunities cannot be realized.

[3] Politicized Islam strives for the establishment of a religious state with Sharia law. There are many different Islamist schools of thought: one sect is the modern Sunni Islamist movement. The Sunni Arab world is polarized between Salafism which is a strictly orthodox form of Sunni Islamism also known as "Wahhabism," and the "Ikhwani" ideology of the Muslim Brotherhood, seen as more pragmatic, reformist and politically-minded line, as well as Shi'a which is another sect within Islam. The so-called salafi-jihadi trend advocates global armed struggle (jihad) against the West and most contemporary Muslim rulers; al-Qaeda is a salafi-jihadi group, although there are many others, ISIS being one of them. http://anyflip.com/mcwc/ehrd/basic

[4] Conflict Analysis and Resolution Discipline was founded in the United States of America in the 1960s. It feeds upon the Game Theory in the Science of Economics, again in the 1960s. Anatol Rapaport, Fights, Games and Debates, University of Michigan Press, Ann Arbor, Michigan, USA, 1960; Game Theory as a Theory of Conflict Resolution, Ed. Anatol Rapaport, Springer Netherlands, 1974. http://www.springer.com/gp/book/9789027704245

[5] Structuration theory is a concept in sociology that offers perspectives on human behaviour based on a synthesis of structure and agency effects known as the "duality of structure." Instead of describing the capacity of human action as being constrained by powerful stable societal structures (such as educational, religious, or political institutions) or as a function of the individual expression of will (i.e., agency), structuration theory acknowledges the interaction of meaning, standards and values, and power and posits a dynamic relationship between these different facets of society. https://global.britannica.com/topic/structuration-theory

[6] Since March 2011, Syria has been in the throes of a conflict that has killed over 260,000 people and forced more than half of all Syrians to leave their homes. An estimated six million Syrians have sought refuge in neighbouring countries. The United Nations is working tirelessly to bring the parties to the negotiating table and an end to the war. The Intra-Syrian Talks, guided by Security Council resolution 2254 (2015), were resumed in Geneva from 14-24 March, 2016, after the UN Special Envoy for Syria suspended the round that lasted from 29 January to 3 February, in view of continuing violence and lack of humanitarian relief on the ground. Discussions resumed in Geneva from 13 April lasted another two weeks. The aim is to focus on matters of governance, including a new constitution for Syria and the holding of elections. Two task forces created by the International Syria Support Group (ISSG) are overseeing the delivery of much-needed humanitarian aid.

[7] Both convergence or divergence may occur in the MENAization of public policy. The notion of a new MENA in this sense is to be of a constructed nature and politics will be open to change and reconstruction, and will be influenced by actors, discourses and ideational processes. Specified rules, mechanisms and procedures of a "MENAization" can consist of both normative-emotional considerations and interest-driven calculations. There shall be the emergence and development at the MENA level of distinct structures of governance; that is, of political, legal and social institutions associated with political problem solving that formalizes interactions among the actors, and of policy networks specializing in the creation of authoritative MENA rules. "MENAization" will be an incremental process reorienting the direction and shape of politics to the degree that MENA political and economic dynamics become part of the organizational logic of national politics and policy-making, by which domestic policy areas become increasingly subject to MENA policy-making.

MENA decisions shall impact the MENA states' policies and political and administrative structures. Processes of (a) construction (b) diffusion and (c) institutionalisation of formal and informal rules, procedures, policy paradigms, styles, 'ways of doing things' and shared beliefs and norms which are first defined and consolidated in the making of MENA decisions and then incorporated in the logic of domestic discourse, identities, political structures and public policies will be adopted. Change shall take place within MENA states whose motivating logic is tied to MENA policies or decision-making processes. A. Héritier, *et. al.* Differential Europe. The European Union Impact on national Policymaking, Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 2001; U. Sedelmeier, The Europeanisation of Central and Eastern Europe, Cornell University Press, Ithaca, New York, 2005.

References

[1] A.A. Jamal, Of Empires and Citizens: Pro-American Democracy or No Democracy at all? Princeton, N. J.: Princeton University Press, 2012; Review article: International Journal of Middle East Studies, 46 (February 2014), pp 201-202.
http://journals.cambridge.org/action/displayAbstract?fromPage=online&aid=9173848&fileId=S0020743813001475

[2] A.B. Çelik, Etnik Çatışmaların Çözümünde Siyaset Bilimi ve Uyuşmazlık Çözümü Yaklaşımları, in: Çatışmadan Uzlaşmaya; Kuramlar, Süreçler ve Uygulamalar, Derleyen: Nimet Beriker, İstanbul Bilgi Üniversitesi, İstanbul, 2009, pp 163-188.

[3] A.B. Çelik, Transnationalization of human rights norms and its impact on internationally displaced Kurds, Human Rights Quarterly, 27 (3), 2005, pp. 969-997 http://research.sabanciuniv.edu/528/1/HRQ_makalesi.pdf

[4] A. Canevello and J. Crocker, How Self-Image and Compassionate Goals Shape Intrapsychic Experiences, Social & Personality Psychology Compass 9/11 (2015), pp. 620-629.
http://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/10.1111/spc3.12206/epdf?r3_referer=wol&tracking_action=preview_click&show_checkout=1&purchase_referrer=onlinelibrary.wiley.com&purchase_site_license

[5] A.D. Smith, The Ethnic Revival, 1981, http://www.cambridge.org/us/academic/subjects/sociology/organisational-sociology/ethnic-revival?format=PB;

[6] A.D. White, A Rawlsian Idea of Deliberative Democracy, Unpublished PhD Dissertation, University of Western Ontario, January 2012.
http://ir.lib.uwo.ca/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1465&context=etd

[7] Aleppo Conflict Timeline – 2012, The Aleppo Project; Aleppo Under Siege, http://www.thealeppoproject.com/aleppo-conflict-timeline-2012/ The Washington Institute for Near East Policy. 27 January 2012.
http://www.washingtoninstitute.org/policyanalysis/view/the-free-syrian-army-bleeds-the-assad-regime

[8] A. Lijphart, Democracy in Plural Societies: A Comparative Exploration, New Haven, Yale University Press, 1977.

[9] A. Lijphart, The Politics of Accommodation. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1968.

[10] A. Paczynska, The Economies of the Middle East, in: Understanding the Contemporary Middle East, Third Edition, D. J. Gerner and J. Schwedler, eds., London: Lynne Riener Publishers, 2008, pp. 221-255. https://www.rienner.com/uploads/4934147ec4 983.pdf

[11] A. Paczynska, The Discreet Appeal of Authoritarianism: Political Bargains and Stability of Liberal Authoritarian Regimes in the Middle East, The School for Conflict Analysis & Resolution, George Mason University, December 2010, University of Florida Press, http://scar.gmu.edu/book-chapter/discreet-appeal-of-authoritarianism-political-bargains-and-stability-of-liberal-authori

[12] A. Rabo, Narrating Ethnic and Religious Heterogeneity in Contemporary Aleppo. In 9th Mediterranean Research Meeting, Robert Schuman Centre Montecatini European University Institute, 2008.

[13] A. Roth, B. Murphy and M. Ryan, Russia begins airstrikes in Syria; U.S. warns of new concerns in conflict, September 30, 2015. https://www.washingtonpost.com/world/russia s-legislature-authorizes-putin-to-use-military-force-in-syria/2015/09/30/f069f752-6749-11e5-9ef3-fde182507eac_story.html?wpisrc=nl_headlines &wpmm=1

[14] A. Sandıklı and A. Semin, Bütün Boyutlarıyla Suriye Krizi ve Türkiye, Bilge Adamlar Kurulu Raporu, No. 52, 2012, BİLGESAM http://www.bilgesam.org/Images/Dokumanlar/ 0-2-2014021958suriyeraporu.pdf; http://www.bilgesam.org/Images/Dokumanlar/ 0-227-2014090440butun-boyutlariyla-suriye-krizi-ve-turkiye.pdf; http://www.bilgesam.org/Images/Haberler/Hab erlerDiger/rapor52.pdf

[15] B. Kendall, Is Syria's 'truce' worth the paper it's printed on? BBC News, 12 February 2016, http://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-15798218

[16] C. Mouffe, Demokrasi, İktidar ve Siyasal Düzen, Demokrasi ve Farklılık, 3. Bölüm, in: Kültür, Kimlik ve Demokrasi, Ed. Seyla Benhabib, Princeton University Press, 1996, pp. 347-364.

[17] C. Mouffe, The Return of the Political, London: Verso, 1993.

[18] Consociational Democracy: The Views of Arend Lijphart and Collected Criticisms, Belgian-Dutch Conference on Pillarization, Depillarization and Conflict-Management, Leuven, April 1983. The Political Science Reviewer, October 1983. http://www.mmisi.org/pr/15_01/schendelen.pd f

[19] D. Chatty, Displacement and Dispossession in the Modern Middle East, Cambridge University Press, 2010.

[20] D. Deutsch, But can we really explain it all?, The Economist May 29, 1997, http://www.economist.com/node/150549

[21] D. Deutsch, The Fabric of Reality, New York: Penguin Books, 1997.

[22] D.L. Horowitz, Structure and Strategy in Ethnic Conflict Paper prepared for the Annual World Bank Conference on Development Economics, Washington, D.C., April 20-21, 1998.

[23] D.L. Horowitz, Ethnic Groups in Conflict, Berkeley: University of California Press, 1985.

[24] D. Nohlen, Elections in the Americas, A Data Handbook, Vol. 1, April 2005, https://global.oup.com/academic/product/electi ons-in-the-americas-a-data-handbook-9780199283583?cc=tr&lang=en&; D. Nohlen, Elections in Europe, A Data Handbook, Vol. II, 2010, https://www.amazon.com/Elections-Europe-Handbook-Dieter-Nohlen/dp/3832956093

[25] E.H. Tuma, Economic and political change in the Middle East (RLE Economy of the Middle East), Routledge, 1987, 2015.

https://www.routledge.com/Economic-and-Political-Change-in-the-Middle-East-RLE-Economy-of-Middle/Tuma/p/book/9781138813120

[26] F. Kommer, The Syrian National Coalition and the US – From Fading Faith to a New Commitment, Published by the Heinrich Böll Stiftung, Washington, D.C., May 2015, https://us.boell.org/sites/default/files/the_syrian_national_coalition_and_the_us-from_fading_faith_to_a_new_commitment.pdf

[27] Freedom in the World 2015, https://freedomhouse.org/report/freedom-world/freedom-world-2015#.V6gqpMscSUk

[28] G.D. Saxton, Repression, Grievances, Mobilization, and Rebellion: A New Test of Gurr's Model of Ethnopolitical Rebellion, International Interactions, 31: 1–30, Taylor & Francis, 2005.

[29] G.T. Abed and H.R. Davoodi, Challenges of Growth and Globalization in the Middle East and North Africa, International Monetary Fund, 2003. https://www.imf.org/external/

[30] Group of Friends of the Syrian People: 1st Conference, Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, http://carnegieendowment.org/syriaincrisis/48418

[31] H. Inalcik, Studies in Ottoman Social and Economic History, London: Variorum Reprints, 1985

[32] H.D. Forbes, Ethnic Conflict and the Contact Hypothesis. In: The Psychology of Ethnic and Cultural Conflict, Yueh-Ting Lee, Clark McCauley, Fathali Moghaddam, and Stephen Worchell, eds., Westpoint, CT: Greenwood Publishing Group, 2004, 69-88.

[33] H.D. Forbes, Ethnic Conflict, Yale University Press. 1997.

[34] Heykeliye El-Meclis El-Watany El-Sury (Suriye Ulusal Konseyi'nin Oluşumu), http://ar.syriancouncil.org/structure.html

[35] H. Kaufmann, Emerging Conflicts in the Doctrines of Public Administration, American Political Science Review 50, December 1956, pp. 1057-73, http://www.albany.edu/faculty/mdeegan/Jan29-Kaufman.pdf

[36] J. Bercovitch, Resolving International Conflicts: Theory and practice of international mediation: Selected essays. London; New York: Routledge, 2011.

[37] J. Galtung, A structural theory of aggression, Journal of Peace Research, 1/2, June 1964, Sage Journals, Peace Research Institute, Oslo, 95-119, http://jpr.sagepub.com/content/1/2/95.extract

[38] J. P. Lederach (2003) The little book of conflict transformation: clear articulation of the guiding principles by a pioneer in the field, The little books of justice and peacebuilding series, Good Books, https://www.amazon.com/Little-Book-Conflict-Transformation-Peacebuilding/dp/1561483907

[39] J. P. Lederach, Conflict transformation: three lenses in one frame, New Routes 2/2009, A Journal of Peace Research and Action, 14, Life & Peace Institute, http://peacemaker.un.org

[40] J. Rawls, Political Liberalism, New York: Columbia University Press, 1993, http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/liberalism/

[41] Kürt Ulusal Konseyi ve PYD yönetim konusunda anlaştı, Yakın Doğu Haber YDH, 27 Temmuz 2012, http://ydh.com.tr/HD10497_kurt-ulusal-konseyi-ve-pyd-yonetim-konusunda-anlasti.html

[42] L. Keashly and R. J. Fisher, A Contingency Perspective on Conflict Interventions: Theoretical and Practical Considerations, in: J. Bercovitch, ed., Resolving international conflicts: The theory and practice of mediation, Ch. 11, Boulder, Colorado, Lynne Rienner Publishers, 1996.

[43] L. Reychler and T. Paffenholz, Peace-Building: A Field Guide. Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner Publishers, 2001. http://www.colorado.edu/conflict/peace/example/peace-building.htm

[44] Men Hiye El-Cemaat El-Musllaha Ellety Tukateel Fi Surye, http://arabic.rt.com/news_all_news/analytics/69084/; Türkmen muhaliflerden birleşme çağrısı, http://www.haber7.com/dunya/haber/915003-turkmen-muhaliflerden-birlesme-cagrisi http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ON3zcwQUTEg

[45] M. Tokyay, What are Turkey's motives behind potential 'normalized' ties with Syria? Al Arabiya, 14 July 2016, http://english.alarabiya.net/en/perspective/analysis/2016/07/14/What-are-Turkey-s-motives-behind-potential-normalized-ties-with-Syria-.html

[46] National Coalition of Syrian Revolution and Opposition Forces, http://www.globalsecurity.org/military/world/para/syrian-national-coalition.htm

[47] N. Gümüş, Federal Suriye Mi? Hürriyet Gazetesi, 18 March 2016, http://www.gunlukkoseyazilari.com/hurriyet-nilgun-tekfidan-gumus-02-mart-2015-silah-birakma/35574

[48] Official website of Sukurul-Şam Tugay, http://www.shamfalcons.net/ar/page/aboutsham-falcons.php; http://www.ahraralsham.com/?page=pages&id=3; http://www.shamfalcons.net/ar/page/about-sham-falcons.php

[49] P.L. van den Berghe, *The Ethnic Phenomenon.* New York: Elsevier North-Holland, 1981.

[50] P. Pamir, Nationalism, Ethnicity and Democracy: Contemporary Manifestations, International Journal of Peace Studies, 2/2, (July 1997).

[51] R. Gündüz, Baskı Artırılsın Çağrısı, Anadolu Ajansı, 6 Temmuz 2012, http://www.aa.com.tr/tr/dunya/62915--- quot-suriye-halkinin-dostlari-quot--toplandi.

[52] R.J. Fisher and L. Keashly, Fisher & Keashly's contingency model of intervention, 1991; R. J. Fisher, Methods of Third-Party Intervention, 15 July 2010, http://www.berghof-foundation.org/fileadmin/redaktion/Publications/Handbook/Articles/fisher_handbookII.pdf

[53] R. Ladrech, Europeanization of Domestic Politics and Institutions: The Case of France, Journal of Common Market Studies, 32:1, (1994), pp. 69-88.

[54] S. Mendenhall, How Should We Define the 'Middle East'? December 15, 2012, http://themendenhall.com/2012/12/15/how-should-we-define-the-middle-east/

[55] Tawkii Ale Balag İttifakiye Beyne Meclis Watani El-Kurdi El-Suriye Wel-Meclis El-Şaab Garb Kurdustani (Suriye Kürt Ulusal Konseyi ile Batı Kürdistan Halk Meclisi Arasında Anlaşma İmzalandı), http://www.krg.org/articles/detail.asp?lngnr=14&smap=01010100&rnr=81 &anr=44646

[56] T.R. Gurr, Minorities at Risk: A Global View of Ethnopolitical Conflicts, 1993, https://www.amazon.com/Minorities-Risk-Global-Ethnopolitical-Conflicts/dp/1878379240

[57] T.R. Gurr and B. Harff, Ethnic conflict in world politics, Westview Press, University of Michigan, 1994; A.B. Çelik, Transnationalization of human rights and its impact on internationally displaced Kurds, Human Rights Quarterly 27/3 (2009), 969-996.

[58] W. Connor, Ethnonationalism: The Quest for Understanding, Princeton University Press, 1994, http://press.princeton.edu/titles/5371.html

[59] W.F. West, Searching for a Theory of Bureaucratic Structure, Journal of Public Administration Research and Theory: J-PART, 7, 4, Oxford University Press, Public Management Research Association, October 1997, pp. 591-613. http://www.jstor.org/stable/1181661, accessed: 05/08/2016, https://oied.ncsu.edu/selc/wp-content/uploads/2013/03/Searching-for-a-Theory-of-Bureaucratic-Structure.pdf

[60] Z.Z. Wali, Barzani: 'Kurdistan is ripe for independence', RUDAW, 23/5/2016 http://rudaw.net/english/kurdistan/230520164

A study upon the figurative motifs were rendered in monochrome glazed (mina'i) wares from the Seljuq period in Iran

Ali Nihat Kundak
Asst. Prof.,
Department of History of Art, Faculty of Sciences and Letters,
Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University, Istanbul, Turkey,
nihatkundak@gmail.com

Abstract:
Glazed ceramics are the main wide range of group for the museum collections of Islamic art. Potters in the Islamic world developed new techniques in bodies and glazes, sharing these across the broad expanse of their world and exporting some of their techniques, such as monochrome glaze (mina'i), to foreign, distant lands. Enamel-painted (mina'i) wares are one of the achievements of Iranian potters of the late 1100s–early 1200s. Like lustre, this technique required two firings in order to fix the enamels (usually red and black) and the occasional gold. This process made the manufacture more expensive and the risk for the objects higher. To date, Kashan, Iran, is the only identified centre of production of these wares. The intense commercial activity within the Islamic world and beyond its borders stimulated technological development. New ideas and solutions evolved to compete with foreign wares. This paper revises figurative motifs were rendered in monochrome glazed (mina'i) ceramics from the Seljuq period (12th–13th century) in Iran, trying to emphasize their importance for the Turkish-Islamic pottery art [*].

Keywords: Seljuq, Mina'i, Ceramic, Miniature, Iran

The rapid early expansion of Islam brought the adherents of the Islamic faith into contact with the artistic heritage of the Eastern Mediterranean and the Near East, and more particularly, with that of Byzantium and of Sasanian Iran. This heritage included, among other things, a tradition of pottery manufacture stretching back more than a thousand years. It should not be surprising then that forms and techniques were often adopted from existing, local or regional traditions; in other cases, completely new forms and techniques were introduced. Furthermore, the same forms are often found across a variety of media - for example, the shape of a pottery flask may parallel that of a glass one, the form of a pottery jug may mirror that of a similar object in metal or jade. This is particularly true of objects made in moulds - including stonepaste pottery, glass and metal. Pottery is by its very nature fragile - in many cases extremely so - and therefore what has survived to the present day may not be entirely representative of a given historical period or style. But this is the case when discussing the great majority of art dating from before the modern period; and in many instances our knowledge is supplemented by references in other sources, such as historical texts or contemporary miniature paintings.

Polychrome ceramics painted in a range of colors in a style similar to that found on manuscript illustrations became popular during the Seljuq period in Iran. The technique, known as mina'i ("enameled"), involved a complicated double-firing process. Mina'i production, like luster painting, was expensive and labor-intensive because of the double‑firing process involved.

Like many of the other mina'i ceramics, "*Bowl with an Enthronement Scene*" is concerned with courtly themes - here, the seated royal figure, holding a wine cup, is flanked by attendants and surrounded by courtiers (Figure 1). The peacocks at his feet symbolize the heaven underscore this theme [1]. The visual presentation of these mina-i ceramics are similar

to scenes from the only known illustrated manuscript of the poem, the Romance of Varqa and Gulshah, by Urwa b Huzam al-'Udhri, with paintings by Abd al Mu'min al Khuwayyi (Figure 3). The early thirteenth-century manuscript of Varqa and Gulshah in the Topkapi Palace Library (Hazine 841) is the unique copy of the Persian poet Ayyuqi's 11th-century romantic poem about a pair of unfortunate lovers. The manuscript - generally held to be a product of early 13th-century Seljuq Anatolia - is also the earliest surviving example of an illustrated book containing a literary Persian text. Based on a story "told by Arabs," the poem was (re-)composed by Ayyuqi in the eastern Iranian world during the Ghaznavid period. The seventy-one paintings constitute a fascinating corpus of images which indicate a particularly rich realm of artistic process and audience expectation.

Horsemen were favorite subjects in mina'i ceramics, but the comparative monumentality of the horse and of the princely Seljuq figure, which complement each other, makes this "*Bowl with Prince on horseback*" ceramic unusual (Figure 2). With its knotted tail, decorated bridle, curb bit, saddle, tassels, and rectangular blanket fastened by a breast band, the horse has a truly royal and ceremonial presence. For added luxurious effect, potters sometimes applied gilded scrolls in relief, as on this bowl. The theme of a prince on horseback—an image of courtly life widely exploited by Seljuq ceramists, is treated here in a "monumental" style, similar in Varqa and Gulshah (Figure 4) [2].

The extraordinary chromatic effect of "*Turquoise Bowl with Lute Player and Audience*" was achieved through the process known as mina'i, in which the different pigments were fired at different temperatures. Here, the effect is enhanced by the use of a turquoise glaze, made with copper, as a ground for the image of a musician surrounded by seated figures (Figure 5). This bowl represents an aspect of a theme redolent of the lives of the elite: musical entertainment and feasting. A large gathering is depicted on this mina'i bowl, where ten people, all but one seated, encircle the lute player, perhaps representing his audience or a group of singers. The raised bowls full of fruit further suggest the festive nature of the event. The presence of poetic inscriptions points to the close relation between music and poetry, which was often recited at social gatherings and majlis. The instruments depicted is a variation of the lute. The one here is an 'ud, of which the sound box and neck are made separately. Despite religious proscriptions, music was the subject of many Arabic texts, from those continuing the Late Antique philosophical exploration of the physical properties and effects of sound to those on musical theory and the mystical aspects of listening to music. Musicians could be male or female; those depicted here are men. In this large musical assembly, the sumptuous clothes and jewels evoke a luxurious setting. Although such entertainments would have taken place among persons of high rank and social and cultural elites, this scene may have been intended specifically to depict a courtly setting, and indeed, musicians and enthroned figures often appear together. Their presence on a sophisticated, yet utilitarian, object such as this bowl, paired with the blessings added in the inscription, speaks to the symbolic beneficence of courtly and princely life in the visual language of the period [3].

Some of the mina'i ceramics illustrate stories from the Persian epic, the Shahnama, predating its earliest surviving illustrated manuscripts by nearly a century. These bowls depict the episode of Prince Bahram Gur hunting with Azada, his favorite concubine. Azada challenges Bahram Gur to a hunting feat, but when he succeeds, she pities the slain gazelles and reproaches him. In anger, he tramples her under his camel's feet. The painter has conflated two different moments into one scene (Figure 6-7).

Representations of the planets and the Zodiac signs were popular in Seljuq iconography. They are also seen on stone relief sculpture and inlaid metalwork and continued to be important motifs in later Islamic art. "*Bowl with Courtly and Astrological Motifs*" is another masterpiece of mina'i ceramic from Seljuq period (Figure 8). The central roundel with a Sun

symbol is surrounded by six circular medallions with symbols representing the Moon and the planets Venus, Jupiter, Mars, Mercury, and Saturn. The surrounding bands contain mounted horsemen and birds, geometric ornament, a row of seated courtiers and musicians with two enthroned personages, and an Arabic inscription in kufic script. A cursive Persian inscription surrounds the exterior. Each of the planets can be identified by their typical iconography. Mercury (al-'utarid) is a young man writing on a scroll of paper; Venus (al-zuhara) is a female musician playing an instrument; Mars (al-mirrikh) is a warrior, holding a sword and a severed head; Jupiter (al-mushtari) is a sage or a judge, wearing a turban; and the Sun (al-shams) and the Moon (al-qamar) are human figures holding a sun disk and a crescent. The image of Saturn (al-zuhal) was drawn from Indian sources, and the planet is shown as a dark-skinned man with a long white beard, sometimes with multiple arms with a different object in each hand (like some Hindu divinities). The finely painted figures and decoration on the interior of this bowl combine the imagery of the courtly cycle and astronomy. In the center is the sun surrounded by the personifications of six planets. Moving clockwise from the top right are Mars, holding a severed head and a sword; Mercury, the scribe, seated crosslegged with a pen in his right hand and scroll in his left; Venus, seated on a throne or chair and playing the lute; the moon, a female figure with a crescent moon around her head; Saturn, holding a sickle in each hand; and Jupiter, on a thronelike seat, holding something resembling a chain (Figure 9). Islamic astronomers believed that each planet orbited the earth; in graphic terms their circuits formed seven concentric circles, with the moon creating the innermost and Saturn the outermost circles based on their distance from the earth. Beyond the seventh sphere is an eighth containing the constellations, including the twelve signs of the zodiac. Instead of including the fixed stars, or constellations, the painter of the bowl placed one large and two small gold circles, representing stars, between the heads of each planet and six small stars around the sun. A band of ten horsemen, separated by birds, rings the central group of planets. One interpretation identifies these figures as representations of the "ten periods of time governed by the thirty-six decans," or thirds of each astrological sign or month. Certainly the depiction of horses and riders moving in one circular direction could suggest the passage of time. However, the figures also could embody the idea of the cavalry, a key element of any ruler's support and one emblem of the chivalric tradition in the Seljuq era. Since the band of figures on the inside rim consists of two enthroned men on opposite sides of the bowl and musicians and attendants inclining slightly toward their leader, much as the figures do in the gypsum-plaster panel of an enthroned figure and his courtiers, the horsemen are likely to denote one of the components of an orderly society, presided over by a capable king or prince in a universe governed by the planets. The inscriptions on the interior rim and the exterior are both fragmentary as a result of damage and overpainting. On the interior the words convey good wishes and on the exterior mention the "king of the Muslims" and more blessings [4].

The Seljuq period in Iran (11th-13th centuries) was marked by an explosion of new pottery techniques and forms. Not least among these was the introduction of frit ware, or stonepaste pottery. Frit ware has a hard white body, produced from a mixture of quartz, white clay and glaze frit, and was usually formed in moulds. The introduction of stonepaste wares allowed much finer potting than traditional earthenware, and many objects are translucent, like Chinese porcelain. The city of Kashan emerged as the most important production centre for pottery in Iran during the Seljuq period - a pre-eminence underscored by the fact that numerous potters took the epithet Al-Kashani ('of Kashan'). One such figure, Abu'l-Qasim Al-Kashani, wrote a treatise on the manufacture of tiles and other ceramics, which provides a valuable record of pottery production of the period. The highlight of the pottery of the Seljuq period was the introduction of mina'i ware. Mina'i ware requires two firings, since the decoration is painted both under and over the glaze, in a technique similar to enamel. Decoration typically consisted of figural scenes, including episodes from court life, hunting,

astrology and less frequently scenes drawn from the Shahnameh (the great epic written by the poet Firdawsi in the late 10th-early or 11th century). The direct fusion between poetry and pottery and the resulting impact on gender are also observed in various examples of Persian mina'i ware. The mina'i technique employs a variety of colours, i.e., blue, green, brown, black, dull red, white and gold, to paint over an opaque white or sometimes turquoise underglaze. The effect is much more colourful and very similar to that of miniature painting. The best examples of mina'i painting are said to have been done by artists also renowned for illuminating manuscripts. This would support the predominantly figurative style and subject matter of mina'i wares. The close relationship between mina'i ware and manuscript painting is particularly evident in this paper's examples.

Despite the immense destruction wrought throughout Iran by the Mongol invasion during the first half of the 13th century, the stability and increased trade which followed allowed artistic traditions to continue, and in many cases to flourish. Kashan, for its own part, had ransomed itself off and the continued production of its kilns was thus ensured. Also mina'i wares and tiles produced in Anatolia by Seljuqs.

The Islamic pottery painting is rich in its variety and history. With the arrival of the Seljuqs to Islam came the introduction of new identities as well as a continuation of those formed earlier on. Hence, continued investigations into Seljuq mina'i wares and other historic and cross-cultural decorative objects are necessary for both the aesthetic inspiration they provide and their ability to inform us of our collective past.

Fig 1: Bowl with an Enthronement Scene, late 1100s-early 1200s, Iran, Seljuq Period, late 12th - early 13th Century, fritware with overglaze-painted design (mina'i ware), Overall - h:9.20 w:20.90 cm (h:3 9/16 w:8 3/16 inches). Gift of Leonard C. Hanna, Jr., for the Coralie Walker Hanna Memorial Collection, The Cleveland Museum of Art

Fig 2 (right): Bowl with Prince on horseback, 12th – 13th century, Iran
Stonepaste; applied decoration, polychrome inglaze and overglaze painted and gilded on opaque monochrome glaze (mina'i),
H. 8.9 cm Diam. 21.7 cm, Harris Brisbane Dick Fund, 1951, 51.53, The Metropolitan Museum of Art

Fig 3: Warqah and Gulshah before their tutor sitting on a throne,
13th-century Seljuq Anatolia, Varqa and Gulshah , Topkapi Palace Library (Hazine 841), f.4a.
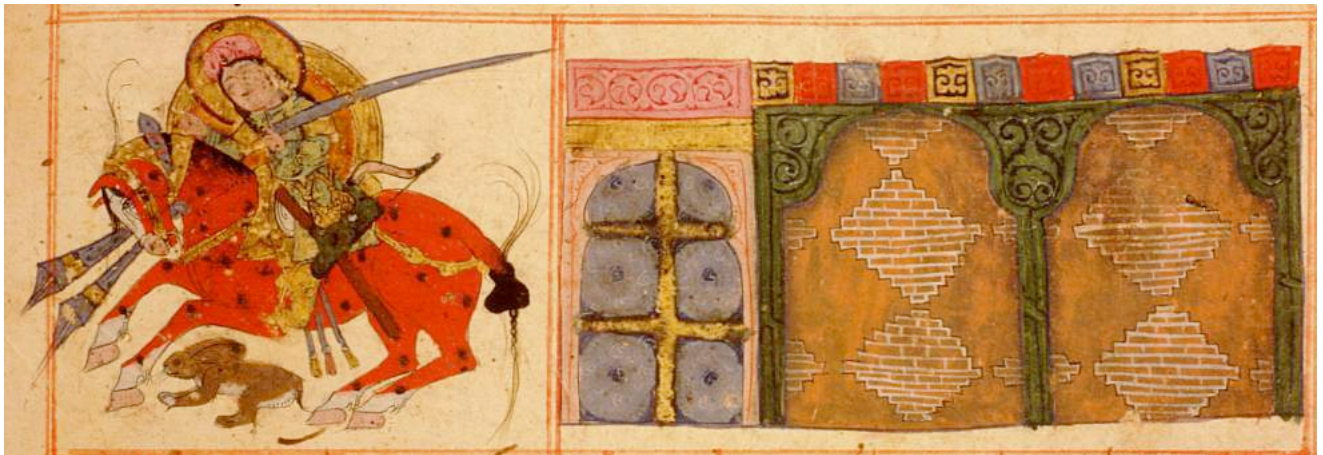
Fig 4: Gulshah, who has been captured by Rabi, flees from his palace on horseback, disguised as a man,
13th-century Seljuq Anatolia, Varqa and Gulshah , Topkapi Palace Library (Hazine 841), f.19b.

Fig 5: Turquoise Bowl with Lute Player and Audience,
late 12th–early 13th century, Iran, Stonepaste; polychrome inglaze and overglaze painted and gilded on opaque monochrome glaze (mina'i), H. 8.9 cm Diam. 19.7 cm Wt. 348.7 g Henry G. Leberthon Collection, Gift of Mr. and Mrs. A. Wallace Chauncey, 1957, Accession Number: 57.61.16, The Metropolitan Museum of Art

Fig 6: Bahram Gur and Azada, 12th–13th century. Iran, Kashan
Stonepaste; polychrome inglaze and overglaze painted and gilded on opaque monochrome glaze (mina'i), H. 8.7 cm Diam. 22.1 cm Wt. 15.3 oz.
(433.8 g), Purchase, Rogers Fund, and Gift of The Schiff Foundation, 1957, The Metropolitan Museum of Art

Fig 7: Bahram Gur and Azada, 12th–13th century Iran,
Stonepaste; polychrome inglaze and overglaze painted on opaque monochrome glaze (mina'i), 9.7 x 21.6 cm
Purchase, Rogers Fund, and Gift of The Schiff Foundation, 1957, The Metropolitan Museum of Art

Fig 8: Bowl with Courtly and Astrological Motifs
Seljuq period (1040–1196) late 12th–early 13th century, Central or northern Iran
Stonepaste; polychrome in glaze and overglaze painted and gilded on opaque monochrome glaze (mina'i), H. 9.5 cm. Diam. 18.7 cm, Wt. 396.9 g
Purchase, Rogers Fund, and Gift of The Schiff Foundation, 1957, (57.36.4), The Metropolitan Museum of Art

Fig 9: Detail of Bowl with Courtly and Astrological Motifs

References

[*]   This paper is supported by The Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University Scientific Research Center (BAP), the project number 2016-56.

[1]   R. M. Riefstahl, Parish-Watson Collection of Mohammadan Potteries, New York: E. Weyhe, 1922, no. 16, p. 105; S. Heidemann, Jean-Francois de Laperouse, V. Parry, "The Large Audience: Life-Sized Stucco Figures of Royal Princes from the Seljuq Period", Muqarnas vol. 31, 2014, 47-48.

[2]   R. Harari, R. Ettinghausen, A Survey of Persian Art from Prehistoric Times to the Present, ed. A. U. Pope, London, New York: Oxford University Press, 1938. ill. v. V, pl. 655; Art Treasures of the Metropolitan; 1st ed. New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1952, p. 240; C. J. Weinhardt, ed. "Catalogue of the Inaugural Exhibition of the Indianapolis Museum of Art", In Treasures from the Metropolitan. Indianapolis: Indianapolis Museum of Art, 1971, no. 91, 130.

[3]   C. K. Wilkinson, Iranian Ceramics, New York: Asia House Gallery, 1963, no. 63, p. 132; M. Jenkins-Madina, "Islamic Pottery: A Brief History", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin, New Series, vol. 40, no. 4 (Spring 1983). no. 19, 18-19; S. T. Welch, The Islamic World, vol. 11, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1987, p. 37; Turks: Journey of a Thousand Years, 600–1600, D. J. Roxburgh, ed., London, New York: Royal Academy of Arts, 2005. no. 42, p. 88; S. R. Canby, D. Beyazit, M. Rugiadi. "The Great Age of the Seljuqs", In Court and Cosmos, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 2016, no. 88, 157-158.

[4]   F. Saxl, "Beiträge zu einer Geschichte der Planetendarstellungen im Orient und Okzident", Der Islam, vol. 3, 1912, 152-173; R. Ettinghausen, "Islamic Art", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin vol. 33, no. 1 (Spring 1975), 18; M. Swietochowski, R. Ettinghausen, "Islamic Painting", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin, n.s., vol. 36, no. 2 (Autumn 1978), 18; S. Carboni, Following the Stars: The Zodiac in Islamic Art, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1997, no. 7, pp. 20-21; S. R. Canby, D. Beyazit, M. Rugiadi. "The Great Age of the Seljuqs", In Court and Cosmos, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 2016, no. 123, 206.

Bibliography

Art Treasures of the Metropolitan; 1st ed. New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1952.

C. J. Weinhardt, ed. "Catalogue of the Inaugural Exhibition of the Indianapolis Museum of Art", In Treasures from the Metropolitan. Indianapolis: Indianapolis Museum of Art, 1971.

C. K. Wilkinson, Iranian Ceramics, New York: Asia House Gallery, 1963.

E. Atıl, Ceramics from the World of Islam, Washington, 1973.

F. Saxl, "Beiträge zu einer Geschichte der Planetendarstellungen im Orient und Okzident", Der Islam, vol. 3, 1912, 152-173.

G. Öney, "İran Selçukluları ile Mukayeseli Olarak Anadolu Selçuklularında Atlı Av Sahneleri", Anadolu (Anatolica) XI, 1967, Ankara, 1969, 121-159.

G. Öney, "Büyük Selçuklu Seramik Sanatında Resim Programı ve Gelişen Figür Üslubu", Sanat Tarihi Dergisi, XIII/1, April, 2004, 61-82.

G. Öney, "Tarihten Yansımalarla Büyük Selçuklu Seramiklerinde Kadın", Sanat Tarihi Dergisi, XVII/1, April, 2008, 55-75.

M. Jenkins-Madina, "Islamic Pottery: A Brief History", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin, New Series, vol. 40, no. 4 (Spring 1983).

M. Swietochowski, R. Ettinghausen, "Islamic Painting", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin, n.s., vol. 36, no. 2 (Autumn 1978).

R. Ettinghausen, "Islamic Art", Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin vol. 33, no. 1 (Spring 1975).

R. Harari, R. Ettinghausen, A Survey of Persian Art from Prehistoric Times to the Present, ed. A. U. Pope, v. V, London, New York: Oxford University Press, 1938.

R. Ettinghausen, G. Guest, "The Iconography of Kashan Luster Plates", Ars Orientalis, Vol. IV, 1961, 25-64.

R. M. Riefstahl, Parish-Watson Collection of Mohammadan Potteries, New York: E. Weyhe, 1922.

S. Heidemann, Jean-Francois de Laperouse, V. Parry, "The Large Audience: Life-Sized Stucco Figures of Royal Princes from the Seljuq Period", Muqarnas vol. 31, 2014, 35-71.

S. Carboni, Following the Stars: The Zodiac in Islamic Art, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1997.

S. R. Canby, D. Beyazit, M. Rugiadi. "The Great Age of the Seljuqs", In Court and Cosmos, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 2016.

S. T. Welch, The Islamic World, vol. 11, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art, 1987.

Turks: Journey of a Thousand Years, 600–1600, D. J. Roxburgh, ed., London, New York: Royal Academy of Arts, 2005.

Women associations in the Ottoman Empire[*]

Hediye Şirin AK
Çankırı Karatekin University
Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences/Political Science and Public Administration
hediyesirin@karatekin.edu.tr

Abstract. This study is based on the history of woman movements in Turkey and their contribution to civil society. The concept of civil society emerged for the first time in western countries. Woman movements have a significant place in the understanding of civil society, which began to rise after the 60's. In the West, woman movements commenced during the industrialisation period. The Tanzimat (the Ottoman Reform, which is a period of reformation that began in 1839 and ended with the First Constitutional Era in 1876) had a great effect on woman movements that appeared in The Ottoman Empire in the same period. Male always determines the position of women in the structure of patriarchal society. Laws and social rules locate woman in family as well. Woman, who in the beginning had used the right of taking advantage of the opportunities of civil society under the control of men, gained that right after the social conditions that had changed in women's favour. In Turkey woman movements are the most significant part of the formation of civil society. In the research, the first emergences of women's associations in the Ottoman period and the areas in which they operate have tried to make a categorical description.

Keywords: Social gender, Gender, Women policy.

---

[*] This study was prepared on the master thesis "Women's organizations in turkey and a rewiew on studies of this organizations" which was completed Social Sciences Institute, Department of Public Administration, at Gazi University.

1. Introduction

Civil society simply expression refers to an area, which is formed by people organized independently from the state. In the West, the emergence of civil society concept goes back to Aristotle. In the Ottoman Empire, the formation of similar organizations in the west NGOs has been a longer period. The centralized structure of Ottoman Empire has also led to a formed of a structure of consisting NGOs connected to the center. The guild organizations are regarded as the first example of NGOs in the Ottoman Empire.

With the launch of the modernization movements in the Ottoman Empire, the structure of the NGOs has begun to change and it has been an increase in the number of NGOs. When we look at women's movements from Ottoman Empire to today, we can see that women are always in a movement against their family, social pressure and even state authority. In the Ottoman Period, relations with minorities in the country and trade relations established with the West have made significant impact on women's wishes and expectations. The process that began with the Tanzimat in the Ottoman has further increased women's expectations, many women's organization were established in the II. Constitutional Period. Many women's associations that established the fields of education, aid, and preparation for working life, cultural, political and even military have shown activity. This study of women has been a major breakthrough in terms of the development of the concept of civil society. Women's NGOs have covered a large part in the public opinion with working in many issues related to women; it has managed to attract public attention to the problems experienced by women.

In this study, women's associations available in the Ottoman Empire and the changes in women's life caused by the working of these associations have been studied to examine.

2. Civil Society

The society needs to social focus, organized independently from the state outside the state to win countervailing power against the state and these focuses are the Civil Society Organizations.

The concept of civil society has firstly been confronted in the period of Ancient Greek and in Aristotle. Aristotle, who defines civil society with the reference to the concept of "friendship", is considered one of the most unruly enemies of women, as he always making a strong hierarchy to gender. When looking to Aristotle's definitions, it clearly emerges that women are excluded from civil society. [1].

When we arrived the Middle Ages, the development of trade, the efforts of economically stronger bourgeoisie to find a place in feudal order; shortly new management mentalities consisted as a result of urban transformation experienced and also the understanding of civil society after legal order will arise gaining a new format.

Civil Society; defines the emerging situation with the development of trade in the 12th century and economic self-determination of urban components such as artisans and merchants in feudal system and gaining broad managerial autonomy in the management of the city they live. The city, arise resulting from this autonomy, creates law and its institutions and the first core of civil society. In other words, civil society; is social sphere which emerged on the basis of a number of civil liberties provided in the urban life to middle classes, find the progress opportunity in the person of an independent and autonomous institution from the central authority.[2].

Economic and social changes experienced in the Western World from the beginning of the 18th century, briefly transformations prepared and create "civil society" constitute the reference point for the conceptualization of civil society.[3]. Developments such as the centralizing of management, the increasingly complex division of labor, the expansion in the market economy, the commercialization of land, labor and fund brought forward the concept of civil society as a third area outside state and family. These transformations taking place in Western societies and bourgeoisie rising as a new political actor take the lead in the emergence of new classes socially, accelerated the process leading to the French Revolution and have contributed to the development of civil

society. In this process, the concept of civil society has continued to develop with tackling by thinkers have the opposite ideas, approaching from different perspectives and winning varied meanings. Let us examine the opinions of Thomas Hobbes John Locke and Jean Jacques Rousseau, who encountered as contracting thinkers on this issue:

According to Hobbes, woman and man are equal and they have all the rights and freedoms at the same rate in the state of nature. With making the social contract, institution of marriage and family earns a political qualification. Relationships within the family will now be regulated according to the rules of civil society. The contract is performed by men. Hobbes, who accepted the equal of woman and man with these ideas in the state of nature, has brought woman and man to a non-equal position after the contract is made, has accepted civil society consists of men by reducing women in second rank against men. Women have formed non-visible part of civil society, only represented by men.[4].

While Locke, who is from a contracting thinker, also accepted the equal of woman and man in the state of nature like Hobbes; has not accepted the situation where the people are at war in this environment unlike Hobbes. People are making an agreement within their requests have formed the civil and political society with the aim of protecting free and equal position which they have. According to Locke, family is the first social institution.

Civil society is a life of community which coming behind the family. Locke gives weight to groups in civil society. The rights and freedoms of individual are preserved by means of not only by the basis of contract but also social groups that an individual belongs. The civil society in Locke develops as an extension of the preferences of individuals. Namely, civil society is composed as a result of the ethical choice of individual, gaining a political dimension in public space. Although Locke may seem like approached the concept of today civil society with showing such important the issues such as individual preferences and social groups, he excluded women from political life and thought women fit for family life. Locke examined male-female relationships as marriage

and political relations in two categories. Men and women who are free and equal in their natural position establish a union with their wishes. There is no political identity of this union. Marriage will gain political identity within the civil society. The roles within the family will occur in accordance with the laws of the country. In Locke as in Hobbes, men represent the family unity and forming civil society is a man, woman entered under the supervision of man with the bound of marriage. The point that Locke thinks different from Hobbes is; woman in marriage relationship is equal status with man and has the right to have their own property. That is to say while man guarantee their own property in the civil society norms, woman would be protected property with marriage contract. [5]. As it is seen, Locke has set the position of women in political life and civil society in the second row, the right to represent himself has been left to men.

Rousseau like Hobbes and Locke, bases the beginning of the contract to its natural state. Rousseau explains the position of women in civil society with the concept of General Will. According to Rousseau, male-female relations are organized within the limits of the General Will. Rousseau emphasizes while men have rationality, women also is weak physically and dependent on men. Although natural men are equal with fellow and in the independent position, women are in the position that meets the needs of the men. Men walk away their own nature with the contract and develop a suitable personality to the civil society norms. However, women continue to protect dependence on her husband. Rousseau also like two other thinkers, emphasize that women will remain limited with family life by their nature. The mission of women remain in the private sphere, will train individuals namely men in accordance with the requirements of civil society. [6]. We have dealt with these three thinkers as contracting thinkers have based civil society on contract and pointing at the man as arbiter people in civil society, decreasing women to a secondary position.

When we examine the classic definition of civil society, our result is that women are not take place in civil society. In the modern world, woman has equal rights with man and these thoughts are not seen legally valid. Women, who

represented by the head of the family that is men either across the law or the government earlier, have come to a position of equal rights with men both across the law and the government today. However, equality provided by law does not become apparent in practice. Women will struggle to become an equal. The first examples of these efforts of women have been given in the Tanzimat Period.

3. Women's Social Life in the Ottoman Period

With the start to lose ground of Ottoman Empire against the West, a number of new regulations are made from military and technical structure, education and training system to administrative organization. The imperial edict of Gülhane, which declared to people in November 3, 1839 by reading at the garden of Gülhane of Topkapı Palace, was the beginning of a new era in Istanbul. In this period, when the process of Westernization accelerated, it experienced innovations in many areas from architecture to life style, from educational institutions to industrial institutions in Istanbul. Tanzimat period is the period that the new human type emerged in Ottoman society. Undoubted, in the 19th century the Ottoman Empire was not a great change in society; but it is undisputed that starting the modernization in all areas. There is no special regulation to women in the imperial edict of Gülhane, there is not mentioned the issue of women. However, Turkish intellectuals, influenced by developments in the West, make an effort to change the status of women and they count that are the basic features of modernization they target. The changes that occur in people's minds as a result of the innovations brought in, westernization efforts, were also positively affect the status of women. The schools opened for girls, concubinage removed, the prohibitions like curfew and inability to enter into public places began removing. While debate continues at full speed because Tanzimat did not eliminate the unrest created by the state's backwardness, the issues of women and family also began to take part in this debate. As with almost every subject from the Tanzimat, the influence of the West is very much about women. The most

significant development in this regard has been in the field of education. Depending on the legal and social conditions caused by the Tanzimat, the enjoyment of women's education right has been gained ground. [7].

Second Constitutional period was a turning point in many areas. The regulations brought by 1908 Constitution have led to many changes in political and social life. Many political organizations were established during this period; many newspapers, journals and periodicals began to broadcast. In this era, happened the upheavals of political, social, economic and cultural, in spite of everything significant progress towards modernization was recorded. With the proclamation of the Constitutional, women's movement has begun to take its place in society and discussions about women gained momentum. Although the government settles to support women's activities in line with their thinking, the place in the social life of Turkish women has increased significantly. II. Constitutionalism has stepped up discussions on the rights of women. In the meantime, new magazines and newspapers have been published, the associations had begun to be established. Several studies done in associations, the necessity of the articles about "the liberation of women from traditional clamp" were written in the publication organizations. However, the negative attitude about not only in all freedom but also in women's freedom strike by management of İttihat ve Terakki timely, this mobility and enthusiasm gave way to complaints. The magazine of Kadınlar Dünyası, which is media organ of Müdafaa-i Hukuk-ı Nisvan Cemiyeti, is defined this anniversary as "feast of men" in the anniversary of Constitutional, while saying "save us from the bondage in which we live" was expressing it. [8].

4. The Ottoman Period Women's Organizations

Being different concept of civil society in the Ottoman Empire depends on social differences. The civil society, which is developing depending on the differences of social class and property in the West, could not show the same

development process depending on the strong central authority in the Ottoman Empire.

In West Europe, very strong classes have their own values in the face of kings. These classes have kings to made what they want the extent of power. In the Ottoman Empire, state and society were the case of interwoven. It is not able to see that the intermediary institutions, which is in the sense that Hegel's definition between "center" consisted by state authority and "environment" created by the public sector in the Ottoman Empire. There is no movement area, which is independent of the central authority and also the component of civil society, which has property rights seen in West Europe. The Ottoman Empire consisted of public, who faithful and connected to sultan. [9]. The reason for this social structure, which is different from the West stemmed from the personal property, that is not developed depending on the lands belong to the state.

A lot of reform is made on behalf of modernization and the salvation of the state in the period of Tanzimat and Constitutional, the institutions received from the West have been tried to implement to the Ottoman Empire. Although these reforms would cause a reduction in the Sultan's authority, there is no decrease in the power of state authority and this situation has led to the strengthening of the bureaucracy.

Within the Ottoman political structure, the state has been become an institution of an omnipotent with becoming the strong of Sultan at first and afterwards the tradition of centralist-bureaucratic by reforms made. This case cause an obstacle to the emergence of classes, which have the basic elements of civil society such as the aristocracy and bourgeoisie seen in West Europe. [10]. The organizations such as association and guild, which can be thought the status of civil society in the Ottoman Empire, continued a process connected to the center and could not constitute unique position.

It seemed to quite difficult that can create a non-governmental organization by women in such a social structure. The intellectuals of Tanzimat period have seen as a necessity that receiving education women as required by modernization. Educated mothers will have a very important position when raising children that tomorrow's future. II. Constitutional was a period that understanding the paramount importance of girls as of both biological producers and main actors and the transmitter of culture in the ideological reproduction of the national community. In this period, separate courses were organized for girls. [11]. This idea has continued during the Republican period and still continues. Therefore, it is today still trying to increase education opportunities of women. The women who utilized educational facilities have begun to think that they have right to ask for more they have and this case formed the basis of women civil society organizations. Associations for women around the world were firstly established by men. This situation also is not different in the Ottoman Empire. The first established associations were founded by men on women's patronage. The founders of Kadınları Çalıştırma Cemiyet-i İslamiyesi, which formed the patronage of Enver Pasha's wife " devletlü ismetli Naciye Sultan", are Enver, who is a Deputy of Commander-in-chief and Minister of War, İsmail Hakkı, who is Undersecretary of Minister of War, Salah Cimcoz, who is a Deputy of Minister of War, Mehmed Arif and Mehmed Selahattin who are the Attorney. [12].

The problem of educating women, which is outstanding with Tanzimat, spreads to the other areas further more actively after II. Constitutional. The authors from various thoughts have done studies on women's issues in this period. The women trained in big cities have started to work for change the traditional status of Ottoman woman. Woman's associations started to be established in this period, traditional status of women was began to questioning with works such as the publications, panel, symposium, conference for women. After the Law on Associations adopted in 1909, the women also find an opportunity to establish associations that includes their own activities. [13]. Women's associations opened in this period have opened courses to learning read-write of the women, increasing the level of cultural, upgrading their position in society and family all kinds of works are known as task to raise awareness of women in the women's magazines that published by them.

Although most of these associations are charitable purpose, also a part of them was also

witnessed the emergence of a large number of qualified feminist women's organizations. All of these organizations are also aimed at the improvement of the situation of women; training of women, the creation of job opportunities for them, the modernization of their dress and lifestyle, and so on.

The women, who benefit from the Law on Associations adopted in 1909, have established associations that serving for different purposes. Serpil Çakır has divided associations established between 1909 and 1923 into eight different categories in her study associated with woman associations. [14].

4.1. Benevolent Associations:

Şefkat-i Nisvan, Osmanlı Kadınları Şefkat Cemiyet-i Hayriyesi, Hizmet-i Nisvan, Asker Ailelerine Yardım Cemiyeti.

The purpose of benevolent associations is to help embattled, poor or lonely women and their children. To provide a financial assistance, they have organized events such as sweepstake or bazaar. Similar Compassion associations were established in İstanbul, Konya, Samsun and Edirne. Moreover, women of various religious communities in Ottoman society have established their own associations.

4.2. The Associations, Which Give İmportance to Education of Woman, Which Aiming at Creating the Solution to the Problem of Livelihood:

Cemiyet-i Hayriye-i Nisvaniye, Osmanlı Türk Hanımları Esirgeme Derneği, Şefkat Pazarı, Osmanlı Kadınları Çalıştırma Cemiyet-i İslamiyesi.

These associations, beyond providing financial assistance aiming to produce lasting solutions to women's problems, focused on the issues of lack of education of women, emphasized on the importance of learning a profession and have made attempts in this direction. Cemiyet-i Hayriye-i Nisvaniye; the studies have been done for ensuring that girls being sent to school, making up the deficiencies of the existing school and opening new schools. The Association of Ottoman Turkish Lady Protection established in 1913 aims to help

families and women remaining the orphans and poor after the result of war. It has opened an arthouse, where the courses such as tailoring, handicrafts and so on being taught to orphan women and girls. The association named as Osmanlı Kadınları Çalıştırma Cemiyeti-i İslamiyyesi, which has members of man, also made various activities to create employment areas for women; established factories where women work; mediated to joined the armed services as a volunteer and found various jobs for women.

4.3. The Associations Aimed at Culture:

Asri Kadın Cemiyeti, Osmanlı Kadınları Terakkiperver Cemiyeti, Nisvan-ı Heyet-i Edebiyesi, Osmanlı İttihad-ı Nisvan Cemiyeti, Teali Nisvan Cemiyeti, Kırmızı-Beyaz Kulübü.

Teali Nisvan Cemiyeti was established by Halide Edip and her friends had a classroom that organizing conferences regularly, also giving a literacy courses. These associations aimed at inform the women and train culturally.

4.4. The Associations Aimed at Finding a Solution to the Problems of Country:

Ma'mûlat-I Dahiliyye İstihlâki Milli Kadınlar Cemiyet-i Hayriyyesi.

These associations, which take the road from the disorder of economics and the necessity to use domestic goods, installed a mission to women on this topic. They have provided job opportunities to women in the workshops that made military production in wartime.

4.5. Women's Associations of Political Parties:

İttihat Terakki Cemiyeti Kadınlar Şubesi, Teali-i Vatan Osmanlı Hanımlar Cemiyeti, Osmanlı Kadınları Terakkiperver Cemiyeti.

İttihat ve Terakki Cemiyeti has opened a branch of women in line with its own ideology, besides establishing associations like Teâli-i Vatan Osmanlı Hanımlar Cemiyeti, Osmanlı Kadınları Terakkiperver Cemiyetii has organized events and conferences. Women, who are the members, are involved in political studies, they have undertaken a variety of secret

tasks such as the distribution of newspapers, letters.

4.6. Feminist Women's Associations:

Osmanlı Müdâfaa-i Hukuk-ı Nisvan Cemiyeti.

In this period, the only association that is the tendency of feminist has been Osmanlı Müdafaa-i Hukuk-ı Nisvan Cemiyeti founded by the publication named of Kadınlar Dünyası. The aim of the association has been defined as ensuring women's participation in social life and working life. For this purpose, a struggle has been started against the tradition, which encompassing and restricting the women, inequality, lack of education and the necessity of a social revolution was defended.

4.7. Women's Associations Towards the Defense of Country:

Nisvan-ı Osmaniye İmdad Cemiyeti, Hilâl-i Ahmer Cemiyeti Hanımlar Heyeti, Müdâfaa-i Milliye Hanımlar Heyeti, Anadolu Kadınları Müdâfaa-i Vatan Cemiyeti. Donanma Cemiyeti, Müdâfaa-i Milliye Cemiyeti, Müdafaa-i Milliye Kadınlar Heyeti.

The associations were established with the aim of helping to front in wartime and after. The women, who are the member of these associations, have made nursing behind the front one hand; they have collected donations for the army on the other hand. They have organized various protests and demonstrations and have participated in the roof of Anadolu Müdafaa-i Hukuk Cemiyeti during the independence war.

4.8. Women's Association Political Purposes:

The first foundations of the associations of "Kadın Halk Fırkası" and "Kadınlar Birliği", which will be established in the Republican period, put forward in this period.

After the Constitutional was declared, women have applied the center of İttihat ve Terakki Cemiyeti with the request of monitoring the opening meeting of the council; they said they would make a demonstration in front of the council if this permission is not given them.

Women, who maintain Women's Movement in this period, will interested in a more active manner with politics after the establishment of the new Assembly when National Liberation War ends. Indeed, women headed by Nezihe Muhittin will establish " Kadınlar Halk Fırkası" in 1923. However, this party will be shut down due to it is not recognize the right to elect and be elected and the permission to establish an association gives to them. In 15 June 1923, "Kadınlar Birliği" established, Nezihe Muhittin has been assigned the presidency of the association. Association has fitted into the issue of the lack of women's right to choose and strongly criticized this subject. It wanted the right to vote for women in congress organized in İstanbul and has decided to participate in local elections. Association, who cannot get a result on this issue, wanted to put a man in elections in their name but it has also failed. Nonetheless despite all this, they have continued their efforts about to be given women the right to elect and be elected. [15]. [16]

5. Conclusion

Women established many associations after II. Constitutional and have demonstrated their sensitivity to the problems of the country. They tried to show themselves on issues such as training their fellow, war and politics. They come across obstacles at times but they are not giving up and keep trying.

Turkish Woman as is seen, are not accept unconsciously a number of rights granted to them by government as it stated in the our traditional historiography, are not women who living knowing what to do. Turkish Women's Movement, born of social necessity, gone through a very long process and beyond being a formation that women bring to today with their efforts has taken its place in history as a milestone of civil society movements in Turkish society. Women's Movement is a civil society movement in itself and has pioneered to the civil society movements in our country.

Women such as Halide Edip, Fatma Aliye, Suat Derviş grown up in the Ottoman era, they were not content themselves with the education they received and they use the means at hands to reach more women. In this period, women have

built a large number of associations, some of these aimed at help, some for employment, some has been training purposes, associations and foundations are established many for different areas. The first samples of the formation of the NGO, which made leadership in the Ottoman Empire, are given by the women. Women are not in a movement against the state in this period, they have involved in an activity to corrective the status of their fellow.

References

[1] S. Agacinski, Cinsiyetler Siyaseti, çev. İ. Yerguz, Ankara, Dost Kitabevi Yayınları, 1998, p.103.

[2] M. Türköne, Siyaset, Lotus Yayınevi, Ankara, 2003, p.348.

[3] Türköne, ibid, p.348.

[4] Ö. Çaha, Sivil Kadın: Türkiye'de Sivil Toplum ve Kadın, Vadi Yayınları, Ankara, 1996, pp.22-23.

[5] Çaha, ibid, p.24-25.

[6] Çaha ibid, p.27.

[7] T.C. Başbakanlık Aile Araştırma Kurumu, Sosyo-Kültürel Değişme Sürecinde Türk Ailesi, I.Cilt, Ankara, 1992, p.198.

[8] Ş. Güzel, Tanzimat'tan Cumhuriyet'e Türkiye Ansiklopedisi, 4. Cilt, İletişim Yayınları, İstanbul, 1985, p.868.

[9] Ömer Çaha, "Osmanlı'da Sivil Toplum [Civil Society İn Ottoman Empire]", A.Ü. Siyasal Bilgiler Fakültesi Dergisi, Vol. 49, No. 3-4, Jan. 1994, pp. 79-99, p.83.

[10] Çaha, ibid, 1994, p.85.

[11] F. Üstel, "Makbul Vatandaş'ın Peşinde", İletişim Yayınları, İstanbul, 2004, p.113.

[12] Z. Toprak, Halk Fırkasından Önce Kurulan Parti; Kadınlar Halk Fırkası, Tarih ve Toplum, Sayı: 51, Mart 1988, p.26.

[13] Çaha, ibid, 1996, p.98-99.

[14] S. Çakır, "Osmanlı Kadın Dernekleri", Metis Yayınları, İstanbul, 1996, p.43-75.

[15] Çakır, ibid, p.43-75.

[16] Ş. Kurnaz, Cumhuriyet Öncesinde Türk Kadını (1839-1923). MEB Yayınları, İstanbul, 1992, p.11-138.

Information On The Social And Religious Life In Değirmendere According To The Written Patterns And Epitaphs On Degirmendere Gravestones

Res. Asst. Saliha Tanık
Gazi University Department of Art History
salihatanik@gmail.com, salihatanik@gazi.edu.tr

Abstract. Degirmendere is located by the seaside on the southern coast of the Gulf of İzmit and is an old town in Gölcük district in Kocaeli. This study aims at determining the importance of the gravestone epitaphs examined, in terms of their patterns and content.
All examples known in history can be found from the second quarter of XVIII. Century and the first quarter of XX. Century. 263 stones in Değirmendere Cemetery were examined.

Usually, Thuluth and Ta'lik scripts were used as the script types. As headings, we mostly come across the statement "Hüve'l-Bâki". In the epitaphs on the gravestones, there are requests for a recital of the Surah "al-Fatihah" as small phrases before the part where the date of death is engraved. The most common phrase is "Rûhuna Fâtiha".

The contents of the epitaphs provide information on the cultural, social and religious structure of Değirmendere. The causes of death were mentioned on 17 gravestones. The occupations people had relevant to the period can be inferred from the gravestones. . By classifying, we can divide the occupations into four different types: Military Class, Seamanship Class, Ilmiyyah and Religious Class. 66 of 230 gravestones contain family names and 79 of them have male and female names.

The identities, lineages, names, causes of death, diseases of the deceased, the prayers and requests from people that are engraved on the gravestones are crucially important in terms of our national folklore, since they are from the past of Kocaeli and describe the city, and they act as a culture shown as an example to the people, reflected on the stones.

Keywords: Gravestone, cemetery, pattern, script

Introduction

Degirmendere is located right by the seaside on the southern coast of the Gulf of İzmit and it is a district of Gölcük province. A public chaussee passes through the district. 65 % of the residents are vine growers, 30 % of them are factory workers and the others are government and military officers [1].

Nicomedes, a student of Aristoteles, who was one of the most valuable philosophers of Athens in the ancient Period, established Nicomedia, the city we now know as İzmit [2]. Compared to Nicomedia, most of the settlements on the southern and northern shores of Izmit Gulf have the characteristic of villages and are considerably small.

Degirmendere is a settlement that became prominent in the first cultural region. The fact that this cultural region containing Degirmendere is frequently encountered in the Ottoman archives and travel documents shows that this place was also populated in the Ottoman Era and was in extensive commercial activities with Istanbul [2].

With the information acquired from the epitaphs in the great cemetery, which is the central cemetery of Değirmendere, we can now learn the history of Değirmendere, the names people used, their family names, occupations, titles, cause of death, and the death rate of young people and children. The gravestones in Değirmendere, which was the residential address of the important people from the Sultanate and a crucial commercial settlement in the past, reflects every part of the environment the people were in and the cultural and social structures between XVIII. and XX. centuries, and provides incomparable information. These gravestones await our attention.

There are 263 gravestones in Değirmendere Cemetery. For 33 of the gravestones, two stones which are above the head and the feet were used. Because of a new road passing through the cemetery, a part of the special burial area stands on the other side of the road.

156 of 230 gravestones belong to men and 107 of them to women.

A. WRITTEN PATTERNS:

All of the gravestones had epitaphs covering the period between 18th and 20th centuries. Thuluth and Ta'lik scripts were used as the script types. There are 230 gravestones with epitaphs, 189 of them was written with the script type of Thuluth, 40 of them with Ta'lik and one of them with Naskh. Many examples of these types of scripts can be seen on the gravestones of XIX. century. Both straight and slanted lines were used. The epitaphs appear on the headstone. As headings, statements such as Ah Mine'l-Mevt (meaning, "Because of death"), Bâki, El-Bâki, Haze'l-Kabr, Hüve'l-Bâki, Hüve'l-Bâki-El Hallak, Hüve'l-Hayyü'l-Bâki, Hüve'l-Hayyu'l-Lâ Yemût, Hû (meaning "The Immutable, The Infinite, The Everlasting Allah") are written on the gravestones.

The last lines of the epitaphs contain various phrases, including El-fâtiha, Rûhiçün el-fatiha, Rûhiçün Fâtiha, Ruhiçün li'llahi'l-fâtiha, Ruhiçün rızaen el-fatiha, Ruhuna fatiha, Ruhuna el-fâtiha, Ruhuna rızaen lillahi'l fatiha (meaning Al-fatehah, Al fatehah to his/her soul; recite the surah Al-fatehah for his/her soul).

B- Specific Information Regarding Social and Religious Life in Değirmendere according to the Epitaphs on Gravestones

The occupation and hometown of the deceased and phrases of blessing and prayer can also be found in the epitaphs. Since Değirmendere is close to Istanbul, the administrative centre of the Ottoman Empire, various types of occupations were determined after the examination of these epitaphs.

Military Class:
1- Beşe
2- Alemdar
3- Karakullukçu
4- Yazıcı

5- Yeniçeri Çorbacısı
Military Ranks:
1- Mülazım
2- Silahşöran-ı Hassa

19 soldiers appear within the occupations of the deceased. 15 of them have the title of "Beşe". According to Burak Çetintaş, the title Beşe is one of the most encountered titles, alongside of the titles such as "agha", "pasha, "efendi" [3]. According to the dictionary, the title is used for the sons of the Schahs (Şehzade) and some senior government officials; and it is also used for the elder son of the Turkish tribes (aşiret). As a Janissary title, "Beşe", which we can encounter among the epitaphs on gravestones, is said to be the soldiers that were conscripted into the barracks as devshirmehs [4].

The title "Alemdar" is engraved on one of the gravestones. It is, according to the dictionary, the title used for the soldiers bearing the flag [5]. According to Uzunçarşılı, Alemdars are the officers bearing the flag containing the picture of zulfiqar [6].

The title "Karakullukçu" is identified on one of the gravestones. In reference to the dictionary, it means the company commander and the section sergeant of the millitary officers in the Jannisaries [5]. According to Uzunçarşılı, they are the private soldiers within the Janissary companies and sections [6, 236]. On one of the gravestones, a soldier having the title of "Mülazım" is addressed. In the dictionary, it is stated that they were the candidate military officers with the rank of second lieutenant [5, 151]. The title "Yazıcı" was mentioned in one of the epitaphs[1]. Referring to the dictionary, the description of "the privates or noncommissioned officers having the mission of scribing" is used for this term [6]. Another source states that a "yazıcı" is the person, who arranges the finances regarding the salaries and service payments for the Jannisarries and other soldiers within the army, and, who ensures the arrangement of the sharing of the ghanimahs after a military expedition [3, 52]. Another one of the persons mentioned in epitaphs is from

---

[1] A-183

"the Silahşöran-ı Hassa". This person is the special swordsman of the Padishah. In one of the epitaphs the term "Dergâh-ı Ali Yeniçeri Çorbacısı" is mentioned [3, 23]. Dictionary states that they were the newly conscripted devshirmehs to be brought up for the janissaries and the company commanders of the guild of jannisaries [5, 380]. According to Uzunçarşılı, a "Çorbacı" is the commander of the companies and sections of the army and the person responsible for the works and order of the persons under his command [7, 234].

Until today, forestry has been the most important source of income for the people living in and around Izmit. The existence of forests, described as the "sea of forests", fostered ship construction activities. Therefore, the occupation of seamanship transformed into a large commercial market and the people pursuing this occupation gathered in and around Izmit. Thus, we encounter graves of the people who engaged in seamanship.

Seamanship Class:
1-Seyirci
Titles of the Ranks of Seamanship:
1-Reis

People belonging in the Seamanship class are seen on 7 gravestones. Those people had the occupations and titles of "Seyirci" and "Reis". 6 of them owned the title of "Reis". Reis was the captain of the sailing ships such as galiots, bridge winged and single or two masted ships [3, 58]. According to the dictionary, A reis is the main captain of the sailing ships [8, 24] The term "seyirci" can be found on one of the gravestones. A seyirci was the person who followed and controlled the route while sailing. He was also responsible of keeping deck logs and other records [3, 51].

Religious Class:
1- Imam
2- Muezzin
Craftsmen:
1-Kantarcı
Ilmiyyah:
1-Hodja of a Mektab

"Imam" and "Muezzin" are within the religious class. Among occupations, "Kantarcı" from

tradesmen, and mektab hodjas from the class of ilmiyyah can be found.

Based on the occupations relaed to the Janissaries, we can conclude that the Jannissarries also lived in the places close to the Sultanate. By examining the gravestones in the Degirmendere Cemetery, we indeed encounter signs and symbols representing the specific Janissary sections in which the particular person belonged to. According to Çetintaş, not all Janissaries had gravestones, only ones who accomplished great things, showed success in the military expeditions, who grew old, were found valuable in the eyes of the ones in and around the palace, and the soldiers of low rank who possessed the above mentioned competences [3, 64].

With respect to the causes of death, usually the matters of health were indicated in the epitaphs on the gravestones in Değirmendere Cemetery. According to the information gathered, epidemics, which were present in the every corner of the Ottoman lands within this period, also affected Gölcük and its vicinities, causing the settlements to change. The plague, fever and the pox disease were the type of diseases mentioned on the gravestones in the Great Cemetery of Değirmendere, and they were the causes of death according to these statements in the epitaphs. However, based on the gravestones, there are no epitaphs on the gravestones mentioning large number of death cases within the same year. The reason of this is, according to the information received from those living close to the cemetery, that in 1985, approximately one thousand gravestones were used as packing materials for the bases during the construction of the wall surrounding the cemetery. Additionally, various causes of death such as deliberate murder, the grief of losing a child and childbirth were determined. The causes of death as well as their dates are given in the table below.

Table 1:

SEQUENCE NUMBER	STATEMENT	DATE
A-12, A-80, B-44, B-52	With God's will various diseases came upon my flesh My body couldn't find a cure and it caused my death	1854, 1914, 1851, 1881
A-146	By a villain's knife in Soğuksubaşı Before my time I put my head on death's pillow I could not sleep peacefully on my bed Couldn't live my youth, crying and moaning A thief took my sweet life	1901
A-148	Shahid by the plague	1819
A-174	With a bad disease he/she left woefully the ephemeral earth Dearest youth deceased because of the plague	1812
A-188	The fever burnt my body	1809
B-1	Abundant pain and suffering in the world and the third passing away The grief of lost child put this monument upon his/her head	1922
B-6, B-33	My life has passed, without finding recovery I came as a guest and could never be a host	1862, 1917
B-7	Gunpowder made me pass away at young age, longing	1840

	The plague has never shown me mercy Burnt and destroyed the body and went away	1819, 1819
B-8, B-30		
B-9	The pox separated me from my mother and father	1829
B-20	He/she relented and left the ephemeral earth Couldn't get married and left in his innocence	1826
B-51	He/she tried hard then suddenly Sent off swiftly to the Jannah	1886

In addition to the causes of death, the attention is drawn to the cases of death of the people at young ages. Even though the ages of them were generally not mentioned, we understand that some of the deceased were young when they died. Of the gravestones examined, we determined 44 of the deceased died young. Some of the clauses in these epitaphs are as stated below:

"I could not live my youth, let every soul cry for me"

"Could not live his/her young years, could not fulfil his/her wishes"

"At a young age he/she drank the sherbet of Shada"

"Dearest youth flew to the garden of youths"

"Dearest youth went to the garden of Jannah"

"Left the world at a young age"

"I had many dreams, my youth is gone."

On two of the gravestones, the age of death was mentioned. On the stone numbered B-10, the statement "Kadir of 20 years old, recite Al-fatihah to his soul" is engraved and on the stone numbered B-29 the clause "I had just turned ten years old" is written.

On the gravestones, no sign of a religious order or correspondingly, no statement regarding a religious association was found. Only on the gravestone numbered B-60, there is the title "Baba" before the name of the deceased. In addition, the titles "Agha", "Bey", "Çelebi", "Dai", "El-Hâcc", "Hacı", "Hafız", "Kurra", "Molla/Monla", "Seyyid" are also present on the gravestones of the male deceased. The titles of "Hace", "Hanım", "Hatun", "Kadın" and "Tuti" can be found among epitaphs of the gravestones belonging to the female deceased. The meaning of "Tuti" is an unmarried young woman.

The titles used to determine the status and position of the people in public are given in the Table below, as well as the date of their deaths:

Titles of the Males (Table 2)

SIRA NUMARASI	SIFATLAR	TARİH
A-1, A-15, A-16, A-20, A-63, A-72, A-73, A-74, A-81, A-87, A-88, A-92, A-96 A-102, A-107, A-111, A-113, A-129, A-133, A-141, A-142, A-143, A-145, A-158, A-178, B-1, B-3, B-6, B-7, B-15, B-17, B-18, B-23, B-24, B-25, B-30, B-31,B-33, B-34, B-49, B-50, B-58, B-61, B-63, B-65, B-68	Ağa	1848, 1875, 1810, 1797, 1825, 1840, 1814,1858, 1891, 1853, 1886, 1813, 1812, 1837, 1750, 1778, 1797,1843, 1812, 1856, 1870, 1894, 1837, 1795, 1809,1922, 1865, 1862, 1840, 1783, 1797, 1826, 1784, 1791, 1792, 1819, 1824, 1917, 1825, 1861, 1886, 1749, 1769, 1779, 1762, 1778
B-60	Baba	1768
A-188, B-28	Bey	1809, 1815
A-50, A-109, A-187, B-26	Çelebi	1737, 1715, 1709,
B-13, B-44	Dai	1778, 1851
A-78, A-80, A-89, A-136, A-144, A-146, A-194, A-195, A-197, B-4, B-12, B-14, B-48, B-53, B-55,	Efendi	1912, 1914, 1917, 1771, 1919, 1901, 1773, 1812, 1841, 1878, 1918, 1812, 1892, 1881, 1925
A-20, A-78, A-100, B-17	El-Hacc	1797, 1912, 1717, 1797
A-3, A-64, A-92, A-141, A-142, A-143, A-146, B-6, B-58	Hacı	1842, 1735, 1813, 1856, 1870, 1894, 1901, 1862, 1749
A-78, A-89	Hafız	1912, 1917,
A-55	Kurra	1761
A-140	Molla	1819
A-55, A-58, A-65, A-66, A-75, A-108, A-110, A-130, A-138, A-189	Monla	1761, 1743, 1810, 1740, 1813, 1858, 1764,1890, 1762, 1802
A-14, A-48, A-108, A-109, A-110, A-111, A-133, A-139, A-141, A-145, B-4, B-6, B-7, B-18, B-22, B-23, B-24, B-26, B-27, B-28, B-29, B-30, B-31, B-34, B-60, B-61, B-63, B-65, B-68	Seyyid	1839, 1808, 1858, 1715, 1764, 1778, 1812, 1813, 1856, 1837, 1878, 1862, 1840, 1826, 1813, 1784, 1791, 1809, 1815,1824, 1819,1824,1825, 1768, 1769,1779,1762, 1778

Titles of the Females: (Table 4)

SIRA NUMARASI	SIFATLA	TARİH
A-49	Hace	1807
A-8, A-27, A-47, A-67, A-79, A-83, A-85, A-101, A-151, A-165, A-198, B-2, B-9, B-20, B-46, B-51, B-52, B-54	Hanım	1805, 1840, 1824, 1884, 1900, 1856, 1841, 1810, 1906, 1836, 1919, 1923, 1829, 1826, 1912, 1886, 1881, 1900
A-12, A-13, A-17, A-21, A-52, A-61, A-76, A-77, A-99, A-114, A-116, A-121, A-123, A-125, A-127, A-156, A-157, A-16O, A-170, A-182, B-19, B-39, B-45, B-57, B-62, B-67	Hatun	1854, 1840, 1810, 1797, 1783, 1761, 1794, 1826, 1837,1773, 1773, 1797, 1821, 1821, 1827, 1834, 1811, 1895, 1778, 1786, 1821, 1799, 1818, 1774, 1773, 1778
A-2, A-18, A-19, A-24, A-26, A-44, A-45, A-49, A-90, A-104, A-105, A-112, A-117, A-159, A-172, A-192, B-36, B-40, B-41, B-42, B-59	Kadın	1849, 1778, 1778, 1781, 1764, 1761, 1741, 1807, 1714, 1779, 1749, 1759, 1774, 1759, 1768, 1800, 1749, 1813, 1740, 1819, 1755
A-43, A-106, B-38, B-66	Tuti	1761, 1758, 1791, 1779

As variety, 40 different female names are set out in the Catalogue. Because of the fact that two of the stones were broken and abraded, the name part was not readable. For females, there

are also 13 double names. On the other hand, there are 39 different male names, and 11 double names. The most commonly used names between 18th and 20th centuries were Ahmed (Ahmad), Aişe (Aisha), Ali, Hadice, Halil, Ibrahim, Mehmed, Mustafa and Şerife (Sharifa).

We determined 66 family names. The reasons of the origination of those people's family names are the places their ancestors came from, the religion of their lineage, their social titles and occupations. A district in Izmit bears one of these names: Döngel District. Some of these given names and family names are still present today. The family names such as "Kuzu", "Belgızoğlu", "Kabaoğlu" can be given as examples.

COMPARISON AND ASSESSMENT:

We have examined a total of 263 gravestones in the central cemetery in Degirmendere. For 33 of these gravestones, both the headstones and the stones above the feet were examined. As written patterns, we can see Thuluth and Ta'lik scripts, which are also commonly encountered in various regions of Anatolia.

We mostly come across the heading "Hüve'l-Bâki" on the gravestones. This phrase emphasizes the infiniteness of Allah, and it was used on 78 of the 230 gravestones bearing epigraphs. We also come across the phrase on the gravestones in different regions of Anatolia. In the Burial Area of the Muradiye Mosque in Edirne, 36 of 113 gravestones contains this phrase, which is the most common one in the burial area [9, 298]. For example, it is on 35 gravestones in Edicik, Balıkesir [10, 29-85], and in Boyabat, Sinop, 47 of 84 headstones contains this statement [11]. Among the gravestones in the Archaeological Museum in Sinop, 33 of 57 bear the phrase [12, 265]. Also in the cemetery among the coastline in Giresun, the phrase "Hüve'l-Bâki" is seen on 63 gravestones [13, 394]. On the other hand, we also encounter phrases such as "Ah Mine'l-Mevt, Bâki, El-Bâki, Haza'l-Kabr, Hüve'l-

Bâki, Hüve'l-Bâki-El Hallak, Hüve'l-Hayyü'l-Bâki, Hüve'l-Hayyu'l-Lâ Yemût, Hû".

In the epitaphs on the gravestones, there are requests for a recial of the surah "al-Fatihah" as small phrases. These requests are present on 210 of the 230 gravestones with epitaphs. The most common phrase is "Rûhuna Fâtiha", covering between 18th and 20th centuries. The phrase "Rûhuna Fâtiha" is also encountered in many different places of Anatolia. In the Burial Area of Ferhatpaşa Mosque in Kastamonu, "Rûhuna Fâtiha" is the most commonly used phrase on the gravestones [14, 319]. "Ruhuna Fâtiha" is also the most common statement written on the gravestones in the Archaeological Museum in Sinop [12, 280].

The cause of death is stated on 17 of the gravestones. According to these examples, 6 of the deceased died of disease, one of them was murdered deliberately, 4 of them passed away because of the plague, one of them died from fever, one of them died due to the grief of losing a child, one of them died because of gunpowder, one of them died from pox, and two of them died during childbirth. In the burial area of Kastamonu, the cause of death was mentioned on 5 of the gravestones [15, 45]. The epitaphs on 11 gravestones in the Archaeological Museum in Sinop contained the cause of death [12, 272].

From the epitaphs, we also acquire information on the social structure of the region. Thanks to these epitaphs, we get information on the occupations of the region in the relevant period. By classifying, we can divide the occupations into four different types: Military Class (Beşe, Alemdar, Karakullukçu, Mülazım, Yazıcı, Silahşöran-ı Hassa, Çorbacı), Seamanship Class (Reis, Seyirci), Ilmiyyah (Mektab Hodja), Religious Class (Imam and Muezzin).

It is possible to find information about the occupations of the deceased on the gravestones located in different areas of Anatolia. In the Burial Area of the Muradia Mosque in Edirne, the most common occupations mentioned on the gravestones are gümrük kâtibi (meaning customs clerk), kâtip (clerk, scribe), sheikh, imam. On two of them, the occupation

"muezzin" is stated [9, 308]. In Giresun, the most common occupation written on the gravestones is "scribe". 6 of them contains of the title of "beşe", 5 of them has the title of "reis". Of 27 occupations written on the gravestones in Boyabat, Sinop, most of them are the officers within the palace [11, 167]. In Göynük, Bolu, they were classified into military, territorial, ilmiyyah and craftsmanship occupations. The most common are the regents (on 5 gravestones) and imams (4 gravestones) [16].

The names and families are important elements that can be found on the gravestones. 39 of 230 gravestones contained male first names. According to the gravestones, the most common name is "Ali". Of 40 different female first names used in the epitaphs, the name "Aişe" is the most commonly used female name.

66 of 230 headstones include family names. These family names belong to 18th and 19th centuries.

Result: The gravestones dated between 18th and 20th centuries have importance in Değirmendere, a small settlement of both the Ottoman period and of today. In addition to the material properties of and the patterns on the gravestones, the epitaphs give information on the social and religious structure of Degirmendere during that period. They are in the position of important warranty deeds of the region. Some of the gravestones were damaged due to breakage and abrasion. Some of them are not on the place they are supposed to stand, but they are left leaning on trees or the surrounding wall. Some of them lay on the ground. By conducting the required work, the gravestones which are in good condition can be preserved and an outdoor museum can be opened.

References

[1] A.N. Galitekin, Gölcükte Tarihçe ve Kültür Mirası Eserleri, Gölcük: Gölcük Belediyesi Kültür Yayınları (*History and Cultural Artifacts of Gölcük*. Gölcük: Cultural Publications of Gölcük Municipality) 2005.

[2] Gölcük Belediyesi, *Tarihte Gölcük& Gölcük'te Tarih. Gölcük*: Gölcük Belediyesi Kültür Yayınları (*Gölcük in History& History in Gölcük*. Gölcük: Cultural Publications of Gölcük Municipality) (2014).

[3] B. Çetintaş, *1453'ten 1928'e Kadar İstanbul'da Gömülmüş Türk Denizcilerinin Mezar Taşları*. İstanbul: Deniz Kuvvetleri Komutanlığı Kültür Yayınları (*The Gravestones of Turkish Sailors Buried in Istanbul from 1453 to 1928*. Istanbul: Cultural Publications of the Turkish Naval Force) 2009.

[4] N. İşli, *Yeniçeri Mezartaşları*, İstanbul: Turkuaz Yayınları (*Janissary Gravestones*, Istanbul: Turkuaz Publications) 2006.

[5] O. Yeniaras, *Tarih Deyimleri ve Terimleri Sözlüğü*, Ankara: Akçağ Basım (*Dictionary of Historical Phrases and Terms,* Ankara: Akçağ Publications) 2012.

[6] M.E.B. *Örnekleriyle Türkçe Sözlük*. İstanbul: Milli Eğitim Bakanlığı Yayınları. 3174 (*Turkish Dictionary with Examples*. Istanbul: Ministry of National Education Publications) 2000.

[7] İ.H. Uzunçarşılı, *Osmanlı Devleti Teşkilâtından Kapıkulu Ocakları* I. Ankara: TTK (*Kapıkulu Guilds in Ottoman Troops* I. Ankara: TTK) 1988.

[8] M.Z. Pakalın, *Osmanlı Tarih Deyimleri Ve Terimleri Sözlüğü*, İstanbul: M.E.B (*Dictionary of Historical Prases and Terms of Ottomans,* Istanbul: Ministry of National Education) 2004.

[9] C. Kuşaklı and Y.C. Kuşaklı, *Edirne Muradiye Camisi Haziresi Mezar Taşları*. Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Gazi Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Ankara (*Gravestones in the Burial Area of Muradiye Mosque in Edirne*. Unpublished Post-graduate Thesis, Gazi University Institute of Social Sciences, Ankara) 2015.

[10] A. Tüfekçioğlu, *Edincik'te Türk Devri Mimarisi ve Mezar Taşları*. Bursa: Edincik Belediyesi Kültür Yayınları (*Architecture*

and Gravestones during the Turkish Era in Edincik. Bursa: Cultural Publications of Edincik Municipality) 2005.

[11] H. Çal, *Boyabat Mezar Taşları*. Ankara: Boyabat Belediyesi Kültür Yayınları Yayınları (*Boyabat Gravestones*. Ankara: Cultural Publications of Boyabat Municipality) 2015.

[12] Ö. Yeni, *Sinop Arkeoloji Müzesi'nde Sergilenen Türk-İslam Dönemi Mezar Taşları*. Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisan Tezi. Selçuk Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Konya (*Gravestones of Tukish-Islamic Period displayed at the Archaeological Museum in Sinop.* Unpublished Post-Graduate Thesis, Selçuk University, Institute of Social Sciences, Konya) 2009.

[13] G. İltar, *Giresun İli Sahil Şeridindeki Osmanlı Mezar Taşları.* Yayımlanmış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Gazi Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Ankara (*Ottoman Gravestones on the Coastline of the City of Giresun.* Unpublished Post-graduate Thesis, Gazi University, Institute of Social Sciences, Ankara) 2005.

[14] B. Gündoğan, *Kastamonu Ferhat Paşa Camisi Haziresi Mezar Taşları*. Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Gazi üniversitesi,Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Ankara (*Gravestones in the Burial Area of the Ferhat Pasha Mosque in Kastamonu.* Unpublished Post-graduate Thesis, Gazi University, Institute of Social Sciences, Ankara) 2007.

[15] H. Çal and Ö. Ataoğuz, *Kastamonu Atabey Gazi Camisi ve Türbesi Hazirelerindeki Mezar Taşları*. Ankara: Kastamonu Belediyesi. 45 (Gravestones in the Burial Area of Atabey Gazi Mosque and Mausoleum in Kastamonu. Ankara: Kastamonu Municipality. 45) 2008.

[16] H. Çal, *Göynük (Bolu) Şehri Türk Mezar Taşları*, Vakıflar Dergisi, XXX. Ankara. 295-383 (*Turkish Gravestones in the City of Göynük (Bolu),* Vakıflar Journal, XXX. Ankara. 295-383) 2007.

Decorative Features In The Ottoman Structure In Georgia Adjara

Selçuk Seçkin
Asst. Prof.,
Department of History of Art, Faculty of Sciences and Letters,
Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University, Istanbul, Turkey, *
selcukseckin@gmail.com

Abstract:

At our study dating from june to august 2015 within 22 days' program of our field survey in Adjara Region/Georgia was categorized in general terms the buildings dating back to Ottoman Empire period.Afterwards evaluated the decorative items including the materials, technique used in these building types.Besides it was made an analysis on the most important examples in hand. Finally it was compared with similiar type buildings located on the border of Turkish Republic considering both construction and decoration characteristics of the buildings concerned.

Keywords: Ottoman, Georgia, Adjara, Architecture, Wooden Architecture

Introduction

Georgia is located in the lands of Caucassia where settled down many different cultures in the past. When analyzed the faith characteristics of the region it's clearly seen that local people were christianized strating by the early ages of christianity when firstly the Sainte Nino introduced them the christian faith(died 338 A.D).Muslim attacks to the region began in the period of Chaliph Omar. The first contact with Turks began in means of Abbaside Dynasty when the Turks were employed as paid soldiersat the service of Chaliph. In the course of time The leaders of Seldjucks Alparslan and Meliksah organized expedition to the region several times to gain ascendence over the local clans but they were capable to rebel easily and incessantly to the senior authority by taking the advantage of the mountainious structure of the region. [1] [2]

The Georgians lived the most brilliant period under the reign of The Queen Tamara. As Georgia region is twilight area between Anatolia and Iran in the later ages was turned into a targeted location of the expeditions over Anatolian and Iranian lands.The Ottoman period began by the conquest of Sohumi district by Ottoman Navy in 1455 in Georgia. The Ottoman ascendence on Georgian lands was expanded and developed after the conquest of Trabzon continued by conquering Batumi in 1479. In the 16. century took place the struggle of population between Persians and Ottomans in Georgia lands. At the begining of 19 century the Russian ascendance gained over the Georgians went on for ages. After the the revolution in 1917 Georgia survived by taking part in the Socialist regime as a republic member of the Soviet Union. When the union was over declared its independance in 1991. [3] [4] [5] [6]

At our study concerned due to the Ottoman administrative structure in the 16. century Adjara District was temporarily relied on Erzurum State then it's found out that it took part in Trabzon state as "sancak".Due to the archves dated 17 century define Batumi and Trabzon as a single united state.Before "tanzimat"reforms Batumi and its surroundings was shared between Cildir and Trabzon states. The settlements relied on

Cildir state are as follows:Upper Adjara, Bottom Adjara,Cürüksu,Macahel,Livane,Imertev,Savsat and Ardanuc whereas the villages close to Batumi town center,the villages in Maradit under the name of Gönye "sancak " were relied on Trabzon state.In this period was done a population censusin Batumi and its surroundings(Gönye,coastal villages of Batumi population census documentary book in number 1170,1830/1846)After "tanzimat"reforms was declared state administrative method in the rural administartive system of Ottoman empire was replaced with provincial administrative method.The administration of Batumi and its surroundings was united under the province(sancak) of Lazistan and Batumi was declared as the administrative city of the province.In the period of Abdulaziz the mayor of Trabzon Emin Muhlis Pasha had a mosque built named Aziziye and devoted to Sultan Abdulaziz in Batumi.The city was abandoned to the hands of Russian authority with its free trade authority status and sustained the status concerned until 1886.Batumi was developed after the railway between Baku-Tiflis-Batumi was built.In 1900 when the pipeline between Baku-Batumi was furnished the city turned into the most important petrol harbour of the Russians on Black Sea coast In the course of time Russian domain in the region was turned into an ascendance. Several Georgian muslims were under the compulsion of the Russians to migrate in convoy to Anatolia which permited them to bring their own tradition with them. [7] [8] [9] [10] [11] [12] [13]

Fig.1- Adjara Map

2. Architectural Features [14] [15]

When categorized architectural monuments dating back to Ottoman period in Adjara/Georgia firstly you meet the mosques which are classified in 3 groups:
1)a)The mosques in big dimension
b)Stone built mosques
c)wooden mosques.
The other Ottoman building types are as follows:
2)The schools
3)Fountains
4)Headstones/graveyards
5)Baths
6)Castle yard settlements

Fig. 2- Batumi (19th Century?)

I)Batumi Orta Mosque(1866)

15,80 by 16,60 m. İn size almost square plan shaped.Inside the mosque in the harim section the dome is standing over 4 independent round sectional columns.On the ceiling layout system apart from the dome in the middle 8 different roofing elements placed on the top. Once passed throuh the main entrance leading to the courtyard you meet the narthex(son cemaat yeri) section expanded in convex shape towards the courtyard. in west-east axis of the side walls opened the other two entrance gates leading to the courtyard. The minaret with its square shape base remains on the left of the main entrance.The mosque is illiminated by 37 windows in rectengular and round shape,alternatively placed in row.In the harim section the wooden ladies upper gallery with floating outlook standing over 6 wooden feet,

mihrab, minber, vaiz kürsüsü are original.When analyzed the organic relation and structure it's found out that the son cemaat yeri(narthex) was joint to the main building in the later period.

Fig 3-5. Batumi Orta Mosque

II)Ghorjami Mosque

On the eastern side of the building above the door defined the construction date as 1320/1902-1903 on the inscription board.Due to the decorative items on its mihrab and minber it dates back to a later period. Chronologically the secondary ornamental patterns of the building gives the decorative characteristics of 20 century.Therefore it might be the restoration date marked on the inscription board.The mosque in dimension 21 by 20 m. appears with a different plan shape;harim section is covered with a big size, 4 polygonal sectioned roofing systemstanding over 12 independent columns.Every columniation system is divided in square shape sections and 5 of them are covered in dome,4 of them are covered in wooden umbiculus ceiling.Every ceiling section is seperately ornamented.The wooden upper gallery spared for the ladies overlooking harim

side,mihrab,minber and the doors are covered in decorative discs.The idea of Friday mosque is considered in building the mosque as it's the assembling point of the prayers coming from 7 villages located nearby.Due to the conversation made with the priest of the mosque a special timber kind called "Tela" wood brought from Chuntaria District is used in the construction of the building.

Fig 6-7. Ghorjami Mosque

III)Kobuleti(Çürüksu)Mosque

There is lack of information on construction date of the building.Now it's serving as a musée,in Soviet Union periodit was used as a ballet school.It's built over a high platform,the façade is embellished in neoclassical style opened on both side ways two more seperate entrance gates apart from the main one.The interior section is furnished completely in diffrerent style.Neoclassical style influence appears on the façade of the side walls of the building resembling ornamental façade layout in Teşvikiye Mosque built in 1854 by Abdülmecid; presumably it was built by the end of 19 century.

Fig.8. Kobuleti(Çürüksu)Mosque

2) Stone Built Mosques

The buidings based on stone material in construction.

Fig 9. Khutsubani Mosque

I)Khutsubani Mosque

Above the main entrance gate located the inscription board marked the construction date as 1340/1923.It served as a store in the Soviet Unionperiod. In the middle of the roofing system a dome standing over 4 round sectioned independent columns. The main entrance side made of hewn stone reveals decorative layout surrounding the windows.the wooden ladies' upper gallery was built recently.Because of the building's humidity problem it's found out that partially surface of the inner walls fall off.

Fig. 10. Khulo Mosque

II)Khulo Mosque

It appears with a different plan shape.It's known that it dates back to the end of 19 century or the beginning of 20 century. When it burned entirely down in 1925-30 it was renovated toroughly due to the information given by the local prayers of the mosque.It was used as a nitrogen store in Soviet Union period. In 1991 the roof of the building was moved out with metal pipes to be restored when restored opened to service again.The cemetery is located just adjacent to the mosque.

Fig 11. Maradidi Mosque

III)Maradidi Mosque

Due to the inscription on the forehead of mihrab it was built in 1330/1914-15 .The junction corners are made of hewn stone ,the other side walls are formed with debris stone Due to the conversation made with the local prayers of the mosque mihrab stone was brought from Borçka. The mosque in dimension 11,5 by 11,5 m was recently restored.

3)Wooden Mosques

The most common mosque type,generally built on the slope of steep lands in order to gain more space. The space gained in the basement is built with hewn stone to provide a plane platform for the mosque.There are a few examples among the basement types made of hewn stone with a fireplace.The basement of the mosque is served for different purposes like school, priest residence or if it's not big enough it is used as a strore room.The staircase of a wooden mosque in original situation with circular form leading to partly open narthex(son cemaat yeri) is opening to a wooden ornamented door the superior part of which is narrowed.The surface of the architectural elements of the harim section like mihrab,minber,vaiz kürsüsü are decorated.Harim section is generally surrounded on 3 sides by u shaped upper galler of the ladies.This gallery is enlarged enclosing the narthex(son cemaat yeri)on the top.It is standing over round shaped columns the side of which overlooking mihrab direction has got an elliptic(oval) shape.The name of the master or the construction date of the building applied on the surface of the upper ladies gallery overlooking mihrab direction is embellished with wooden decorative discs fixed with thin nails driven on its surface.From outside it gives a pitched roof outlook but in some examples built a dome as second layer roofing system inside.In some other examples you find out the wooden dome made of different ceiling layers incrusted each other and their surface is embellished with floral patterns.The minarets of the large sacled mosques are new.The mosques and their expanded platform giving an outlook of balconcy with wooden minarets ,ezan stone none of these architectural elements concerned could survive in original.

Fig 12-20. Wooden Mosque Architectural Details
(Draw. H. Karpuz)
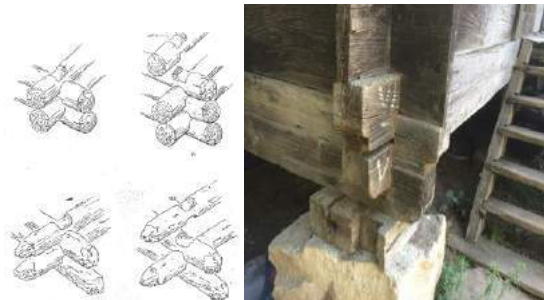
Fig. 21-27 Akho Mosque Architectural Details

I)Akho Mosque

The mosque located in Keda region the exterior side of which is covered in corrugated metal sheets.The glyphic door leading us firstly to narthex(con cemmat yeri)then to the harim section.The ladies upper gallery is slightly curved towards mihrab direction.This galley surrounding 3 sides of harim section inside is standing over ribbed wooden columns with an outlook of antiquity.

The forehead of minber is divided in rectengular shaped frames on each of which applied the composition the life tree coming out of a vase.At the corner of the minber's entrance the seal of Soliman marked and on the top placed the paintings of a sword in "Zülfikar" form ornamented with colorfull flower patterns.There exists an inscription borad inside "mihrab"indicating that it was build in 1233/1819.The ladies gallery overlooking harim section is embellished with specially shaped decorative discs. Ornamental patterns in "empire style" applied on minber moreover the bottom is painted with floral patterns and varnished.

Fig. 28. Akho Mekteb/Madrasah (school)

Fig. 29. Shubani Mekteb/Madrasah (school)

Fig 30. Gogadzeebi Mekteb/Madrasah (school)

The other building type different from the mosques are the schools. They might be located either near the mosque or in the basement of the mosque or the narthex of the mosque is partially served as a school.If evaluated as an independent building it gives an impression of a wooden house.There some school examples with many classrooms on the right side of their door openining to a corridor but the most common type is the one with a single classroom.There are some original school examples in Akho,Shubani.

Fig.31. Nigazeuli Mosque's Shadirvan

Fig.32. Kidzinitzeebi Mosque's Fountain

As a water related buildings fountains built near the mosques there exist an original example located in Nigazeuli.The other one in Kidzinitzeebi whose pieces carried away after being numerized then combined again after the restoration.The other building type is the bath.Two examples survived in the town centre of Batumi.They are not serving as a bath any more after the restoration;one remained insdie of a hotel,the other is closed at present.

Fig 31-32. 1. Hamam(bath) in Batumi

Fig 34.Khulo Cemetery

Fig.33. 2. Hamam(bath) in Batumi

The majority of the mosques in Adjara region remain in a cemetery defined as a village cemetry where burried down together both the muslims and the christians.In our land survey it's found out many headstones with Ottoman calligraphy on and they are photographed.Most of them are hidden in the bushes.The headstones adjacent to Khulo Mosque surrounded by high walls figuring out a family cemetery indices remained under invasion of plantation.

Fig 35. Examples of tombstones in Adjara

As a castleyard settlement example Gonio is the one surrounded by city walls which could survive.Many ceramic materials and ringlets discovered dating to Ottoman period in the excavations.Garrison,bath,aquaduct are the other Ottoman period ruins in complementary building category of the castle yard. [16] [17]

Fig 36. Ottoman Garrison and Mosques in Gonio

Fig 37-38. Ottoman Bath in Gonio

Conclusion

The building types mentioned above in Adjara Region similar examples of which you can find in many districts of Black Sea Region of Turkey.Also in Western Anatolia Region like Denizli you can see similar construction techniques used in wooden mosque architecture.Moreover you meet the similar ornamental aptterns applied in Black Sea Region,Denizli, Konya, Afyon city and other several buildings built or restored in westernization period. [18]… [34]

Fig 39-40. Decorations in Mosques Adjara

Fig 41. Turkey/Samsun Bekdemir Mosque

Fig 42. Turkey/Konya Bozkır Hisarlık Mosque (H. Karpuz)

Fig. 43. Turkey/Denizli, Akköy, Belenardıç Köyü (D. Şener)

Fig 44. Turkey/Denizli, Baklan, Boğaziçi Kasabası, Eski Cami (Ş. Çakmak)

Fig. 45.Turkey/Afyon, Dazkırı, İdris Köyü Camii (D. Şener)

Fig. 45. Turkey/Yağlıdere Tekke Camii (M. Yavuz)

Fig 46. Turkey/Camlıhemsin Aşağı Çamlıca Köyü Camii (M. Yavuz)

Fig. 47. Turkey/Şalpazarı Doğancı Köyü Camii (M. Yavuz)

References

[1]   M. Coğ," Gürcülerin Arasında İslamiyet'in Yayılması", Çukurova Üniversitesi, İlahiyat Fakültesi Dergisi, 7, 2, Adana 2007, pp.39-54.
[2]   M. Bala, "Gürcistan", İslam Ansiklopedisi, (MEB), 4, , Eskişehir 1997, pp. 837- 845.
[3]   H. M. Karamanlı, "Gürcistan" İslam Ansiklopedisi (DİA), 6., İstanbul 1996, pp. 311-313.
[4]   A. C. S Peacock, "Georgia and Anatolian Turks in the 12th and 13th Centuries", Anatolian Studies, 56, Ankara 2006, pp. 127-146.
[5]   A. Usta, "XIII. Yüzyıldaki Moğol İstilasına Kadar Kıpçaklar'ın Kafkasya'daki Faaliyetleri", Türk Dünyası Tarih Dergisi, 54, İstanbul 1999, pp. 36-43.
[6]   N. Gümüş, "Büyük Selçuklu-Gürcü İlişkileri", Türkler Ansiklopedisi, 4, Ankara 2002, pp. 713-730.
[7]   İ. Tellioğlu, Doğu Karadeniz'de Türkler, Trabzon 2004.
[8]   M. F. Kırzıoğlu, Osmanlılar'ın Kafkas Ellerini Fethi (1451-1590), Ankara 1993.
[9]   F. Çiloğlu, Gürcülerin Tarihi, İstanbul 1993.
[10]   M. Kasap, Osmanlı Gürcüleri, İstanbul 2010.
[11]   M. Kaya, 1170 Nolu Gönye, Batum Sahil Köyleri Nüfus Defterinin Değerlendirilmesi, M.A. Dissertation Recep Tayyip Erdoğan Üniversitesi, Rize 2013.
[12]   İ. Bostan, "Batum", İslam Ansiklopedisi (DİA) V, İstanbul 1996, pp. 210-211.
[13]   N. Gümüş, XVI. Asır Osmanlı-Gürcü İlişkileri, Ph.D. Dissertation Marmara Üniversitesi, İstanbul 2000.
[14]   R. Baramidze, The Muslim Monuments of Worship (Adjara) Batumi 2010.
[15]   Adjaristsqali Cascade Project, ESİA, 3, Brighton 2012.
[16]   S. Mamuladze-E. Kakhidze, "Gonio Kalesi'nden Osmanlı Seramikleri, Güney Batı Gürcistan-Ottoman Ceramics from the Gonio Fort, Southwestern Georgia",1. Uluslararası Avrasya Türk Sanatları Kongresi, İstanbul 2014, pp. 195-202.
[17]   O. Aytekin, "Komşumuz Acara'da Osmanlı İzleri Gonio Kalesi", XIV. Türk Tarih Kongresi, 2, Ankara 2005, pp. 1297–1304,
[18]   R. Arık, Batılılaşma Dönemi Anadolu Tasvir Sanatı, Ankara, 1988.
[19]   Ş. Çakmak, "Boğaziçi Kasabası Eski Camii (Baklan/Denizli)" 9. Milletlerarası Türk Sanatları Kongresi, I, Ankara 1995, pp.529-540.
[20]   H. Karpuz., Konya Türk Kültür Varlıkları Envanteri, 2, Ankara 2006.
[21]   H. Karpuz, Konya Türk Kültür Varlıkları Envanteri, 3, Ankara 2009.
[22]   İ., Kuyulu, "İzmir ve Çevresindeki Bir Grup Duvar Resminin İncelenmesi", II. Uluslararası İzmir Sempozyumu Bildiriler, İzmir 1998, pp. 57- 78.
[23]   G., Renda, Batılılaşma Dönemi'nde Türk Resim Sanatı 1700-1850, Ankara 1977.
[24]   P., ŞahinTekinalp, "Batılılaşma Dönemi Duvar Resmi", Türkler,15, Ankara, pp.440–448.
[25]   Şener, D., 18. ve 19. Yüzyıllarda Anadolu Duvar Resmi, Ph.D. Dissertation Ankara Üniversitesi Ankara 2011.
[26]   H. Karpuz, "Doğu Karadeniz'de Bazı Ahşap Camiler" Sanat Tarihi Araştırmaları Dergisi, 2, 2, İstanbul 1989, pp. 39-45
[27]   M. Yavuz., "Doğu Karadeniz Köy Camilerinde Bezeme Anlayışı", Uluslararası Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi, 2, Samsun 2009, pp. 306-322.
[28]   M., Yavuz, Çaykara ve Dernekpazarı'nda Geleneksel Köy Camileri, Ankara 2009.
[29]   O. Aytekin, Ortaçağdan Osmanlı Dönemi Sonuna Kadar Artvin'deki Mimari Eserler, Ankara 1999.
[30]   A.A., Bayhan, "Ordu/İkizce'den Bir Ahşap Cami: Laleli (Eski) Camii", Atatürk Üniversitesi Güzel Sanatlar Enstitüsü Dergisi, 14, Erzurum 2005, pp. 10- 20.
[31]   K., İnce, "Yukarı Camii/Akköy-Denizli", Yüzüncü Yıl Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi, 2, Van 2001, pp. 65-77.
[32]   E.E.Naza-Dönmez, Wooden Mosques of the Sansun Region, Turkey, Oxford 2008.
[33]   M. S. Bayraktar, Samsun ve İlçelerinde Türk Mimari Eserleri, Ph.D. Dissertation Atatürk Üniversitesi, Erzurum 2005.
[34]   A.H. Bülbül, Trabzon Dernekpazarı ve Çaykara Camilerindeki Süsleme Programında Sembolizme Varan Yaklaşımlar, Güneş Karadeniz'den Doğar-Sümer Atasoy'a Armağan Yazılar,İstanbul 2013, pp. 37-52.

Bibliography

A.A., Bayhan, "Ordu/İkizce'den Bir Ahşap Cami: Laleli (Eski) Camii", Atatürk Üniversitesi Güzel Sanatlar Enstitüsü Dergisi, 14, Erzurum 2005, pp. 10-20.

A. C. S Peacock, "Georgia and Anatolian Turks in the 12th and 13th Centuries", Anatolian Studies, 56, Ankara 2006, pp. 127-146.

Adjaristsqali Cascade Project, ESİA, Vol 3, Brighton 2012.

A.H. Bülbül, Trabzon Dernekpazarı ve Çaykara Camilerindeki Süsleme Programında Sembolizme Varan Yaklaşımlar, Güneş Karadeniz'den Doğar-Sümer Atasoy'a Armağan Yazılar, İstanbul 2013, pp. 37-52.

A. Usta, "XIII. Yüzyıldaki Moğol İstilasına Kadar Kıpçaklar'ın Kafkasya'daki Faaliyetleri", Türk Dünyası Tarih Dergisi, 54 İstanbul 1999, pp. 36-43.

E.E.Naza-Dönmez, Wooden Mosques of the Sansun Region, Turkey, Oxford 2008.

F. Çiloğlu, Gürcülerin Tarihi, İstanbul 1993.

G., Renda, Batılılaşma Dönemi'nde Türk Resim Sanatı 1700-1850, Ankara 1977.

H. Karpuz, "Doğu Karadeniz'de Bazı Ahşap Camiler" Sanat Tarihi Araştırmaları Dergisi, 2, 2, İstanbul 1989, pp. 39-45

H. Karpuz., Konya Türk Kültür Varlıkları Envanteri, 2, Ankara 2006.

H. Karpuz, Konya Türk Kültür Varlıkları Envanteri, 3, Ankara 2009.

H. M. Karamanlı, "Gürcistan" İslam Ansiklopedisi (DİA)., 6., İstanbul 1996, pp. 311-313.

İ. Bostan, "Batum", İslam Ansiklopedisi (DİA) V, İstanbul 1996, pp. 210-211.

İ., Kuyulu, "İzmir ve Çevresindeki Bir Grup Duvar Resminin İncelenmesi", II. Uluslararası İzmir Sempozyumu Bildiriler, İzmir 1998, pp. 57- 78.

İ. Tellioğlu, Doğu Karadeniz'de Türkler, Trabzon 2004.

K., İnce, "Yukarı Camii/Akköy-Denizli", Yüzüncü Yıl Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi, 2, Van 2001, pp.65-77.

M. Bala, "Gürcistan", İslam Ansiklopedisi, (MEB 4, Eskişehir 1997, pp. 837- 845.

M. Coğ," Gürcülerin Arasında İslamiyet'in Yayılması", Çukurova Üniversitesi, İlahiyat Fakültesi Dergisi, 7, 2, Adana 2007, pp. 39-54.

M. F. Kırzıoğlu, Osmanlılar'ın Kafkas Ellerini Fethi (1451-1590), Ankara 1993.

M. S. Bayraktar, Samsun ve İlçelerinde Türk Mimari Eserleri, Ph.D. Dissertation Atatürk Üniversitesi Erzurum, 2005.

M. Kasap, Osmanlı Gürcüleri, İstanbul 2010.

M. Kaya, 1170 Nolu Gönye, Batum Sahil Köyleri Nüfus Defterinin Değerlendirilmesi, M.A. Dissertation Recep Tayyip Erdoğan Üniversitesi Rize 2013.

M. Yavuz., "Doğu Karadeniz Köy Camilerinde Bezeme Anlayışı", Uluslararası Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi, 2, Samsun 2009, pp. 306-322.

M., Yavuz, Çaykara ve Dernekpazarı'nda Geleneksel Köy Camileri, Ankara 2009.

N. Gümüş, XVI. Asır Osmanlı-Gürcü İlişkileri, Ph.D. Dissertation Marmara Üniversitesi,, İstanbul 2000.

N. Gümüş, "Büyük Selçuklu-Gürcü İlişkileri", Türkler Ansiklopedisi, 4, Ankara 2002, pp. 713-730.

O. Aytekin, Ortaçağdan Osmanlı Dönemi Sonuna Kadar Artvin'deki Mimari Eserler, Ankara 1999.

O. Aytekin, "Komşumuz Acara'da Osmanlı İzleri Gonio Kalesi", XIV. Türk Tarih Kongresi, 2, Ankara, 2005, pp. 1297–1304,

P., ŞahinTekinalp, "Batılılaşma Dönemi Duvar Resmi", Türkler, 15, Ankara, pp.440–448.

R. Arık, Batılılaşma Dönemi Anadolu Tasvir Sanatı, Ankara, 1988.

R. Baramidze, The Muslim Monuments of Worship (Adjara) Batumi 2010.

S. Mamuladze-E. Kakhidze, "Gonio Kalesi'nden Osmanlı Seramikleri, Güney Batı Gürcistan-Ottoman Ceramics from the Gonio Fort, Southwestern Georgia",1. Uluslararası Avrasya Türk Sanatları Kongresi, İstanbul 2014, pp. 195-202.

Şener, D., 18. ve 19. Yüzyıllarda Anadolu Duvar Resmi, Ph.D. Dissertation Ankara Üniversitesi, Ankara 2011.

Ş. Çakmak, "Boğaziçi Kasabası Eski Camii (Baklan/Denizli)" 9. Milletlerarası Türk Sanatları Kongresi, I, Ankara, 1995, pp. 529-540.

The Influence of Architectural Form to the Concept of Panopticon

Gözde Altıparmakoğlu and Fehime Yeşim Gürani
Gözde Altıparmakoğlu (*Corresponding Author*)
Cukurova University, Faculty of Fine Arts, Department of Interior Architecture, Adana,Turkey
galtiparmakoglu@cu.edu.tr

Abstract. The concept of panoptic has based on the prison model called as "Panopticon" designed by Jeremy Bentham, English philosophy and social theorist, in 1785. In this prison model based on the principle of checking and tracking all movements of each prisoners, there are inspection mechanism consisting of watchtower at the center and a cyclical structure consists of a few storeys, one-roomed cells surrounding it. Michel Foucault who initial conceptualizes Panopticon defends that similar principles can be applied in these spaces by associating the spaces such as public buildings, business districts, head offices of multinational companies, shopping malls and housing zones in which people and spaces can be audited and brought under control easily to Panopticon in his novel named as "Discipline and Punish: The Birth of The Prison". Starting from point of view, it is possible to discuss the spaces in which individuals are kept under control, and needed to the fact of observation within the frame of panoptic concept. The aim of this purpose is to search the effects of panoptic concept to the architectural form in the spaces. In this context, the spaces which would be able to call as panoptic such as either prison or working spaces where the production was intense has been chosen from past to present, these chosen spaces has been classified by discussing at space scale in terms of architectural forms such as visuals, plan schemas. It is tried to determine whether the architectural form generates panoptic concept, or panoptic concept specifies the architectural form with the results of the research.

Key Words: Panoptic, Space, Interior Architecture, Form, Research

1. Introduction

Panopticon which means to observe (-opticon) the whole (pan-) is a prison construction model designed by Jeremy Bentham, English philosopher and social theorist (1748-1832) in 1785. In this prison model based on the principle of checking and tracking all movements of each prisoners, there are inspection mechanism consist of watchtower at the center and a cyclical structure consist of a few storey, one-roomed cells surrounding it (Figure 1). Panopticon has been constructed over the system where prisoners knew, felt under custody in each moment, and shaped their behaviors accordingly.

Michel Foucault who initial conceptualizes Panopticon defends that similar principles can be applied in these spaces by associating the spaces such as public buildings, business districts, head offices of multinational companies, shopping malls and housing zones in which people and spaces can be audited and brought under control easily to Panopticon in his novel named as "The Birth of The Prison". Starting

from point of view, it is possible to discuss the spaces in which individuals are kept under control, and needed to the fact of observation within the frame of panoptic concept.
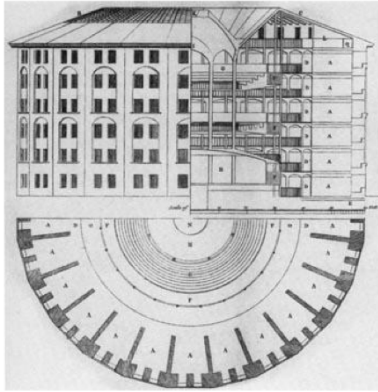

Figure 1. Panopticon, Jeremy Bentham, 1785

2. The Concept of Panoptic

The concept of panoptic is based on "Panopticon" of Bentham directly. This model, according to Bentham's approach, is an organization to ensure that prisoner who knows that each false step would bring the punishment, but doesn't know when s/he is observed behaves properly as if s/he is observed every time [4].

Panopticon has been designed the way that enable to observe each movement of prisoners in the light from the windows on the extrorse wall of the cells as Michel Foucault who firstly conceptualizes the Panopticon stated in his novel named as "The Birth of Prison". "... It is possible to realize the small figure shut down into the cells in nearby building due to the light coming from the back. So many cage so many little theatres, each player is alone in these theatres; s/he is entirely individualized, and is in the apparent situation constantly. The arrangement which enable to get under custody without seeing generates the spatial units that permit to see constantly, and to recognize immediately" [3].

The one of three functions (closing down, depriving from the light and hiding) of the cell comprehensive in Panopticon is preserved, the others are removed.

With Bentham's comment: "Being under the full light and the aspect of an observer is much more catcher than the darkness which is actually protective. Visibility is a trap" [2].

Figure 2. Statevill Prison built by Panopticon principle, USA.

It is lain the necessity of aiming at constant and directly observation for getting the individual under control by modern state behind the Panopticon philosophy of Bentham. Panopticon symbolizes the comprehensive of a system and the process mechanism towards social observation (control) rather than symbolizing only architectural thought or building [3].

Foucault likens the city which designs everything in respect of individual life by way of advertising display, clocks, housing zone beyond the physical environment; consisted of public buildings, business centers, head offices of multinational companies, shopping malls, housing zones etc., to be taken in hand as a whole in order to administer and control both body and spaces easily to Panopticon. Panopticon is considered as a laboratory in the matter of testing over pressed, socialized masses, and of solving the transformations in them. There are no conspiracy, total escape attempt, new crime plans among prisoners who know to be observed; there are no dangerous of using violence among mad people bilateral, and no dangerous of cheating, rumble, chatting, wandering among children; there are no kidding which causes quarrel, robbing, conflict, suspension of business or accident, among employees [3].

Starting from this, it is possible to say that public buildings, factories, schools, barracks, business centers, head offices of multinational companies, shopping malls, crowds in the housing zones are administrated with the principles similar to the "Panopticon principles".

59

3. Panoptic Space

With Bentham's own words, panoptic space will rescue the individual from laziness, ineffectiveness, and make individual the component of production force in the direct production process by way of his/her observers. "... in short, panoptic space is also production line as far as optical device established by the purpose of regenerating- a factory operated with modern methods, a controlled prototype of capitalist manufacturing mechanisms. Actually this is a new role definition referred to modern individual and panoptic space and its architecture is a background envisaged to this role" [5]. No privacy in panoptic spaces. Everything is under custody.

In panoptic spaces based on the observation principle, it can be said that auto-control mechanism is created over individuals. Individuals who are always in sight feel that they are under custody constantly independently of whether there is an observer due to the formation of spaces This sense of observation of space without an observer, creates several positive and negative effects over behaviours and psychology of individuals.

Panoptic spaces can be defined as spaces needed to get individuals under control, and the fact of observation. In this context, prisons which are the starting point of the concept, and the space where control mechanism are densest set the largest comprehensive examples of panoptic spaces. Working spaces with high tempo where the production is intense are also suitable to be designed with the feature of panoptic as well as prisons.

4. The Architectural Forms of Panoptic Space Examples

Having created an observation system and working this properly are related to the architectural form directly. The organization intended to create is merely carried out with true design. Architectural form is playing an important role at creating the panoptic effect; and the concept of panoptic is playing an important role at shaping the architectural form. Starting from this, it is required to examine architectural form of panoptic spaces in order to determine which one is superior to the other. It is planned to examine the architectural formations according to the construction years by selecting out the spaces which can be called as 'panoptic' in this part of work.

4.1. Panopticon Prison Model

The prison model called "Panopticon" designed by Jeremy Bentham in 1785 is based on the principle of observing and controlling each movement of the prisoner. In this model, there are inspection mechanism consisting of watchtower at the centre and a cyclical structure consists of a few storeys, one-roomed cells surrounding it (Figure 3).
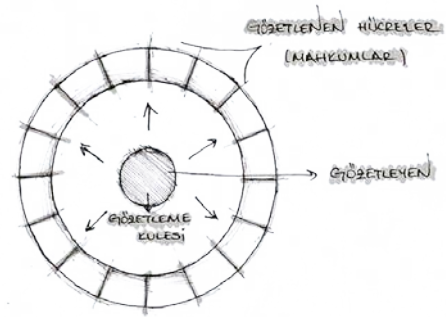
Figure 3. Panopticon Plan Schema

4.2 Victoria State Library

La Trobe reading saloon which was built as neoclassic style in 1854 is one of the spaces called as panoptic with the feature of observation from each side, and of the formation in the frame of the central plan. The observation mechanism which is centerpiece dominates to the entire saloon (Figure 4).
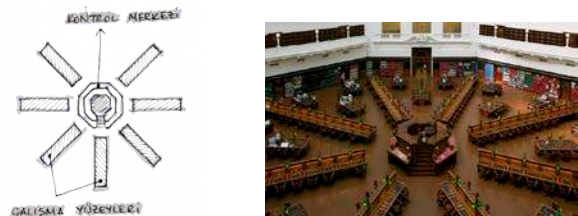
Figure 4. Victoria State Library

4.3 Corn Exchange

The structure designed by Cuthbert Brodick, and built in 1862; England was opened as a commerce center. Its architectural cortex and

the formation of the arrangement of interior spaces give panoptic feature to the structure. The space enables to observe from each side by placing at the common center of working/office departments. The observation mechanism is processed in the peripheral system, not in the center (Figure 5.
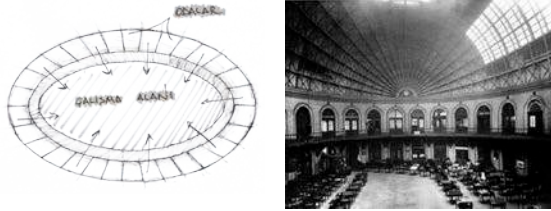

Figure 5. Corn Exchange, 1862,

4.4 Larkin Building

In the structure which was designed by Frank Llyod Wright in 1902 as Larkin Company Head Office, working spaces were placed in atrium of the building (Figure 6). Thus, these spaces are under peripheral custody. It also causes to generate the panoptic effect in the space.
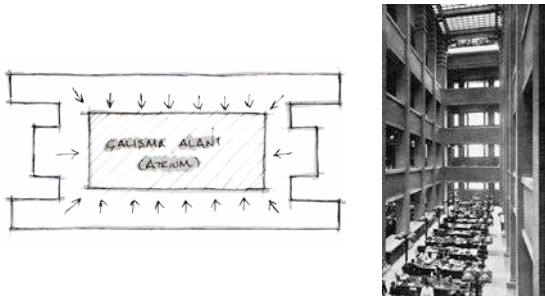

Figure 6. Larkin Building

4.5 Reichstag Building Glass Dome

The glass dome which added to Reichstag which gives a service as a meeting place of German Parliament since 1894, during the restoration by Norman Foster after the fire in 1933 is a glass part above the building.

There is parliament main hall under the dome which has 360 degree perspective. In this structure which is opened to the visitors, visitors have the possibility to observe the working spaces of parliament members directly (Figure 7). So, it can be created the panoptic effect over members who feel to be under custody, or can be under custody.
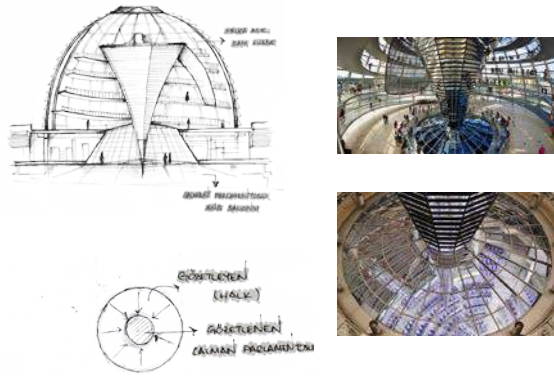
Şekil 7. Reichstag Glass Dome

4.6 Medina Turgul DDB Office

In this structure which was converted to the office space for Medina Turgul DDB Advertising Agency with the transformation and restoration projects of old salt stores by Erginoglu & Calislar in 2009, the mezzanines had been created on demand. Having mezzanines spaces belonged to the administration unit and placed at the points which would dominate the working spaces give panoptic effect to the space (Figure 8). The employees can feel that they are being observed for each moment in this formation which enables to the observation from one point.

Figure 8. Medina Turgul DDB Office

4.7 NTV News Studio

NTV News Studio designed by Erik Ulfers from Clikspring Design in 2011 is located in the glass cube with CNBC-e News Studio. Both Studios are divided by the staircase in the middle. The working spaces were placed around the cube in opening parts. It has been stated to cause several negative psychological effects over employees because of both this formation was transparent and working spaces were in the opening areas in the interviews with employees [1]. It is possible to say that the space have the characteristic of panoptic because of employees

uttered that being in sigh constantly created as if they were being observed for each moment. Also there is administration floor at the point where the staircase reached up amid the cube. It can be considered to create another panoptic effect because of administrator room is located in the place which will dominate both studios and working spaces. The design of cube and the architectural formation can be commented in the shape of constructing for having felt over employees that it was a control mechanism and the existence of the power over everything (Figure 9).
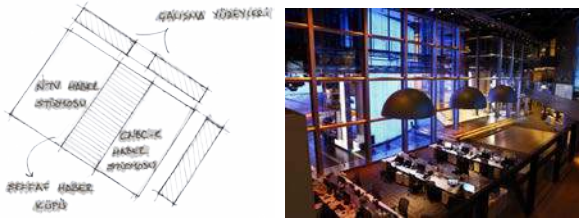

Figure 9. The News Cube Working Spaces
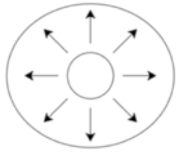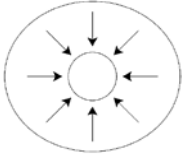
5. Conclusion

When it is examined the space examples which can be called as panoptic, it is possible to say that there are two different systems that ensure to create an effect. The architectural formation is constructed in the direction of creating the fact of "observation" directly in some spaces, it is seen that observation is ensured by more indirect way in some spaces. It is being talked about the observation from center in one system, it is seen that there is central observation system. It is classified that which types of panoptic effects generated with an observation system in the inspected spaces at the Table 1.

Table 1. Observation System

Observation from the Centre	Central Observation
Panopticon Prison Model	Corn Exchange
Victoria State Library	Larkin Building
Medina Turgul DDB Office	Reichstag Building Glass Dome
NTV News Studio	NTV News Studio

When it is examined both of them, it is possible to say that architectural formation has an effect to the fact of panoptic directly. Also the panoptic concept itself has more strong influence in the formation which observation is made from sole center. Because, observation mechanism has been placed at the center deliberately. This is proven that panoptic concept determines the architectural formation. It is seen that there is more indirect observation system in the architectural formation where is observed the center. It is not possible to mention about the existence of sole audit here even though it is asked that individuals are under custody or control. It is possible to be observed by everyone from everywhere for each moment. The sense of being in sight creates the panoptic effect in this formation. Creating this effect is ensured with the architectural formation. In other words, the architectural formation creates the concept of panoptic in contrast to the other formation.

References

[1] Altıparmakoğlu, G.,2014, The "Order of Things" in Media Cube: Transparency as a Design Tool in NTV News Studio, Master Thesis, Cankaya University

[2] Çalışkan, B., 2010, Yeni İletişim Ortamlarında Gözetim: Üniversite Çalışanlarının Gözetim Algıları, International Conference on New Media and Interactivity, İstanbul.

[3] Foucault, M., 1992, Hapishanenin Doğuşu, İmge Kitabevi yayınları

[4] Sönmezalp, S., 2012, Mekanikle sarmalanmış panoptik yaşam alanları üzerine görsel çözümlemeler,Yayımlanmamış Sanatta Yeterlik Tezi, Hacettepe Üniversitesi

[5] http://gasmekan.wordpress.com/2013/12/28/568, Röntgen: İktidarın Gözü, Gözün İktidarı, Date accessed: 10.04.2014

Istanbul: From The 19th Century An Utopian Model, To The 20th Century Modern City

Hülya Coskun
Phd. Candidate
MSGSU, Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University.
Department of Architecture.
her_222@yahoo.com

Abstract. Istanbul city was always a model for the other cities with its rich historical past : Roman, Byzantine and Ottoman eras. As for the a vital city of Byzantine era, city still had its antique Roman city hills and abstract city axes also continued to developed in the Ottoman period. In the 19th Century, Istanbul city was an utopian city model for French city planner Étienne Cabet's futuristic writings. 19th century utopians were based the historical cities as a futuristic city model for the next utopian life. First models of the utopian cities reflected future life while referring the historical cities and city elements like ; broad Boulevards, historical buildings and monuments of Paris and Istanbul city.

After a century, a modern French planner Henri Prost had been invited by the Turkish leader Atatürk, planning the city of Istanbul as 20th century modernism. Beginning of the 20th century, planning policies of the Turkish Republic envisaged a modernization project, for new Turkey. Contex of the modernization projects Istanbul city wanted the design as a modern city. This modernization project was very smilar to Henri Prost's Paris City planning realized before arriving to Istanbul city.

Also, French planner Henri Prost's, Istanbul city modernization methods coincide with the 20th century Paris city plannings like modern ways for modern vehicles and grand Boulevards of Paris city which connect the cities monuments. These planning methods such as futuristic realizations of the modern century and Istanbul city's Beyoglu quarter, already reflect an European capital view with the modern wide boulevards like Paris city. Also, European-style apartments which have newly been built would be rapid modernization way of the City's Beyoğlu district. Consequantly, in the 19th Century, previously Istanbul which had been a model for the utopians in the future cities, later in the 20th Century modernized with followers of modern era utopians like Henri Prost.

Keywords: Istanbul, Utopias, Utopian City, Roman-Byzantine-Ottoman Architecture, Modern City planning.

1. Introduction

City of Istanbul was the capital of the many civilizations since its fondation. Istanbul as city model in its rich historical past still had its antique Hill axis based to city of Rome. The historical peninsula of Istanbul where a view antique hills and abstract axes still placed well preserved part of the city. This fictional city planning method also emphasized reel organization of the city. This fictional Roman foundation has been still dominant in the early period of Ottoman, city. Within undeniable manner organization of the city still could be seen in the silhouette. [1] The Antique City axes continued to develop with newly constructed mosques and broad new boulevards which define the antique hill axes in the Ottoman period. Istanbul was a fictional city beyond the imaginations sometimes smilar to western cities and mostly known as Roman, Byzantine and Ottoman mixed historical heritage. This giving city a new identity had been seen differently from the other European cities like

Figure 1. Istanbul, Antic Roman City.

Figure 2. Thomas More, Utopian City.

mixture or European and eastern city. Thus, city could be perceive like never existed a city similar to such as an architectural illusion which not has a specific description nearly gathering all of the architectural style since the Roman period. De Amici's sketch captures Istanbul its random, scattered houses disposed in a serious of terraced settlements. [8] Especially these terraced settlements based to a visual fiction of antic hills settlements. This description emphasizes how different view beyond the other cities had when Istanbul compared to other European cities at same era.

Istanbul city had a view or settlements where the half of the constracted in the Roman-Byzantine era and than other half constructed in the Ottoman period. Description used for city's architectural structure which is not based on a precise architectural style on that time. Thus, its undefined architectural style could be seen as utopic fiction based on all of the architectural styles.

Istanbul city constructed in the 15-16th century, early Ottoman period, after the Byzantine-Roman era mostly referred to Renaissance architecture was affected from the Italian planning methods. But, later in the 19th century the city, wanted to construct by French city planners like A.Bouvard, Henri Prost. Thus, primarily comparing with the city of Rome, mentioned as a New Rome constructed as an eastern capital of the East Roman Empire but late Ottoman period mostly compared with the French capital

Paris city as a result of new utopias and leading to a modernization movements.

1.1. Istanbul, Nova Roma, Abstract City Axes Derived From Smilar To Abstract Hills of Antic Rome.

In the early Ottoman period, with its 500.000 inhabitants, Istanbul was a city without a rival in Europe, the urban fabric was still that of Byzantines made of vast infrastructure. [8] The city before the Ottoman period recently had devastated its structure and it was relatively quite smaller in the late Byzantine period. [4] Istanbul city constructed as a *Nova Roma*, (New Rome) most prominent feature was consists of eternal hills, similar to the Roman unique topography : Rome hills created surreal serpentine volcanic hills and valleys. [10] Likewise the Rome, Istanbul city implanted the seven Hills along the Corne d'or to the Ottoman Palace throught the city walls. [1] Rome, where placed in the Etruria valleys with famous seven Hills were not really Hills but crests between of series of valleys along the Tiber river, they built their village.[9] City of Rome constructed the base to this abstract shema knowns as Rome quadrata possessed a *cardo* and *decumanus* streets between the valleys. Forums or known as *fore* antic Rome were actually appear as suprising interruptions on the flat *campagna* they ramified and interconnected kind of urban network. [10]

Figure 3. 19th century, Airial view of Istanbul.

Figure 4. 19th century, Istanbul, Gauffer.

As a Roman-Byzantine city Istanbul also organized long city axes which connected the old forum's in the Ottoman era, on the foundations of the old empire city [1] These long abstract axis derived from antic Roman planning. Mese street maintained traces of the old antique-Byzantinian city essentially linear. [1]

1.2. Istanbul, Early Ottoman Period Referred From The Roman Renaissance.

15-16th century, In the early early Ottoman period Antique City axes continued to develop with new landmark buildings in the city silhouettes. In antic Rome city being the urban focus of Rome's cosmic axes reveals synthesis of openly public. [9] These planning synthesis manifest throught the building becomes symbolically man made environment. [9]

Istanbul city's abstract axis developed along with the newly constructed mosques. The empty places of old forums used as newly built mosques gardens *avlu* and broad new boulevards which still defined the antique hill axes . In the Ottoman period city's topography did not hanged by the new constructers. Architect Sinan could not turn the environment upside down that the seven Hills of New Rome – not the mentioned of the valleys- limited his scope and indeed his adaptation of the some Mosques in the city topography such a demands was dynamic example of his genius. [5]

1.3. Istanbul, An Ottoman City In The 19.th. Century Utopians Futuristic Writings.

As a Ottoman town is that unlike so many Bouvards and Haussmanienn actually Architect Sinan was exceptionally kind. [5] In the 19th Century some utopians used Istanbul city with the other European city in their futuristic writings. In the 19th Century, Istanbul city was an utopian city model in the French planner Étienne Cabet's futuristic writings referring the old, historical cities : Paris, London, Istanbul, Jerusalem, Rome, Beijing etc. [2] 19th century utopians were based the historical cities as a future city model in their utopian life. First models of the utopian cities reflect futuristic life while referring the historical cities and city elements like ; broad Boulevards, historical buildings and monuments of Paris and Istanbul city. These historical city references and historical elements had been used for describing for future cities.

2. 19th century Utopians and Utopian Projects Led To Modern City Plannings.

19th century, utopians were Fourier, Godin, Owen, Proudhon. Utopian planning projects firstly known by Fourier but idea of utopia laid the foundation by 16th century Thomas More. Thomas More's utopic ideas actually not far from the Owen's ideas whom famously known as utopian, more than More who indicated that Fourier has been affected his speech. [2]

Figure 5. 19.th century , Haussmann Plannings, Paris.

Figure 6. 19.th century , Modern District Beyoglu, Istanbul.

19.th century utopians projects, aimes to heal social living conditions in the urban life especially in the industrial ages unplanned and poor living conditions leaded to mass deaths from infectious diseases due to unhygienic conditions. This situation mostly emphasized, utopian projects with their experiential works force the architectural and urban plannings. In the Industrial era's poor living conditions leaded to Benjamin Ward Richardson write a book named *Hygeia* .

Hygeia, a City of Health, 1876. Hygiea was a city : with in the town plan introduced a city as utopia with public health rules and well ventilated houses surrended with green areas, roof terrace, hot and cold water in the kitchens, bathrooms. [2]

In the physical city and the living conditions, and green environment, deeply interrogated and influenced from the utopians projects which questioning the better urban life and housing to be achieve a better living experience.

Some of the utopian cities, like the Greek polis, constituted of a central city and its surrounding countryside. Though federated, they also resemble the Greek city-states in functioning as largely independent political units. The utopian cities layout, however, is based on a rectangular block pattern and thus reminiscent of Roman urban planning.

Mostly known as an utopian Thomas More's workings known to have achieved through improvements in its architecture. The More's criterias of spatial modeling, on the contrary guided by a fictional power and discourse. [2]

2.1. Istanbul As A Utopic City in The 19th century Étienne Cabet's Utopian Projects.

Étienne Cabet followed utopians Owen and Thomas More's footsteps and becomed founders of utopia. However, Étienne Cabet chosen a different path expressing his own rhetoric : Cabet did not design a project or had constructed urban roads, instead of the all these methods likewise the previous utopians he chose the idea of write a book called *Icaria :* about to Travel and Adventures of Lord William Carisdall's to *Icaria*, 1840. This city was very smilar to city of Paris, modernized by the Haussmann who was the 19th century great hygeniest with broad and tree-lined streets, was a utopia which actually non-existent reality.

City of *Icaria* had a circular urban model which passing through the river *Tair* divides the city determined axes providing access to the sea and also public buildings were built along this axis. Paralled to the *Tair* river had perpendicular streets, like forested Boulevard in Paris. [2]

This utopian city which is specified as a real city of Paris emulation and *Icaria* draws attention to identify with Paris also city, had some monuments smilar to Beijing, Jerusalem, Constantinople (Istanbul), Rome, Paris, imprint of the neighborhoods of cities such as London. [7] Figure 5-6.

Some of the scenes of Istanbul city writings De Amici who is also a traveler in the Istanbul at the 17-18th century were smilar to Thomas More's utopic city where the city commanded by its geographical setting : the sharp cliffs
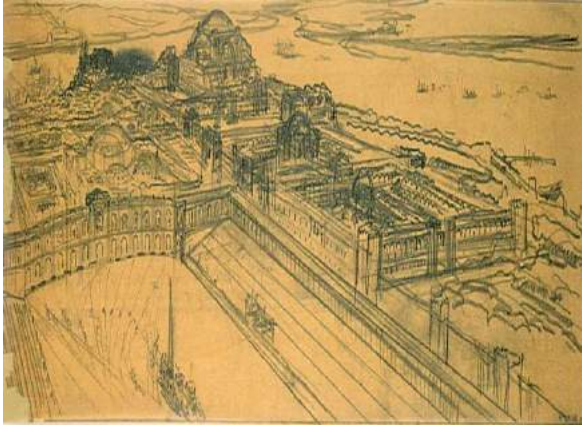
Figure 7. Henri Prost Projects For Modern Istanbul.

Figure 8. Henri Prost Projects For Modern Istanbul.

dialogue by waters. [8] Figure 1- 2. Istanbul city topography, trees especially plane-trees are almost an object in Istanbul as a cult. [8]

All types of trees it would be hard to find here the formal pattern of Italian Renassaince gardens. [8] So, not only unique topographical features of the city of Istanbul but also its the unique green fabric and arrangements would be taken into considerations for utopians their utopian plannings in the Ottomans era. Planning to green areas first had been seen in the utopians 19th century plannings such as Richardson's *Hygeia* then used for the processed 20th century modern plannings.

2.2. From 19th Century Utopic Urban Planning To the The 20th century Modern City Plannings.

In the 19th century, another utopian Proudhon whom closed to idea of social utopians likewise the Owen, More, Cabet, by supported to social reforms. He also mentioned the Paris City in his writings. Proudhon opposed to ownership in his book of *Du principe de l'art et sa Destination Sociale* (Art of Policy and Social Purpose) he told an utopic, flashy Republic where the city's modern monuments located. He described the city was reminiscent of Paris. [6]

Throught the 19th century overall, idea of utopia and utopias becomed the driving force of the modern city planning. 19th century utopic urban planning movements later had been developed by utopians : Fourier, Thomas More, Godin, Owen, Proudhon and early 20th century

these movements processed as early theories of the city plannings leaded to 20th century modern city planning theories. Especially many new ideas of the social utopians Fourier, Thomas More, Godin, Owen, Proudhon would be follow by the some of the 20th century city planners.

*Arrangement of the well ventilatilated broad modern streets for hygiene also public buildings were built along these modern axis.

*Green area arrangements had been seen firstly in the utopian planning, houses surrended with green areas.

*Houses planned firstly with living room, bedrooms and also kitchens, bathrooms hot and cold water for hygiene and sanitary reasons improving 19th century industrial era hygienic problems.

All these ideas used firstly in the planning of the 19th century utopian plannings like Richardson's *Hygeia* or T. More's *Icaria* later used for the processed 20th century modern planning. French architect Henri Prost later would be founder of the new discipline of the urban planning apart from the architecture which founded in the 17th century in Paris.

3. Istanbul, Modernization Plannings Context of The Utopian Ideas In The Ottoman Period.

19th century utopian plannings indirect affections also saw some modernization projects in Istanbul urban planning theories processed in

the 20th century. Due to increasing interaction with the West the affections from the Europe incresed in the Ottoman Empire. In the Ottoman Empire some of the new regulations smilar to the modern European cities are started to discussing in Istanbul. In the Ottoman period, admiration of to European cities had increased very highly : the urban planning of important European Capitals such as : wide streets with modern buildings. Figure 3-4.

Actually, some modernization movements already had begun in the Ottoman era, especially in the Istanbul city via some affections from European plannings.

3.1. Istanbul, 19th Century Early Modernization Plannings in The Ottoman Period.

In the 19th century some modernization movements had been seen in Ottoman Empire throught the French revolutions. By the new Ottoman modernization project of Tanzimat as returned their face to the Europe first city planning laws had been adopted directly from French reforms. Some French institutions imported and French city plannings accepted to prepare for Istanbul City plan like new founded Municipality Institutions.

Late, 19th century in the Ottoman era, big city fires occurred in the Istanbul. Thus, some districs affected from large city fires wanted the renewing and this projects prepared by some European city planners. Fires, urban, residential renew if these regions, in urban integrity , in the form of a patch remains regional structures. Transportation problem was not resolve, the city, there is confusion and incompatibility between traditional and new regions fires, urban, residential renew if these regions, in urban integrity, in the form of a patch, remains regional structures. For the transportation problem is not resolved, there is confusion and incompatibility between traditional and new regions for the city.

According to Celik Ottoman era , the old city, the revitalization transport axis , the streets are organized, the first time in history, it Istanbul is planned holistically. [3]

4. Istanbul, 20th Century Modernization Plannings.

After a century, French planner Henri Prost had been invited by the Turkish leader Atatürk, for planning the city of Istanbul as a 20th century modernism. Beginning of the 20th century, planning policies of the Turkish Republic implemented envisaged a modernization project . [10] With this modernization projects Istanbul city wanted the design as a modern city context like French capital Paris. [3]

Also, French planner Henri Prost's, Istanbul city modernization methods coincides with the Paris city plannings like : modern ways for modern vehicles and Paris city grand Boulevards which connect the cities monuments. But, some of the new districs of Istnabul city began to continue modern way affecting from the Europe. Istanbul city's Beyoglu quarter already reflects an European capital view with the modern Haussmann style apartment buildings and wide modern boulevards like Paris city.[1]

European-style apartments which have newly been built would be rapid modernization way of the City's Beyoğlu distric and main street of Istiklal Caddesi becomes a grand Boulevard like Paris City's Champ- Elysée Boulevard. [3] Beginning from the modern Beyoglu distric city's modern axes developed to the Sisli, Nisantasi quarters. Later this modern axe continue to Levent quarter which area will be newly plan by Henri Prost's modern plannings.

4. Conclusion.

Consequantly, in the 20th century, historical, antic Istanbul city wanted to plan by city planner Henri Prost as a modernization project context with the modern planning method. Henri Prost's modern city planning methods coincide with the 20th century Paris city plannings like modern ways for modern vehicles and grand Boulevards of Paris city smilar to the mentioned in the social-utopians books. Also, as a member of the 20th century French Social-Museum, French city planner Henri Prost's modern planning methods based to old futuristic ideas originally based to old, social utopians visions.

Especially, Henry Prost's one of the plannings idea of hygiene derive from old social utopian and futuristic ideas aimed to planning more modern habitable houses and cities for the industrial era unhealthy cities. He applicated a planning methods most of the this futuristic ideas in the planning of historical city of Istanbul's old, rural, vernacular areas. Figure 7-8.

These realizations aime to make Istanbul city more modern and habitable leaded to city's 20th century modernizations. Even today we can still see the Henri Prost's plannings affects based the social utopians ideas of hygiene in the historical city which mostly critised by architects and city planners. Consequantly, in the 19th Century, previously Istanbul which had been a model for the utopians in the future cities, later in the 20th Century modernized with followers of modern era social utopians like Henri Prost.

References

[1] Borie, A., Pinon, P., Istanbul, Portrait de Ville, Cité del'Architecture et du Patrimoine, IFA, Paris, 2010, p.5-16.

[2] Choay, Françoise, L'Urbanisme, Utopie et Réalités, Une anthologie, 1965, p.16-23-93.

[3] Çelik, Z., Değişen İstanbul, "Remaking İstanbul", TTK, İstanbul, 1986, p.63-66.

[4] Ebersolt, J., Constantinople Byzantine et les Voyageurs du Levant, Paris, 1918, E.Leroux, p. 47.

[5] Goodwin, Godfrey, Sinan and City Planning, Mimar Sinan The Urban Vision, Environmental Design, Journal of The Islamic Environmental Design Research Centre, Carucci Editore, 1991, p.10-13.

[6] Merlin, P., L'Urbanisme, Presses Universitaires de France, 1991, p.26.

[7] Thierry, P., "La Ville et La Maison en Utopie, Préface à la Troisieme Edition", Paquot T., Bédarida M., (sous le direction de) Habiter l'utopie: Le Familistére Godin, A Guise, Edition de La Villette Paris, 2009, p.16 .

[8] Petruccioli, A., Editorial, Sinan and City Planning, Mimar Sinan The Urban Vision, Environmental Design, Journal of The Islamic Environmental Design Research Centre, Carucci Editore, 1991, p.8.

[9] Shultz, C.N., Genius Loci, AD, London, 1992, p. 50-51.

[10] Tekeli, İ, Modernizm, Modernite ve Türkiye'nin Kent Planlama Tarihi., Yurt yay., Istanbul, 2001, p.111.

Listening The Genius Loci: Prague, Rome, İstanbul

Sinem Tapkı
Yıldız Technical University Architecture Department, Architect, Phd.Student
sinem-tapki@hotmail.com

Abstract. In the study, the spirit of the place has been discussed. If the architectural products belong to the location, they have an identity. They should give users a sense of belonging. The sense of belonging means it is to be local. Listening of Genius loci is to create structures, which their spirit of the place is visible and gain to people a sense of identity and belonging. Urban identity and landmarks have a great role to being spirit of the place. Urban identity is a set of values, that it related to connotation in the minds of those who do not see the city. Urban identity can not separated from history, culture, knowledge, experience, people and life experiences. Each city has a unique architectural structure, lifestyle and identity. Historical and cultural accumulations create the core values of urban identity. The memory of the city or social memory occurs combination from location-time-memory-identity. Each city has an identity. Variability, uncertainty, undefined may be part of the city's identity. Considered in the study, Prague, Rome, Istanbul does not describe to only read. They describes with seeing the city, listening to the sounds of the city, the original smell, feel, by tapping into the past, the meeting with the city of the body.

Keywords: Genius loci, spirit of place, phenomenology, phenomenology of architecture, identity

1. Introduction

This document described Christian Norberg Schulz's idea of genius loci. After it gives some examples of different country's genius loci.

Most of people are charmed by the particular atmosphere of places, which developed over the years. Many great buildings and places can not measured and analysed with scientific elements. People can experience with phenomena. The architect must take into account these phenomena to create architectural meaning. Architecture is not only an aesthetical art or a technical construction. Architecture is to create a genius loci.

The spirit of place is formed in a long time period. The city is shaped with its geographical characteristics, cultural level, architectural character, tradition and customs and life style in a short it is shaped with spirit of place .

Components like geographical location, physical structure, socio – cultural structure, religious facts, climate, topography, trade structure, economical environment, history, culture, roads, streets and architectural works contribute the formation of unique spirit of places.

In this article offers an important concepts such as character, identity, space, place, the guardian spirit or essence of place.

2. Place

Human is strongly linked to places. A concrete term for environment is place. It is common usage to say acts, situations, events take place. Place doesn't occur physical dimensions and elements such as dimensions, materials and proportions. Place is given character, essence, spirit . Place cannot be described by means of analytic, physic, scientific concepts.

All places have a character. A place has a particular character and identity according to local condition. The character of place is a function of time. It changes with the time of day, seasons, weather and different conditions of light. The character is determined by the material. Character is a complex system. It cannot define single adjective.

Kevin lynch wrote ' shape, color or arrangement which facilities the making of vividly identified, powerfully structured, highly useful mental images of the environment.' Kevin Lynch implies that the elements which constitute the spatial structure are concrete things with 'character' and 'meaning'.

When people visit a foreign city, they are usually struck by its particular character. This is become an important part of the experience.

Figure 1
A natural place

3. The Spirit Of Place

People everyday life occurs of concrete phenomena. It occurs of animals, trees, flowers, earth, wood, stone, streets, buildings, door, windows, roofs. But it consist of intangible phenomena. Such as feelings, identity. Places are complex systems. It is very difficult to understanding and contend with places and their phenomena. Each objects, situations, events, experiences can perceive with phenomenological.

Phenomenology is conceived as a return to things. Phenomenology was first defined by Edmund Husserl in 1906. His work is *The Idea of Phenomenology*.

Christian Norberg Schulz draw on the phenomenological works of Edmund Husserl and Martin Heidegger. He develop a review of modern architecture. Schulz is supporter for a phenomenology of architecture. His comment is return to place-based design. Norberg Schulz describes, architecture is to make visible the spirit of place (genius loci) and architect's mission is to create a meaningful place in his study Towards A Phenomenology of Architecture. His writing on place, genius loci, identity, physical character is a part of his theories place and space.

Genius loci is a Roman mythological concept. According to ancient Rome mythology Genius loci was guardian spirit. It was depicted as a snake. This spirit gives life to people and places. It accompanies them from birth to death. It gives their character or core.

Experiencing Genius loci e a phenomenological experience that integrates all senses. According to J. Pallasmaa phenomenology of space is experience of the world with textures, colors, smells, sounds. Experiencing the phenomenological space is becoming important in the modern architecture.


Figure 2
The spirit of place: San Gimignano

Le Corbusier said that 'Architecture is a thing of art, a phenomenon of the emotions, lying

outside questions of construction and beyond them. The purpose of construction is to make things hold together; of architecture to move us. Architectural emotion exists when the work rings within us in tune with a universe whose laws we obey, recognize and respect. When certain harmonies have been attained, the work capture us. Architecture is a matter of 'harmonies', it is a 'pure creation of the spirit.''

The connection of people to places and their cultural interaction with their environments has created over the years. Special places, buildings, habitats can be expressed with the term genius loci.

Identification means to become friends with a environment. Scandinavian people are friends with fog, fish, snow, ice and cold weather. He enjoys squeaking sound of snow under feet when he walks. Arab people are friends with sand, dessert, sun, burning weather. It mean that environmental experiences are meaningful. Every character comprises in outer and inner world. Modern man friendship with natural environment reduce. The modern urban man have to identify with man-made things, such as streets, houses, pavement. The German born architect, Gerhard Kallmann told a story. He visited at the and of the Second World War, he wanted to see the house where he grown up. As must be expected in Berlin, the house had disappeared. Mr Kallmann felt somewhat lost. Then he suddenly recognized the typical pavement of the sidewalk. The floor on which he had played when he was a child. He experienced a strong feeling of having returned home.

Figure 3
Childhood experience

The story shown us that man's relationship to environment is usually developed during childhood. The childs grow up green or brown spaces, they walks or plays sand, stone, moss, under

a cloudy or sunny sky; they touch hard or soft things; they hear noises, wind, scream, music and they experiences heat, warm or cold. Thus children get acquainted with the environment. They develop all future experiences.

For a long time, modern man believed that science and technology had freed him from a direct dependence on places. This belief causes an environmental chaos. People feel lost. To be lost is opposite of the feeling security. Kevin lynch said that 'A good environmental image gives its possessor an important sense of emotional security.'

To protect and conserve the genius loci means to concretize its essence.

Figure 4
Architecture character

Examples are the city of Prague, Rome, İstanbul. A few examples of places with a specific genius loci shall be described here. These paces have a special spirit of their dweller.

4. Listening The Genius Loci

4.1. Prague

'The most beautiful jewel of the crown of the world'
Goethe
'The city of smile, oblivion and sorrow'
Milan Kundera

The particular location of Prague is center of the Europe. Prague is the capital of the Kingdom of the Bohemia. Prague is always known the 'city of hundred steeples'. Actually its architecture is saturated with vertical. The city

offers a unique architectural texture that has been protected for generations. Buildings, streets, gates, courtyards, staircases, windows, doors lead people into an endless genius loci.

The nature of the country gives a very particular character and identity to the city. The country land has a very varied surface and natural content. The city's boundary is strengthened by the vegetation. The south to the north country is divided in two halves by the river Vltava. The ancient road from Ukraine and Poland crossed the Vltava. The road continue into Germany. The Old Town is surrounded by the hills. The city's geographical properties make the country predestined to a cosmopolitan center.

Prague changes with weather, the time of the day and seasons. Prague is different morning and night. In the sunny morning, it is protective and closeness. In the night the street lights give a characteristic essence. Eye-catching buildings illuminated at night create a charming atmosphere. The illumination is not continuous, it has dark zones and light zones. It is mysterious, fear. Thus the times create a place and spirit of the place. The passing seasons also create their own reflection in the city. There is no doubt that Prague is very beautiful on a bright summer day. Red hues of autumn or white silence of winter offers a different beauty and effect.

Until the 1800s, Prague consisted of four distinct neighborhoods which they have a own squares and they divided into sheltered wall. Therefore, each neighborhood has its own specific characteristic due to the people living there. Today, Prague's magnificent splendor continues with the unique spirit that creates all of these neighborhoods. In Prague's architecture has Bohemian relationship to earth and sky.

Hradcany (Castle District)

In St.Vitus is stronger than in any other great Gothic cathedral. It integrates horizontal and vertical. As enter the Cathedral, magnificent proportions affects people.

The Vladislav Hall is the most significant Baroque Buildings of Prague.

Golden Path is remaining historic streets of Prague Castle. It is the one of the popular street in Prague Castle. The street consisting of small colorful houses gives the feeling of fairytale.

Stare Mesto (Old Town)

The Old Town is linked with the Charles Bridge. It is a very active trading center for many years. The city built on important trade routes from Krakow to Germany (east-west

Figure 5
Prague in Winter

Figure 6
Prague on a foggy day

Figure 7
Prague at sunset

Figure 8
Prague at night

direction) and Vienna to Warsaw (north-south direction)

The Old Town Square was the main market area in the city. It is generally considered as the center of the city. The old Town Square is focus point for groups of tourists, city tours, shopping opportunities and cafes. At the same time, it is one of the city's architectural masterpieces. The Old Town Square has a large ring form. It is surrounded by comparatively narrow gabled houses.

Tyn Church is a large courtyard which enclosed by buildings. The courtyard is covered with Renaissance and Baroque buildings facades. Tyn Church's twin towers dominate to Old Town Square.

Summer or winter, a intense tourists expects under The Astronomical Clock. The reason for this is to display animation to the clock by the hour. Astronomical drawings are on the clock have a meanings. The drawings are on the clock: the world in the center of clock, the sky blue painted part of, the earth brown painted part of, worlds that show directions and time, shapes that represent the sun and the moon. The Astronomical Clock thought to have been built in 1410 gives clue to the Medieval astronomy. While clock following the time, the earth is the center of the universe for the reflects the understanding of the universe.

Mala Strana (Small Town)

The Baroque garden and palaces are located in this neighborhood. Mala Strana is still a residential area. Because of this feature it is different from Stare Mesto which located just across the river.

St. Nicholas Church with a large mass and Baroque dome take place in the small town. St. Nicholas Church is one of the most prominent buildings in the city skyline. Its dome is 75 meter. The remarkable dome is dominated by the surrounding buildings. St. Nicholas Church gives themes. It is sacred and splendid interpretation. It rises towards the sky with fierce dynamism.

The houses have a particular character. They have a massive and heavy appearance. The ground floor's windows are low and small. Their florid gables rise up towards the sky. The houses have Renaissance, Gothic or Baroque forms. But they have a basic relationship to earth and sky.

Prague is the one of the great meeting places. A lot of meanings are gathered. The architecture of Prague is cosmopolitan. Romanesque, Renaisance, Gothic, Baroque, Cubist buildings live together. It is a cosmopolitan city.

Today Prague is different and still the same. A similar genius loci is also found in today's Prague. The visitor or domestic people walk along the Prague's streets, the history of Prague become alive in their mind.

4.2. Rome

'Feels inside while being outside'

Rome is generally known the Eternal City. It is the center of the Universal Roman Catholic Church.

The Roman street does not separate the houses. It gives people a feeling of being inside when they are out. The street is an urban interior and life takes place. They are called *piazza* which the houses surround the space and their center is marked by a fountain. The piazza may be planned or result of the growth. Piazzas give a character to the city.

The Roman district is volcanic. The Roman vernacular architecture reflects its natural character. The houses are simple shape. Their general character is massive. House's windows are small. Their common building material is tufa block. In accordance with the tradition of the region, roof would be sloped, tiled or flat.

The concept of genius loci will be sought in Colosseum, Pantheon, St. Pietro, Piazza Navona.

During the Renaissance and Baroque several attempts were made to give Rome an integrated geometrical structure. Papa Sixtus V planned the most radical and comprehensive changes. He aim to connect the main religious foci the city by means of wide, straight streets.

The Colosseum is the most famous monument in Rome. It was built in sacred valley between the hills. Colosseum is accepted by the Christians as a cosmic symbol. A symbol means the end of the world. Colosseum's oval form has a meaning. It is world theatre which all peoples under the rule of Rome. Colosseum is open in the vertical axes. The natural dome sky cover Colosseum.

'The Temple of All Gods' is one of the best preserved structures in the city. Pantheon is a example of the Roman conception of interior space, where a circular room is enclosed by massive wall. The simple rates of Pantheon creates a very harmonious interior. The diameter of

dome is equal to height. Light comes from a single circular opening in the roof. The actual size and beauty of the temple, however, can be detected from the inside. The building visualizes the Roman genius loci. Pantheon's interior is a representation of the cosmos. The Dome symbolizes heaven and massive wall symbolizes the earth. Thus earth and heaven are united. Pantheon has a reflection of general cosmic harmony. The world is gathered under building.

Colosseum and Pantheon have a symbolic meanings. Colosseum and Pantheon remember Heidegger's words that ' to be on earth means to be under the sky'.

Piazza San Pietro is the greatest of all Baroque squares. It consist of a monumental colonnade which they creates oval space. The center of oval space is marked by an obelisk. Piazza San Pietro becomes the new meeting place for people.

Navona Square and the surrounding area are a residential area for at least 2000 years. Piazza Navona is built on an old stadium. Square which it surrounded by palaces and cafes is eye-catching with flamboyant Baroque fountains. Bernini's fountain in Piazza Navona is the synthesis of nature and culture. Natural elements such as water, rocks are combined with human figures and religious symbols. This fountain was born from combination of architecture, sculpture and city planning. If the space around the fountain and relationship with buildings consider, value of fountain increase. No other square of Italy can compete with Piazza Navona's pretension. Luxury cafes are the city's social heart. The activity around three Baroque fountain in the pedestrian zone continues day and night.

In Rome, stairs are not used to only combine different levels. Roman stairs bring people close to the earth and increase their sense of belonging to the place.

Rome is a city where people feel inside while being outside. Rome has conserved its identity over the time.

Figure 9
Colosseum

Figure 10
Pantheon's dome

Figure 11
A meeting place: Piazza Navona

Figure 12
Piazza di Spagna

4.3. İstanbul

'Seven hilled city'
'Capital of cultures'

İstanbul is the city that connects two continents i.e Asia and Europe. This magnificent city visited by thousands of tourists every year, was the capital of many empires in the past. İstanbul is an enthusiastic and lively city, especially still incorporates the difference in attracting the attention of strangers.

İstanbul is both historical and modern city. Domes and minarets, high buildings have been dominating the city skyline. To understand the spirit of İstanbul, must be known Historical Peninsula, Coastal Path (Cankurtaran to Yeşilköy), Golden Horn, Taksim to Maslak, Bosphorus. This areas have a different character, different identity, different spirit. A few examples of places with a specific genius loci shall be defined here.

It has many surprise that Istanbul has to offer but Yerebatan Cistern which hidden underneath the ground is different. Today with proper lighting and music created the atmosphere that makes it is a nice place for the visitors. In addition to being an excellent atmosphere, historical textures is also influenced peoples. People feel the mystery embodied in cistern. When get down to Yerebatan Cistern which disconnects you from the outside world; peace, quiet and little chill takes to you.

Fener and Balat : Old two brothers in İstanbul. Fener and Balat are the most fascinating and characteristic area of İstanbul. For these reasons, many tourists in İstanbul visit these sites. In the past Greeks, Armenians and Jews lived together. Fener and Balat attract attention with cosmopolitan culture. They draw attention with the recent restoration work.

Fener and Balat Houses reflect İstanbul's historical texture. The history, the scars of life experience are read at this district's home. The colorful façades and qualified façade decoration, bay window usually find in this houses.

İstiklal Street, once known as the Great Avenue, Grand Rue de Pera, was the most important street in İstanbul in 19. century. İstiklal Street begins with the Taksim square in the north and ends with a tunnel in the south. It is closed to traffic. There is a tram connecting the beginning and the end with three stops. It has an elegant shops and embassy buildings. There are a lot of passages in this street. The passages

Figure 13
Bosphorus

Figure 14
Fener and Balat houses

Figure 15
Yerebatan Cistern

Figure 16
İstiklal Street

are famous with used book shops, tavern, souvenir. The passages on İstiklal Street attract attention with its architecture, history , present vitality. Such as : Atlas passage, Avrupa passage, Markiz Passage, Hazzo Pulo passage.

There is a different history on every wall, in every building in İstiklal Street. The buildings leave a different effect on people. There are many things that buildings want to tell people. Botter Apartment and Mısır Apartment are one of them. Botter Apartment , Mısır Apartment are the famous building in İstiklal Street. Botter Apartment is one of the most important buildings of the Italian Architect D'Aronco. It is the first example of Art Nouveau style building in İstanbul. Stained glass windows, lighting elements, each of the railing are an example of art literally. Also D'Aronco designed by balustrade railings and the elevator shaft personally. Mısır Apartment is example of Art Nouveau, which designed by Armenian architect Hovsep Aznavoryan.

İstiklal Street is one of the famous streets in Turkey. The most important condition for being able to say 'I'm in İstanbul' is to walk in İstiklal Street. İstiklal Street is always full of people because of shops, cafes, restaurants, bookstores, bars, galleries, and cinemas. The feeling of walking in the crowd in İstiklal Street is very different. Even the smell of İstiklal Street is different.

5. Conclusion

The connection of people to places and their traditional action has created over the years special places, which can be described the term 'genius loci'. Examples are the city of Prague, Rome, Istanbul . The places have a unique spirit of their dweller being in balance and harmony with the environment.

Architecture has a big role of people being-in-the-world. Finally creating a place become with identity and character, genius loci. When genius loci is weak, the image-making becomes difficult, people feel lost.

References

[1] A. Vogler and A. Vittori, Genius Loci in the Space-Age, 1st Infra-Free Life Symposium, İstanbul, December 11-15 (2006), 1–26.
[2] C. N. Schulz, Genius Loci Towards A Phenomenology of Architecture, Rizzoli New York Press, 1991, pp. 6-166.
[3] C. N. Schulz, The Phenomenon of Place, Architectural Association Quarterly, 3 (1976), 125-137
[4] Dr. F. Conti, Barok Sanatını Tanıyalım, ed., Inkılap and Aka Press, İstanbul, 1978, pp. 4–36.
[5] Dr. M. Colledge, Roma Sanatını Tanıyalım, ed., Inkılap and Aka Press, İstanbul, 1982, pp. 6–28.
[6] Dorling Kindersley Limited, Görsel Gezi Rehberleri İtalya, ed., Dost Press, Ankara, 1996, pp. 374–460.
[7] M. Lindsay Bennett, Berlitz Cep Rehberi Prag, ed., Dost Press, Ankara, 2015, pp. 25–68.

Erzurum Men's "Bars" in Turkish Folk Dances

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Cengiz ŞENGÜL; Ataturk University, KazımKarabekir Faculty of Education, Fine Arts Education Department, Music Education Department
csengul@atauni.edu.tr

Lütfi DURSUN;   Atatürk Universitiy, Educational Sciences Institutions, Depertment of Music Teaching Master Student
lutfidursun25@gmail.com

Abstract Turkish Folk Dances have always been one of the most significant parts of Turkish Culture.   By interacting with the existing Anatolian culture and the Turk's process of emigration into Anatolia; this dance whose roots can be traced back to the Middle Asia has survived and taken its present form in terms of its figures, music accompanying instruments and costumes . When investigated , it can be seen that Turkish Folk Dances have taken different names according to their characteristic features such as their regions and rhytmic and melodic structures and some particular types have been classified under the names "Zeybek", "kafkas", "halay", "horon", "hora", "kaşık oyunları (folk dance performed while beating time with wooden spoons)" and "bar". The term "bar" denotes to a particular group of folk dances performed in eastern and north-eastern Anatolia   by using particular orders and forms of lines between dancers with the accompany of drum and shrill pipe. As a city which has been located in the eastern Anatolia , it would be normal to use the term "bar" to express the folk dances particular to Erzurum. "Bar" has been the first folk dance ever performed on-stage in Turkey. With their first performance in the presence of Mustafa Kemal Atatürk in Trabzon, in 1937; 'Erzurum Male Folk Dances Ensemble'   won the first prize in the International Folk Dance Competition organized in Venice, Italy in 1949. This "Ensemble " has represented Turkey in several national and international festivals and organizations including the international festival held in Heger, Hungary in 1976.

Keywords: Turkish Folk Dances, Erzurum's Male Folk Dances, Stage Arts, Music.

1. Introduction

1.1. Dance

Dance is an art action that has been seen among all civilizations since the begining of hishory untill today. Dance has been a commen language of humanity in the most primitive and modern societies and it has survived in all ages. Dance is an international art which has many alternative definitions according to developments.

Although it hasn't been concluded when and how the information about dance has been obtained, it has been reached that dance is as old as the history of humanity thanks to the data which has been gained so far. The pictures engraved on the walls of the caves has showed that the motivation of dance is as old as the life of people on the earth and it has been almost the firt way of communication [1].

1.2. Dance in Anatolia

The tradition of dance in Anatolia goes back to early ages. The English archaelogist James MELAART uncovered a neolothic city in Çatalhöyük a town 11 km far away from Çumra, in Konya. It belongs to the years 5500-6500 B.C. In this excavation some collective colourful wall pictures of dacnce has been found which have a height of 2 metres. In these pictures, the hunters of deers worn the skin of leopard dance accompanied with drum [2].

Anatolia has been a bridge between east and West on which many civilizations and cultures has survived and developed so far. That is why, Turkey has a rich accumulation of dance actions [8].

1.3. Folk Dances

Folk dances are measured regular movements that reflect the cultural values of the society where it belongs, express an event, agony and happiness. Its roots are about religion and magic, it can be performed with or without music (by clapping or beating time), alone or with a group of people [6].

It is only possible with dance for one to express himself in a unique way. Dance is the expression of emotions and ideas by using movements. It is like as if there is nothing better than movement for expressing oneself in a unique way. If we think that the character of a person improves in the society, the measures and figures that form the key element of dance are tightly connected to the society in which that person grows up [10].

Folk dances in socio-cultural life are very important in that it carries the main values into future and brings light to the past. Especially the rituals, movements, music and wealth of rhythms that it hosts are important cultural entities that reflect the character of the society [7].

1.4. Turkish Folk Dances

Turkish folk dances whose roots go back to Central Asia, have taken its latest form and come to our day in terms of cloth and instrument that accompany such music by interacting with cultures in Anatolia then.

According to Koçkar (1998), four periods have important effects on Turkish dances. First of them is the ancient culture of Anatolian peninsula. The second important effect is the Ural-Altaic region's culture. The third effect is the Islamic culture. And the fourth effect is the effect of Ottoman Empire which prevailed in broad land in Asia, Europe and Africa [8].

In the past centuries, in religious life, in military life, in art and career and in entertainment there were various rituals. In these rituals dances also had a funtion and if searced one would definitely get one of these rituals …[11].

While being danced in accordance with its natural environment,Turkish folk dances were later changed into histrionics that were danced in accordance with certain rules and discipline in the cities first and on the stages later in order to teach the dance to as many people as possible. Turkish folk dances which take its part in the histrionics were started to be performed in various institutions, organizaions, foundations and associations and these studies were spread to broad areas[12].

Community centers, Village Institutes, Facility for Teaching Turkish Folk Dances, Turkish National Student Federation, State Folk Dances Community played important role in transferring these dances onto the stage. Today in the folk dances department of faculty of fine arts, in Sports Sciences Faculties, researches and education are being conducted about Turkish Folk Dances. Besides, in the governorships, Provincial Directorate of Youth and Sports, Provincial Directorate of Culture, Municipalities, Cultural Directorate of Universities, facilities, foundations and special dance schools, many activities have been organised and the entity of Turkish Folk Dances are sustained.

Another important factor in transferring the dance onto the stage and popularizing the dance is the folk dances competitions organized by the Facility of popularizing Folk Dances, Turkish National Student Federation and Milliyet Newspaper. After these competitions which are the first examples of folk dances, the folk dances competitons regularly organized by Ministry of National Education, the Ministry of Culture and Tourism, the Ministry of Youth and Sports, Turkish Folk Dances Federation, Turkish University Sports Federation played important role in popularising and in development of Turkish Folk Dances

1.5. The Types of Turkish Folk Dances

It is known that many researches have been done on the types of Turkish Folk Dances and its categories. It has been categorized according to cities, regions, number of players, gender , speed, the items used, names of players, names of animals, modes, the patterns of feet, the names of Turkic tribes, religious standards, instruments and discipline subjects. [4]. The category which is mostly used today is the region categorizations of the Turkis Folk Dances.

1.5.1.Hora: It is a folk dance played in the region of Thrace. İt is also a name given to

Turkish Folk Dances played in Kosovo, Macedonia, Bulgaria and in Balkans.

1.5.2.Horon: It is a commen name of folk dances played in the region of Black Sea.

1.5.3.Zeybek: It is a common name given to the folk dances played in region of Eagean, South of Marmara and West of Central Anatolia.

1.5.4.Teke Dances: It is a common name given to the dances played in the region of lakes and in the Mediterranean.

1.5.5.Kaşık Oyunları (folk dance performed while beating time with wooden spoons): It is a common name given to the folk dances played in the regions of east of Mediterranean, Central Anatolia and West of Black Sea.

1.5.6. Folk Dance of Caucasia: It is a common name given to the dances played in the regions of North of Anatolia and Caucasia.

1.5.7.Halay: It is a common name given to folk dances played in the regions of East Anatolia, Southeast of Anatolia, Central Anatoliaand in the region of Çukurova.

1.5.8.Bar: It has many definitions such as togetherness, a type of folk dance played together, a folk dance played with a heavy rhythm, drum's knob, unit air pressure, a metal stick which combines the weights in the sports of barbell. It is a commen name given to the folk dances played in a line in the regions of East Anatolia and Northeast of Anatolia in Turkey.

2. The Folk Dances of Erzurum Region

The folk dances of Erzurum region is performed by men and women seperately. There is no common figurative move structure between the Erzurum Men's Bar and Women's Bar, there are also some differences regarding the instruments accompanying.

While men in Men's Bar express bravery, heroism, agility, belief in friends and being solemn against enemies, in Women's Bar women express grace, nobility and dignity [5].

When the Erzurum Women's Bars motion structure was examined, there is seen the motions down and up ekstremite with together head and body. The most important motions that determine the characteristic of the regional motion, it is seen that in the wrist, in the fingers and region of the waist. Even though knee bending is often seen the motion in the

Bars, it isn't seen too much in Erzurum Women's Bars.

Erzurum Women's Bars is performed accompanied with 'wine', 'clarinet' and 'timbrel'. It can be often seen dance with folk song in Erzurum Women's Bars. The lyrics of the dance with folk song is voiced by performing dancer in chorus or accompanying musicians.

2.1. The Erzurum Men's Bars

To perform the Erzurum Men's Bars, dancers enter the stage, place that will be shown, by walking in line back to back accompany with greeting music such as known 'Paşaköşkü' (Paşagöçtü). In a straight line, dancers lined up side by side. Posture show to be, arms at the level of the body, holding the waist with both hands. When the dancers start to show the posture in place of the entrance's melody a This improvisation is important for the motivation of the dancers. In recent years, out of competitions while Erzurum Men's Bars exhibited and during this improvisation, reading Sadi Akatay's Bar poetry has been accepted to be a tradition. After this improvisation, dancing Basbar (first bar) dance has started a tradition.

While the Bar played in an open way, players perform it clasping each other on a right line next to each other and they unite their hands on the heads. They also touch each

other on the elbows while they stand up on toes.

On the other hand, the Bar played in a closed way, player unite on a line by holding each other's waist while they touch each other on the shoulders. It is performed as follows: hands holding behind, fingers crossed and each performers dance while their left hands are on their waists.

500 ncü Fetih Şenliklerine katılan Bar Ekibimiz İhsan Taftalı-Nimet Gezmiş-Mahmut Baltacıoğlu-Hulusi Seven-Fikri Kükürtçü-İhsan Ertugay

There are some Bars which are performed without holding hands or placing hands on the waists. These bars are 'Hançer and Köroğlu Bars' . Hançer Bar is performed by two performers each of whom holding a knife. Köroğlu Bar is also performed by two performers and each of them has a sword in their right hands. While Hançer and Köroğlu Bars are performed by two performers, the other performers wait and their arms are in a body line and they place their hands on the waist.

Erzurum Men's Bars was being performed by at least 4-5 people. Nowadays a team consists of 9-10 people. If there isn't a form of formal demonstration, for example in a wedding ceremony, Erzurum Men's Bars can also be performed with the number of people who know the figures as long as there is enough space on stage. 3120 people attempted to perform the longest Başbar show in the world for the guinness world records on 19 December, 2015, in Erzurum Republic street, within an event called winterfest 2015 which was organized by Erzurum metropolitan municipality.

In Erzurum Men's Bars, dancers are named according to their position in the team line-up. The rightest initial dancer is called "barbaşı". Barbaşı is the captain of the team who controls and organize the other dancers by commands

and has a specific style of dancing and waving handkerchief. The dancer on the right of barbaşı is called, "koltuk". Koltuk is the key player of the team who provides the originality and the comfort for başbaşı. The dancers between barbaşı and the last dancer of the row are called "kelle" and the last dancer of the row is called "poççik". Barbaşı and poççik waves their handkerchief with a specific style of their own according to the melody, rhythm and the figures of the dance. Barbaşı may also use the waving handkerchief as a way of communicating with the team members.

Erzurum Men's Bars is performed accompanied with drum and clarion.

Drum is one of the oldest known percussion instrument. Although there may be some differences in style and playing technique, drum is an instrument that you can come across with anywhere in the world.

The pulley of the drum which is played in Erzurum Men's Bars is made of hornbeam, pine or walnut trees. It is usually covered with chamois leather. The most distinctive side of Erzurum Men's Bars drum is that they leave 2-3 cm gap when mounting the wooden circle to pulley. This characteristic also defines the indigenous drum playing technique of Erzurum region. While the one side of the drum is covered with thick leather the other side is covered with thin leather. Erzurum Men's Bars drum is played by hitting the thick side with a drumstick (tokmak) and hitting the thin side with a special thin stick called "çırpı". Handle of çırpı is in a spring shape. The part that touches to the leather is flat in parallel. From this aspect it is different than the other thin sticks (çırpı) that are being used in other regions.

Melodies of Erzurum Men's Bars are played with clarion. The clarion sound is lush and strong folk instruments. The instrument which is in the different shapes and sizes in Turkey is usually made with hardwoods such as plum,

ebony and apricot. The clarion is called as coarse, medium and cure in compliance with measure. The instrument, which is used in Erzurum region folk dance, is la tone.

Erzurum Men's Bars consist of movements such as gait, lap, place the leg jump forward, to double their toes and subsidence. The bars are very important factors that determine the characteristics of the local movement. The first factor is perpendicular to the exercise of the body and the head. The second factor is planterflexion (toof bent downward movement) movement in which is observed especially in the ankle and the Such as dorsiflexion (frontside of the upper leg), eversion (the ankle movement of rotate towards the outside) While carrier ankle İa in planterflexion motion, the other standing in frontal plane in the swing back and forth are seen movements such as moving the hip and knee flexion (movement causing the reduction of the angle of the joints), adduction (movement made toward the body's center) extension (movement causing on increas in the terms of the joint)

There are some accesories and clothes used in Men's Bar.

While the Erzurum Men's Bars is performed, the black low heel shoes is worn

which is made with soft leather and it is called 'cıstik' (Çapula).

One of the piece of costumes is worn which is the pleated back and a type of the baggy shalwar. It is named 'zığva'. The color of 'zığva' is dark-blue and the legs and feet are tight but the top is wide. Zığva's structure is like a thick-rope, in the part of thick-rope is used a thick-wick as a bond. After the tie a knot in the part of the top, approximately down the 15-20 cm is fastened double wrapping. There is a embroidered which is knitted by silk in front of Zığva and it is seen like a line. The part of feet of Zığva is called 'kurtağzı' and also this part is made by silk. 'Kurtağzı' is a lower part of Zığva which has been on 'cıstik'.

As an another piece of costume is sleeveless vest which is the same color of Zığva. There is a lots of embroidered especially the part of coast, entrance of pocket and back on sleeveless vest which is made by silk and cotton cord. Also the buttons and the part of fasten is made by silk and cotton cord..

The long sleeve shirt is worn as a piece of costume which is white and the sleeve of shirt consist of with a 4-5 black button and wrist band of shirt is embroidered. The shirt collar is vertical and embroidered. There is a 7-10 black button closed right-side of shirt.

The lowe part of vest is put into Zığva. 'Kuşak' is fastened on Zığva and vest. It is named as 'Şal' which is a kind of textile fabric and it is often seen in the region of Anatolia. 'Şal' is consisted of characteristic bonding technique and it is used in Erzurum Men's Bars. It should tie with special way which should be pleated, double wrapping, wide front and thinner back.

'Pazubent' is another piece of costume which is fastened on right arm and it is made by black leather, silver or glass bead.

Each dancer has a handjar (hançer) which is placed horizontally between 'kuşak'. Handjar is a material for Handjar Bars that both sides have blunt, round-nosed and the handle of handjar is generally embroidered.

One of the accessories of Erzurum Men's Bars' costumes is silver shackle (köstek) . It is used that swinging hanging down from neck and it is known as a kind of chain.

After foundation Republic of Turkey, the folk dances started to be performed on a stage. Erzurum Men's Bars is known the fist type of traditional dance.

In 1934, the first Professional folk dance group founded by Ihsan Yavuzer. This folk dance group consisted of volunteers who was working in stone pits in Erzurum. Besides Erzurum Men's Bars groups in the schools were created then, and Muhtar DURSUNOĞLU was the head of these groups [9].

In the later years, Erzurum Men's Bars, which were founded by community house, performed their shows in a lots of local and national programmes. Thanks to this shows, they gained reputation.

In 1937, Mustafa Kemal Atatürk was to go Trabzon. The governor of Erzurum, whose name was Tahsin Uzer, was to go Trabzon with a committee and it was decided that Erzurum Men's Bars Group was to go Trabzon with them and the name of the dancers are Vahap Türkkal, Mevlüt Kavut, Carpenter (nickname) Nurettin and Little (nickname) Nurettin and Adil ÖZAL, the head of stone pit, took them to Trabzon [3].

There was a competition in Venezia in 1949 and Erzurum Men's Bars Group went to competition to represent Turkey and they won the competition and they were the World champion [9].

1949 yılında Venedik'te yapılan Uluslararası festivale iştirak eden Bar ekibimiz Venedik meydanında. Davulcu Karayılanla birlikte.

Erzurum Men's Bars Group went to lots of national and international competition and festival after foundation of Erzurum Folk Dance and Folk Song Assosiciation. The name of these countries that they represented Turkey are Germany in (1954), Belgium in (1958) ,Austria and Switzerland in (1964), Tunis in (1965), Yugoslavia in (1968), Japan in (1970), France in (1973) and Hungary in (1976) [9].

From those years to our day, The folk dance groups of Erzurum Metropolitan Municipality, Erzurum Public Training Center, Erzurum Pasinler Public Training Center, Erzurum Şair Nefi Secondary School and Erzurum Atatürk Industrıal School showed their performance in many places of the world.

After 1950's, with the competition format of folk dance was organized by the Facility for the Entity and Popularising of Turkish Folk Dance, Turkey's National Student's Federation, the Milliyet Newspaper, the Ministry of Education, Youth and Sport Ministry, the Ministry of Culture, Turkey University Sports Federation and Turkey Folk Dance Federation until today. The Erzurum Men's Bars gained lots of Turkey Championship with this competitions. Erzurum Men's Bars have achieved a reputation with this success. They gained the great prestige throughout the country in Turkısh Folk Dance.

Also Erzurum Men's Bars performed their shows in Winter Universiade Erzurum 2011's opening and closing ceremony which was organized in Erzurum. Başbar Dance was voiced accompanied by polyphone music and

both traditional form exhibited by modernizing the balet steps.

Closing ceremony of the 17th Mediterranean Games 'Handjar (Hançer) Bars' and 'Başbar' were exhibited again.

Erzurum Men's Bars, which was located in the repertoire of Conservatory Folk Dances, the State Folk Dance Ensemble and Ministry of Culture, constitute wealth in the Anatolian cultural heritage and intangible cultural heritage of humanity.

Table 1: The Rhythm, Name and Harmony in Erzurum Men's Bars

The Name of Erzurum Men's Bars	Rhythm	Harmony
Aşırma	12/8 (3+3+3+3)	Uşşak
Başbar	9/8 (2+2+2+3)	Hüseyni
Çingenler	9/8 (2+2+2+3)	Uşşak
Dello	6/4	Karciğar
Hançer	12/8 (3+3+3+3)	Uşşak
Hesiko	4/4	Uşşak
Hoşbilezik	12/8(3+3+3+3)	Hüseyni
İkinci Bar	12/8 (3+3+3+3)	Uşşak
Karabet (Karabey)	12/8(3+3+3+3)	Hüseyni
Koçeri	4/4, 6/8	Uşşak
Köroğlu	12/8 (3+3+3+3)	Uşşak
Nare	12/8(3+3+3+3)	Uşşak
Sekme	9/8 (2+2+2+3)	Uşşak
Tamzara	9/8 (2+2+2+3)	Uşşak
Tavuk	10/8 (2+3+2+3)	Hicaz
Temirağa	4/4	Hüseyni
Uzundere	12/8 (3+3+3+3)	Hicaz
Yayvan	6/4	Uşşak

References

[1] Akgül, K. P. (2014). İletişim, Dans ve Beden Dili. Cinius Yayınları, s: 55, İstanbul.

[2] AND, M.(1964). Türk Köylü Dansları, İzlem Yayınları, s:8.

[3] Bulut, S. (1994). Kuşaktan Kuşağa Erzurum Fokloru. Erzurum Halk Oyunları Halk Türküleri Derneği Yayınları, s:20.

[4]Demirsipahi, C. (1975). Türk Halk Oyunları. T.T.K. Basımevi, s:42, Ankara.

[5]Doğan, A. S.(2011). Erzurum İli Halay Oyunları Üzerine Bir İnceleme. Doktora Tezi. Atatürk Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü. s:26, Erzurum.

[6]Eroğlu, T.(1999). Halk Oyunları El Kitabı. s:32, İstanbul.

[7]Gerek, Z.(2014). Atatürk Üniversitesi Güzel Sanatlar Enstitüsü Dergisi. Sayı:32, s: 99, Erzurum.

[8]Koçkar, M. T.(1998). Çağlar Boyunca Beden Dilinde Sanat Ve Kültür İletişimi Dans Ve Halk Dansları. Bağırgan Yayımevi, s:46, Ankara.

[9]Şengül, C. (2010). Türk Kültürüne Hizmet Eden Erzurum Halk Oyunları Ve Halk Türküleri Turizm Derneği'nin Dünü Ve Bugünü. EKEV Akademi Dergisi, 14(43), s:257-266.

[10]Tanyol C. (1996). Türk Kültüründe Oyunun Yeri. BaykurtŞ. (Ed.) Türkiye'de İlk Halk Oyunları Semineri. Yapı Kredi Yayınları, s:2, İstanbul.

[11] Tecer, A. K. (1996). Oyun Folkloru. Baykurt, Ş. (Ed.). Türkiye'de İlk Halk Oyunları Semineri. Yapı Kredi Yayınları, s:24, İstanbul.

[12]Uzunkaya, E. (2009). Türkiye'nin Uluslararası Platformlardaki Tanıtım Faaliyetleri İçinde Halk Oyunları Festivallerinin Rolü. Akademik BakışHakemli Sosyal Bilimler E-Dergisi, Sayı:16, s:1-18.

Male Homosociality In New Turkish Cinema: Once Upon A Time In Anatolia

Burçin Kalkın Kızıldaş
Çukurova University, Faculty of Communication
 Department of Radio, Television and Cinema

 Abstract. Male characters and their stories assumed a great importance in Turkish Cinema after 1990s, which emerged with a search for a new language and style and which significantly questioned individual and social life. This transformation and its meanings are questioned with the contribution of literature on masculinity studies; and such a questioning also makes valuable contributions to the newly-emerging masculinity studies in Turkey under the rubric of social sciences. Various themes including loneliness, poverty, war, existential problems, the state, lack of communication, having a rural identity, the sense of loss, ethnic and cultural tensions are handled through males or masculinities, as a result of which males become instruments for the portrayal of social psychology in their capacity as anti-heros. This study will rest upon the use of the concept of homosociality, which poses a great important with regard to gender order and gender-based power relations, and offer a general outlook of male homosociality in Turkey with reference to the literature on homosociality. The study will then discuss the homosocial construction of Nuri Bilge Ceylan's *Once Upon A Time in Anatolia* (*Bir Zamanlar Anadolu'da*) shot in 2011.

Keywords: Masculinity, homosociality, representation, film, New Turkish cinema

1. Introduction

Male characters and their stories gained importance in Turkish cinema which emerged with a search for a new language and genre after 90s and includes important questions regarding the individual and societal life. This transformation and its meanings are questioned through the contribution of literature on masculinity studies and also contribute to the masculinity studies which are a fairly new area in Turkey. This study aims to conduct a discussion regarding the homosocial setting of the movie *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia* (Nuri Bilge Ceylan, 2011) by reviewing the male homosocial structure of the New Turkish Cinema being supported by this literature. In doing this, the term "homosociality" which is an important one in terms of gender setting and power relations based on gender will also be addressed generally.

2. Homosociality

The term "homosocial" refers to the social bonds between the same-sex individuals and gender-based social relations [1]. This term which was first introduced by Lipman and Blumen refers to preferring your own gender socially [2]. According to Lipman-Blumen, homosocial environments insures the fixation of gender setting with regard to double differentiation and heterosexuality while serving for the separation of homosocial environments as women and men (as cited by Kiesling) [3].

Eve Kosofsky Sedgwick [4] used the term with a more sexual meaning and became an inspiration for many works with her work on the English literature. According to her, male individuals please other male individual by using female individuals as mediators. While male individuals need to socialize with each other in the pursuit of power, this need is the result of a homosexual desire according to Sedgwick. Sedgwick suggests that the process of male individuals' setting up a privacy among each other is generally through a

woman helping them for a relationship based on codes. This relationship network is closely related to the concept of family system defining the social connection between same-sex individuals. Within the triangle between two male individuals and one female individual, the attraction between two males is as strong as the one between a male and a female. This attraction becomes even stronger when the male individuals realize that he should form an alliance with one of the members of the triangle. Since the woman is the one with less power within this triangle, the alliance is usually formed with the other male individual. And in terms of male homosociality, the male individual should have his eyes on the female one, not the male one. The other way leads to an explicit homoeroticism perception.

By describing the homosocial conveyance of the desire, Sedgwick claims that patriarchal heterosexuality is used with the meaning of a women flow making the bonds between male individuals stronger [4]. After this specific definition by Sedgwick, the term "homosociality" started to be used to describe the social bonds between the same-sex individuals within social sciences [4]. Especially the masculinity studies analyzing the ways of masculine dominance being formed or the practice of masculinity within Daily life discuss the strong bond between homosociality and masculinity. The lives of male individuals are determined by the relations between males and even the whole social life is tried to be organized within this homosocial relation network. For a male identity in accordance with the cultural discourses, a male individual shouldn't be in an emotional relationship, fall in love with or have affection towards another male, however should have a male solidarity together [3].

The male individuals fight for the acceptance among other male individuals distinctly by identifying themselves or competing with others. By using the signs of masculinity such as occupational success, wealth, power and status, physical power and having a good sexual life, "they are trying to improve their status within patriarchal social hierarchies" [5]. Hartmann suggests that the relations between male individuals forms a solidarity and loyalty which helps them

dominate women despite its hierarchical structure (as cited by Flood) [6]. Male homosociality has a significant role in continuing gender inequalities and certain hegemonic masculinities in many contexts. But also, this gathering which keeps women out forms a relationship where male individuals either oppress of be oppressed. From this point of view, perceiving homosocial environments as no contradictory, no conflicting social environments based on pure solidarity would provide misleading results. Homosocial environments forms sharp differentiations between male and female individuals as well as forming a competition arena revealing the hierarchical differences of male individuals among each other. Bourdieu's concept of "libido dominantis" is significant in terms of grasping the power struggle of male individuals amongst each other and against the female individuals. While the basis of concept is "domination", "the existence of libido dominandi is about the fact that male individuals were raised towards that direction" (as cited in Polat) [7]. Homosocial social responsibilities always have the priority. While homosocial communication among heterosexual males maintains the hegemonic masculinity by supporting the contexts regarding the identities complying with hegemonic ideals, no hegemonic male leads to the oppression of contexts regarding identities [1]. "In order to understand male solidarity, it's important to understand the habitus of homosocial male environments, masculine style of male entertainment world, masculine construction of gyms and man to man talks during job interviews" [8]. According to Sancar, the importance of understanding the discursive area supporting male power relations should be referred in order to understand different masculinities. This is because of the fact that masculinity itself is a discursive object for masculinity construction strategies. Bipolarization plays a fundamental role in discursive strategies; to be able to understand the discourses within dichotomies such as manly or not, strong-weak, the produced aspect of masculinity should be considered [8].

Nurhak Polat defines homosocial environments as the spaces male individuals try to protect with the effect of the crisis led by the increasing participation of women in the social life, as a reaction against the violation in

her article "Gender and Place: Men's Coffeehouses" [7]. The definition of the term in this manner signals the start of a new era with regard to masculinity which is the masculinity crisis era. Hollstein states that the masculinity crisis is about the technologization of the world and therefore the shift of the roles regarding femininity and masculinity in favor of women through the transfer of the male power to technical devices (as cited in Onur and Koyuncu) [9]. As indicated by Lynne Segal, "masculine identity is never stabile since the social reality constantly changes" [10]; changing perception and roles of masculinity always brings along the process defined as the "masculinity crisis". Another factor that impacts this crisis and the reflection of this crisis on cultural products is the change in the roles of male individuals and the fact that they can't play along the role of "family guy" enough anymore. The factors such as change in working conditions, unemployment, being marginalized from any class and the weakness of class action for the compliance with neo-liberal policies made a change in the position of men that were considered "steady". There are no more reasons with biological, cultural, economic or ideologic basis making men more superior then women [8]. This means that being born as a man doesn't imply benefiting from inarguable priorities, but on the contrary, requires struggling with all these changes. It's suggested that homosocial environments gained importance in order to overcome this crisis, and that the men try to perceive they still have the power with the help of homosocial environments. According to Hollstein, the image made for men until this very day started to crack, become blurry and the male individuals started having a defensive position instead [9]. Cinema also take its share from this transformation regarding masculinity through representations, and starts having a homosocial genre due to the defensive position. The Turkish side of this image needs to be discussed within its own context.

3. Homosocial Structure of the New Turkish Cinema

The reactions and approaches of the new-generation directors of Turkey towards the

societal atmosphere emerged after 1980 brought along a new cinema trend. This movement which can be defined as "New Turkish Cinema" [1] started addressing common issues such as miscommunication, insecurity, alienation, exclusion, being excluded, losing in different ways by telling the stories of anti-heroes differently from popular narratives with a minimalist approach. The movies that will be scrutinized in this study are the products of a cinema that could be defined as "New Turkish Cinema". Sabri Büyükdüvenci and S. Ruken Öztürk define the "New Turkish Cinema" as "a critical genre which goes for authenticity instead of imitating traditional models in the search for people and society finding and reforming themselves" [11]. The years following 1990 are when the New Turkish Cinema was born. Cultural and social transformations in this period have been addressed in various movies with a questioning approach.

Movies provide significant data regarding the periods societies went through and exist as part of those periods as being the historical products of the years they are made. New Turkish Cinema provides distinct masculinity representations. Inner conflicts, solitudes, weaknesses, depressions of men's world, contradictions between the society and individuals, and in general, masculinity crises were used more in independent cinema than the mainstream one. Male representations of the post-1990 New Turkish cinema should be associated with the "masculinity crisis". This crisis can be analyzed in three levels: it was mentioned before that the movies narrating men's friendship, tragedies where the women play the second fiddle increased in the post-1990 Turkish cinema. It is important to take a glance at the social change underlying these reasons. First of these is the spring of women's movement. Rising women's movement and Feminist movement's bringing forward the women's problems has become an aspect which forced a change in the men's social status. And the burdens of neo-liberalism which was on the rise after '80 such as unemployment, flexible work, poverty are another important reason of the crisis of the

---

[1] "Yeni Türk Sineması" kavramı diğer kimlikleri dışladığı ve kapsamadığı için bu çalışmada Yeni Türkiye Sineması biçiminde kullanılacaktır.

society, but especially male individuals who were responsible for providing for the household. Another important reason which created and supported the men's crisis was the civil war between the Kurdish movement and the Turkish Army. Obligatory military service confronted each man with the realities such as war, bravery and death.

The fundamental aspect for this study is the rate of homosocial structure emerging with the men's crisis in the New Turkish Cinema and how it's addressed. One of the characteristics of post-'90 new Turkish cinema is the narration based on male characters. Many issues such as loneliness, poverty, war, existential problems, miscommunication, provinciality, losing, ethnic and cultural problems are narrated through male characters and masculinity, and the men as anti-heroes become the tools of explaining the social psychology. Öztürk defines these man movies in the new Turkish cinema as men's tragedies. "According to Carpenter, if a female character is going through sad events in a movie, that movie are a melodrama; while the movie is called tragedy when a male character is going through sad events. Therefore, while melodrama is scorned for a long period, tragedy befits the men with bad fate. Men in the movies are basically good, but passive and weak at the same time. They are destroyed after what they go through. And usually the reason for these sad events is a woman" [12]. Perhaps, it's more effective and tragic to tell the stories of men losing in a world where it's believed that the women are "meant to lose".

Serdar Akar's *On Board* (1999) and *Laleli'de bir Azize* (1999), Zeki Demirkubuz's *The Third Page* (1999), *Innocence* (1997), *Inside* (2012), Nuri Bilge Ceylan's *Distant* (2002), *Climates* (2006), *The Town* (1997), *Clouds of May* (1999), *Three Monkeys* (2008) and *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia* which will be analyzed within this context, İnan Temelkuran's *Bornova Bornova* (2009), Seren Yüce's *Majority* (2010), Mehmet Bahadır Er's *Black Dogs Barking* (2009), Aydın Bulut's *Children of the Otherside* (2008), Kaan Müjdeci's *Sivas* (2014) draw the attention with their narratives based on the stories of male characters and male homosociality. Nejat Ulusay interprets these movies as follows;

…masculinity associated Turkish movies provide us male representations that are not so pleasant. The leading roles of these movies are usually the male individuals who can't express themselves, are mentally dead, unsuccessful, obsessive, paranoid, aggressive, powerless, cursing, depressive, perpetrator and guilt-ridden [13].

"In all these movies that are mostly set up indoors, visual atmosphere is claustrophobic. Every movie is set up around the characters who feel stuck whatever class they belong to or status they have. These are the characters who struggle in between the grip of the situation they are surrounded by, who can't find a way out and are back to point zero" [14]. This deadlock, vicious cycle and desperation is built around male characters in many movies. Süalp talks about the male characters and women representations in her article on period dramas which she considered as lumpen beatifications analyzed with the concept of rural areas;

In a place where no separation of city or town exists, our character keeps quiet for hours and looks into a blank spot that he even doesn't know that exists... In almost all of these movies, the stories of men are told. They are broken, they look like they don't have any expectations from life. All female characters aren't the deadly women of film noir maybe, but most of them are bad and they even seem like they are fueled by an esoteric evil... While there are evil and undoing prostitutes, astray women in these examples, mothers and wives are also the end of these downtrod men and they can even undo other women (as in the movies *Conscious, Egg-Milk-Honey Trilogy, Three Monkeys*) [15].

4. *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia*

Once Upon a Time in Anatolia tells the story of a group of men – which consists of government officials working at different agencies and a suspect – following the leads to a body after a murder which extends from the night till the morning. "So the movie is about the state… It's a narration about our great state

and our poor humanity (also great). This means the state is actually the tired police captain thinking about his sick child, the prosecutor struggling with guilt, a divorced and unhappy forensic specialist, loser and pragmatist sergeant, talky and crafty courthouse drivers from the same town or the pragmatist and cute village headman except the governmental structures... The state is this simple, unsystematic and humane after all..." [16]. In order to see the bigger picture, it's needed to mention that the state is this much masculine after all. The movie has a critical approach towards the masculinity of the state and the society and how they are structured amongst men.

In Nuri Bilge Ceylan's latest movie, there should be a reason why the darkness of the society, individuals feeling stuck and desperate, mental and physical uniformity of the rural areas, people's hard conditions under hierarchies and their struggle to keep living under those conditions, their loneliness and helplessness are addressed through men. After his movies that bear the traces of his own life, Ceylan continues to keep going with his adventure of looking at other lives starting with *Three Monkeys,* but still men's lives with more of a social criticism in *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia.* "In *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia*, he shows the courage to look into a societal darkness without avoiding his own darkness as well. And that is a darkness for which even headlights don't make sense" [17].

The story is essentially set up around three characters. The prosecutor who can't stop feeling guilty due to something that happened in the past, a doctor who feels stuck in this rural town where he probably came with high expectations and a police captain who spent all his life in small towns like this and feels sort of exhausted. The accused young man, townsman drivers and the gendarmerie squad accomplish this bureaucratic world with inequalities and certain hierarchies. Although three leading characters of the movie have their own authority within their own areas, this is not enough to make them powerful and competent. We confront with the feeling of incompetency that all have secretly with different stories and the fact that the guilt is not just something felt by the murderer.

First of all, dwelling on the issue of power at the core of the movie and homosocial environments which is the subject of this study will be required. Masculinity doesn't represent the power as a whole, however, it includes the struggle for dominance amongst men and against women.

While it's so obvious that today's societies are based on male dominance, it should be noted that this societal pattern has a multi-layer functioning that is comprised of articulated power relations which are conflicting within each other. Instead of talking about male dominance permanently articulated around a common goal such as domination of women completely, it could be much convenient to talk about a male dominance in which there are multiple, conflicting, divergent or unrelated different masculinity experiences are undergone [8].

As stated by Sancar, perceiving male dominance not as a single system, but as multiple processes including conflict and contradiction reminds us that masculinity can't be defined only by having "dominance" and "power". In this sense, the movie says a lot of things about the situation of actually not having the power while thinking you do have the power over others. The fact that homosociality is not just solidarity and conciliation, and that there is a competition, dissatisfaction and complaint behind this conciliation looking situation is narrated starting off from the relations between male individuals. The most important masculinity ideals are having the power and the need for being dominant. Kiesling asks if it's possible for everyone to have the power in a masculine environment while these environments are required for men. Additionally, two other questions asked by Kiesling seem to be significant in terms of analyzing the relation between homosocial environments and masculinity. These questions are whether homosocial desire is as much important as sacrificing the need for autonomy and power and how is the nature of this desire motivating to sacrifice [3]. This is rather an obligation than a desire as can be grasped during the movie. What the dialogues between men demonstrate us is their concerns or interest

about women is the common ground, however the homosociality is pictured not as a situation they get into by sacrificing and with desire, instead as a struggling and an compulsively situation they are included. Kiesling suggests that another strategy of homosociality is to mention less of personal issues [3]. It's possible to see the traces of this strategy throughout the movie. All the conversations that are called fun and games [mavra in Turkish] by Nuri Bilge Ceylan ranging from water buffalo yoghurt to lamb are the excuses for not talking about the reality, problems and deep inner conflicts and even for not facing these.

Although it contains the narration of a general atmosphere regarding this society, the fact that what is represented as the society is a group of men makes it possible to interpret the homosociality within the movie. Captain Nusret's nagging at every opportunity behind the prosecutor, other police officers' refraining from even talking about the yoghurt, lowest rank officials or the murderer's not having a voice or a chance to speak up, the murderer's feeling of being surrounded by the state and stuck can be interpreted as the signs of state's dominance over people. "We can see the reflections of unhealthy relations between the men's world and the government" [18]. As Tümay Arslan states in the article called "The Labyrinth in the Steppes", "phallus" which can be considered as the symbolic value of the male dominance "is just a uniform after all…phallus as an indicative here is the thing that is completely exterior, not part of the nature, put on, earned, deserved... it's something that we already know doesn't fit with the reality of the body at all" [19]. The prosecutor equipped with the state's power puddling frequently shows that the one who seems like having the most power is actually just like anyone else, and maybe even more powerless than others. "And the penis is not about creating a supremacy effect at all and is just about puddling, that's it" [19].

Even though the use of "power" given by the bureaucracy to these men who can't deal with their everyday problems in order to cover these and to gain their self-confidence back and their efforts to be proved right in smallest issues are reflected as funny situations to the audience, they can also be considered as a successful narration of a psychological state. Masculinity should always be shown off among men, it's a process of proving yourself. Even the smallest details of everyday life can become the tools for this struggle.

This unseen conflict between power and powerlessness, the emptiness and feeling stuck in the steppes, the fact that everywhere is basically the same, that none of the men can overcome their inner conflicts seem to be closely related to masculinity crisis. Captain Nuri saying "it's hard to grow up without a father around here" to doctor can be interpreted as the situation of not having a father which is felt much stronger with the effect of this crisis causes the feeling of missing someone irreplaceable and powerlessness.

Homosocial structures have two fundamental aspects, of which the first is the men, while the second is women and relationships with women. Therefore the form of relationship with women and conversations about women can be considered as a significant data in order to understand the characteristics of the homosocial environment. Levi-Strauss says that the culture is shaped by the family bonds created between men and the woman gains value as a trade object and mediator of this bond [20]. And according to Sedgwick, patriarchal heterosexuality depends on women exchange [4].

As in many examples of the new Turkish cinema, the women can't go beyond becoming an exchange tool between men who are in the position subject in this movie as well. Apart from their words and existence, the daughter of headman and the wife of the victim are positioned as objects and can't show any more existence than becoming a tool for the fight between men and objects whose words aren't taken seriously. However, the femininity representation of the movie doesn't consist of only this one. While the "nagging" wife of the captain represents the burden of a man, the wife of the prosecutor who committed a suicide represents another side of this burden put on the shoulders of men. Although the analysis on American popular cinema by Ryan and Kellner is another type, it makes a researcher think that the woman representation

in *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia* can also be put in a similar category.

> If the women are represented as violating spaces, this is mostly because they were threatening the order of legitimacy and convenience men had to protect for the robustness of male dominance in the society. And if it's necessary to degrade women to sexual fetishes, this is maybe because of the existence of a threatening sexual power reflected by the different sexuality of women (absence of phallus) men tried to avoid in order not to harm their narcissistic psychosexual integrity [21].

Captain Naci saying "you should look for the women when there is a situation. There is always a woman included when there is a situation" and the prosecutor saying "Women can be so ruthless sometimes" interpreting the suicide as an action by his wife to punish him have common points. Women mean mystery, eeriness and problem to men. While this threatening power can lead to gathering of men, it's seen as an external enemy that you can put the blame on and hold accountable in terms of homosocial relationship web.

In his work of analyzing the movies on men's friendship, Graham suggests that these movies are completely based on excluding the women from the narration, and that this marginalization and exclusion is based on eliminating the increasing effects of feminism and supporting the continuity of homosocial structure [22]. Even though the movie analyzed in this study is not a movie on men's friendship, homosocial relationships formed and the exclusion of women brings up the inevitable question of whether this is related to masculinity crisis and the increasing power of women in everyday life. Women are far away from the center of power and are the fear of men in the movie [22] or they can get into the homosocial world of men having a nightmare as an imagination as the daughter of headman. This imagination which becomes a part of men's darkness for a moment only with her beauty and innocence is a tool for reminding the masculinity to men who became powerless. Moreover, as the common dream of men within this homosocial relationship web, the daughter of headman "gains a meaning as a guarantee for the heterosexuality of men" as

stated by Graham [22]. Women are a part of scenario as the elements garnishing, reasoning or feeding the narrative. However, as theorized by Teresa de Lauretis, "their existence" in the narrative is about "their nonexistence". According to Lauretis, "nonexistent woman" is trapped in the discourse, but her voice isn't heard, she can't express herself. "She is exposed as a showcase product and she is still the one that can't be, isn't represented" (as cited by Suner) [14].

The movie gives significant clues on the masculine character of the state as a homosocial establishment and being in between as a society despite anything. While Şükrü Argın says "we are still at the same place and a part of the same game. There are still bodies buried and being buried under our feet and we are still trying to jump over them or go around them with the games we create in between men, running from one place to another" [23] in his movie critics, Tümay Arslan says "bureaucracy is a buried body and Anatolia is like three magic words creating the labyrinth of our story of becoming a nation" [19] and both reveal the hidden sides of the move. And of course, this side of movie makes someone think about the relationship between the masculinity and the state, bureaucracy, war and massacres.

5. Conclusion

"Homosociality" is an important term in terms of understanding the social concept of gender and the foundation of society. The discussion attempted to be conducted based on the term's meaning and importance can have the characteristics of an introduction combining the homosocial narrative of the New Turkish Cinema and the homosocial structure of the movie *Once Upon a Time in Anatolia*.

Except some examples, almost all the movies including question regarding the individual and the society within the category of New Turkish Cinema were all made by male directors, and it seems like the homosocial character of the movies are worth analyzing considering their construction based on men's stories, selected places, social relationships

narrated, characters' relationships with men, the structure of the society being represented as the conflicts, contradictions and solidarity among men, and the exclusion of women.

In this sense, the movie analyzed requires a comprehensive analysis considering the homosocial narration of the dark and eerie structure of the society based on men's stories, existence of women traced behind the guilt, loneliness and evil feelings experienced by men, and the masculinity of bureaucracy and the state.

References

[1] S. R. Bird, Welcome to the Men's Club: Homosociality and the Maintenance of Hegemonic Masculinity, Gender & Society 10 (2) (1996), pp. 121.

[2] J. Lipman-Blumen, "Toward a Homosocial Theory of Sex Roles", Signs, 1: 15-31, (1976), pp. 16.

[3] S. Kiesling, Homosocial Desire in Men's Talk: Balancing and Recreating Cultural Discourses of Masculinity. http://www.pitt.edu/~kiesling/kiesling-homosociality.pdf. Erişim tarihi: 17.01.2013, (2005) pp. 5, 8.

[4] E.K. Sedgwick, Between Men: English Literature and Homosocial Desire. New York, Colombia University Press, (1985), pp. 26.

[5] M. S. Kimmel, Masculinity as homophobia: Fear, Shame, and Silence in the Construction of Gender Identity. H. Brod and M. Kaufman (der.). Theorizing Masculinities. Londra, Sage pub, (1994) 119-141, pp. 129.

[6] M. Flood, Men, Sex, and Homosociality: How Bonds Between Men Shape Their Sexual Relations With Women. Men and Masculinities, 10, (2007), 339-359, pp. 342.

[7] N. Polat, Cinsiyet ve Mekan: Erkek Kahveleri, Toplum ve Bilim, 112, (2008) s. 147-158, pp. 153, 154.

[8] S. Sancar, Erkeklik: İmkansız İktidar. İstanbul, Metis Yayınları, (2009) pp. 8, 17, 18-19, 111.

[9] H. Onur & B. Koyuncu, Hegomonik Erkekliğin Görünmeyen Yüzü:Sosyalizasyon Sürecinde Erkeklik Oluşumları Ve Krizleri Üzerinde Düşünceler, Toplum ve Bilim, 101, (2004), pp. 36.

[10] L. Segal, Yarışan Erkeklikler: Erkeklik-Erkek İdeali. Birikim. 35, (1992), 38-49, pp. 49.

[11] S. Büyükdüvenci, & S. R. Öztürk, Yeni Türk Sinemasında Estetik Arayışı, Felsefe Dünyası, (2007), p. 45-49, pp. 45.

[12] S. R. Öztürk, İtiraf: Karanlık Üstüne Öyküler 2, S. R. Öztürk içinde, Kader:Zeki Demirkubuz (s. 53-74). Ankara, Dost Yayınları, (2006), pp. 65.

[13] N. Ulusay, Erkek Filmleri"nin Yükselişi ve Erkeklik Krizi, Toplum ve Bilim, 101, (2004) p.144-162, pp. 159.

[14] A. Suner, Hayalet Ev, İstanbul, Metis Yayınları, (2006), pp. 168, 307.

[15] Z. T. Süalp, Taşrada Saklı Zaman- Geri Dönülemeyen. A. Güneş &. Z. Tül Akbal Süalp, Taşrada Var Bir Zaman (p. 87-116). İstanbul, Çitlembik Yayınları, (2010), pp. 113.

[16] A.Şimşek, Bizim Büyük, Güzel ve Kavruk Sefilliğimiz. Birgün. http://www.birgun.net/cultures_index.php?news_code=1316775081&year=2011&month=09&day=23. (2011) Erişim tarihi: 10. 01.2013.

[17] S. Aytaç, Bir Zamanlar Anadolu'da Hakikat http://www.altyazi.net/makale/bir-zamanlar-anadoluda-8-218. (2011), Erişim tarihi: 02.01.2013.

[18] Ş. Akdemir, Ceylan'dan Taşranın Otopsisi, http://www.radikal.com.tr/Radikal.aspx?aType=RadikalDetayV3&ArticleID=1064134&CategoryID=120, (2011)Erişim tarihi: 02.01.2013

[19] U.T. Arslan, Bozkırdan Labirente, Bir Kapıdan Gireceksin. İstanbul, Metis, (2012)193-219, pp. 206-207.

[20] J. Butler, Cinsiyet Belası, İstanbul: Metis, (1999) pp. 96-97.

[21] M. Ryan, & D. Kellner, Politik Kamera. İstanbul, Ayrıntı Yayınları, (1997). pp. 219.

[22] P. Graham, Male Homosociality and The Buddy Movie, Women Watching Women: Lesbians and Popüler Cinema, Opengender. http://www.opengender.org.uk/?q=node/44. (1997). Erişim tarihi: 17.01.2013.

[23] Ş. Argın, Bir Zamanlar Anadolu'da: Asimetrik Şikayet Toplumu. Birikim, 272 (2011), 18-26, pp. 25.

A Mithat Pasha Novel: Death in Taif

Hasan YÜREK
Mersin University. Faculty of Science & Literature,
Department of Turkish Language and Literature.
hyurek@mersin.edu.tr

Abstract

The work named *Death in Taif* is one of the novels of Hıfzı Topuz. In this novel, the life of Mithat Pasha, who was on active duty in the last period of the Ottoman State, is narrated. The aim in this biographical novel is introducing Mithat Pasha. The novel will be examined with general characteristics in this study.

Keywords: Hıfzı Topuz, Novel, Biographical novel, *Death in Taif*, Mithat Pasha

Death in Taif, which is the second novel of Hıfzı Topuz, was published in 1999. In this novel, which consists of thirteen outlined parts, the life of Mithat Pasha is narrated. In other words, the novel has the characteristics of being a biographical novel. The reason why the name *Death in Taif* was given to the novel was because Mithat Pasha was exiled to Taif, and was killed there. Today, Taif is located within the boundaries of Saudi Arabia.

The first thing that attracts attention in the novel is the narration being in a reverse order that is, the end starts in the beginning of the novel. The novel starts right before Mithat Pasha's death. At this point, Mithat Pasha is in exile in Taif. The year is 1884, and Mithat Pasha is about to be killed. In the novel, which starts at this point, the author turns back to the birth of Mithat Pasha, and his life is narrated in a chronological manner. In the end of the novel, his murder and the events that happened after this are narrated.

There are different viewpoints on the life of Mithat pasha, his personality, and his being a statesman that are reflected to history books and evaluations. In this study, the issue of how Mithat Pasha was reflected in the novel will be revealed without referring to different viewpoints. In this context, the first thing to mention is the fact that the novel handles Mithat Pasha in a biased and positive manner.

The author reveals his positive viewpoints about Mithat Pasha in a very clear manner. In this context, it is possible to say that an ideal model human portrait, which may be taken as the role model by many people, has been placed in the novel.

The novel, which narrates the life of Mithat Pasha in general terms and provides us with the data from the history, is biased when narrating the events, developments and people. This is towards and inclination to Mithat Pasha. In this context, if we consider the novel in terms of evaluating how Mithat Pasha is narrated in it, the following viewpoints may be mentioned.

The breakthrough in the life of Mithat Pasha is his going to the western world. It is observed that his political viewpoints were formed during the time when he was in the western world. He goes to Europe in his twenties with the support of Ali Pasha, who was the Grand Vizier in those times. He is impressed greatly by the Europe he observes, and he embodies his experiences. The following sentences reveal this situation clearly; "*The Gentleman Mithat (…) witnesses his rebirth, and was influenced greatly by those experiences. It is no doubt observed that he was influenced by the practices he saw in Paris in what he did when he was governors to various cities*". [1]

Mithat Pasha, who knows the western world closely, lives as a man who is in favor of a parliamentary system, does beneficial things, and is a statesman who does not go astray from good deeds; he in favor of justice and separation of powers; equalitarian, and is a person who has religious tolerance after he

returns to his homeland. Because of these characteristics, he was loved in general terms; however, he was also envied, and some people tried to push him to the background of events. According to the novel, those people who were envious of Mithat Pasha's aforementioned characteristics, always tried to overcome him. Mithat Pasha is in favor of the parliamentary system, which he observed in the western world, because of this reason, he defends Constitutionalism. [2]One of the reasons of this is that he was not in a friendship with Abdülhamit II. The author-narrator says "*He was sitting on the Position of the Grand Vizier like a hero who had performed a revolution. The new constitution was prepared in the direction of his inclinations. His purpose was abolishing the dictatorship, which was also called as Autocracy, and establishing the parliamentary system in the country. The authorities of the Sultan would be limited, and the necessary legal and administrative changes would be made in order to establish a democratic regime. Mithat Pasha wanted that the parliamentary system would be established; however, Abdulhamit did not approve this*", and mentions this situation with these words. [1] Those, who see this characteristic of his and who envy him, claim that he is a fan of republic. Although Mithat Pasha is in favor of Constitutionalism, he, on the other hand, thinks that the conditions have not appeared for a republican regime, in other words, he thinks that it is way too early for this. Mithat Pasha is mentioned in the novel as a statesman, which is in the forefront in the novel. He has been in important positions of the state like grand vizier, minister, governor and other similar positions. It is emphasized in the novel that Mithat Pasha performed these duties with honor. For example, the following sentences are written about his duty as the governor to Syria; "*There were no roads in the country, no schools, no prisons, no hospitals; the taxes could not be collected, the wages were inadequate; telegram connections were not established, bribery was rampant; the justice mechanisms could not function; the general governor could not make the soldiers and zapties obey his orders, because the soldiers received their orders form the commander pasha, not from the general governor. Mithat Pasha attacked to all these corruptions: He built roads, opened schools, established partnerships, built the Damascus Downtown*

area, caught the bandits and hanged them, opened a theater and a municipality garden in Damascus; attacked the Druses, who rioted against the administration, and who were stirred up by the British, defeated them after 600 dead soldiers. Syria gained peace" [1]; and it is mentioned that he had served well. Similar expressions are used for all the duties he did in his life. Even the dethroning of Abdul-Aziz and Murat V is also considered as Mithat Pasha's being a beneficial statesman. The following expressions are mentioned about Abdul-Aziz "*The Sultan was a ruler who did not obey any rules, made decisions according to his own wish, and applied these decisions as he wanted*" [1] ; and the following lines are about Murat V narrated from Grand Vizier Rustu Pasha "*How sad it is that Sultan Murat Khan, whom we enthroned ninety-two days ago with great hopes, has become unable to do his duties because of his health. We tried hard for the treatment of this disease, we brought doctors from abroad; however, they said there was no cure for this. We waited for the duration that was assigned by the sharia, we received no success. We cannot leave the head of our high state without any attendance. We have to make a very quick decision in this situation. This state cannot be administered without a Sultan*" [1] to emphasize that the sultan was dethroned due to rightful reasons and beneficial work was done. In addition to the abovementioned issues, according to the novel, he is a statesman who does not take bribes and who can solve problems. In this context, he rejected fifty thousand golden money sent by Khedive Ismail Pasha in Egypt in order to perform one of his jobs, and this is shown as an evidence for his problem-solving ability in his duty as the governor and as an indicator for his being against bribery. In this way, a statesman portrait is given in the novel that has to be taken as a model in all aspects.

Mithat Pasha was in favor of separation of powers and this is shown as one of his characteristics and is emphasized in the novel frequently. There is the influence of Europe here, which is the case in many topics. Referring to Murat V., he said to Abdülhamit II "*We told him that things would not go on like this, and there had to be a regime based on law established. He understood us, and accepted to base everything on a legal basis*" [1], which shows that he wanted an administrative system that was based on law. As a result of this, when

Abdulhamit II became the Sultan, the Ottoman Basic Law was declared, and the First Parliament was opened. The aim of Mithat Pasha is terminating the arbitrary administration. A desire for a system based on law naturally brings with it the separation of powers principle, because this will prevent an arbitrary administration. Mithat Pasha knew and adopted this principle and tried to apply it throughout his life. This situation is concretized with the following sentences; "(…) *Some new viewpoints have been developed. The first one of these is the separation of powers principle, in other words, the separation of the administration and legislation from each other. Mithat Pasha adopts this principle and tries to apply this throughout his life. He defends the idea that the Sultan would not intervene in the administration of the state and in the Assembly*". [1]

Another aspect of Mithat Pasha is his being equalitarian. It is emphasized frequently that he considered everybody living in the Ottoman State without any discrimination issues and behaved in this way. "*Mithat Pasha believed that everybody should be accepted as being Ottoman without any discrimination in terms of religion, race and language, he was in favor of equality among all citizens. Pasha defended a multi-national administration system to be established in order to prevent the Ottoman Empire from collapsing. He was not against the dynasty. (…) If the Muslim people and non-Muslim citizens had equal rights, a reform would be performed that was unique in the Islamic History, and the non-Muslim citizens would defend the Ottoman State sincerely and would not want to separate from the Empire*". [1] As it may be understood from these sentences, it is emphasized that Mithat Pasha defended behaving in an equal manner to everybody in order to prevent the Ottoman State from collapsing.

Another thing that is present in Mithat Pasha and receives the reaction of many others is his religious tolerance. Mithat Pasha thought that everybody should receive the same reactions, and behaved in an equal manner to the people from other religions living in the Ottoman State. The Gentleman Vasif, who is one of the characters of the novel, mentions the following sentences to Mithat Pasha in this context: "*After the Grand Viziership was settled, they found it in a very bad manner that you visited (…) patriarchates. I hear that they say 'What does a Muslim person has to do in a patriarchate?'. Your tolerance on religion received widespread reactions in people who are in favor of Sharia …*". [1]

Mithat Pasha was a statesman who was tried in a court after Sultan Abdul-Aziz was killed, and was exiled to Taif. Despite this situation, it is mentioned in the novel that Mithat Pasha was innocent and it is added that he did whatever he did due to his being a patriot. In other words, it is emphasized that Mithat Pasha did all his deeds with patriotic feelings. In this way, the novel reveals that it is in favor of Mithat Pasha. This characteristic of Mithat Pasha is emphasized occasionally in the novel. However, the most concrete example is his deeds he did when he was in exile. Mithat Pasha was made to resign from being grand vizier in 1877, and was exiled. However, it is mentioned that although he was exiled, he worked abroad for the Ottoman State as a patriotic person. It is also mentioned that even the Prime Minister of England, Lord Beaconsfield was surprised by his struggles, and told him "*I support you sincerely. I admire your maturity. You are trying to save a state that exiled you*". [1] The author tries to show that Mithat Pasha did not give up his love for serving his state with this example and other similar examples.

Mithat Pasha, who has been revealed with these characteristics, is a loved and respected man both within the Ottoman State and in Europe. He is welcomed with a great interest wherever he goes. This situation gives rise to that Mithat Pasha feels an extreme self-confidence. Pasha thinks that the people or Europe will react in a great manner when he gets in a difficult situation. According to the novel, this is a misconception of Mithat Pasha. Because when Pasha is exiled to Taif, nobody reacts except for a limited group in the country. Similarly, there are no struggles to save him, neither in Europe. This situation naturally makes him feel disappointed.

The end of Mithat Pasha comes with the disagreement of him with Sultan Abdülhamit II. Mithat Pasha is the person who enthroned Abdülhamit II as the Sultan. At first, they had agreements. Then, when disagreement appeared in later times, this agreement turned into conflicts. In this conflicting situation, the novel, is in favor of Mithat Pasha, which is previously mentioned. The reasons of the conflicts between them are the different

viewpoints on administration. At first, Mithat Pasha "*dethroned Abdul-Aziz', then Murat V, and enthroned the Sultan. He was holding the position of being a grand vizier. The new constitution was prepared in the light of his inclinations. His aim was abolishing the dictatorship, which was called Autocracy, and establishing a parliamentary system in the country. The authorities of the Sultan would be limited, and necessary legal and administrative amendments would be made. Mithat Pasha wanted that a parliamentary system would be established; however, Abdulhamit was not in favor of this at all.*". [1] This basic disagreement increased the tension between them. The Sultan adds Item 113 to the Constitution, and has the right to exile the people whom he becomes suspicious of. As a matter of fact, he exiles Mithat Pasha from Istanbul in 1877. According to the novel, although Abdülhamit II sent Mithat Pasha to exile, he always considered him as a danger. Based on this, firstly he abolished the exile and assigned him to several duties outside Istanbul, and then sentenced him to death with the consideration that he had something to do with the death of Sultan Abdul-Aziz. Abdülhamit II turned the sentence of death to exile, and sent Pasha to Taif. Abdulhamit II did not suffice with this and had him killed in Taif because he feared him. The attitude of the novel is clear in this issue, which is debatable in terms of history. Abdülhamit II is the person who gets Mithat Pasha killed. This is the reason why Abdülhamit II is called as "the Bloody Sultan" in the novel. As a matter of fact, the novel predominantly emphasizes the life and character of Mithat Pasha, and presents him as a good character and a statesman, and reflects the people who were against him, mainly Abdülhamit II as the bad side.

The novel generally introduces Mithat Pasha with his positive sides, and does not mention his physical and spiritual portrait. The only physical depiction about him is in a newspaper article in Paris and includes some of his personality traits. Here, Mithat Pasha is described as follows: "*In his fifties, a man with middle-height and a strong body. His talk and behaviors are moderate. There is no harshness in his looks. The eyes that are sparkling and reacting to every sound are gleamy. He has a very cute look and a polite air. It is no doubt he is a bonafide person. He speaks French very well, and knows how to listen. He gives trust*

and peace to the other person he is talking to. His clothing and appearance is extremely plain. He is not interested in show-off at all. You understand from his private speech that he does not live to eat, but eat to think and work. It is obvious that he is devoted to his family. He considers woman not as an accessory or as a sexual object, but considers in the same way as it is in Europe. Mithat Pasha has a very promising personality". [1] On the other hand, Mithat Pasha it is also observed that there are no details on his private life. Although his loves, marriages, children and friends are mentioned, it is possible to say that there are no details on these. Since the novel focuses on the life of Mithat Pasha that is reflected in the history books, it does not provide many details on such issues. This situation poses a missing point in the presentation of the characters of the novel including Mithat Pasha. In other words, the people are mentioned in the novel within the events, not the individuals with their internal and external properties. Aside from these, when the other elements of the novel are considered, the following may be mentioned about the place, time and narration elements:

It is not possible to claim that the place is emphasized with importance. There are almost no place descriptions. The reason for this is the fact that the novel focuses on the events and developments. The places observed in the novel are the places where Mithat Pasha went for several reasons. In other words, these places are the places where he lived as a pasha. Depending on this, it is observed that the places mentioned in the novel are the ones that are within the borders of the Ottoman State like Istanbul, Nice, Tuna, Thessalonica, Bagdad, Syria, Izmir, Taif; and in addition, Paris, London, Wien, Napoli, Rome, Brussels, which are outside to Ottoman Borders. In brief, it is possible to claim that the place in the novel does not have any other properties aside from being the scene of the events.

When the time element is considered, it is observed that the years 1822-1884, which are the dates of birth and death of Mithat Pasha, are emphasized depending on the novel narrating his life. On the other hand, it is also observed that the dates in the novel go back as far as 1951 in which the grave of Mithat Pasha was brought to Istanbul, to provide some more information on the period after his death. In this way, although a 62-year period is emphasized in the novel that covers the years between 1822

and 1884, the novel also covers some details until 1951, which makes it cover a 129-year period. In addition to this, it must be mentioned that the novel does not narrate this time period starting from 1822, which is also mentioned above, but starts with the date 1884. Firstly, the end is presented in the novel, and then the happenings until that date are emphasized.

As a literary work, the narration elements are extremely important in a novel. It is not possible to claim that the narration elements that are directly related with the quality of a novel are used in due manner in this novel. The first thing that attracts attention is the divine viewpoint in the narration given by the author-narrator. The narrator knows everything, and depending on this, gives us news from the future, he is biased and makes his presence felt. For example, Mithat Pasha, who hears that the Pleven Defense collapsed in 1877, is very sad for Osman Pasha and his soldiers. After this is expressed in the novel, "*Would Mithat Pasha know that he would be arrested and tried after four years and be sentenced to execution, and demand that the decision of execution be applied at once in the extraordinary commission convened in the Gazi Osman Palace?*" [1] and by so-doing, the future events are mentioned.

As is it mentioned from time to time in the novel, the narrator is in favor of Mithat Pasha. According to the author-narrator, Mithat Pasha is "the Hero of Freedom", and Abdulhamit II is the "Bloody Sultan". The last sentences of the novel are another concrete evidence of this biased manner: "*The Bloody Sultan destroyed his skull. However, he could not destroy the freedom, equality, justice and democracy considerations in his head, and these were the property of all the young people from then on*". [1]

The narrator does not abstain from making his presence being felt in the novel. For example, in the beginning of the novel, when the events are mentioned about the murdering of Mithat Pasha in Taif are mentioned, he intervenes and says "*Let us stop considering this attempted murder, and go back in history*". [1]

The reasons for the author to choose such a narrator are the intention of writing a novel describing Mithat Pasha not writing a quality novel. Since he focuses on Mithat Pasha, he does not focus on the narrator with importance. The abovementioned characteristics of the narrator make us consider the quality of the novel.

Another interesting point in the narration is that the explanatory narration is used frequently. The usage of this narration style provides us with some information, which is not frequently observed in novel as a literary work, because it is in fact a product of fiction. The narrator sometimes provides didactic information on a person or an event, as if he is the author of a history book. The part in which this narration style is used gives the air of being a research book to the work rather than being a novel. In other words, this type of narration does not integrate with the fiction, and look transitory in the novel.

It is observed that several texts like letters, memoirs, doctors' reports, and newspaper articles have also been included in the narration. The purpose of the author using these texts is basing the biographical novel on documents; and thus, making the novel give an air of reality.

As a conclusion, it is possible to claim that the *Death in Taif*, which is the work of Hıfzı Topuz, is a biographical novel. This novel has some faulty designs about the art of novel depending on its being a biographical novel and on the desire of the author not writing a novel within the aesthetical concerns. No doubt, the author, who writes a biographical novel, uses documents and provides explanatory information in order to make it felt that the narrations are close to the reality. This gives rise to the novel move away from being a fiction, which is the essence of a novel. As a matter of fact, the author does not have a concern to form a fictitious text. Therefore, the work is not the one that may be considered as a quality novel.

In this novel, the purpose of Hıfzı Topuz is to prevent Mithat Pasha from being forgotten, to make him reminded, and bring him to the agenda. Because, according to the author, Mithat Pasha was a statesman who tried to save the state and who was assigned to several duties in the last period of the Ottoman State, and also tried to establish an ideal administration, which is claimed otherwise by some other people. In this context, he is a man who abolished several Sultans, and did not abstain from opposing to Sultans. In other words, Mithat Pasha worked hard for the good of his state as a serious, patriotic and responsible statesman; and he even died for this purpose. For this reason, this

novel has been written with the intention of "it is necessary to write such a person".

In this way, a biographical novel has been written whose sole purpose is narrating Mithat Pasha with the viewpoint of the author, and this novel has some important drawbacks like the lacking novel technique, and being not able to reflect the individual with all aspects and realities in terms of art; and neglecting fiction, and being not objective in terms of the narrator.

References

[1] Topuz, Hıfzı , *Taif'te Ölüm,*Remzi Kitabevi, 23. b. , İstanbul, 2014.

[2]Sarıkaya, Hasan, Hıfzı Topuz'un Romanlarında Yapı, Tema ve Anlatım, Mersin Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Mersin, 2016.

Teacher Typologies in Necati Güngör's 'My Dear Teacher' Story Book

Fatih SAKALLI
Gazi University. Faculty of Arts, Department of Turkish Language and Literature.
fsakalli@gazi.edu.tr

Abstract: Necati Güngör who is one of our modern story authors was born in 1949 in Malatya. His stories are brought together in books, their names are: Yolun Başı, Sevgi Ekmektir, Bu Sevda Ölmek, Hayatımın Yedi Hikâyesi, Unutulmaz Bir Kadın Resmi, Sinema Kuşu Sevgilim, Üsküdar'a Gidelim, İnsanlığın Sonbaharında. He earned Ömer Seyfeddin and The Association of Turkish Language prices. However he also has written other different types of books such as memory, reportages, children and city books. Güngör's recent books Sessiz Yürek, Anneme Bir Ev Alacağım and Sevgili Öğretmenim met a big interest by youth. In this study, types of teachers which were mentioned in Sevgili Öğretmenim's book will be discussed. By explaining these types of teacher's sacrifice, responsibilities etc., teacher's features will be explained and their sacred profession will be emphasized.

Keywords: Necati Güngör, Story, Teacher, Type

Introduction

Güngör who was born in 1949 in Malatya, can be called as a story writer, journalist, and author. After finishing his high school in Malatya he graduated from İstanbul University, Department of Law. He has worked as a redactor, editor, journalist also as a copywriter in different publisher houses.

Güngör who published his first story in 1968 in 'Oluş' magazine, has published the rest of his writings in Yansıma, Yeni Düşün, Yeni Dergi, Negatif, Hürriyet Gösteri, Türkiye Defteri, Yaşasın Edebiyat and Milliyet Sanat magazines. He earned Türk Dil Kurumu, Ömer Seyfeddin and Yunus Nadi prices. His works are:

His Stories: Yolun Başı (1973), Sevgi Ekmektir (1978), Bu Sevda Ölmek (1983), Hayatımın Yedi Hikâyesi (1984), Unutulmaz Bir Kadın Resmi (1986), Sinema Kuşu Sevgilim (1990), Masal Kuşu 'Seçme Hikâyeler' (1992), İyiler Genç Ölür (1998), Hikâyemde Hayvan Var (2002), Üsküdar'a Gidelim (2003) and İnsanlığın Sonbaharında (2016).

Memories - Interview - City – Narrative: Yeryüzünde İki Gölge (1982), Bir Taşralının İstanbul Nostaljisi (1992), Safiye Ayla'nın Anıları (1996), Şehri Şirin İstanbul (1997), Bir Hayal İstanbul (1998) and Annem Babam Malatya (2005).

Children and Youth Books: Babamın Sedefli Çakısı (1990), Çocuklara Dede Korkut Öyküleri (1992), Papatya Gelin (1994) Sessiz Yürek (2009), Anneme Bir Ev Alacağım (2011) and Sevgili Öğretmenim [1] (2015).

In this study, teacher types Güngör's **'My Dear Teacher'** will be discussed also their manners and some examples of their attitude and behaviors will be explained.

'My Dear Teacher' is a story of a student who won Mechanical engineering department for his bachelor study. He wanted to share this moment by writing a message to his beloved 'Old Turkish language' teacher who has recently died and in this message he mentioned how he got effected by his teacher. He speaks about his teacher's tolerance, forgiveness and his understanding. He always receives all kind of criticism or anger with jokes or softened it by a bear laugh. He said that he had learnt from his teacher to love people the way they are however he has learnt and moved to different places but he kept doing what his teacher taught him. He mentions that his teacher didn't only teach him how to speak their mother tongue properly but also he taught him how to love the World and his life from the bottom of his heart. He learnt

literature books from his teacher, he received river of books from him and he owe him a lot because he was the reason he loves book. Not only him who loved the teacher, but his dead mom and dad also used to love his teacher and owe him as he fed their child's mind and heart. He mentioned how his teacher could built a throne of love in all people hearts. He tells about his teacher who used to buy with his salary all the books from the book store for the children who are working in auto repair shop. Those children used to call him as 'scholar'. And he expresses his appreciation for those priceless books he owned from his teacher. He used to stand up and call the students in the class showing the books and saying 'do you see your friend? He got used to read. Everyone should be like him, without reading, diploma is just like a dry twigs. In the contrary, book reader's diploma is fruitful as a green twigs. I congratulate your friend as he knew books value and he bought them with his pocket Money'. Since that day, he mentions how he kept those words in his mind and not only him but all the other students were too effected by the teacher. Even there were some students who started reading books to win their teacher's appreciation. He talks about his first award he got after winning essay competition in his school. He explains how he found his teacher's salary beneath the book papers and his father could buy one ton of coal. He says that he never delayed reading a book, and he never tried to find any excuse not to finish his book. Even whenever he neglect reading for sometimes he feels that he betrayed his teacher. As learnt a lot from working in auto repair shop he chose mechanical engineering department for his bachelor degree. Story is about a student who misses his Turkish Language teacher and the message he wrote to him after winning mechanical engineering department for his bachelor degree. In the story, teacher's role in raising and effecting children is emphasized.

Apology: This story starts with a slap on Onur's face when his history teacher Mrs. Zeycan thought he was stare on her legs. And then she fired him out of the class. Later she finds out that Onur's father is in the jail and Onur didn't mean to stare on her leg but he was just thinking about his dad… she also found out that he is working as a bootblack boy in Belediye Park. Then she started to make

a bridge between Onur and his father, going to the jail once a week and tells Onur about his father's condition. Even sometimes she took Onur with her to visit his father and she became a new relative to a child who lost everything in the world. The story explains teacher's sacrifice and love.

Hurdle: Hurdle story explains a story of a woman called Safura, who lost her only daughter while she was delivering a baby. They named the orphan baby as Melek. Mrs. Safura whenever she looks to her granddaughter she remembers her daughter. And she looked after her as her own daughter. Melek's father got married with another woman and now she has stepbrother. Melek is growing up but she is not able to walk. She became 6 years old and she is not walking. Mrs. Safura, took Melek to her house and she brought all school materials in order to teach her in the house. Mrs. Safura calls her neighbor Mr. Olgun to help her teaching Melek especially when her ability of learning and writing love was noticed. When Mr. Olgun saw how she is so excited about learning he took good care of her. He asks Melek's condition to his friend Serdar who is a Physical education teacher. He also asked wheather her legs muscles and her walk ability will be improved or not. Mr. Olgun started to teach Melek reading and writing 3 times a week. Melek goes to Spor Gym on her Grandma's back the other 3 days. Melek saw father's love in her teacher not in her real father. Mr. Olgun asks Serdar about Melek's condition secretly. He is thinking about her day and night even sometimes he saw her running with him in a dream. 3 days later Melek moves her legs in the pool and her grandma was so grateful to the teacher, she kept praying for him and kept thanking him saying "it was because of you my teacher, you gave me my granddaughter again, may Allah give you whatever you wish". This is a story about helping a handicap student and supporting him till he gets his health back and live a normal life.

Secretly Laughing Child: This story is about a teacher called Mr. Vedat and about some of his deeds. Happy Mr. Vedat is always having a smiling face. He is always funny and making jokes. He looks old but he still a child inside his heart. If anyone asks him a question he smiles and comfort the student. Students

never felt hard in understanding his lesson as it's always a happy lesson. He is so nice that studying his lesson is just like eating a Turkish delight. Sometimes he likes how his students become sassy and funny to him. Mr. Vedat who never thought about being a teacher is one of the smartest students as he finished Faculty of Law in only 4 years. His father used to support him and he was appointed as assistant teacher in the university. But he didn't like working there and he wanted to teach for prep. School students. He only likes to teach lessons to little students who are so innocent like a young flower. He loves his students and sees them as his little brothers. He never gets angry at a student who commits a mistake but in the contrary he laughs and makes fun and never breaks his student's heart. Later he explains to his student his mistake and asks him not to make it again. He used to tell his students this word 'My dear students, you all know that if speaking is a silver then silence is a gold, be silent and win some gold'. Students loved his jokes, they always wait his lessons. One day he noticed that one of his student called Cankut never smiled in his lesson. And when he wondered he found out that his class friend always make fun of his teeth appearance. Mr. Vedat takes Cankut to a teacher. And they put orthodontics for his teeth. Cankut feels happy as his teeth will look beautiful. Mr. Vedat pays all his salary for Cankut but he feels so happy and smiles a satisfaction smile inside his heart. The story is about a teacher who is loved by all his students and he spent his salaries for one of his student's smile.

For My Sake: In this story, a history teacher called Mr. Bayram is explained in a student's memories that he wrote. He writes about his beloved teacher and how he was loved by all students and every one was only going to him if they need any help or asking any question. All the students know his place which is always crowded. He explains how he is a very considerate teacher. He was always thinking about the others and tries to help them. All the teachers love him too and he helped them by all means. He used to invite them to his house specially foreigner teachers and deal with them as a part of their family. For his history lesson, he tries a lot of methods to teach his student properly. He asks them not to take notes and that notes are for exam grads. He used to tell them 'for passing the exam I will give you all the notes to memories, but for knowing History you all should listen and love history to understand it'. What he always tries to teach is 'how to enjoy History'. In order to widen his students' minds he always likes to show books to his students. While teaching History he used to shorten the distance between him and his students. Because of him children loved teaching and to become teachers in the future. He was a generous teacher but also stylish, attentive, follows fashion and goes to a tailor always. But when someone admires his clothes he always gives them as a gift. Always stylish, attentive wore, which follow the fashion, the shirts tailor selling quality fabrics, explained that ordered the suit. One day a student called Orhan, told Mr. Bayram that he hates all teachers as they always shout and fire him out of the class. Later he brought Orhan and all teachers and reunited them and asked them to give excuses to each other and never feel bad about situations that happens every day. For my sake story is explaining a history teacher who was teaching his children all kind of goodness and how he became a part of improving student's culture and minds.

Back To Home Land: This is a story about a teacher called Zihni Uçkan who worked in several cities and finally he started to work in his home city. His memories are explained in this story. He tried hard to work in his city but he could do it when he got older. He went to the city he grown up in, he missed all places there. Gardens, streets and his childhood friends. He went back to his city in order to be close to his old parents and serve them. After 15 years of being teacher Zihni become teacher in a school in a village related to his city. It was an old village full of vineyards. When he reached there he felt so disappointed. It was an old house converted to a school. No body for years took care or reform it. There was a teacher who tried to work there for 2 years later she asked to move to a better school. He thought that all school walls, windows, doors, ladders it's everything should be repaired. He goes to a café. Talked with people and introduced himself. Then he figured out that this is the only school in the village, all children go there for learning and attending exams. So it was the only educational source and the only hope for all village children. When he heard that, he felt how he has a sacred and important job. To go

through those impossibilities he knew that he had to sacrifice a lot. He bought a small car, he sold his wife's gold and took his mom's shroud's money. He knew that Ministry of Education won't pay that much for school maintenance and that no one will pay for it as all people are poor in the village. For window frames he took Money and wrote bills for his loan, he finds someone for plaster and whitewash works and by the winter all maintenance and repairs will be done. He will start paying maintenance money in the winter. He signed the bills, school started, student loved their brand new school, they came so happy every day. Students' families brought some money for winter coal. Teacher bought coal with all the money. But unfortunately bill's repayment time has passed and he couldn't postpone this date so he had to sell his car and rescue himself from jail. This story explains teacher's sacrifice, how he took a big loan and tried to repair a school for student's education and for loan repayment he had to sell his car again.

Mother Teacher: This story is about a teacher named Mrs. Bahriye who went to hospital for visiting her sick friend and then she saw her student laying in the next bed and she figured out that he passed through big accident and lost his memory. Later she kept thinking about this student. She remembered all her memories and how she was so close to all children, she used to help and love them, and her patience with her colleges. She used to stop punishing students for making any mistake. After being retired and losing her husband she became so lonely. When she feels depressed she goes to Teacher's club and meets her retired teacher friends and then goes back home. Visiting sick people is the only way she feels comfortable. She takes surgeon general Permission and started to look after this child who was 14-15 years old. She became his mother and helped him doing everything. She became everything for this child. Whether became better so they could go out for a walk in hospital garden. She treated him with tolerance. She named him Can and he started to call her Mom. And she felt so happy with it. This story is about a teacher who got retired and how she became a mother for a child who lost his memory in an accident and her sacrifice in helping the child and later she became his mom. It is explained that even if

teachers are retired they should be patient and face any kind of trouble with all tolerance.

My Trouble- Maker: This story is about Physics teacher called Mrs. Aybike and how she treated her student she comes from a wealthy family from Ege city. Aybike has a beautiful face as her heart. In the story it is mentioned that if Aybike finds out that anyone has some troubles, so she asked her or him to see her as a big sister or a close friend and she starts to help her student. Young girl who explains her story is talking about how they went to café and started to tell Mrs. Aybike her problems and how she is afraid to tell her father about it. She told her not to be afraid and she will deal with it herself. Later, she found the punk she was told about, so she held him from his collar inside the crowd and shouted to him saying 'I will take you to the police if you approach her again'. Later young girl never felt afraid from him and he stopped bothering her. Young girl is feeling that she owe her teacher a lot and telling how she didn't leave her in this big trouble. Since that time they became sisters not teacher and her student. Her mother also was meeting the teacher always. She loved physics that when she was choosing her faculty it was her first choice. She mentions how she loved her teacher's everything, her character, her way of teaching and she takes her as an ideal example. This story is telling how a teacher can be close to his students, solving his troubles like Aybike who is not only her student's teacher but also her elder sister and also its about how students follow their teacher who see them as a real ideal example in life.

Zurnanın Zırt Dediği Yer story is about a teacher who shaved her hair and when she went home her daughter and husband was shocked and when they asked her she answers wanted my head to feel cool in this hot weather', but they don't believe her… when she entered teacher's room they all got shocked and everyone starred at her. Later she tells her husband and daughter the real story. In her next lesson she give her students lesson about 'physical appearance' and its triviality. She had a student called Bilgin who lost her hair during her medication process, and she wanted to support her by shaving her head. She asked her students not to make fun of her appearance and that everyone can live this in his life. Teacher kept asking Bilgin's doctor

about her medical condition and she knows that it's getting better. Bilgin who didn't expect such a treatment from her teacher felt so happy and held her teacher's hands with full of love…This story is about an ideal teacher who shaved her hair for supporting her student who lost her hair during medication process, it's also about building empathy between teacher and students at school and real life.

Conclusion

As a result we see Necati Güngör is mentioning all types of teachers in his book. 'My Dear Teacher'. In this book, he narrates stories of different cities, different teachers and different students. The main theme is importance of love and trust between teacher and student. Teacher who are explained here are not selfish or thinking about themselves only, they always think about their missions and their student's future and education. They work hard to build empathy with their students. They always teach their student how to be devoted, selfless, considerate, caring, responsible and responsive by being the same like this. So the stories are telling about teachers who are exemplifying those good principles and their effects on their students who are imitating their teachers always and seeing them as example. Author tries to show how sacred and important mission teachers have and the way they should follow in teaching their students.

References

[1] Güngör Necati (2015) **Sevgili Öğretmenim**, Günışığı Bookstore, 2nd printing. İstanbul.

The Idea of the Third Reich in the German Law Philosophy in the 20th Century

Lec. Başak Oya İsçan
Yalova University, Çınarcık Vocational School, Justice Programme
basakoya@hotmail.com

Abstract. The idea that after the Nazi takeover the German political propaganda machine strongly supported the naming of their land the „Third Reich" (Drittes Reich) is a misperception shared by many historians, political scientists as well as lawyers all around the world even today. It is much less known that Hitler himself was never in full support of this expression even though it proved quite effective both before and after the NSDAP (Nationalsozialistische Deutsche Arbeiterpartei) takeover. During Hitler's official visit to Italy in May 1938, the German press repeatedly referred to the Holy Roman Empire of the German nation. A circular letter that was issued by the Ministry of People's Education and Propaganda of the German Empire (Reichsministerium für Volksaufklärung und Propaganda) on July 10, 1939 explicitly forbade the official use of „Third Reich". According to this circular letter Germany's official name is from this point on „Greater German Empire" (Großdeutsches Reich). It is worth pointing out that the „Greater German Empire" (Großgermanisches Reich) used by the SS cannot be considered official either. In this work we train one's sights on expressing the idea of Third Reich with the scope of Hitler's and the other author's views.

Keywords: Third, reich, philosophy, law, empire.

1. Introduction

Years later the named of Great German Empire on March 21, 1942 the Imperial Ministry of People's Education and Propaganda (Reichsministerium für Volksaufklärung und Propaganda) issued a circular letter with provisions for the official name of the „new Germany".

It was to be called „Empire", quite possibly modelled after the British Empire.

The goal of using the expression of „Empire" was to illustrate to the world that the newly acquired lands include territories annexed or occupied by Germany without any international validity, altogether ca. 841 000 sq. km. The same circular letter limits the use of the expression to Germany, emphasizing that there is only one Empire and that is Germany.

The use of the term „Third Reich", however, implied a serial empire which is comparable both in deeds and leaders to the empire, an idea that was entirely incompatible with the self-conscience of the imperialistic national socialism which fancied to be looked upon as the pinnacle of German history.

2. Empire (Reich) in historic process

In a historical sense the First Empire was established by Otto I in 962 who was crowned emperor by Pope John XII in Rome. This em-

pire is also known as the Holy Roman Empire (Sacrum Romanum Imperium, Heiliges Römisches Reich) which existed till 1806.[1][2] The „Second Empire" was founded on January 18, 1871 in Versailles after the Franco–Prussian War and remained the most influential political and military power in Europe until its dissolution in November 1918. In a sense the Weimar Republic can be considered an „intermezzo" (Zwischenreich) between the „Second Empire" and the „Third Empire". [3]

Following the Christian doctrine of Trinitarianism the three empires can be thought of in a religious and messianic way as follows: the „First Empire" is related to the Father, the „Second Empire" to the Son, while the „Third Empire" to the Holy Spirit.

According to such an interpretation the „Third Empire" would constitute the zenith of history and the perfect symbiosis between the real and ideal, satisfying the prophetic requirement of Ibsen and Lessing[1] that the contradiction between Christianity and Antiquity be dissolved. This „Third Empire" would follow a distorted era of Christianity that would be realized by the arrival of a new Messiah.

3. The comparative views at the construal of the Third Reich

It is furthermore worth mentioning that in Ernst Krieck's Die deutsche Staatsidee (1917) the „Third Empire" appears not as a historical or political, but rather as a moral idea. Krieck alludes to Johann Gottlieb Fichte, the author of Reden an die deutsche Nation, a work that was rather influential in the latter's era. By 1919 Dietrich Eckart uses the „Third Empire" with a political and nationalistic content[2].

Ernst Fraenkel (1898-1975) a lawyer who immigrated after the National Socialist takeover, quite rightly uses the term Doppelstaat ("Dual State") to describe the autocratic national socialist system, emphasizing the double nature of the national socialist political rule. To insure the normal functioning of the economy a Normenstaat is in effect in the areas of civil, trade, corporate and tax law. On the other hand only professional experience i.e. knowledge plays a part in securing political power (Maßnahmenstaat). [4]

3.1. Nationalist views of Moeller van den Bruck about Third Reich

In the preface of his work Arthur Moeller van den Bruck (1876-1925) emphasizes that the notion of the „Third Empire" is ideological (Weltanschauungsgedanke), that rises above reality. Moeller van den Bruck's work quickly becomes widely known in Germany and has a large influence on the thinking of the young intellectual class with nationalistic feelings(In the 3rd edition of Das dritte Reich (1931) Hans Schwarz emphasizes that national socialism accepts the name „Third Reich" and named the federation's paper Oberland based on the title of Moeller van den Bruck's work).

The disappointment felt after the very harsh political and economic terms of the Peace Treaty of Versailles that were imposed on Germany after the First World War undoubtedly helped shape the thinking of this class. The same work only very slowly becomes known outside of Germany. The Solingen born author, who came partly from a traditional Prussian military family, was greatly influenced by the philosophy of Nietzsche. His affinity to the Pan-German ideas is also quite strong. He is rather well acquainted with the most influential European countries, since he visited England, France, Austria, Italy and Russia between the turn of the century and the outbreak of the First World War. He was never really concerned about the unique ethnic problems of the Austro-Hungarian Dual Monarchy. With the exception of the Dual Monarchy and Germany he vehemently criticizes the major Western European powers, especially their political system and structure. To him the ideal „power" is Germany, his homeland, without which – according to him – no stability can or will exist in Europe.

The conservative philosopher feels antipathy for the Western democracies primarily towards France and England. He in-

---

[1] In his work „L'education du genre humain" (p. 86) Gotthold Ephraim Lessing foretells the „new eternal Gospel", which means the „third era" (p. 90).
[2] It is worth pointing out that the title of Stefan George's (1868-1933) work is „Das neue Reich" in which the expression „völkisch" occurs.

troduces the democratic system of these countries in an ironic belittling way. According to him it is only a fiction that the nation (*natio*) is made up of formally equal individuals. Moeller van den Bruck is convinced that Germany is predestined to lead Europe for the historical ties it has with the Holy Roman Empire (*Sacrum Romanum Imperium*). He states that in its history the Holy Roman Empire was never able to amalgamate itself into a real political community (*politische Gemeinschaft*). The Holy Roman Empire is almost exclusively dominated by the notion of territoriality (*territorialitas*), the result of which is centurial territorial dismemberment. This limits the development of German ethnic identity. The birth of the „Second-Empire" – despite the involvance of the political unity – failed to change this situation. The state further remains autocratic and is viewed as a „foreign body" by its citizens.

Moeller van den Bruck also condemns the Weimar Germany, in which all of the political views are superficial and not reflective of society. He strongly criticizes the Weimar constitution of 1919 as well, since in his opinion it is unable to provide the united Germany with an acceptable constitutional framework. Only with the elimination of its pseudo-values can Germany fulfill its mission of reviving Europe, something it is obligated to do with its rich ties to the Holy Roman Empire. It is the duty of the young generation to revitalize the dormant German intellectuals. They have to intuitively oppose and revolt against the deceiving values. Only as a result of such a „revolution" can the „Third Empire" come into existence.

The birth of the Third Empire, however, automatically assumes the territorial unification of the German ethnic group, that is the termination of the system of the Treaty of Versailles. The substantial growth of the German population can provide the nation with the necessary strength to attain its goal.

It is quite interesting from the viewpoint of the „Third Reich" to briefly analyze the Article 61 of the Weimar Constitution. Ac-

cording to this article German-Austria after joining Germany receives proportional representation in the Imperial Council (*Reichsrat*). Even till the accession German-Austria (*Deutsch-Österreich*) is endowed with the right of consultation. Later Germany was forced to declare the passage void. According to Article 80 of the Treaty of Versailles Germany binds itself to acknowledging and respecting the independence of Austria. Austria's independence is inviolable. Only with the consent of the League of Nations (*Völkerbund*) can the status of Austria be modified. This condition, however, led the peace conference to the inclusion of article 88 in the text of the third draft of the peace treaty signed with Austria on September 2, 1919. According to this article Austria's independence is inviolable and is always dependant on the consent of the League of Nations. This article of the treaty is in unison with the decree that Austria must make a commitment to refrain from any action that could directly or indirectly threaten its independence.

It must be emphasized that this section opens the floor to a very wide range of interpretations. The expression „Jesuit section" used by John Maynard Keynes is quite telling of this section. It was viewed positively by the followers of Pan-Germanism, since it left the door open for the unification with Germany (*Anschluß*) through a rather peculiar interpretation.

The emphasis of Moeller van den Bruck's philosophy is on the social or more specifially nationalistic demagogy. According to Moeller van den Bruck the integration of the pheripherial classes into society and the German nation would be the solution to serious differences within the society of the Weimar Republic. Closely related to this idea, of course, is the goal of developing a national identity as soon as and as efficiently as possible. All this is a kind of anti-capitalist reaction and a significant contribution to the conservative and heterogeneous trend of both the conservative and the popular revolutions. The author of *Das*

dritte Reich is an active supporter of only the first one.

Moeller van den Bruck's idea of a „perfect" empire has already been present in Lessing's and Ibsen's thoughts concerning the „Third Reich", but was influenced primarily by Gerhard von Mutius' value-ideal world view[3]. [5] Despite the rejection of modern liberalist ideals and the formulation of a plan for a „new European order", the leaders of Germany's political and ideological life refused to accept Moeller van den Bruck's idea of the „Third Empire" that was originally trademarked by idealistic rather than politically relevant thoughts. This general hostility was further reinforced by the publication of a strong critique of Moeller van den Bruck's views in 1939. It is also worth mentioning that the expression „Prussian style" (*Preußischer Stil*) comes from Moeller van den Bruck. The ideas of the conservative intellectual philosopher are especially popular with the conservative German „national" intellectuals[4]. [6] During the Great Depression of the early 30's Moeller van den Bruck is often cited by many adherents of this group.

3.2. Writers of the idea of the conservative revolution and Die Tat Journal

Followers of the idea of conservative revolution are the writers, historians, economists and lawyers who had close ties with the *Die Tat* cultural journal published by Ernst Horneffer in Jena between 1909 and 1939. A majority of these people consider themselves to be the intellectual successor of Horneffer in some way.[5] After Horneffer, Eugen Diederichs (1867-1930) takes over as the magazine's editor. During Diederich's editorial years the paper gains a more religious, social and cultural political appearance. From April 1913 the sub-title of *Die Tat* becomes „Social-religiöse Monatschrift für deutsche Kultur", well reflecting the changes in ideology of the paper. During the First World War the paper is out of print. In 1921 the sub-title of *Die Tat* is changed by Diederichs to „Monatschrift für die Zukunft deutscher Kultur", implying a change in style once again. The goal of the paper is changing Germany's political and cultural life. [7] (According to Diederichs the current leading bourgeoisie cannot be the carrier of culture in the future - Träger der Kultur nicht walten kann).

The articles published in the *Die Tat* welcome the fall of the empire and follow a new socio-religious aristocratic thinking. Diederichs provides space for both the national socialists and the liberals. [8] The „community of people" (*Volksgemeinschaft*) wishes to bring a halt to the social and political decline of the bourgeoisie through the simultaneous creation of a national socialist and authoritarian state. He furthermore demands a „revolution from the top" (*Revolution von oben*).

It is necessary to mention Eugen Rosenstock who further developed the ideas of Diederichs. His work on the European revolutions, published in the early 1930's is quite influential. The same can be said about economist F. Fried who uses facts to demonstrate the serious crisis of capitalist production. According to him the solution to this problem is an authoritarian economic system.

Rosenstock is further disturbed by the gradual impoverishment of the middle-class, and the drastic strengthening of a rather small elite in the political and cultural life of Germany. This evermore powerful group barely constitutes one-tenth percent of a 60 million large Germany, yet it seems to create an unabridgable gap between itself and the rest of society.

He believes that the only solution to this problem is not only economic expansion, but also a substantial increase in exports. In order to achieve this Germany needs to

---

[3]. Von Mutius writes: „One who frees himself of his own self stands in the Third Reich." (Wer sich von seinem Selbst geschieden hat, der steht im dritten Reich.)

[4] Carlo Schmid writes in his memoirs, that in the 1930's the members of Tübingen Wiking-Bund, a nationalistic student group, read the works of Moeller van den Bruck.

[5] Essays and critiques are published by distinguished writers and philosophers such as Hermann Bahr (1863-1934), Paul Ernst (1866-1933) and George Simmel (1858-1918) in the Die Tat.

become self-sufficient economically and must switch to an authoritarian system politically.

Carl Schmitt (1888-1985), a renowned professor of law and the author of the well-known work *Der Hüter der Verfassung* (1931) was also a person with close ties to the *Die Tat*. In this greatly influential work, through closely studying the Weimar Republic, he reaches the conclusion that in historic dimensions the state becomes „overpowering", directly leading to the rise of a totalitarian state. In many respects Carl Schmitt's *Gegenspieler* is *Hermann Ignatz Heller* (1891-1933) who quite appropriately writes that „the need for a strong person is the bourgeoisie's way of expressing its desperation. Through the strenghtening of the working masses they feel that not only they own political and economic interests, but also the entire European culture is threatened... The only thing left for the desperate bourgeoisie is to place all their faith into a strong person". [9]

Hermann Heller writes: "Von grosser Wichtigkeit ist es, dass neufeudale Kraftpose und den Schrei nach dem starken Mann als den Ausdruck einer Verzweiflungsstimmung des Bürgers zu erkennen. Erschreckt durch das Avancieren der Arbeitermassen, glaubt er nicht nur seine eigenen politischen und ökonomischen Herrschaftsansprüche bedroht, sondern sieht zugleich das Ende der gesamten europäischen Kultur nahe. […] Begreiflich, dass diesem verzweifelten Bürger nur die Hoffnung auf den starken Mann übrig bleibt".

Heller, who becomes a full professor of public law at Frankfurt am Main University in 1932, is a committed supporter of the Weimar Republic. The fact that in the same year he was the legal representative of the faction of the social democrats of the Prussian provincial diet in the so-called *Preußenschlagverfahren* seems to only reinforce this fact.

It must be pointed out that Heller thinks that the modern state and its era are entirely incompatible with the class-stratification.

As he indicated in his rather fragmented work, *Staatslehre* which was published after his early death, a modern state is both a social and democratic constitutional state, that by definition excludes the possibility of a strong person-led authoritarian state. [10]

Certainly worth mentioning is Hans Zehrer, who became the editor of the *Die Tat* in October 1929. (Adam Kuckhoff takes over the editing of the Die Tat from Diederichs in April 1928. Kuckhoff only works at the journal for one year. In August 1943 he gets executed by the Nazis as a member of the „Rote Kapelle"). He is regarded as a supporter of the „conservative revolution" and the opponent of parlamentary democracy.

After World War II Zehrer becomes the editor-in-chief of the *Die Welt*, and modifies the sub-title (*Monatsschrift zur Gestaltung neuer Wirklichkeit*) established by his predecessor Adam Kuckhoff. In 1932 he adds the adjective „independent" (*unabhängig*) to the original subtitle. The *Die Tat* becomes the intellectual interpretative forum for national socialist ideas although keeping a distance of from Hitler and underestimating the dangerousness of the NSDAP. As the solution to the instable political and economic system of the Weimar Republic, Zehrer envisioned a new system, the „Third Reich", as a fundamentally different, religion based corporate political system.

The intellectuals of the *Die Tat*, especially Giselher Wirsing, the person who becomes the editor of the review after the Nazi takeover in 1933, concentrate on Germany's relations with Central Europe.

Starting 1934/35 Wirsing shortens the review sub-title to „Unabhängige Monatsschrift". This is „confirmed" or seems to be confirmed by the unique, yet already true fact that the „transformation of reality" has already taken place. From 1936 the word „independent" disappears and only „Deutsche Monatsschrift" appears on the cover of the paper.

In March 1939 the publication of the *Die Tat* comes to an end by merging with the „*Das XX. Jahrhundert*" magazine.

Despite the political, ideological changes it has gone through the years the *Die Tat* becomes very popular in Germany, especially during Zehrer's editorial years. The circulation of the paper reaches a yet unprecedented 30 000 copies. In addition Tatclubs (*Tat-Kreise*) are born all throughout Germany, forming intellectual debate forums.

According to Wirsing, Germany's future is primarily influenced by Southeastern Europe (*Südost-Europa*). He is convinced that the goal of Germany's enemies or perceived enemies is to encircle the country. It is for this reason that Germany needs to establish a closed national „living-space" (*Lebensraum*). He is convinced that self-sufficient German economy should open towards Southeastern Europe instead of the increasingly hostile financial world. At the same time Wirsing, similarly to most of his colleagues of the *Die Tat*, does not wish to continue or renew the old policy of annexation. Wirsing essentially revives the *Mitteleuropa-Plan* (1848-50) which states that Germany's expansion should be directed towards Central Europe instead of the West. This latter option has been limited, anyway, by the Locarno Treaty in 1925.

The ultimate goal of the expansion is to establish the so-called *Großwirtschaftsraum* (Greater Economic Space). The *Mitteleuropa-Plan* is generally associated with Friedrich Naumann (1860-1919), however, it was the Prussian-born Karl von Bruck (representative of Trieste in 1848 in the Viennese Parliament and financial minister of Austria between 1855-1859) who first developed the financial aspect of the plan. [11]

It must be mentioned that Constantin Frantz, a political opponent of Bismarck, feels nostalgic towards the Holy Roman Empire. According to Frantz the three „Germanies" (Prussia, Austria, and the „third Germany"), which include the South and Central German states, may provide the real defense against the French and Russian expansion. Frantz's idea is anti-Nazi and was rather popular in German circles outside of Germany.

Moeller van den Bruck was the intellectual center for the other group of intellectuals who sympathized with the idea of „conservative revolution". These people were united under the Berlin-based *Juni-Club* and were led by Moeller van den Bruck's friend Heinrich von Gleichen. There is a close relationship between the *Juni-Club*, organized around figures of Moeller van den Bruck, Heinrich von Gleichen and Martin Spahn from Berlin and the *Deutscher Hochschulring* (DHR), an organization established and actively participating at most German universities after World War I (At some universities the name of the Deutscher Hochschulring is Hochschulring Deutscher Art (HDA).

The *Ring-Bewegung* is primarily characterized by conservatism, a nationalistic attitude and – due to disorientation – a trend-seeking at the beginning. The ties are particularly strong in Berlin which is illustrated by the fact that the centers of the *Hochschulring* are in the headquarters of the *Juni-Club*. The *Juni-Club* is rather active in Berlin, in particular it exhibits educational activities of political nature. In November 1922 Martin Spahn, one of the leading figures of the *Juni-Club* establishes a „Political Collegium", where he regularly organizes lectures. From 1923 the Collegium's name changes to „Hochschule für nationale Politik", where he holds „private university" classes.

These classes are visited primarily by youth who sympathize with nationalist ideals, such as Werner Best, a lawyer and one of the most well-known national socialists having a law degree. [12]

A prominent member of the *Juni-Club* is Edgar Jung. The Austrian economist, philosopher and sociologist, through the influence of Othmar Spann (1878-1950), propagates the rebirth and revival of the Holy Roman Empire of the German Nation. In contrast with Adam Smith and David Ri-

cardo's liberal economics Othmar Spann, the founder of social economics and universalism in philosophy, develops a new view for studying the so called Ganzheitslehre. In his opinion the construction of a „real state" (wahrer Staat) assumes the new, profession based establishment of the economy and the state (Ständestaat auf berufsständiger Grundlage). Through opposing the various trends of liberalism and marxism Spann exerts great influence on the conservative Austrian thinkers. Following the Anschluß Spann was stripped of his professorship in Vienna. Thereafter he took an active part in the formulation of the so-called Korneuburger Eid, an oath of the Austrofascist Heimwehr.

This view is quite similar to Moeller van den Bruck's call for the establishment of the „Third Reich", since both of them reach back to the Holy Roman Empire for ideological support. Without going into an extensive analysis of the question, it must be pointed out that the linking of the Holy Roman Empire with the Germans as an ethnic group is entirely unhistorical. Even based on this brief summary it can be ascertained that the idea of the „Third Reich" dates back a long time. In traces it is already present in Fichte's ideas.

4. Conclusion

The idea of the „Third Reich" has quite an influence on the thinking of the conservative cultural philosophers, primarily Arthur Moeller van den Bruck. It is also present in the works of the era's influential literary, political and economic scholars. However, not even the often eschatologic „Third Reich" is a uniformly interpreted idea.

For political and philosophical reasons the national socialist regime isolates itself from the idea of „Third Reich" already by the end of the 1930s.

The „conservative revolutionary" branch of the *Deutsche Bewegung* (German Movement) – including all branches of the „conservative revolution" – was unaccept-

able as an ideological base for the national socialist rulers.

The „völkisch" branch of the *Deutsche Bewegung* is an entirely different matter. This latter one cannot be considered a uniform movement either, since it includes the *Schwarze Front* trend that later came into conflict with the national socialist ideals and the *Landvolkbewegung*, a movement unfolding at the end of the 1920s in Schleswig-Holstein and one that wobbles between anarchy and corporatism as well.

Of all these different movements the *Führerprinzip* idea, symbolized by Hans F. K. Günter, Richard Walter Darré and Alfred Rosenberg became the official ideology of the national socialist Germany, in which the idea of the „Third Reich" no longer played a role.

Here we point out that the trend represented by Ernst Niekisch is part of the Deutsche Bewegung's „völkisch" revolutionary branch. Ernst Niekisch is also one of Moeller van den Bruck's students.

References

[1] F. Berber: Internationale Aspekte des Heiligen Römischen Reiches. In: Festschrift für Th. Maunz zum 80. Geburtstag, München, 1981, pp. 17-25.
[2] A. Földi and G. Hamza, The History and Institutes of Roman Law, 5th revised and enlarged edition, Budapest, 2000, p. 114.
[3] R. Dufraisse, Le Troisième Reich. In: Les empires occidentaux de Rome à Berlin. Sous la direction de J. Tulard, Paris, 1997, p. 449.
[4] A. v. Brünneck, Ernst Fraenkel (1898-1975), Soziale Gerechtigkeit und pluralistische Demokratie, In: Streitbare Juristen, Eine andere Tradition, Baden-Baden, 1988, pp. 415-425.
[5] G. von Mutius, Die drei Reiche, Berlin, 1920, p. 226.
[6] C. Schmid, Erinnerungen, Bern–München, 1979, p. 143.
[7] E. Diederichs, Die neue „Tat", In: Die Tat, Heft 7, October 1929, p. 481.
[8] K. Fritsche, Politische Romantik und Gegenrevolution. Fluchtwege in der Kriese der bürgerlichen Gesellschaft: Das Beispiel des „Tat"-Kreises, Frankfurt am Main, 1976, p. 45.

[9] H. I. Heller, Rechtsstaat oder Diktatur? Tübingen, 1930, pp. 17-18.

[10]   H.I. Heller, Staatslehre in der Weimarer Republik. Hrsg. von Ch. Müller und I. Staff, Köln, 1985.

[11]   F. Genton: L'Europe Centrale, une idée d'Europe, Dijon, 1997, p. 362.

[12]   U. Herbert: Best. Biographische Studien über Radikalismus, Weltanschauung und Vernunft. 1903-1989, 2. durchg. Aufl. Bonn, 1996, p. 55.

A discussion on the cultural dimension of globalization

Emine Nur KIRIMLI
Çankırı Karatekin University
eminenurd@gmail.com

Abstract. This study based on the concept of globalization and its dimensions. Generally, when the globalization concept is discussed, it is emphasized the economic dimension and made descriptions in this direction. In fact the globalization is a concept that also has political, social, cultural dimension in addition to economic dimension. These dimensions are interact with each other and are not independent of each other. In this study, globalization is analyzed as a cultural event beyond its other dimensions.

Keywords: Globalization, Culture, Cultural globalization, Dimensions of Globalization.

1. Introduction

Globalization is one of the concepts which is used in recent years frequently. According to some, "globalization" is something we can not be happy without it; according to some, the "globalization" is the cause of unhappiness. However, the point where everyone has agreed is globalization is the fate of the World that can not escape and it is an irreversible process. [1]. Today, globalization has made significant progress with becoming active of the mass communication and has begun to affect the entire world by winning cultural, economic, political dimension.

When the globalization concept is discussed, in general, it is emphasized the economic dimension and made descriptions in this direction. In fact the globalization is a concept that also has political, social, cultural dimension in addition to economic dimension. These dimensions are interact with each other and are not independent of each other. Also different views are available in globalization's dimensions as well as the identification of globalization. Economic, social and cultural dimensions need to be examined more comprehensive.

The first and the starting point of these is the economic dimension. Indeed, globalization has been felt in the economic field primarily, political and cultural fields are also affected by it. It is seemed that the effect of free market economy and multinational capital in the economic dimension of globalization and liberal democracy effect in the political dimension. In the cultural dimension of globalization while universality and locality are being served at the same time, a concept that is emerged uniform consumption culture as a dominant.

2. The Concept of Globalization

Today, globalization is one of the most controversial issues both in Turkey and in the World which is raised with different expressions as the "new world order" and the "global village" (global village). The concept has entered into literatüre for the first time with using Marshall Mcluhan's "Explosions in Communication" (1960) book the "global village" term for this new process. [2]. Globalization can be considered that is the most frequently used words even in daily conversations. Still, the situation as meant or described as globalization is not a very clear view. Definition of globalization shows varies depending on the approach of dealing peopleof this fact.

For Some, globalization is a key process for establishing the new and better World on the basis freedom, openness and interaction. For others, it is a terrifying process inequality, exploitation, raising the difference between developed and underdeveloped.

The concept of globalization sometimes can be used as a process resemble each other of World societies, accordingly the occurrence of a single global culture. And sometimes it is used a process as expression and definition of societies, communities and identities'differences. [3]. It is also defined as the increase of perception consciousness in the world's in one place. [4]. According to Boratav [5], globalization, spreading of capitalism to worldwide with a new expansion after the Cold War.

3. The Stages of Globalization

Looking from today, it is seemed that continues process and actions inthe concept of globalization for a few years. [6]. It is clear that this is not the first globalization. The concept of "New World Order" is used for the third time since the beginning of 20. Century. First time it has been suggested after the First World War while making the peace treaty (1919), second in II. in World War II (1941, Atlantic Statement). Each time a new unstable balances whole has emerged and has increased the number of states each time. It can be said that third globalization fact which we live today. The first one was in 1490's and the second was lived in 1890's. Now the World has begun to l ive third one in 1990's. These stages are given in the table below. [7].

Table 1

The Stages of Globalization

	First Globalizaiton	Second Globalizaiton	Third Globalizaiton
Driving Power	Development in navigation, Mercantilism.	Industrialization and innovations that brought with	1)Multinational companies in 1970's. 2) The communication revolution in 1980's. 3)Dissapearing the opponents of West with the collapse of USSR in 1990's
Method	First explorers then military occupation.	First Missioners, then explorers, then commercial companies, the last is occupation.	Cultural- idological effect. Thus each side of the country(economic, political, social) is affected by itself.
Apologia	Taking the God's religion to Pagans	"White man's burden", "Civilizing mission" , racist theories.	"The highest level of civilization", "The will of the international community", "the invisible hand of the market", "globalization is for everyone's common interest
Result	Colonialism	Imperialism	"Globalization"

Resource: Baskın ORAN, Küreselleşme ve Azınlıklar, İmaj Yayınevi, Ankara, 2000, p.9.

The most important results can be drawn from this table is as follows: First, both all three globalization time shows great similarities with each other. Both of three is a spread that in West's certain breakig points time. Second, first globalization is different from other two globalization. At the second and third globalization, West's infrastructure (capitalism) and superstructure (democracy, human and minority rights, etc.) are taken together with the spread. But in the first, capitalism has not yet developed as West's infrastructure and there is no fully democracy and human rights etc in superstructure. [8]. It is remarkable that from a historical perspective, there is nothing changed. Previously who promised pradise by Christianised "civilized", "modernized", "developed" they are invited to the globalization train now. [9].

4. Approaches to Globalization

There are people who say that globalization is a scam and strong states' aim is finding new markets in weak states, making pressure on them. On the other hand there are some views that describes an order. According to this order, there is no economic, social and political boundaries between countries and this situation creates the concept of global village. First view generally is expressed by left-leaning writers and developing country intellectuals. Second

views mostly is expressed by right-leaning and developed countries' scientists, politicians and bureaucrats. [10]. While taking in consider this classification, it would be right to mention transformational approach as also third view. [11].

4.1. Hyperglobalists

According to supporters of as known hypergolablists or radical, nation state that is a product of industrial civilization has begun to loose its importance with globalization process. Because of global market mechanism has worked more rational than government, the policy has replaced of global market. The global market pushes society to behave more rational. Even if the policies are still effective on local and national scale, they do not have the power to influence the movement of the global economy. [12]. According to hyperglobalists, traditional nation-state has leaved to world society and new forms of social organization have emerged. Hyperglobalists do not show homogeneous features in themselves. For example, the Neo-liberals are considered as positive the succes of individual autonomy and market on state power. Neo-Marxists claim that contemporary globalization is the representative of global capitalism and these processes serve only a small middle class. [13].

Globalizaton is a device which is dominated by international investors and companies that can not be controlled by nation-states. Growing unemployment and social exclusion, welfare systems are crumbling and uncontrolled growth threatens the environment. Thus, globalization has caused social fragmentation, cultural uncertainty, conflict and violence. [14]. To the contrary of this ideological separation between Neo-Marxists and Neo-liberals, they agree on that there is n integrated global economy.

4.2. Skeptical (Opponents of Globalization)

Skeptical argues that nothing is the new in the world where we live, the significantly movement of money and goods were in the past too. Globalization is not a new process,

the reason of interest of this term is to become ideology of time. In this view, globalization is a term eliminating the welfare state, which aims to replace the reduced state and government. [15]. According to this group, approximately 80% of world trade are taking place among the Europen Union, United States and Japan (developed countries/ economies) so underdeveloped countries can not participate to this process of economic integration. Therefore, using the term of "internationalization" instead of globalization would be more appropriate. On the other hand regionalization in the face of growing globalization, is not an intermediate stage of globalization unlike is an alternative. World, is heading for a split rather than a global civilization. Because globalization may lead to the emergence of new conflicts between civilizations or regions, may not cause to an integration. Again, according to skeptics, many inequalities in the world economy from the global civilization or extreme fundamentalism will lead to the emergence of nationalist movements. Moreover, the argument of globalization is the basis of democracy and the development serves the United State's image and values on the expansion of the market economy and in shaping the international order. Skeptics claim also that process of globalization is an ideological stance rather than a phenomenon resulting from technological or economic developments. [16].

4.3. Transformationalists

Transformationalists accept that national governments restructure their authority and power. They either reject the allegations of Hyperglobalists "came the end of the sovereign nation-state" or the thesis of Opponents of Globalization's (Skeptical) "nothing has changed". It is seen as the main political force behind the social, political and economic changes that is reshaped modern society and world order by Transformationalists. It is no longer a clear distinction between the outside or between international and domestic affairs. Economically, it has been lived in a very different period even 30-40 years ago. Researchs on globalization in recent years indicates that we live in a very different period. A new global market has been formed that is

much more integrated than the previous market. The quantity of goods bought and sold is too high not to compare with the 19th century. But even more important than it is that the economy is becoming more and more connected to the service sector. Services that include information, entertainment, communication and most importantly the electronic and financial economy, are becoming the most important sector in the economy. Ever since we had the opportunity to communicate instantly through the communication revolution, the old structures have begun to collapse, old habits to be forgotten and cultures to come into immediate contact with other cultures. [17].

5. Dimensions of Globalization

5.1. Economic Dimension of Globalizaiton

In general terms, economic globalization refers to the integration of the country's economy with the world economy, that is the integration of the world into a single market. In other words, economic globalization means, in parallel with the developments in information and communication technologies, increasing the flow of goods, capital and labor among countries, the concentration of economic relations between the end countries and the convergence of the countries. In the process of economic globalization, cross-border transactions related to goods and services and international capital movements are increasingly diversifying and technology is spreading more rapidly worldwide. [18]. In this process, global firms are undertaking an important function and through these companies technology is spreading towards developing countries from developed countries. Rapid developments in telecommunications, information and transportation technology, liberalization movements in the world economy by international organizations such as the WTO and the IMF, factors such as the concept of market economy importance in achieving countries' rapid and sustainable economic development provide the environment for the

formation of economic globalization. [19]. In this process, the emergence of transnational (multinational) companies in the framework of the newly emerging international division of labor ensured the continual development and expansion into the global arena.

5.2. Political Dimension of Globalization

Globalization has led to the expansion and concentration of political relations on the world as well as economic relations. As globalization gained momentum, states' understanding of sovereignty began to be questioned, political institutions around the world emerged and all humanitarian considerations such as the concept of human rights emerged. In globalization, the nation-state has lost its authority and has begun to transfer its authority to supranational institutions. Political globalization can be evaluated as follows:

- Losing the power to provide absolute sovereignty of political borders a state to over a particular piece of land,

- Increasing interaction of management systems,

- The intensity of external interventions on the basis of democracy, human rights and freedoms,

- The emergence of international top institutions by losing the importance of a nation-state based on a monotheistic structure at the level of political-cultural symbols such as language, religion, ethnicity, flag. [20].

5.3. Cultural Dimension of Globalization

Culture defined as a lifestyle of a nation interacts with globalization mutually. Both globalization and culture have been influenced by great transformations and changes, and culture has been effective in transforming

itself. As a result, societies who lead to the phenomenon of globalization are a cultural element of their own life experience and knowledge.

First of all, the globalization, which has come to the fore with the economic dimension and which is nothing new with this, has brought about the interdependence of the nations / communities in terms of both politically and culturally. Parallel to the "borderlessness" of new communication technologies in particular, the globalization of cultures begins to be mentioned. Perhaps the most controversial dimension of globalization is cultural globalization. According to Hall, there can be two different globalizations as modern and postmodern globalization. Modern globalization is globalization what is limited to economic circulation; the concept of post-modern globalization refers to globalization that encompasses all areas of politics, politics, and culture that we are in today. [21].

At the heart of the definition of globalization as uniformification and homogenization, it is argued that the cult imported and imposed with economic and political power, is the West, more specifically American culture. Global culture / American culture is criticized not only by non-Western societies but also by Europe, and is accused of leading to "cultural imperialism". Generally, on the basis of the fear of monotony, American culture and the "Americanization" threat lie. American mass culture has long been seen as a destructive force that erodes European cultures. For example, Hollywood's cultural dominance seems to have endangered the survival of European cultural industries. The efforts of the European Continent and the American entertainment industry to reduce Europe's effectiveness are due to cultural concerns.

The development of globalization with digitalization, the fact that people are fed from the same cultural sources or under the influence of the popular mass culture produced has accelerated the discussion of the existence of a cultural globalization. With this dimension, globalization is often discussed through critical concepts such as "monotization of the world" and homogenization, one of the appearances of "Western imperialism". [22].

In terms of lifestyle, the societies increasingly resemble each other or in other words, "Americanization" has come to fruition. The world trade culture and industry has American influence in terms of appearance, texture and sound. Levis sells more than automobiles. On compact discs, American songs have the possibility to spread all over the World. New generations prefer this new way of life by forcing their families' budgets. In the form of thought, in the style of clothing in the entertainment, shortly as a whole the likeness come to the point of view of people's (in the terms of younger generation). A dominant American culture is manifested in everyday life, from the shoe they buy for their children, to the discos they enjoy when they are having fun, to the sweaters, t-shirts and jeans that they wear. American video, record, film, CD and VCD's products-productions are continuing their unrivaled sovereignty. So much so that this dominance is acknowledged to even exceed the obstacles of authoritarian rule. In the same way, eating and drinking habits are under the dominant influence of "Coca-Cola" "Pepsi" and McDonald's which have become symbols of American culture. [23].

Those who regard globalization as a cultural phenomenon as a cultural phenomenon argue that it is a common culture of Western societies that imposes a uniform culture on the world scale, from the style of clothing to feeding, from television series to computer programs, from women's rights to the freedom of homosexuals (E.g. George Ritzer's The McDonaldization of Society, Benjamin Barber's Jihad vs. McWorld). On the other hand, it is argued that globalization brings about intercultural differentiation, fragmentation, polarization even conflicts(E.g. Huntington-Clash of civilizations). [24].

Ritzer used the term "McDonaldization" to refer to the different socio-cultural processes that led to the dominance of the functioning of fast-food restaurants in American society as well as in the rest of the world. The idea is that the principles adopted by fast-food establishments are influencing the increasingly diverse community segments and the world as a whole. These principles are; "activity", "computability", "predictability" and "control". Ritzer show universities, funerals, large

settlement sites, and motels as the current areas of McDonaldization. The practical consequences of the social change brought about by these institutions include a narrow instrument-objective ration without any predictions of wider social aims:

- Unskilled work and other activities in simple tasks
- Packed presentation
- Standardized modules and options
- Implementation of brutal market principles
- The destruction of authenticity and meaning in social life

According to Ritzer, they all have negative meanings. According to him, "if the world was less McDonaldized, people could live better with their human potential". The McDonaldization of the world implies the forced adoption of single-standard standards that prevent human creativity in the long run and remove social relations from being human [25]. Similarly, Benjamin Barber warns against a soulless consumer capitalism, which quickly transforms the diverse communities of the world, called "McWorld," into a trivial, monotonous market. According to Barber, McWorld is a popular culture product directed at commercial commercial interests of superficial American cultures in the 1950s and 1960s. All of the music, video, theater, books, and amusement parks are produced as an export product, which creates common tastes in common logos, advertising slogans, stars, songs, brands and commercials. [26].

Conclusion

The concept of globalization and the issues discussed due to this concept have not been clarified due to the uncertainties in the definition of the concept and the breadth of the field of action. The discussion is continuing because of carrying different ideas and approaches. It would not be right to describe this as a negative. Because this is a process and the healthy one is that the debate around the concept of globalization continues.

The origins of mass communication technologies, Anglo-Saxon and American, show that they are not only technological ownership but also the direction of the flow of culture. The global culture, which shows the sum of western lifestyles, values and consumption cultures, presents itself and its values through the media- especially television, the Internet and advertising- to the consumption of the world. Presented is not only goods and services, but also cultural meanings and images of objects. When viewed from the cultural dimension of the globalization process, Western cultures possessing advanced communication technologies play a dominant role in the process of global cultural transfer through this technological superiority, and also incorporate elements of local cultures into this transfer process, strengthening the sovereignty of their own cultures over other cultures, they are able to market their products without any difficulty to these cultures.

The study of the creation of world cultures in the cultural field has caused the countries to become alienated from their own cultures. The pressure on the cultural scene has also resulted in the formation of ultra-nationalist ideologies. As globalization evolves, it creates a unique culture that transcends national cultures in national, ethnic and religious terms. This formation which is going on is called by various sociologists and political scientists with some concepts. The resulting "new global culture" over national, ethnic, religious cultures weakens local cultures, if any so-called what is termed.

References

[1] Z. Bauman, Küreselleşme, Toplumsalın Sonuçları, Çev. Abdullah Yılmaz, Ayrıntı Yay., İstanbul, 1997, p.7.

[2] H. Tutar, Küreselleşme Sürecinde İşletme Yönetimi, Hayat Yay., İstanbul, 2000,p. 21.

[3] E. F. Keyman & Sarıbay, A. Y., Global-Yerel Eksende Türkiye, Alfa Yayınları, İstanbul, 2000, p.3.

[4] R. A. Aslanoğlu, Kent, Kimlik ve Küreselleşme, Ezgi Kitabevi, Bursa, 2000, p.136.

[5] K. Boratav, Yeni Dünya Düzeni Nereye, İmge Kitabevi, Ankara, 2000, p. 16.

[6] B. Oran, Küreselleşme ve Azınlıklar, İmaj Yayınevi, Ankara, 2000, p.9.

[7] Oran, ibid, p. 9.

[8] Oran, ibid, p. 9.

[9] F. Başkaya, (2002); Küreselleşmenin Karanlık Bilançosu, Özgür Üniversite Kitaplığı, s.22.

[10] Ö. Kutlu, "Kamu Yönetiminde Küreselleşme", içinde Küresel Sistemde Siyaset Yönetim Ekonomi Der. M. A. Çukurçayır. Çizgi Kitabevi, Konya, 2003, p. 166-167.

[11] V. Bozkurt, Küreselleşmenin İnsani Yüzü, Alfa Yayınları, İstanbul, 2000,p. 18.

[12] A. Giddens, Sosyoloji, Ayraç Yayınevi, Ankara, 2000, p.11-20.

[13] Bozkurt, ibid ,2000, p. 19.

[14] O. Zengingönül, Küreselleşme, Barış Yayınları Fakülteler Kitabevi. İzmir, 2000, p. 18.

[15] J. Fox,, Chomsky ve Küreselleşme, (Çev.) Kılıç E., Everest Yayınları, İstanbul, 2001, p.22-28.

[16] Bozkurt, ibid, p.27.

[17] V. Bozkurt, (2007) "Küreselleşme; Kavram, Gelişim ve Yaklaşımlar", www.genbilim.com (14.12.2013).

[18] C. C. Aktan, "Yoksullukla Mücadele Stratejileri", Hak İş Konfederasyonu Yayınları, Ankara, 2002, p.2.

[19] Aktan, ibid, p.3.

[20] M. Acar, "Ekonomik, Siyasal ve Sosyo-Kültürel Boyutlarıyla Küreselleşme: Tehdit mi, Fırsat mı?", içinde Liberal Düşünce Dergisi, Yıl :7, S. 25-26, Ankara,2003, p.8.

[21] E. Akça, "Küreselleşme Üzerine Bir Tartışma: Kültürel Emperyalizm ve Kültürel Küreselleşme Tezleri", www.siyasaliletisim.org (14.12.2013).2008.

[22] Akça, ibid.

[23] M. Talas, Küreselleşme ve Türkiye'de Kültür Politikaları, Yayımlanmamış Doktora Tezi, Malatya Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Malatya, 2003, p. 60-69.

[24] E. F.Keyman & Sarıbay, A.Y. Global-Yerel Eksende Türkiye, Alfa Yayınları, İstanbul, 2000, p.49.

[25] G. Ritzer,Toplumun McDonaldlaştırılması, Ayrıntı Yayınları İstanbul, 2011.

[26] B. R Barber, McWorld'e Karşı Cihad,Cep Kitapları Yayınevi. İstanbul, 2003.

The Theory Of Emanation Considering Farabi And Plotinus

Associate Prof. Vecihi SONMEZ[1]

Abstract: When it is the basic problem of the philosophy to understand what the being is, to know being at all points and to find the last happiness in this way, it is very natural to have various kinds of solutions for this problem. Also in these variety, We accept the same all the theories that are inspired from each other or looks similar to each other and we don't notice some nuances that should be noticed because we use only a term to describe all of them. With this thought, we saw fit totackle both Farabi's(870-950) and Plotinus'(203-269) theories of emanation and to point some things, to the extend permitted by an article. For this purpose. After reminding views of Farabi and Plotinus about the subject we will evaluate it. Monism theory of Plotinus and Farabi's understanding of God are different because Farabi describes God with various adjectives but monism theory of Plotinus characterises God with no adjective apart from goodness. So the God that Farabi describes seems to have qualifications related to knowledge, will and power but the one of Plotinos is deprived of any of these. However, the one of Plotinos seems to try to make us feel that the God has some powers that we are not aware of. If the one of Plotinos is deprived of everthing and imaginary, then how to explain how he creates. If there is creation, Then there is creator and there are the products of the creation. In emanation theory of Plotinos, the steps that appear begining from the one of Plotinos are all connected to the previous one. There is any disconnection in this system, contrarily it has continuity. This continuity is independently of time until affects nature. That is to say, Time is beside the point for wisdom and soul. The things that exists in time and nature are connected to the one of Plotinos under favour of wisdom and soul. So humans reaching to the one of Plotinus is possible under favour of the continuity. The person, that transcends the wisdom and the soul steps, reaches to the one of Plotinus. This system of Plotinus has overtones from the doctrines of Plato, Aristotle and the Stoics. At first sight, He is commented to be very close to Plato. It is seen that he was affected by Plato with regard to terms he uses. As a matter of fact the term ''One'' is tackled in Plato's Parmenides in detail. Plotinus' theory of emanation connected the ideas nature ontologically. He saw ideas as reasons for existing of nature. As you know Farabi is pro-dualism. So everything that exists is divided into two. First one's existence is intrinsically compulsory; the second's existence is not intrinsically compulsory. First one is called ''Essential assets'' and other one is called ''Potential assets''. For himthe Potential assets will sooner or later finish in Essential assets. Farabi claims that The first-that is a reason of other creatures- namely God is away from deficiency, so they are the most superior. Because they came before all other creatures and they never have similarities with anybody. Their existence is independent from anything. They do not have a shape. Their existence is reasonless. If their existence had a reason,then they would not be the first reason. Another presence cannot have their existence. Their opposite is not possible to exist. Opposite means: If two things are opposite; When two things are together, these two things want to do away with each other. Nothing is a presence like them. God is one.

[1] YYU Faculty of Theology, Department of Kalam
sonmezvecihi@yahoo.com

1. THE THEORY OF EMANATION ACCORDING TO PLOTINUS

A) Scope of the notion One:

According to Plotinus, the notion one is something that cannot be understood with wisdom, and described with any transcendent quality. Nothing can be expressed about it. It cannot be expressed what it is, but what it not is can be expressed.[2] That is because all the statements of humans appeared when they faced the world. So humans cannot express anything that goes beyond the world. God is actually not able to be put into words.[3] He is beyond the existence, time and any adjective. He is not wisdom and soul either because humans get all these notions from their own trying. He creates everything but he has never been created by anything. He is the source of beauty, even though he is not beautiful. He is the source of every forms but he does not have a form. He is also the source of thoughts and intelligence although he is not thinking and intelligent. In short, he is not something in full but he is the basis, goal, norm of everything.[4] Due to the fact that, the adjectives we use for him limit him, we have to avoid using adjectives for him. Thus what we can say about God is that he is beyond everything we can think and say. Ideas[5] are above and beyond the senses, and God is above and beyond the Ideas. In an effort to reach God, by blinding himself to any kind of judgment, when the uttermost point of stuff is attained, one is inevitably supposed to shake off himself by getting himself free of any kind of mind-grounded ladder and to contemplate; in other words with the intention of getting closer to God, he is to give himself to the intuition of his love of God.[6] In fact Plotinus thinks that despite God is above and beyond existence, he is not above and beyond the Ideas. He is the sovereign of the Ideas and he is in person Idea so he can be understood with wisdom. [7] As mentioned before, God of Plotinus is above and beyond the Ideas. This shows a difference between two systems. Briefly the One of Plotinus is a term that historians of philosophy use to express stages in existence with the name ''the first asset''. Which appearance firstly attracts notice is ''being one''. So the first asset is single both in reality and in mind. Therefore there is not crowd in being one. He does not as well have a composition. He is absolutely one. When the first asset is single, no adjective that requires multitude can be used. He is not wisdom and a topic of wisdom. If he had wisdom his name would not be multitude but he would be multitude in mind.[8] The one who has wisdom can be thought of. At the same time the One of Plotinus is qualified with goodness. Then qualifying the One with goodness requires multeity. Plotinus might have said that He is nothing except for goodness. But this answer is not anyway enough to cancel the nominal multeity of the One. So monism theory of Plotinus involves a contradiction inside. When Plotinus refuses that qualifying the One with an adjective makes the One multi, Plotinus finds it normal to qualify the One with goodness which makes the One multi. Actually we can find the secret of this contrast situation inside the general character of ne Platonism. New Platonism makes one of the Ideas, the goodness idea, the best and the ripest. This example of goodness is accepted as the first asset, according to

---

[2]B.Cotuksoken, S.Babur, ibid, p43.

[3]W.Weischedel, ibid, p94.

[4]Afred Weber, History of Philosophy, Turkish translation by U.Eralp, Istanbul: Remzi publishing. 1964, p111.

[5]The content of conscious thought. Plato used the Greek word to designate the universal forms. For modern representationalists like Descartes and Locke, however, ideas are immediate objects of every mental activity. Ideas in this sense are supposed to represent things-present or absent- before the mind.

[6] Ibid, p112, B. Çotuksöken, S. Babür, ibid, p38

[7] Eflatun, Devlet, Turkish Translation by S. Eyuboğlu, M. Ali Cimcoz. Istanbul: Remzi Publishing, 1980, Vl-508-e, 509-a

[8] Eflatun, 508-e, Ş09-a; Weber, ibid, s. 55; Muhammed El-Behiy, Godly Islamic Thought, Turkish Translation by Sabri Hizmetli, Ankara; Fecr Publishing, 1992, p122-124.

Plato. Plotinus in this sense has taken care of imitating Plato who is Plotinus' leader. Despite Plotinus thinks different from Plato about its nature; he qualified the first asset as good.

B) The theory of emanation according to Plotinus and his ontological view:

For Plotinus the first asset - the One- is different from essence and symptom and also it doesn't think and want anything. His extreme attitude about monism led him to be known as pro-monism. Plotinus did not accept dualism. For him the first asset is the origin of other assets. He thinks same as stoics with that different fact that origin of the assets is material; even the God is a material.[9] Plotinus actually tries to connect two universes which the people before him tried to do but could not achieve. He of course follows a different method. First of all he imagines the world as a chain with many hoops. He puts the One at the top and he puts the material at the bottom. Then he puts the other assets between these. Plotinus finds similarities between the One and a river that overflows but does not become less; sun that lightens but its light does not become less. All assets are born inside the One and they are innate to it. He flows in somewhere that overflows in the One. This flowing becomes less perfect and ends.[10] As a result of overflowing the One ''wisdom'' appears. It is the biggest of the things that exist. It contains unity and multeity together. It watches the One which is its itself reason. This watching makes it possible to analyze the multeity inside. The multeity inside is one of the first ideas. These ideas are the places of the assets in the world before the materialist world. It means that the truth of the materialist world is in these ideas.[11] While comparing the ideas world to the looks world, it expresses the endless notion. As mentioned before it also expresses the multeity because ideas are not only thoughts and examples, they are also affecting powers.[12] If we pay attention, we notice that there is not unity which is special for the One. This unity is divided at this moment to the thought and the existence, shortly to wisdom and the topic of wisdom. But the seen multeity does nut place in time and in existence like material world. So ideas stay as their selves are.[13] In Plotinus' emanation theory all steps appearing since the One are connected to the previous one. Previous one overflows to the later one. The later one cannot be born if there is no previous one so the previous one is innate. There is no disconnection in this system of Plotinus. Unlikely, there is a regular circulation. This circulation is independent until reaching the nature.

C) The connection between the One and the soul according to Plotinus:

According to Plotinus, the wisdom that grows watching the One makes the soul by being faithful to the principle that is obligation to make something similar to the all perfect assets by overflowing. But creating power of wisdom is less than the One's. The effect of soul is that it watches the world of the ideas and it forms the look world by taking these ideas as example. Soul is more passive comparing the wisdom but comparing to material it is affecting. Soul has two effects. Firstly it watches ideas it is superior and real soul. Secondly it is a power that forms the materials so it is down soul. As there is an absolute, wisdom and an understandable world, there is base world. That is the soul of the world. Individual souls are pieces of the soul of the world.[14]

---

[9] Birand, ibid, p99.
[10] Weischedel,ibid,p97
[11] B.Cotuksoken,S.Babur,ibid,p38

[12] Birand,ibid,p124
[13] Weber,ibid,pH4;Birand,ibid,p124. Terence Irwin,Classical thouhgt,New York:Oxford University Press,1989,p190.
[14] Irwin,ibid,p196-199;Weber,ibid,p114-115;Birand,ibid,p125.

Soul with its second effect makes a less perfect material than itself. Materials are made of matter. Matter itself is not a material. It is nothing with any reality. Matter does not absolutely exist. The connection between the matter and the One is like the connection between light and darkness. Matter is an absolute deprivation and negativity, a topic of the One and the existence. So we just can say an adjective for it, it is bad. Because it is bad, it is deficient. So every asset should be good. For Plotinus, the world of sense is a mixture of existence and nihility. It means the darkness and the light is mixed as the One and the matter (nihility) are mixed. So the world is good to the extent it is affected by God, it is bad to the extent it is affected by matter.[15]

The elements in time and nature are connected to the One through soul and wisdom. Thus, it is possible to reach the One only via this continuity. An individual who completes the steps of soul and wisdom can reach the One.

Plotinus's system takes much from scholars like Plato, Aristotle and Stoa, though He is considered to have closer links to Plato. This can be seen especially through the terms Plotinus uses. The notion of the One is also covered in Plato's 'Parmenides' in detail. Through his theory of emanation, Plotinus was able to make the ontological connection between ideas and nature, in his theory, ideas re considered as further reasons for the creation of the nature.

2. THE THEORY OF EMANATION ACCORDING TO FARABI
A) Farabi's ontological view:

Farabi was a known dualist, and thus, for him all assets are divided into two. First one's existence in essence is essential. Second one's existence in essence is not essential. The first of these is called the ''Essential asset'',

the second is the ''Potential asset''. For Farabi, potential assets later or sooner end in essential assets. This asset is the first asset, or, what can also be thought of as God. Farabi says that the first-the initial reason for other assets, namely the God- is excluded from all deficiencies, he is the most superior, he is before all other assets, no any asset is similar to him. His existence is independent from all matters and carrying subjects. He does not have a form. There is not any mission or goal of his existence. If there were such a purpose, that purpose would mean there was a reason for his existence and he would thus not be able to be the first reason. There is no one identical or opposite to him. Contrast is like that if there are two things and they both want to kill each other. However, difference and contrast are not the same. The one is the one by means of its existence and it does not share its type of existence with anyone. So he is one the God is in essence different from everything else. He is singular.[16] In short, the God is only goodness, wisdom and modesty. He is erudite, wise, powerful, alive, and strong-willed. He is extremely good and perfect, the first thing to love and that is loved.[17]

The single asset makes only an asset because only one thing appears from the One.[18] For Farabi, the God who is one in all terms makes other assets independent to a step by overflowing.

---

[15] Irwin,ibid,p196-199;Weber,ibid,p114-115;Birand,ibid,p126.

[16] Farabi, Main Problems of the Philosophy,Turkish translation by Mahmut Kaya. Archive of Philosophy,1984,p204.
[17] Farabi, Zenon leaflet,Istanbul,Kanaat publishing,no date given,p113.
[18] 18Farabi,ibid, p205. Farabi, Fil-Medinetü'l-Fâzıla, Turkish trans. Ahmet Arslan, Ankara: Culture Ministry, 1990, p114 İbrahim Madkûr, "Farabi". Turkish trans. Osman Rilen. History of Islamic Thought 2.Volume Editor, M.M. Şerif. Istanbul: Insan Publishing, 1990, p75; Farabi, Fis-Siyasetul -Medeniyye, Turkish trans. M. Aydın, A. Şener and MR. Ayaş. Istanbul: Culture Ministry Publishing, 1980, p11-19; Farabi, Deaviî Kalbiye. Farabi, Istanbul: Kanaat Publishing, no date, p115-118; Mübahat Türker-Küyel, Aristo's ve Farabi's Ontological Teachings, Ankara: Ankara University Press, Faculty of Language History and Geography , 1959, p83-86.

B) Farabi's theory of emanation:

Farabi also provides an explanation for the earth, the sky and the phenomenon of movement and alteration. His fundamental purpose is to solve the problem of unity and multeity and to compare alterable and non-alterable things. Firstly, he determines which adjectives are or are not suitable for God. He investigates what sort of effects God has on the universe and the connection between the God and the multeity. Farabi tries to answer these questions with his theory of emanation.[19]

Aristotle refers to three different ores. First one is hearable and is accepted by everybody and it belongs to existence and nihility. It belongs to existence and nihility and to Ay-alti universe. The second is hearable and eternal and they belong to the sky and the Ay-üstü ores. The third is immovable and it does not have anything in common with the other two. It is latter form that is the focus of Aristotle's theology.[20]

For Küyel, the actual God of Farabi who we can connect to Aristo's third ore literally represents itself. Aristo's initial two ores takes their existence from the fundamental asset, for Farabi. Evvel is something that is existed from it. But coming of assets from evvel to true asset is not like coming of something to evvel due to its will and option. Existence of everything had overflowed towards evvel, except for evvel. Existence of anything apart from the things in the first universe is born its own existence (emanation). The existence of something that comes from it is not its reason.[21]

Existence of the material is from it. But in this existing he does not have a purpose like ours. Potential assets appear due to his maturity. Existing of something from it is a result of his ores and his existence and it exists compulsorily. What the personality and the existence of God is, it is the same when other assets appear from it. God's existence is not able to be divided, he is one and single, he does never need anything.[22]

For Farabi, other assets are born by the raving of the first's body. The matters, reasons and materials boring from it make a line by considering their levels. Emanation cannot happen without his permission. Material occurred from it because it is the principle of goodness in this ideal existence and it know itself.[23] When we reach this result, we can ask this. How does the work of his existence reach material and how does material exist as a result of this? For Farabi, Another One emanates from compulsory One because of being perfect and knowing himself. The one which emanates is ''First Wisdom''. Then knowing is equal to creating. It is enough to think if something is wanted to exist. There is multeity in this first wisdom. Because he is the first, he is compulsory. He knows individuality and Evvel. The multeity is not from Evvel. The first wisdom is not a matter or a material. He both thinks himself and the One. This wisdom is individually one but he is multi in terms of his views. So Farabi takes the first step o multeity. Other wisdom emanates by thinking of One by the first wisdom. Matter and form of the first planet emanates. Each planet continues until nine the craving of the flesh and nine planets complete. The last wisdom or the active wisdom manages the ay-alti world. Four matters and human souls appear from it.[24]

As Madkur mentioned, Farabi's results from physics is related to his wisdom theory.

[19] Farabi, Main Problems of the Philosophy, p205; Küyel,ibid,p86.
[20] S. Hayri Bolay, Comparing Theology of Aristo and Gazzâlî, Istanbul: Kalem Publishing, 1980, p 45.
Mahmut Kaya, Aristo and his Philosophy in Islamic Sources, Istanbul: F.kin Publishing, 1983, p223-224.
[21] Küyel,ibid,p86

[22] Farabi, El-Medinetul Fazıla,p15.
[23] Farabi, El-M[23] Farabi, Deav-i Kalbiye,p117 edinetul Fazıla,p16-17; Farabi, Main Problems of the Philosophy, p203-204.
[24] Farabi, Deavi-i Kalbiye,p117

Matter or heyula appear from the last wisdom. This matter is the source of four components. Again from this wisdom, to make the materials come together, some forms connected to the heyula appear. So the universe is the result of being folded or separated of form and matter.

Some other wisdom also affects earth. Ay-altı and ay-ustu universes are connected.[25]

Farabi tries to solve the movement and alteration problems with his ten wisdom theory. He uses the same theory to solve the one and multeity question and he connects the Islam's teachings and Aristo's traditional matter understanding. Matter is as old as ten wisdom band was created. It emanates from active wisdom. Ten wisdom which Farabi put between the world and the Tann, protecting God's unity is reason for him.

The roots of Farabi's ten wisdom theory can be seen in various sources. It can be said that this theory of his follows the theory of some Greek philosophers like Batlamyus that says the universe consist of nine sky globes turning around it. Also his astronomic thoughts seem to be similar to Aristo's comments on the movement of planets. The emanation theory seems inspired from Plotinus and Alexander. But that theory belongs to Farabi and shows that truth is same and only one.[26]

The monism theory of Plotinus and the Tann thought of Farabi are different. Farabi describes God with various adjectives but instead Plotinus thinks that the God is beyond everything apart from goodness adjective. So the God that Farabi describes is seems to have qualifications like will, knowledge, power but the One of Plotinus is deprived any of these. But it is like the One of Plotinus has some different powers that we don't know. If he is

deprived of everything, then how will we explain the overflowing? If there is overflowing, there is the thing that is over flown.

Farabi follows Plotinus in emanation of the world from the God. For him as well ''only the one can appear from the One.'' This appearing is happening by overflowing. We doubt it. Following a way to avoid qualifying the Tann or the One with multeity limits the power, will and the knowledge of Tann. And this is opposite of the thoughts that describes Tann. So this opinion is inconsistent. If the God just creates the first wisdom and does not any functions in other steps, so each step is a god in their own. If God takes place in every steps, that time it is more difficult to explain the idea of ''only the one can appear from the One.''

We think that the Farabi got into difficulty as a result of his tries to conciliate the Islamic thought and the old Greek thought. As Küyel mentioned before, it can be objected to the description of Tann that Farabi offers.[27] Especially Farabi seems to be unsuccessful about solving the problem of how God creates. We want to ask this: Did the Muslim philosophers like Farabi say that 'the wisdom appeared from The One inevitably, in a natural way' to protect the unity of the One in all terms? For Plotinus, emanation of the wisdom from the One is not related to will and the need of the One. The existence of a will like that takes its continuity, unity, calmness. But for Farabi, the God is wisdom, and has willed. These do not express multeity, they express unity. Farabi followed Plato and especially Plotinus to conciliate creation opinion and the emanation opinion. But it does not seem possible to explain emanation when the God knows himself.[28]

---

[25] Farabi, ibid, p118; Farabi, Main Problems of the Philosophy, p206; Madkur, ibid, p75; Farabi, El-Medinetul Fazıla, p20-22; Küyel, ibid, p88-89; Farabi, Main Problems of the Philosophy, p207; Farabi, Deavi-i Kalbiye, p118-119.

[26] Madkur, ibid, p76; Farabi, El-Medinetü'l-Fazıla, p34-43.

[27] Küyel, ibid, p142.

[28] Madkur, ibid, p75; Farabi, El-Medinetü'l-Fazıla, p20-22; Küyel, ibid, p88-89.

To sum up Emanation theory of Farabi is an attempting of conciliating philosophy and religious thought that he uses to solve a creation problem he faces. Plotinus does not have that kind of problem. Unlikely he proves his opinions with a well-arranged emanation theory. But he has some problems with the One because he is meticulous about the One.

Semantic Changes in the Context of Language and Culture Exchange

Asst. Prof. Muhammed Ersöz

Karamanoglu Mehmetbey University/ Basic Islamic Sciences/Tafseer Department

mersoz84@gmail.com

Abstract. Words are the main building blocks forming a language. When it is considered that language is a mirror of culture and the concise expression of thought structure of society and civilization, carrying out a study on the words of a language and their changes in history becomes much more important. After a thing is named with a word, it does not remain in its previous state; otherwise it changes in a continuous dynamism. The most important causes of the change in the concept are differences occurring in the social and scientific areas; changes that occur, while the language is transferred from generation to generation; and the political, scientific, and cultural changes in society. As a result, even though concept change, the words does not change. For a concept expressed with only one word at the beginning, the other words can also be introduced. In the same way, a word expressing only one concept is later indispensably used for expressing the other concepts. Hence, the reason for this change largely depends on the change of culture. We, in our presentation, progressing through examples, will discuss a subject of semantic change simultaneously with the cultural change.

Keywords: Culture, Language, Semantic, Meaning, Concept

1- Relationship of Language and Culture

Language as a mirror of culture and a concise expression of civilization. Along with change of culture, the words, focus concepts, of language also change.

Culture is a system, which consist of the social, moral, economic, artistic, agricultural, judicial, religious, and all elements of a society. Language also comes to our face as word patterns by which these elements are expressed. Therefore, in order to learn what culture of a society is, it is enough to regard to language of society, and, to understand its language to regard to its culture.[1] Besides that language reflects culture so much, culture can also be expressed as much as possibility the language gives to human. The expression by Humbolt, in the form of that "Humans live in this world in such a way that their mother languages introduce the world to them"[2] shows that language and culture are mutually relationship and that they develop in a way directly proportionate to each other.

---

[1] see. Akarsu, *Dil-Kültür Bağlantısı*, p. 22-34.
[2] Başkan, *Lengusistik Metodu,* p. 149.

Language is also the main element and carrier of culture. In the formation and transfer of cultural values, language has an undeniable role. Litterateurs reflects the events, understandings, and traditions in their own times to their works. Thanks to this, new generation, reading these works, teaches its own culture and its own values and, maintaining these values, it transfers them to the next generation. Since all of these become fact thanks to language, language and culture are the elements that complete to each other and do not break away from each other. Moving from here, we can say that language and culture serve a bridge between past and future. Thus, in the formation and surviving of a society, the language and culture, which carry important traces from a living style of a society, has an important share. In addition, while culture is developing, language also is developing along with it. That culture becomes stationary makes also language stationary.

2- Semantic Change in Words

After a concept is named with a word, it does not remain its previous state, otherwise, changes in a continuous dynamism. The most important reasons for this change in the concept are the social and scientific areas, in which the concept is used; differentiations, that occur, while language is transferred from generation to generation; and the political, scientific, and cultural developments in society. While this change is occurring, even though concept changes, word does not change. For a concept, expressed as a single word at the beginning, later, the other words can also be used. In the same way, a word pointing to a single concept, can be later used for it to point to the other words indispensably.

3- Reasons for Semantic Change in Words

Language is an instrument that people use to express their feelings and thought, not a pile of words. Even though they use the same language, two societies, whose cultures are different, can charge different meanings into the same words. In the same way, generation, continuation of the same society, can give a different name to the same object.

Regarding the reasons for semantic changes and how they form, Wafi puts the following items in order:

1- *In semantic changes in the words, using the general use in the specific areas i.e. semantic change via allocation.* There are many samples for this. The use of words, whose significances are general in specific meaning such as belief, worship, ,and religious symbol has become widespread, when Islamic religion came. Despite this, some words used in the specific area shifted from specific meanings to general meanings via expansion. For example, while "be's" was used in the meaning of war, later, it has been begun to be used for every kind of violent event; while the verb "V-r-d" was used in the meaning of bringing water, in the meaning of bringing every kind of thing; and while the word "râid" is used for the person wanting herb, in the meaning of wanting every kind of thing. [3]

2- *Transfer of word from the real meaning to metaphorical meaning.* Transition to metaphor is the use of word out of its real meaning, first attributed meaning to the word, without imposing a new word due to a relation between them. [4] Ibn al Jinni, (d. 392/1002) gives example of word "mebnilik" for such a semantic change. This word coming from the word "bina/building" has become a term with the use of the word "building" in metaphorical meaning. From now on, this word is that the end of word becomes fixed with vowel points used in Arabic language. Just as buildings stay in their places motionlessly, vowel points also remain unchangeably. The movable tools such as tent and umbrella are

---

[3] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga*, p. 320.
[4] Jurcani, *Asrar al Balagha*, *a*, p. 350-351.

not motionless. When the case is so, the word "building" was likened to the constructions obtained from mud, mud-brick, and lime from the aspect of that it is protecting, shadowing, and suitable to live but due to the fact that its own feature is not movable, the word building was shifted to metaphorical meaning.[5] While the word "وغى" was used for disordered voice in the war area, it has become a word given to the war itself; while the word "غفر" was in the meaning of covering, to absolution; while "عقيقة" was used for hair in the head of baby in the womb, to sacrificial animal slaughtered when its hairs are shaved.[6]

3- Change of the meaning of a word varies according to clearness of the meaning in the mind. If the meaning of the word is clear in the mind, semantic change becomes less in that rate. If the meaning of the word is not clear, the probability of changing in the meaning of word increases and its resistance against disturbance of the meaning becomes less.

4- The meanings of some concepts may undergo change. For this to form, many factors may come into play. Here, social and psychological factors stand out. The words "بهلول", "غانية" and "حاجب" may be given as an example. The word "بهلول" used to use in archaic poetry for masters having high position. But, nowadays, it is used for a person, who does not know what he/she has done, and who suffers from lack of reason. While the word "غانية" used to use for a woman, who does not need any characterization for her beautifulness, today, is used for valueless woman. While the word "حاجب" kept prime minister's place of today in Andalusia State, today it does not express any meaning beyond watchman and servant.[7]

5- The meaning of the word becomes different from dialect to dialect and from language to language. Here, social and psychological factors comes into play. The words sometimes are so exalted that they can be the most outstanding and supreme of the word and, sometimes, some words experiences such a fall that they can turn into the worst and lowest meaning. So, the new meaning wipe out the old meaning.

6- Misunderstanding results in modifying the meaning of the word especially in new growing generation. If a child incorrectly uses a word, it is not possible to correct this mistake. As time passes, this misunderstanding becomes definite.

7- A word, according as the aspects, related to society, of the feature, nature, function, and elements of what it points out change, may undergo semantic change. The words "ريش", "قطار" and "بريد" can be given as an example for this. The word "قطار" was relevant to writing tool in the days, when a writing tool was acquired from feather. Now, this word is used for metal piece made specific to writing. The word "قطار" used to call camel train in a certain order used in journey. Now, as known, this name is given to transportation vehicle. The word "بريد" used to use for the camels carrying letters, at the present days, it has become a name of the order established for transporting the letters to their destinations.[8]

8- With the change of societies and social stratum, some changes in words may occur. The physiological and psychological features of the people among the people groups speaking the same language result in this difference. For, in the affairs of politics and society, in the issues of culture, education, and conscience, the works each social stratum is engaged in and the duties they undertake are different. Therefore, the individuals in each social stratum need for fine and rapid expression. According to this need, the words produced and

[5] Ibn al Jinni, *al Khasais*, p. 38
[6] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga*, p. 321.
[7] Ramadan, *al Lahn al-Amme ve at-Tatavvur al-Lughavi*, p. 58
[8] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga,* p. 324.

undergoing semantic change also show difference according to social stratum, from which it arouse. [9]

4- The examples for Semantic Change in the Words

When we mention about semantic change in the words, what is under consideration is semantic extension, semantic restriction, and semantic shift. One of the examples we can give about undergoing semantic restriction of the words is the word "الرب" While this word was a salutation used by slave in the form of rabbi toward its master before Islamism, after pass to Islamism, this word was left and, undergoing semantic restriction, it has become usable in the meaning of Allah.[10] The word "السبت" meaning time, undergoing semantic restriction, was allocated to one of the days of week. [11] Semantic extension is an extension occurring in the concept the word points out. [12] For example, the word "الورد" means arriving/going to water in respect with its origin. Later, the Word "الورد" has become usable "to arrive to anything". Again, while the word "القرب" was in the meaning of searching for water, later, this meaning extended and has become using for any demand. For example, a use has formed in the meaning of " he/she is demanding, he/she wants" in the form of "هو يقرب كذا ولا يقرب كذا". The word "المنيحة" means giving an animal such as goat and camel to a man, and that that man drinks the milk of camel or goat. Later, its uses extended and was called in the form of gift, anything given. Another example is the word "المنيحة" in the meaning of "to sleep" and is used for human. Later, it acquired a use in the form of "ما نامت الليلة السماء برقا" (Lightning flashed through-

out night/ This night, the sky did not sleep due to lightning) . For a wearing off clothes, there was a use in the form of "نام الثوب" (clothes slept/ worn off) and the origin of this use is in the form of "هدمت النار" (fire died down/got dark). [13]

Suyûtî (d. 911/1505) reports many examples from İbn Dureyd (d. 321/933). For example, the use of the word "ظمأ" in the meaning of " to be thirsty or to be excessive desirable for water" in the form of "ظمأت إلى لقائك"; the use of the word "مجد" in the meaning of that "craw is filled with fodder" in the form of "مجد فلان وهو ماجد" meaning excessive generosity; the use of the word "قفر" meaning " a place, where anything does not grow and there is no area to be sheltered" in the meanings of "أكلت طعاما قفرا" (I ate very tasteless meal) and "امرأة قَفْرة الجسم" (weak/slim woman); and the use of the word "بأس" meaning "war" in the form of "لا بأس عليك" in the meaning of "لا خوف عليك" (it is not necessary to worry about it) are important in terms of its showing that semantic changes is so frequently met event. [14]

In semantic shift, a change occurs in the concept itself not a change in the form of semantic restriction or extension the word pointed out earlier,[15] In Arabic language, the words "واغية" and "وغي" reflecting the concept of "mixing of voices to each other during war (hum and noise)" were used later in the meaning of war. In the same way, the word "غيث" meaning "rain" in respect with its origin, later, has become usable in the meaning of "something growing on the land as a result of rain ". The word "خطر" meaning "that the camel strikes to its haunches with its tail" later reflected the meaning of "urine and contaminant smudging to the haunches of camel". The meaning of the word "ظَعِينة" that in fact means "woman in howdah", later changing, it was used for

---

[9] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga*, s. 325.
[10] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir*, I, 297
[11] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir*, I, 427.
[12] Aksan, *Anlambilim Konuları ve Türkçenin Anlambilimi*, p. 90-91; Koç, *Din Dili*, p. 31.

[13] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir*, I, 429.
[14] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir*, I, 429-431.
[15] Doğan, *Anlambilimi ve Türk Anlambilimi*, p. 121.

both camel and howdah.[16] One of the words, whose meaning undergoes along centuries is also the word "سائر". In old Arabic texts, this word, which is known with the meaning of " those remaining" was begun to be used in the meaning of "all of it" in 4th century of hegira.[17] The compound "حتف أنفه" (to be exhausted from nose) passing in the expression of "مات حتف أنفه" meaning " that person dies in his/her bed " is an example for the case of semantic shift in compounds or its containing a new meaning that is different from the meanings each of compounds expresses.[18] These examples show that a word or group of word gained new meanings together with a certain logical and semantic relationships.

In semantic changes in the words, it is basically possible to find three kind of meaning. There are similarity, closeness, and antonymy/contradiction. In a change occurring in the meaning of a word, the word first passes to another meaning close to it and later to a third meaning relevant to it; and changes of meaning continue in this way. Wafi gives a good example for this:

While the word *"Bureau"* was said for a sort of cloth at the beginning, due to the fact that this sort of cover is used in office, it is first called cloth of office, then board of meal, finally workplace and administrative center since both board and cover are available in the office[19]

Closeness relationship may occur in terms of both time and space. For example, in the fact that the word "الظعينة" whose original meaning is "woman in howdah", we cited as reported example from Suyûtî, means howdah; again in the transformation of the word "ذقن" in Egyptian public language into the meaning of "beard", and in expression of the word *bureau"* office itself through

cover of office a closeness in terms of space is clearly seen. [20]

When we regard to the closeness relationship of semantic change in terms of time, we can give example of "عقيقة" for this. The word "عقيقة" is used for expressing the hair in the head of baby in mother's womb, later, it has become the name given to sacrificial animal slaughtered, when its hair is shaved. [21] For sematic change based on similarity relationship, we can give an example the word "المجد", we have mentioned earlier.

Another relationship in semantic change is antonymy. In other words, semantic change can be based on the relationship contradiction and, thus, a word can be used for a concept that is contrary to the concept it used to reflect. . In fact, contradiction is a sort of similarity, because contradiction can be found in two things that are common in a general adjective such as long/short, black/ white. Just as in the examples of "جون" (black/white), "جلل" (big/small), "قسط" (justice/cruelty)[22]

Conclusion
Language forms as a result of social consensus and continues its life together with society. Together with society, it develops, becomes rich, and undergoes change. Just as the meanings of some words can generalize in time, they can be transferred to a specific area. Just as they can sometimes expand, sometimes they can restrict. Just as some of them can undergo semantic change, they can expose semantic worsening. In the essence of all semantic changes, the traces of social, linguistic, scientific, and cultural change are seen.

While semantic change occurs in the word, the semantic relationships between words are considerably important, because it is possible to find some semantic relation-

---

[16] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir,* I, 429-430.
[17] Hicazi, *Madkhal ila ilm al-lughah,* p. 78.
[18] Suyûtî, *el-Muzhir,* I, 301-302.
[19] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga,* p. 315

[20] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga,* p. 316-317.
[21] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga,* p. 321.
[22] Wafi, *Ilmul Luga,* p. 316-317.

ships as similarity, closeness, and contradiction . The new meanings of the words undergone semantic change remain dependent on the previous meanings of the word with this sort of semantic relationships.

References

[1] B. Akarsu, *Dil-Kültür Bağlantısı*, İnkılap Publications, Istanbul, 2010.

[2] D. Aksan, *Anlambilim Konuları ve Türkçenin Anlambilimi,* Ankara, 1992.

[3] Ö. Başkan, *Lengusistik Metodu,* Istanbul, 1967.

[4] S. Jurcani, *Asrar al Balagha*, Dar al Medeni, Jeddah, undated.

[5] F. Hicâzî, *Madkhal ila ilm al-lughah*, Cairo, 1978.

[6] Ibn al Jinni, *al Khasais*, (Trancription: Muhammed Ali en-Neccâr), Cairo, 1986.

[7] T. Koç, *Din Dili*, Rey Publications, Kayseri, 1995.

[8] A. Ramadan, *Ramadan, al Lahn al-Amme ve at-Tatavvur al-Lughavi*, Dar al-Maarif, Egybt, undated.

[9]C. Suyuti, *el-Muzhir fi ulumil luga ve anvaiha*, Beirut, 1987.

[10] A. Wafi, *Ilmul Luga*, Daru Nahdati Mısr, Cairo, undated.

Using Of Space In Ayse Erkmen's Installation Works

Tugba RENKCI TASTAN
Yildiz Technical University, Art Department
trenkci@gmail.com

Abstract. Installation is an expression way which is formed for a purpose in contemporary art with particular interventions to readymade objects. This form of expression is created by a spatial fiction, emerges based on an idea which is an expression way against to the understanding canon and skills in the art. Ayse Erkmen is a very significant artist both in domestic and abroad in today's art with her works of art and art installations she has created. Erkmen has a place in contemporary art with her readymade installations associated with the space in the context many prestigious projects, exhibitions and galleries in Turkey and Europe. The artist who has also addressed the social and cultural social issues, has given place to different installations and space in the works and has been the source for recording on national and international basis literatures.

In this study text, a certain part of the many studies of Ayşe Erkmen's works in recent times to conceptual art installation is covered in the spatial context and an experimental study. The aim of this study is to touch on the subjects such as Ayşe Erkmen's installations, spatial setup, interaction with audience and her artistic attitude. In addition to this, literature method is used in this research, and samples of the artist are interpreted.

Key words: Ayse Erkmen, Installation, Space, Conceptual Art, Plastic Arts.

1. Introduction

In the last 30 years of adventure of the Contemporary Turkish Art, Erkmen, who has a serious success in national and international world of art, revealed installation works that have based on the space perception. The artist who graduated at Istanbul State Fine Arts from the Academy of Sculpture Department in 1977, has worked for conceptual art. Erkmen went to Berlin in 1993 by DAAD International Artist Programme ((Berliner Künstlerprogramm). The artist who had taught in Kassel Art Academy and Frankfurt Staedelschule for many years, has been teaching since 2010 in Münster Kunstakademie. Erkmen still lives and works in Istanbul and Berlin [10].

She has been quite successful in the installation and space and become one of the important names of Contemporary Turkish Art and her artworks were exhibited in many prestigious museums and galleries in Germany and Europe.

In this research, text literature method was used. In content, it is mentioned briefly that what the installation is and how occurs. The next title, it is given to Ayşe Erkmen's recent works of four installations and is evaluated the relationship with the space in these works. In addition, the work subject in general, such as content and purpose issues and contexts are discussed briefly on certain initiatives. In the last chapter, the place and importance of Ayse

Erkmen in Contemporary Turkish Art, the contributions and artistic attitude are mentioned.

2. Installation

Installation, means placement, a word passes from the French to Turkish language. Installation is one of the forms of expression in conceptual art that is aimed to be converted of objects (ready-made) into an art object with interventions, whether the objects are natural or artificial in the nature. In the second half of 19th century and the early days of 20th century, serious steps have been taken in terms of gaining independence of art with many different searches and formations in western art. Thus, significant expansions have occurred to gain variety of the mediums used in the art works and the parameters for what the art is in the debate points. In this sense, Duchamp's "fountain" is a work has caused to a break. Duchamp has not taken a step back from the critical attitude in this regard, although he was exposed to many artists and critics of responses at that time. The artist wanted to exhibit urinal that was ready-made as a so-called art object. While the understanding of modernist art was accepted in that period, it was first underestimated, and then it formed the foundations of contemporary art and conceptual art in the next period. Indeed, the artist's attitude has been accepted as an art movement by art critics, artists and theorists after long and endless discussions. Duchamp surprised this situation, questioned that what the artwork is and how, even this unusual attitude is seen as art in the environment while he was criticizing the art. The first indications of new trends have been in the next period, emergence of today's art practices.

According to Yılmaz: "Art world say more or less that since Duchamp: The real thing is not the object bearing the image (so photography or film), but that is the thought of the source of emergence of that image. Authenticity is linked with the thought how much original is or not" [11].

No doubt that the developments and debates in western art have influenced Turkish art community. A number of artists have been tending to the changing perception of art in the West, apart from the repetition and known methods in the 1980s. The artists, who were trying to be open and have curiosity about the new methods, have began to produce works that will form the basis of today's contemporary art.

Some of artist are; Ahmet Öktem, Şükrü Aysan and his group of friends, İpek Düben, Erdağ Aksel, Gülsün Karamustafa, Füsun Onur, Yusuf Taktak and Ayşe Erkmen and so on [1-9]. The art works that were created based on the industrial media, have brought alternative exhibition methods that have associated with thought and concepts.

Before the first exhibition of Istanbul Biennial (1989), that has been pioneer to development and spread the works of essential Installation and spatial in the Contemporary Turkish Art, the exhibitions where the samples of installations were exhibited in 1980s are such as Yeni Eğilimler / New Trends, Öncü Türk Resminden Kesit / The Section From The Leading Turk Painting, A B C D. These events were held at certain periods. "Yeni Eğilimler / New Trends", was organized by Devlet Güzel Sanatlar Akademisi / State Academy of Fine Art (Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University). However, it did not continue after a while. Then, the young artists of that period have done "Öncü Türk Resminden Kesit / The Section From The Leading Turk Painting" exhibitions in the direction of their own efforts without any sponsors. The artists Yusuf Taktak and Tomur Atagök's guidances and intense efforts have been effective in this exhibition. In the next period, A B C D exhibitions have been done by curator Beral Madra. All these exhibitions are events that take place the conceptual works of unique and unusual in the art world [8].

According to the artist Yusuf Taktak: "These three generation; Yeni Eğilimler / New Trends, Öncü Türk Resminden Kesit / The Section From The Leading Turk Painting, A B C D have really helped the improvement of contemporary art in Turkey" [12].

At the beginning of the in 90s, the new ideas and understandings, that were widespread among the artists and critics of that period, have not been falling off the agenda of the academy and artists for a long-term. The discussions for figure and abstract painting have left their place to an atmosphere and process such as "has painting finished" or "has it been replaced by the installation?" [1]. In today's art, painting and installation are often used as interactive with different forms of expression and exhibition methods. The young artist Ayşe Erkmen who witnessed that period has developed and produced her works in the spiritual and conceptual dimension despite of these discussions.

Author and art critic Antmen says for Ayşe Erkmen: "She is an artist who trained evident an arouse curiosity to new trends such as 'Pop, ' Minimalism' and 'Conceptual Art' in1970s at the academy but, what she did was simply amazing considering that these kind of alternative practices and how she was detected by few people in Turkey. To be an artist who is way from the environment was an interesting, there was no even installation of 'i' in a platform. Erkmen did not make three-dimensional collage (assembly) for just to call it installation, she was truly producing site-specific works. Erkmen was creating spatial interventions even that can be considered humorous to see what she's doing, Erkmen who concerns issues such as to ensure that viewer's wander in perception of space as physical, to mediate the comprehend different forms of perception" [2].

3. Using of space in ayse erkmen's installation works

3.1. Three Eyes, Cappadox, 2015

Erkmen's "Three Eyes" (2015) named installation work took place in an event that organized under the Cappadox festival in Nevsehir. Unique natural landforms and geographical structure of the Cappadocia region is one of the main reasons that make this area special. External form and structure of famous Uchisar Castle was used as one of the activity and exhibition venues in Cappadox festival. The intervention was in limited conditions since the castle is a historical and protected structure.

Figure 1: Three Eyes, Cappadox . (Photography: Tuğba Renkçi Taştan)

Erkmen has approached to this different structure in a different effect to create contrast. The three primary colors balloons in larger sizes have been placed externally visible in the wide top opening of the castle. The artist has made a highly artificial a material selection to create a contrast form to huge the chimney rock as structure. She has presented a combination it to integrate the space. The artist, who benefits from the large gully gap in the located castle, has filled this gap. It can be said that it has created a different architectural influence when looking from outside to the castle. Thereby Erkmen's work reaches to audiences even from the long distances.

This work is similar with her "The Gap" named installation that was exhibited at Salzburg in 2006. She has used three similar primary colors balloons in a differential design meaning the architecture. Erkmen, who adopts humorous and contrasting narrative, has benefited from the structure of gaps in both of works.

3.2. Plan B, 54th international Venice Biennial, 2011

Erkmen has been influenced by Venetian architecture and geographical the biennial exhibition in Arsenal she worked which opening into the channel is the starting point of the study. Located at the Venice Biennial, this work has been produced based on the canals of Venice related to the location. As Erkmen's previous installations, the place leads to the work, the opening window to the canal in exhibition area forms the basis of the work. Also, because of this hall was a production room before, the railroad tracks and electric appliances in this hall have a different impact on the thought process of the artist. In this study, the artist aims to carry the outside water to the inside through using the window and thinks how to do it. This situation was required to establish a relational context meaning for Erkmen, who edited her works by physical properties of the place. She aims to tell "Inside to outside, outside to inside" the transfer format on different indicators. The artist, who aimed to transport the canal water to inside as purified drinking water, thought offer to audience browsing around the biennial. Thus, the audience would also be included in the study as a part of it. With a circulation from dirty to the clean, the room would have had a fountain scheme. For this, she brought together a team of

electronic equipment, tools, materials and the machine parts. However, a set of bureaucratic procedures encountered in creating such a project, permissions and limited time has hindered the putting the project into practice. Instead, Plan A was slightly changed and Plan B was implemented. The work gets its name from this [5].

In Plan B, Erkmen has set up a frame water treatment plant with the same sophisticated image. A circular system is applied. Erkmen says that about the Plan B: "(…) then I had this more basic idea that the water should come out of the canal, come into the room in the same way, work (as if it was preparing the water to drinking), but then go back to the canal. People would come in but they would not find what they normally would be expecting. There is nothing to drink, no product –just the fact that the canal gets the water back. So everything is the same in the room but there is no result, you don't get the satisfaction, you don't have to anything. I think this works more in line with the idea of art –working with no purpose. I thought this new idea is much better, more compact, with no solution" [5].

Various machine parts connected each other by pipes are used for filtering. The artist has positioned ready-made objects in industrial sector as a whole itself. Interconnected tubes in vibrant colors are an effective method for breaking the monotony of the place. Artist, by using ready-made object creative abilities in everyday life, it dealt with independently of the concrete form of a narrative. Artist, in accordance with the purpose of the intent, makes it abstract in a certain system. In this work, similarly to her previous works, the artist emphasizes the existence of a circular network with uninterrupted continuity in nature. It can be said that Erkmen leads the audience to examine the existence of a scheme based on repetition.

According to Curator of the 54th Venice Biennale Pavilion of Turkey, Erdemci:"Formally, Erkmen's practice often comments on minimalism's relationship between industrial form and the body. This installation generates a visceral experience for viewers who are embodied within the mechanism or process of transformation, and therefore, implicit in the transformation that takes place. It questions the relation between the macro and micro layers of systems: something much greater than the scale of individual acts,

but at the same time they are inextricably bound" [7].

3.3. Itself, Ghent and the Museum of Contemporary Art (S.M.A.K.), October 2015-February 2016

The artist has explored the data that belongs to her in the Internet world and has showed relevant documents. She has showed the images, on the FireFox, Safari and Google search engines when she searched her own name, to the audience in the art museum. Erkmen, has created her self-portrait in the virtual world by compiling images from the virtual world to the real world, has addressed evolved version of the information about her. However, she has clearly touched the difficulty of revealing not fully of self-portraits in the virtual world. The artist has made various and different presentations. This is a case that it cannot be intervened to these images obtained with extremely casual way. While some of the images are related to the artist, some of them are consist of random information and data with no connection with the artist. Data not related with Erkmen appears as if they belong Erkmen. However, they are in an external world platform. With this installation, she also critically refers to the existing knowledge and visual pollution on the internet. Moreover, she displays that the ambiguity of people who use and upload these images. In doing so, she underlines that the virtual system offers many related or unrelated documents to the user. Referring cultural and consumption-oriented phenomenon, the artist emphasis that info pollution is a part of daily life. Thus, in a system where many data layers exist in the Internet, chaos and meaninglessness are dominant. Unlike the virtual world, hard cover images are placed neatly and in an order on large shelves of Art Gallery [3].
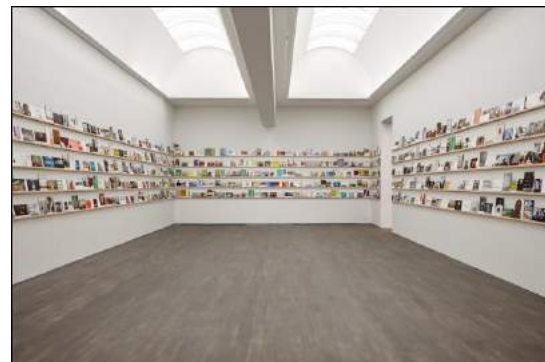
Figure 2: Itself , S.M.A.K. (Photography: courtesy Ayşe Erkmen)

According to Antmen: "What makes the exhibition interesting is to make a perceivable environment which does not have physicality, by bringing virtual place to the real place, In other words, to localize it mentally and physically. Therefore, Erkmen still has an eye on the viewer's perception of space, as we have previously encountered in several works" [2].

The artist has preferred a gallery place to exhibit her work, used a known method as presentation. In this way, space and audience have become a functional router. Regular symmetrical wall-mounted shelves can be reminiscent of the atmosphere of a library with this feature. The images presented to consumers in a virtual world take place with three-dimensional form in the shelf. Thus, the artist has presented Ayşe Erkmen perception in the unreal world with a different impact. Variable indicators in the virtual world of the personal history of the artist have gained a new dimension with this exhibition.

3.4. Ups and Downs, Yapı Kredi Art Gallery, 2008

In her "Ups and Downs" work, Erkmen makes an opposite action to known and settled situations in our living space. The exhibition has been held in a two-story place and Erkmen's installation and handling the place is quite ironic. The artist has placed the carpet, in dimensions of ground floor, to the second floor where is comparatively a smaller place with a different arrangement. Laminated flooring on the upper floor has been scattered around with a splintered and damaged way. In addition, metal balconies in upstairs, were exhibited with an irregular manner with laminated flooring. The artist has placed the objects on the ground floor to the top floor, and has placed the objects on the ground floor to the top floor. She has reversed the traditional situation and reveled a different spatial perception that reminds chaos and confusion. Artist requires flattened, round and oval peculiar structure place with a libertarian approach. This study was conducted at the Yapı Kredi Art Gallery.

Artist creates an awareness of the basic rules in terms of handling and interpretation installation and living space. Social, economic and cultural issues are handled with a humoristic approach and stimulate audience to thinking. The artist uses a combination of contrasting concepts in her works, loads different and sometimes the deeper meaning to the installations.

According to curators Danae Mossman and Sarah Hopkinson; "Ayşe Erkmen is concerned with creating unexpected and strange encounters with the stories, structures, or systems that shape one's experience of a place. She does not pursue a particular sculptural form: she develops each installation from the materials that she encounters at a site. Her interventions, which draw on the particular nuances of a location as the subject matter, have temporarily altered some of the world's most important contemporary art institutions, public spaces, and historical sites. Investigations behind Erkmen's projects include: the infrastructure or particular features of a building's history (Busy Colours, 2005); migratory paths (Shipped Ships, 2001); rights of airspace to migrate across otherwise closed borders (Let it Flow, 2011); and the conversion of Venice canal water into drinking water (Plan B, Venice Biennale, 2011)" [6].

Erkmen, while prefers materials in the space of work, sometimes gives importance to the effective use of materials together to create contradiction with the space. In doing so, she is also simultaneously in harmony. The space where the work is constructed is Erkmen's most basic material. It reveals a difference with installation and being transformed. What makes Erkmen's works so distinctive and special is this circulation. Thus, the artist does not give place too much diversity of material in her installations. This occurs frequently in Erkmen's works.

Erkmen has said about the material subject in an interview: "The work that I produce doesn't really have a language; I strive especially for the fact that it doesn't have one. It's a choice that I had made in the beginning, it gives me freedom. Of course it has a conceptual language, but not a visual language. This gives me the freedom to work with any kind of material. For instance, I can do film, sculpture; I work with wood, I can use photography or work with sound" [4].

Füsun Onur comes first among the artists Ayse Erkmen likes. Among the young artists, some names such as Cevdet Erek, Meriç Algün Ringborg and Burak Arıkan take place. The artist is affected by the elements such as space, architecture, urban, social and political etc. All these elements are source of quality to the artist in the production process of the work. According to Erkmen, when work placed to the space, "time and space" create the infrastructure

of the work. Therefore, the work is occurred and shaped on the basis of the space. The artist, who declined to give direct and clear messages, reveals works with different opinions and ideas. This case is a way to get different layers and meanings in Erkmen's works [4].

4. Conclusion

The installation is a significant form of expression in contemporary art and it is read on the context and concept with the space. While a certain idea or thought gives place to use all kinds of ready-made material, it is recreated in a different form. The local artists, focused on Conceptual art that has continued its existence and development for the last 30 years in Turkey, have made significant initiatives and experiments in this subject. One of them is undoubtedly Ayşe Erkmen, with her well-known works.

Erkmen who lives both in Turkey and in Germany, revealed the artworks intended conceptual art in Berlin, exhibited actively in important institutions and organizations in Germany and Turkey the art world. Erkmen, who draws a successful artist profile in abroad and international contemporary art world, has put signature under significant works that passed into the literature in Contemporary Turkish Art. She has associated Installation and space have with areas such as sociology, architecture and public spaces, has dealt the parameters of contemporary art with an interdisciplinary understanding.

As it is understood from the installation examples in the text, Erkmen is a versatile artist who adopts to edit the space with a different fiction. She has also included the audience to her works with the perception. Erkmen, who works on associated space and object, has reinterpreted the fictional reality by this means.

The artist, who takes contrasting forms with the flexible and abstract narrative in her installations, has cleared the way for the space against the constant narratives based on the physical borders. She does not refrain to break internal teachings and usual structures, reveals the installations that are destroyed the perceptions of forms. Finally, the artist who has contributed different perspectives to "Art and Life" theory, has taken an important role with unusual and interdisciplinary works in Contemporary Turkish Art and European Art.

References

[1] A. Akay, Çağdaş sanat konuşmaları 3: 90'lı yıllarda Türkiye'de çağdaş sanat, L. Çalıkoğlu, ed., Yapı Kredi Publishing, Istanbul, 2006, pp.17-48.

[2] A. Antmen, Kendi ülkesinde tanınmıyor, Radikal, [09.03.20119], access web page: <http://www.radikal.com.tr/yazarlar/ahu-antmen/kendi-ulkesinde-taninmiyor-1042305/> , [Access Date: 2016 September 02].

[3] A. Erkmen, Ayşe Erkmen internette kendini araştırıyor!, (A conversation with Ayse Erkmen), Interviewer: Evrim Altuğ, Milliyet Sanat, Fabuary, 2011, access web page: <http://www.ayseerkmen.com/> [Access Date: 2016 July 29].

[4] A. Erkmen, Boğaziçi'nde "çağdaş sanat" röportaj dizisi, Ayşe Erkmen, Interviewer: Riella Morhayim, Boğaziçi University, The artist interview at bosphorus project, 2010, access web page: <http://istanbulmuseum.org/artists/ayse%20erkmen.html> , [Access Date: 2016 September 02].

[5] A. Erkmen, D. Mossman and F. Erdemci, A conversation, [12 March 2011], London, UK, web page: <http://www.ayseerkmen.com/> [Access Date: 2016 July 29].

[6] D. Mossman and S. Hopkinson, Ayşe Erkmen, 13. Istanbul Biennial, Istanbul Foundation For Culture and Arts (IFCA), 2013, access web page: <http://13b.iksv.org/tr/> , [Access Date: 2016 Agust 02].

[7] F. Erdemci, Impossible short-circuits and serendipty, Plan B, 54 th Venice Biennial, Turkish pavillion, Istanbul: Istanbul Foundation For Culture and Arts (IFCA), Yapı Kredi Publications, 2011, access web page: <http://www.planb-venicebiennale.com/flash/index.html> , [Access Date: 2016 Agust 02].

[8] G. Karamustafa, Çağdaş sanat konuşmaları 3: 90'lı yıllarda Türkiye'de çağdaş sanat L. Çalıkoğlu, ed., Yapı Kredi Publishing, Istanbul, 2007, pp.49-78.

[9] İ. Düben, Çağdaş sanat konuşmaları 3: 90'lı yıllarda Türkiye'de çağdaş sanat, L. Çalıkoğlu, ed., Yapı Kredi Publishing, Istanbul, 2006, pp.17-48.

[10] Istanbul Foundation For Culture and Arts (IFCA), Plan B, Biographies, Ayşe Erkmen, 54 th Venice Biennial, Turkish Pavillion, 2011, access web page: <http://www.planb-venicebiennale.com/flash/index.html> , [Access Date: 2016 Agust 02].

[11] M. Yılmaz, Modernizmden postmodernizme sanat, Ütopya Press, Ankara, 2006.

[12] Y. Taktak, Contemporary art market in Istanbul, Interviewer: Tugba Renkci Tastan, [Interview Date: 2016 Febuary 02].

Woven Textile Design On Tc-2 Jacquard Loom

Assoc. Prof. Havva Halaçeli Metlioğlu

Çukurova Üniversitesi,

Güzel Sanatlar Fakültesi,

Tekstil ve Moda Tasarım Bölümü, Adana,

hhalaceli@yahoo.com

Abstract. Computerized Jacquard looms are one of the benefits of digital technologies that enable weaving complex imagery by allowing individual warp threads to be lifted. This study is about the woven Works executed during the TC-2 jacquard weaving workshop held in Tronrud Engineering during the dates of 19.10.2015-23.10.2015.

Keywords: Weaving, jacquard, pattern

1.Introduction

I had an opportunity to attend the TC-2 Jacquard Loom Workshop held in Norway at Tronrud Engineering Company on 19-23 October 2015 under the guidance of Vibeke Vestby. In this study you can find my observations regarding the training workshop where TC-2 Jacquard Weaving Loom is used.

Woven fabrics are formed by the intersections of warp and weft yarns. Dobby looms have limits for designs as the design capacity depends on the number of threadles. Therefore in the past eras tapestry weaving or draw looms are used to create free images and pictorial weavings. After the Industrial Revolution draw looms are replaced by the jacquard looms. The jacquard loom, which has a punch system, invented in 1801 by Joseph Marie Jacquard enables mass production for brocade, damask and mataless fabrics.

At the beginning of the 20th century, artists struggled to preserve hand crafts in the face of industrialized mass production. As a result, an industrial aesthetic was created where hand craft was honored as a starting point for good industrial design [1].

Workers working on labor-intensive production fields like textile in the early of 21st century wanted to transfer techniques obtained from industrial production to small-scaled art production or commercial design projects due to the shift of heavy industries to overseas countries [2]. For this purpose, several machineries including prototype weaving looms, knitting and embroidery machineries have been manufactured for individual users like designers and artists. TC-2 Jacquard Loom features an automatic shedding system and manual wefting and thus is a tool enabling to create weaves with human hand sensitiveness and including errors, not being fabricated.

2.The Story of TC-2 loom

The TC1 began as a dream of Vibeke Vestby, a weaving professor from Oslo, Norway. She was excited by the computer programs for weaving that started to appear in

the mid 1980s, and wanted to find a way to apply them to traditional Scandinavian weaving methods.

Vibeke Vestby explains the story of TC looms;

"The story of the TC-1 would have remained a dream, if it had not been for the growing oil industry off the Norwegian coast in the mid 1980'ies. The oil brought a sudden wealth to the country, and the government decided to initiate a National information technology program to encourage further development of new products and expertise. They invited industry as well as educational institutions to propose projects, including the College of Art and Design in Oslo, where I was teaching. Because we were a craft college, we were encouraged to focus on themes where new technology could be incorporated in traditional crafts, and - if possible, with special priority to traditionally female crafts. This was IT! I wrote an application for a feasibility study of my 'Dream Loom'. The project got 100% governmental funding in 1990 and -91.! In 1992 I spent 3 months as a student at Lisio in Florence, Italy, to get a better understanding of the 19th and 20th century Italian hand jacquard looms. The Jacquard is similar to a drawloom in the sense that it controls a certain number of warp ends individually.

Chinese fabrics from 15th century onwards contained woven patterns depicting important symbols such as dragons, clouds and peonies. The weaving process involved a weaver and 2-3 drawboys, and it might still take them a lifetime to complete a single fabric for a garment. These fantastic fabrics were created when weavers were property, just like cattle or land [1].

Historically there were two ways to weave free images:

1) "Painting" with a discontinuous weft, as in tapestry weaving. Or

2) to use a patterning "device" such as on a drawloom/single unit drawloom

Teamwork of Vibeke Vestby and Engineer's resulted with the speed and modul modifications of TC-1 and they developed the

TC-2 loom. One of the advantages of the TC-2 to Tc-1 was its price also.

TC-2 helps the designers featuring the weaving of free images, complex designs and multiple structures in a short time and TC-2 is an essential tool not only for college education also for the artist who use weaving as a vehicle for their artistic expressions. Besides Textile Design departments, fashion brands, shoe manufacturers such Adidas and researchers for 3D weavings are attracted by the design capacities of TC-2. Philippa Brock's 3 dimensional weaving on TC-2 is exhibited at the London Design Museum , during the "Future is Here" exhibition, Figure 1.

Fig. 1. 3-D woven piece on TC-2 loom, Philippa Brock, 2013 (retroreflectiv and elastic yarns), "Future is Here: A New Industrial Revolution" exhibition [3]

A prototype weaving study, research and development activities that is likely to last for days in an industrial jacquard company can be realized within a day with TC-2 jacquard loom being a golden tool. It is a tool for material and pattern research and experimental design studies instead of mass production.

The production of the Tc-2 is realised in the Tronrud Engineering Company in Honefoss city which is 1.5 hour away from Oslo and it is marketed under the company Digital Weaving Norway. The loom is used at textile and design schools and independent artists' studios

worldwide including Scandinavia, India, England, France and Italy.

The Tronrud Enginerring company where the workshop took place has a warm atmosphere with the woven art pieces on its walls. In the entrance floor, there is a Wall hanging of Lise Frölund which has a composition of Lise Frölend's family album and the sideview of the company, Figure 2.

Fig 2. Lise Frölund, Boys' Dreams, 2010

One of the wall hangings at the Tronrud Engineering is the triple woven work of Grete Sorensen .The visual and structural design of Color-Grayscale-Contour is made on Photoshop, Figure 3, 4. The company is far away from being cold engineering firm with these woven art pieces.

Fig 3. Grete Sorensen, Color-Grayscale-Contour, 2010

Fig 4. Grete Sorensen, Contour

The TC-2 jacquard loom enables weavers to use a great variety of threads in various types and sizes. Compared to traditional jacquard weaving looms, it is not fast production hardware but it is a system where the weaver has fully control on it. The pattern mechanism is electronic and with the controlled machine-stop realized by the weaver, the pattern can be adjusted during production. Each warp and weft is placed manually. With the easy loom stop and restart option thread, color and weave combinations can be tried before the final weaving plan. The woven samples are human production developed electronically, not a machine outcome. Thus, bionic design description can be used instead of digital design. Worldwide textile artists using this loom have passed far beyond the "handicraft" definition of weaving. The graphic textiles manufactured by them are a new tool for the art world and many galleries exhibited their handicrafts. [1].

The design steps for weaving on Tc-2 are

1) Selection of Sketch, drawing or picture

2) repeating (not neccessary for Wall hangings

3) reduction in color

4) layer selection for each color

5) definition of weave structure for each color(layer) on visual design.

6) sample weave study

7) modifications of weave, weft density and material

8) transfer of design file to the loom operator

9) Production of finished textile

During the workshop, a study on three main systems in terms of warp and weft thread has been conducted.

1.Black and White Single Layered jacquard weaving

2. Jacquard weaving with extrawefts

3. Doubleface jacquard weaving

3 .PRACTICALS

3.1.Black and White Single Layered jacquard weaving

During the study of black and white single layerd jacquard weaving, the picture is reduced in color turned into grayscale on photoshop program while maintaining figure details, Figure 5. Then layers chosen for each gray tone and all layers are assigned with weft and warp sateen weaves, Figure 6. The sample piece is woven after exporting the design file (TIF) to the loom,. Comparing the woven image with the original picture provides the modification of weaves, optimizing weft and warp densities. Then the design file is ready for weaving the final piece, Figure 7.

Fig 5. color reduction on the grayscale picture

Fig 6. Layers with weave structures.
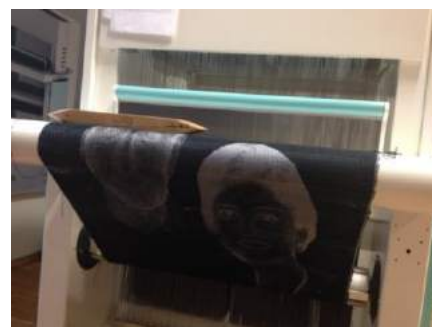
Fig. 7. Weaving practice and the final woven piece

3.2. Jacquard weaving with multiple weave structures and extra wefts

Multiple weave structures increases color and pattern options in weaving design. Extra wefts enable creating unique designs and adding letters to the woven work on Tc-2 loom. During the practice; a written text is added on a Picture on Photoshop, Figure 8. The text and the ground image are analyzed separately for weaves and color, Figure 9.

Fig 8. color reduce, written text on the Picture with weaves

Fig 9. Woven piece on Tc-2

3.3. Doubleface jacquard weaving on Tc-2

2 pictures are chosen to create double face of woven fabric. Color reduction, picking layers and weave assignments are done for each picture, Figure 10,11. The structures for each picture are combined and 2 weft shuttles are used to create double cloth.

Fig10. Pictures for front and back side of the fabric and their weave structures.

Figure 11. The combination of the 2 pictures with their weave structures.

Figure 12. Back and front sides of the doubleface fabric.

CONCLUSION

TC-2 jacquard loom is a tool appropriate for the digital era and suitable for textile designers as well as scientist conducting researches on technical textiles thanks to its reasonable price and its features enabling faster change of design, stucture and material in weaving design compared to industrial looms. For textile artists using the traditional tapestry technique, it supports the meeting of the symbol with the weaving stucture and material, option diversity and creativity. On the other hand, it enables an experimental working environment (fast change in design, stucture and material alternatives) in the process of creating a wall weaving with color alternatives that normally lasts for months. Thus, it is considered that the use of TC-2 jacquard loom in textile companies and at the Textile and Fashion Design Departments of universities in Turkey shall contribute creativity and innovation in textile design and industrial R&D studies.

REFERENCES

[1] Patrice George, "Banishing Boundaries: Weaving Digitally". The Grand Rapids Art Museum for Convergence 2006, exhibition catalogue

[2] http://dwn-tc2.blogspot.com.tr/p/tc-1-history.html

[3] http://dwntc2.blogspot.com.tr/2013/07/london-design-museum-future-is-here.html

World Domination Relations and Secret Societies in the Sociology of Knowledge

Asst. Prof. Dr. Yüksel Yildirim
Anthropology Department, University of Bartin
yyildirim@bartin.edu.tr

Abstract: In world history, the differences between societies have been described with religious terms for years and with economical terms during the 20th century. Nowadays, this difference again is being described with religious terms, especially by the secret societies which are claiming to rule the world. This study aims to examine this world sovereignty claim by exemplifying these societies. Some theses about these secret societies will be propounded and the thesis that these societies reign the world rather than visible sovereign nations will be debated. In terms of this, by presenting the societies such as the Freemasons, the Hospitallers of St. John of Jerusalem, the Skull and Bones Society, B'nai Brith, and the Illuminati, their position on world sovereignty relations will be examined and generally the results of these secret societies' theses will be focused on. Our main assumption is that an unseen reality lies beneath the surface of known reality, and it is possible to reveal the true meaning of reality by questioning the reality which is presented to us. Our study will be evaluated in these terms and according to these assumptions we will attempt to extract certain theories related to the sociology of knowledge.

Key words: Sociology of knowledge, secret societies, Masonry, world sovereignty, Illuminati.

1. Introduction

In history, the term "world sovereignty" is a term which is is presented in the developments of the 19th century and it presented a supremacy of politics, economical and military in its period. Even its conceptualisation was made in 19th century, in some periods it is named as "nizam-ı âlem" or "Pax-romania" and it is changed in some ways. After the West held the supremacy for the second time, especially from the second part of the 20th century it is named as different ways.

There has to be a difference to focus the supremacy term. This difference, appeared in historical period, had religious explanations for a long time, and this kind of difference was seen until the 20th century. From the 20th century, these are left their positions to the descriptions based on economics. Supremacy also in terms of economic basis will be referred to the West and in special terms to the nation-states.

However in last periods, some esoteric societies' existence which are very ancient have come to the fore and real sovereignty is told to be in these societies' hands. In this evaluation in terms of world sovereignty relations, we will examine the positions of secret societies.

Our main assumption is that the apparent side and real side of knowledge may not be the same. Today, in terms of sovereignty relations, mass media gives knowledge from some specific centers to the masses and the masses have the information that they want. Many times in terms of the needed directing, distorted and even inverted information is given. We think that there is another reality under lots of apparent information and believe that if we evaluate according to this, it will be more true. We will evaluate secret societies in these terms.

2. Secret Societies

There are many secret or semi-secret societies worldwide and these are organized around the values and principles of its specific members. There are many societies related to mass suicides or deviant acts. But let us list some of these secret societies that are thought to hold the world sovereignty relations related to our subject.

2.1 Masonry

Masonry (or Freemasons) is the best known of these secret soceities. It is organized as semi-secret and has its own distinctive style, but within it contains many mysteries. The society, which was founded in Scotland by the masons in the 14th century, accepts Hiram master as the start who has a contribution in the establishment of Solomon' shrine. So, with 3000 years of spiritual history, it has some symbols from Judaism, Kabbalistic ideas to the ancient Egyptian and paganist beliefs. Nowadays it works secretly even though some of its secrets are revealed.

Members are accepted with mystical ceremonies, members know each other from some special symbols, loggias are secretly organized. In their own discourses, their aim is to establish peace and brotherhood on the Earth, to make the whole world live up to humanitarian values and aggrandize the human. However the ones opposed to masonry claim that their real aim is to serve for zionism, they have a finger in lots of harmful activities, they concoct the events which cause chaos in the world and they worship the devil beyond the symbols they use. In spite of this conflict, their wide spread organization is a known reality. [1]

2.2. The Hospitallers of St. John of Jerusalem Sect

At the point when Masonry turned into a secret society from stonemasonry, the Hospitallers appear. This society was founded by nine knights' own wishes in 1118 with the permission of Jerusalem's king to protect the pilgrims coming to Jerusalem. For this holy duty, some parts of the Jerusalem palace, which is built on Solomon's shrine's remnants, were given to them. But according to a claim, their main aim is to find the ark of the covenant, which is believed to be under the palace, and rebuild the palace. [2]

The things they found in excavations with this aim pointed them in other directions. First, pagan disciplines and magic techniques belonging to the times before the Jews. Second, the papers which prove Jesus Christ's marriage and his child and even the cemetery of St Mary Magdalene who is claimed to be Jesus' wife. These two elements provided them to make a different evaluation of Christianity opposed to the Catholic Church and to have the opportunity against the church by proving a "human jesus" who can marry and have children rather than the "divine Jesus".[3]

That "Jesus' heirs" term means the church's authority collapses, the Papacy disjointed the society before it had the power more and more with the Papacy's autonomy. It killed the society's leader and lots of members. After that time, the Hospitallers, who is the military part of society, are disjointed; the Jerusalem sect which is the political part of society, layed low. The society's aim from now on, is to protect the Jesus, and going even further back, David's heirs from the Catholic Church's slaughter and make him become the king of a United Europe when the time is up.

For some, while the society was working secretly, it turned into Masonry, for another it was articulated into the Masonry without being noticed and by forming the society by their own benefits, they made it spread. So, the symbols and ceremonies in Masonry is explained. Even they protect the Jesus' ancestry, the reality is that they are very addicted to the old pagan beliefs and traditions which are very opposed to orthodox Christianity. Cabala, which is known as Jewish philosophy, is also a reflection of old pagan belief with its symbols and ceremonies. Besides, one of the reasons for the Hospitallers' executions is that they worship Baphomet who is a pagan god and has a goat head and feet.[4]

For this reason the Hospitallers are hostile to all divine religions. For the state they want to found they will have a king who is a ''anti-christ'' namely ''dajjal''. All their organizations are in this way. They are all organized and efficient all around the world. The real power behind the European Union is

that Jerusalem sect. They prepare the world and Europe for this reality.[5]

2.3. B'nai Brith

B'nai Brith was established in New York, 1843 by twelve German Jews. It is a Jewish society and a power for Jews being a dominant power in the world by controlling and running the activities. It controls masonaries and the secret societies which have marks from kabbalistic beliefs and also it uses them for the Jews' benefit. Although they are reflected as a society which protect the Jews' rights, it is an establishment that aims to turn the world into a system serving for zionist goals. It is the main root of the thesis: "the Jews run the World!"[6]

2.4. The Skull and Bones Society

The Skull and Bones Society was founded in the USA in 1832. Its symbols of skull and bones are also one of Masonry's symbols. Its main aim is to educate and situate someone into the important positions in terms of world domination for secret ideals. They choose, educate and give important positions to fifteen men every year. It has the duty of gathering men to the global secret organizations' first man. Its center is Yale University and its known members are Bush Senior and Junior. [7]

2.5. The Bohemian Club

The Bohemian Club is a semi-secret society which was found in 1872. The wealthy elite of the west coast of America are the members. Republican presidents and presidential candidates are all from this society.

Their activities are so secret that reaching the society's special valley is hindered by the USA state powers especially. The farm in the center has such a capacity that hundreds of people can attain the meetings at the same time. They have temples nearly all around the USA. Their symbol is the owl. They talk to the owl in ceremonies and the owl is used as a sign.

The Bohemian Club is both more secret and upper club that has elite and private people in position. Nearly a thousand American wealthy people meet continuously in California or in other farms on weekends, they have ceremonies and secret routines.[8]

2.6. The Trilateral Commission

The Trilateral Commission is a secret society, which was founded by David Rockfeller, Henry Kissenger and Zbigniew Brzezinski in 1973. It aims to spread the New World Order much more to the world namely to North America, Europe and Japan.

The commission, which is a new adaptation of Masonry, had a strong power in Carter's government. In this government including Carter's own self, there were twenty important people, the other members were important financiers, industrialists and academics. The Trilateral's influence continues in the governments after Carter. Bush and Clinton are also members of this commission.

Brzezinski was the head of this society between 1973-1976. The sign of the sect is like this: there is a globe on which there are three triangles extending to the top but they do not connect.

When you connect them, there occurs one triangle. Every triangle reflects three parts of trilateral. Triangles probably reflect the pyramid. The big triangle is big pyramid. The big pyramids' not connection shows that the unique world order has not been founded yet.[9]

2.7. The Illuminati

The Illuminati is the highest establishment of the esoteric societies claiming directing the World. It is the most dangerous and secret society. The society, which was founded in 1776 in Bavaria, interested in alchemy, magic, asthrology, ancient Egyptian mystery and hermeticism. Organized very secretly, the Illuminati especially settled among the masons and they lived very closely with one another. The New World Order they wanted to set was based on old beliefs and the primary goal was

the Catholic Church. The society was broken up after ten years, in 1786. However they became secret and organized much stronger and made their aims much bigger.

Nowadays, the Illuminati is organized more influentially and it is more widespread. It is wide and an international power network from presidents to big businessmen, from military commanders to the secret service heads. Today, the society controls the money markets, ratifies the USA's presidents and starts a war, and also finishes it.

Main principle of it is the term that "order comes from chaos". They aim to entail the world into a chaos and to found their own evil order in the world which is writhiing in this chaos, by seeming as a hero. These heroic people are of course the representatives of a royal descendant and after the big chaos (we can call this as Armageddon). They are preparing for the coming of the world's master Christ-dajjal on Solomon's shrine in a kingdom centered in Jerusalem. Their whole organization is like this, they held important parts of the world, strategic places and they are to get their goals finished. [10]

3. The Common Traits of Secret Societies

The societies explained above are introduced to us as the decision making system of the world, with their decisions and actions it is focused that what they want to found is a "global evil kingdom''. We can array the common traits and the situations they are reflected like this. After that we will debate the real meanings of these traits. In means of this, the things we arrayed below is not our thoughts but the from the informations we are given.

These societies are secret. Even the places or loggia's adresses are known, they are just what they let. It is impossible for us to get any information of them when they do not want. For example, the masonary loggia in Istanbul is clear but entering there or watching the ceremonies is impossible.

Their members are all prominant who are in the important positions or candidate for reaching these positions. Choosing the members has also a selectivity side. Everybody

can not become a member of these. Poor or unsuccessful people can not be with them. It is required to be a member of some clear religious and ethnic past to join the upper societies in hierarchy.

The members are exposed to some certain rituels when they enter the societies. Nearly the main idea of these rituals which have nearly common traits, are symbols showing that this is a step to brotherhood, unless they obey the rules, this will be a disloyalty and its punishment will be death. This situation makes the societies being curious and lets the event be mysterious and mystic, also this causes people to avoid them.

All of these societies have religious, ethnic and mystic characteristic. Their aim is either to make a religion's memebers or a religion dominant or to make people from noble people or this race's magnificient heir to the power or to make a mystic element which exists from dark eras, a pagan god sovereign. This situation contributes a mystery and extraordinary thing to them and also causes the people, who do not belong to them, worried and scared of them.

These societies have been working for their aims for hundreds of years and today they come to an important step. Once they were working for their aims secretly, now they are revealed or they are ready to announce themselves. These societies, who will act to found their global order recently, now have an important influence around the world. If it is needed to be examplified:

They have big industrial establishments and huge multinational companies. They are dominant in oil companies, arms companies and other critical industries. They have the half of the money in the world and control the other half.

They have the mass media. With the help of these they can direct everything they want. They can bring someone down, who is the opposite of them or their benefit, with a big slander campaign.

They have men on every level of the political parties. They can put the people they want upper levels by supporting them, they can put a party into power.

The opposite of this is possible. They can chafe the poltical parties or politics that they have a beneficial disagreement, even they can topple them over by coup. Because they have also members in military and they are efficient. They have members in military and also generals and they support their own people in commisions.

They are active in academia. They are organized in important universities, even they found some universities, publications and foundations. Because they have the critical parts of the circle, they have important roles in promotions and administrative missions' choosing. If you go against them, it is impossible for you to be a rector or dean even to ascend to the level of professor or assistant professor.

They have a finger in lots of important event which changed the world order. The French Revolution, the American War of Independece, the Russian Revolution and even the Industrial Revolution are their works. The First and Secon World Wars, AIDS, Ebola and SARS viruses, terrorism, ethnic combat, Nobel prizes, coups, Oscar ceremonies, economic crises, money manipulations and important complos all have their signs.

4. The Meanings of Secret Society's Thesis

The information given about secret societies can be summarized like this. This information can make us question. Secret societies suggest their own ideas alternatively to the current power relations and this is what they aim and they effuse current relations. This can be asked here: what is the official secret servis' situations which are the actors of official order against the secret societies that claim to be an alternative for the current order in the world? Which one has the supreme technological facility and organization type; the Hospitallers, CIA, MOSSAD or KGB ? Don't the intelligence organizations recognize these secret societies that are reflected to the media and TV and why are they oblivious and hopeless?[11]

The answer of this is given in secret societies' thesis. ''These organizations are in the control of secret societies.'' Then where is the secret side of the matter? Everything is clear; secret services and secret societies are

within. In terms of this, accepting them in a different way is not meaningful. When their organization levels are compared, it is clear who controls who. If the secret society is effective and they have a religious-mystic character then why are the religious differences the works of recent years? [12]

It is clear that the secret services and societies will not be opponents for each other. For this reason it is possible to say that the thesis of secret societies are the psychological war tools of secret servises and the aim of diversion. Distorted and masked information is presented to us rather than the current and true information. Then why are the secret societies located behind? What is the aim of putting a secret society to the ''the wish for the USA or another power's sovereignity on the world'' explanation?

At this point, it is possible find the reason by looking at the result. When the created results are examined, the aim of these theses will be clear.

The first result of secret societies' theses is target lapse. It is not a problem how they are described for those who found the sovereignty. However the ones who are exposed to this sovereignty find secret societies against them rather than concrete countries or information services. They are the reponsibles, even there occurs an impression that even secret services are hopeless in front of them.

These theses can not be reached because of the secret societies' structure and mystical structures and their frightening essences are emphasized. Where is the enemy is unclear and it is unknown where he will shot. This kind of idea is a suppression tool through people, it bars the opponents and opponents' ideas. Every activity against them can cause cruel results; because they are cruel. Their cruelty is apparent from the bloody rituels when they are accepted to the membership.

Another result of the secret society theses is that they are a part of making an easy and basic explanation for everything. Every kind of event can be their activities. Instead of trying to search for the sociological dynamics under the french revolution, people feel more comfortable with just one formule. If you add a little secret to this formüle, it becomes more effective.

5. The Result

19th century history understanding and society types predicted society schemas predicting the development of other societies by West development line which center the West. According to this understanding, the societies out of West can progress if they follow the levels of the West and they will be a developed society so their difference from the West will be closed. According to this, for long years, the difference between them occured economically and some terms like developed-underdeveloped and industrialized-unindustrialized are used.

With the help of staffs using western development line, there occured a western type system in practice in these societies and the diffrence between east-west, after the use of oil as a new energy source and the whole building of the western sovereignity is named with these terms to ban the possible western opposition in the places both having sovereignity and oil. Previously till the last period, there was a difference like christian-muslim, dar'ul islam-dar'ul harp, there is created some new descriptions which do not cause an intersocieties opponent. Economical differences are made like Feudal-capitalist, develeeoped-underdeveloped and all precautions are taken to ban the conflicts.

Another deminsion of describing the social differences is the insoluble things the West lived at the last stage. The West held the World sovereignity in the capitalist level it comes from with its own historical development line and it took political, military precautions as well as in scientific feilds that they developed their own explanations for continuation of this. There is no need to have a new stage or leap at this point. In other words, there is no need to take a risk because a new social stage causes its own sovereignity. Against the Marx's schema and socialism, its struggle in or out of itself must be evaluated from this point. For this reason, it will show the stage that it is in as last stage of historical development line and it claims taht a new satage and solution is impossible with its ''the end of history''

discourse. Thats why, with the explanation types we told above, it will try to ban the new solution suggestions of the societies out of it in this matter and in spite of a new solution, it will defend that they can only complete tehir development line by following it.

With this dimension, the West has no Word, has no power to change the system, progress the history, it developed some clear explanations to ban the possible change attempts. A function of secret society thesis appears here. These societies have such a big power that no struggle can be successful against them. Whatever done, it is impossible to succeed moreover what is had can be lost. For this reason, there should be no try and no attempt against these societies that can be in everywhere in everytime. Although pumping an opponence an deven hostility agains the West with these theses, in the background, it is wanted to create a passivation and accepting what occured against these societies which are reflected as '' handful enemy'' by creating a learned helplessness.

If we look from another aspect, nowadays by pumping the information of with these theses, the zionists even pagans run the World and nearly have all of it, religious feelings are welted in one side; in another side, they claim that Bush talks to god and take the dictations from god andwith his discourse he starts a new crusade. On the one hand the bombs explode in the USA and Europe and the westerns start to see the islam as a treat by their political islamic discourses, on the other hand, with the cartoon crises and the disrespects like it is in Charlie Hebdo event, and with rootly religious tensions it is aimed to increase the western opposition in islamic World. Moreover all the bridges are wanted to dispose and create a religion based conflict. With the use of oil as an energy source, the West showing these differences and the World order out of conflict, creates conflicts in that area and plays with the area's religion and present there as its opponent whose civilization is described with violance.

Again from another aspect, social events are being carried from reality World to the legend World, events that are required to have complex explanations and have lot of factors are reduced to basic and they become the source of short and clear explanation. At this point an important result of these thesis is that people are distracted from rational thought and withdrawed to an irrational line. They are distracted from politics, sociology, strategy and economy World, put into the myths World and all events are looked like this. As a result of this, science and scientific explanations becomes out of agenda, new mysticisim appears by putting the science and scientific thought, which was granted by West, aside by the same hand.

We tried to debate the secret societies' situations in means of World sovereignity relations. Our main prediction and method is to try to find the reality by examining the results that it will begot by questioning these informations instead of prejudgment and to find that there are another relations under the apparent sides of the information. The information given us about secret societies is that ''they are very powerful and are to captivate the world''. However when we use the method we expressed, it is possible to say that secret society thesis are being used for making the differences in the World put into religious base, both by creating a learned helplessness and conflict background. This depends on where you look the information from.

RESOURCES

[1] H.Cevizoglu, Masonary and Rotary, Beyaz Publ., Istanbul, 1998.

[2] M.Barber, The History of The Hospitallers, Trns. Berna Ulner, Kabalcı Publ., 2006, p. 17–73
[3] R.Leigh, Holy Blood Holy Bowl, Nokta Publ., Istanbul, 2004, p. 281-352.

[4] A.Akar, Deep World State- The Universal Masters of Secret Doctrine, Timas Publ., Istanbul, 2006, p. 49-57.

[5] A. Altındal, Vatican and the Hospitallers, New Avrasya Publ., Ankara, 2001.

[6] A. Akar, Deep World State- The Universal Masters of Secret Doctrine, Tima Publ., Istanbul, 2006, p. 247-249.

[7] A. Altındal, Brotherhood of Rose and Crucifix, Yeni Avrasya Publ., Ankara, 2003, p.95-115

[8] A. Akar, Deep World State -The Universal Masters of Secret Doctrine, Timas Publ., Istanbul, 2006, p. 245-247

[9] A. Akar, Deep World State – the Universal Masters of Secret Doctrine, Timas Publishing, Istanbul, 2006, p. 216-220

[10] T.Marrs, Illuminati-Intrique Circle, Trns. Ali Cimen, Timas Publ., Istanbul, 2002.

[11] M.Kaynak and O.L.Mete, Who Run the World, Truva Publ., Istanbul, 2006, p.24-47

[12] M.Kaynak, Fancy Ball- Turkey, the USA and the Others, Timas Publ., Istanbul, 2006, p.68

The Southern Gas Corridor: Compatible or not to respond the EU's gas demand?

Dr. Azime Telli[*]

Abstract

In the 21st century, natural gas has become a strategic source, one of the most discussed and a top of the agenda item with its advantages and risks. The significance of natural gas increases day by day since in terms of carbon dioxide emission, it is a clean fossil fuel with a wide range of use. The growing role for cross-border gas trade will force new political attention on the security of gas supplies. In the past, *"energy security"* has been debated almost exclusively in terms of oil markets; the shift to gas will force governments and consumers to ask similar questions of an increasingly vital gas supply. Emerging relationships between major gas suppliers and key end-use consuming countries will create new geopolitical considerations rising to the highest levels of economic and security policy. The EU countries, importing percent of their natural gas supply from Russia, have a great deal of concern about the threatening attitude of Russia as a political and economic power exploiting its richness in energy. All these developments clearly reveal that the energy supply security has begun to play an effective role in international affairs. Considering all this, in this study will be seek to answer the folowing questions: Why the Southern Gas Corrridor is important for the EU's energy supply security? What is the functions and features of the Southern Gas Corridor Project on the EU's energy supply security? What is the details of the Southern Gas Corridor, TANAP and TAP projects? What is the expandition potantial of the Southern Gas Corridor? Is the Southern Gas Corridor is compitable to respond the EU's gas demand?

Key words: EU, energy supply security, natural gas, the Southern Gas Corridor, energy security.

1. Introduction

Natural gas is rapidly gaining importance in global energy markets. Prized for its relatively clean and efficient combustion, gas is becoming the fuel of choice for a wide array of uses, notably the generation of electric power. In the 21st century, natural gas has become a strategic source, one of the most discussed and a top of the agenda item with its advantages and risks. The significance of natural gas increases day by day since in terms of carbon dioxide emission, it is a clean fossil fuel with a wide range of use.

The growing role for cross-border gas trade will force new political attention on the security of gas supplies[1]. In the past, *"energy security"* has been debated almost exclusively in terms of oil markets; the shift to gas will force governments and consumers to ask similar questions of an increasingly vital gas supply.

Emerging relationships between major gas suppliers and key end-use consuming countries will create new geopolitical considerations rising to the highest levels of economic and security policy[2].

A particularly disturbing aspect of this trend is embodied by Russia's energy policy, which is often dictated by motives outside of the financial arena. When the world's largest producer of natural gas uses its market power to exploits these vulnerabilities, there are few short-term remedies available beyond caving to Moscow's demands. Thus, natural gas can be a potent policy tool used to influence the economic wellbeing and national security of import-dependent states.

While Russia may be the most brazen in its approach, state-owned energy firms in other regions might be harnessed in a similar fashion. One of the key ways to mitigate these concerns

[*]Dr, Ondokuz Mayis University, azimetelli@gmail.com

and foster stability is to diversify the number of buyers, sellers and transit routes in the energy market. The greater the availability of such alternatives, the less likely it is that any one actor or incident could disrupt the overall flow of energy resources. Increasing cost and import of natural gas to an unsustainable level in the EU countries have brought the issue of energy supply security into the European agenda, as Russia exploits the dependency of Europe on Russian natural gas.

The EU countries, importing 34 percent of their natural gas supply from Russia, have a great deal of concern about the threatening attitude of Russia as a political and economic power exploiting its richness in energy[3]. All these developments clearly reveal that the energy supply security has begun to play an effective role in international affairs[4]. Considering all this, in this study will be seek to answer the folowing questions:

1- Why the Southern Gas Corrridor is important for the EU's energy supply security?

2- What is the functions and features of the Southern Gas Corridor Project on the EU's energy supply security?

3- What is the details of the Southern Gas Corridor, TANAP and TAP projects?

4- What is the expandition potantial of the Southern Gas Corridor?

5- Is the Southern Gas Corridor is compitable to respond the EU's gas demand?

1.   The EU's Energy Dependecy

The EU's total natural gas consumption in 2015 was around 443.9 billion cubic metres (bcm), whereas its indigenous production was approximately 149.6 bcm[5]. According to IEA (2015), the average annual growth rate of natural gas consumption in the EU countries is in the range of -0.9% to 1.0%, while indigenous production is expected to fall by around 2.5% per year between 2010 and 2035[6]. The Directorate-General for Energy of the European Commission, on the other hand, estimates that

natural gas production in the EU will decline by an average of 3.8% per annum[7]. Thus, total imports of natural gas by the EU countries may rise to 404.2 bcm by 2030. The EU's increasing dependency on natural gas imports is one of its major energy challenges[8]. Therefore, the EU needs to secure reliable and diverse sources and routes of natural gas supply to bridge the gap between consumption and production[9].

The EU countries, importing 34 percent of their natural gas supply from Russia. Also, the EU and Russia are mutually dependent upon one another for natural gas. The EU meets 1/3 of its gas need from Russia, which exports 61.7% of its export volume to the European countries[9]. For this reason, the relationship of the EU and Russia should be handled with care from both sides. In response to the EU's seeking resource diversification, Russia executed a natural gas sales agreement with China for selling 30 bcm/y natural gas for 30 years[10].

Graphic   1:   European   Countries' Dependency on Russian Gas (2014)
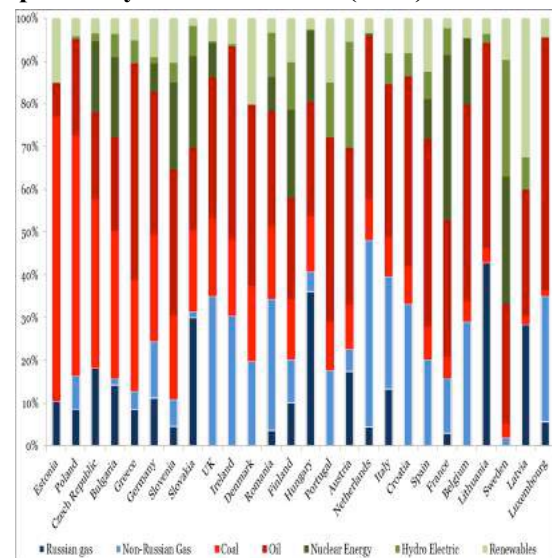
Source: Chi-Kong   Chyong,   Vessela Tcherneva, Europe's vulnerability on Russian gas, European Council on Foreign Relations, 17th   March,   2015,

http://www.ecfr.eu/article/commentary_europes_vulnerability_on_russian_gas.

There are three existing gas supply corridors to Europe. These are: the NorthEastern corridor from Russia, which supplies around a quarter of the EU's total demand; the North-Western corridor from Norway, which covers approximately one-fifth of net consumption; and the South-Western corridor from Algeria, which provides for one-tenth of the EU's consumption[11]. The remainder is covered by LNG imports. Russia's use of EU countries energy dependency on its gas as a trump card, rising natural gas import and cost have forced Europe to concentrate on diversification of energy supplies. The EU countries meet 79 percent of their natural gas needs from Russia, Norway and Algeria; therefore, any political problem with any of these suppliers will cause energy problems for the EU states as well[12].

The Ukraine crisis has played a vital role in Southern Gas Corridor's regaining importance as a guarantor for EU energy supply safety. It seems possible that the Southern Gas Corridor becomes one of the most essential gas resources of the EU in the short and medium run. The Southern Gas Corridor, which is accepted to have a high priority in terms of EU energy safety, is referred to in the EU official documents as the construction of pipeline for natural gas flow from Azerbaijan, Turkmenistan, and Iraq[13]. Iran is not listed amongst these countries, although is it has been considered and evaluated amongst potential partners, together with Uzbekistan in the long run[14]. The Southern Gas Corridor, which will transfer natural gas from Eurasia and Middle East to Europe, has been initially planned to be operated with the Nabucco Project. Azerbaijan, Turkmenistan, Iraq, Iran and Egypt are the countries amongst the supply countries of Nabucco, which is characterised as the highest-capacity pipeline, more specifically, with a carrying capacity of 31 bcm/y per annum amongst the Southern Gas Corridor, and also

which would prevent Russia from exploiting energy as a means of pressing Middle East and Central East European countries that are dependent on Russia for natural gas supply[15].

The Southern Corridor has long been on the EU's agenda, and it has been assumed that the project will aid the EU in its efforts to diversify its gas supplies[16]. One of the major strategic priority areas for EU energy security is to develop a fourth corridor, namely the Southern corridor, which will transport natural gas to the EU from the Caspian Basin/ Middle East via Turkey[17]. The construction of a new pipeline from the Caspian Basin the EU is considered to be a gas Project of "European Interest". In the long term, the eventual goal of the system is to carry vast amounts of gas from a variety of suppliers to a variety of potential purchasers in the EU. The cost of developing the this pipelines could approach €20 billion[18].

Figure 1: The EU Energy Corridors

Source: TAP, The big picture, http://www.tap-ag.com/the-pipeline/the-big-picture.

On June 26th 2012, Turkey and Azerbaijan signed an inter-governmental agreement on the

construction of the Trans Anatolian Pipeline (TANAP) for the transportation of natural gas from giant fields in Azerbaijan to Europe via Georgia, Turkey, Greece and/or Bulgaria. On June 28th 2013, the Shah Deniz Consortium confirmed that the Trans Adriatic Pipeline (TAP) had been selected to transport gas to Europe[18].

Furthermore, on December 17th 2013, the Shah Deniz Consortium made the final investment decision for the Stage 2 development of the Shah Deniz gas field in the Caspian Sea. The TAP will transport gas to Western Europe via Greece, Albania and across the Adriatic Sea to Southern Italy. TAP's initial capacity is 10 bcm per year. The pipeline is designed to expand its transportation capacity from 10 to 20 bcm per year, depending on supply and demand.

Figure 2: Europe's Alternatives to Russian Gas
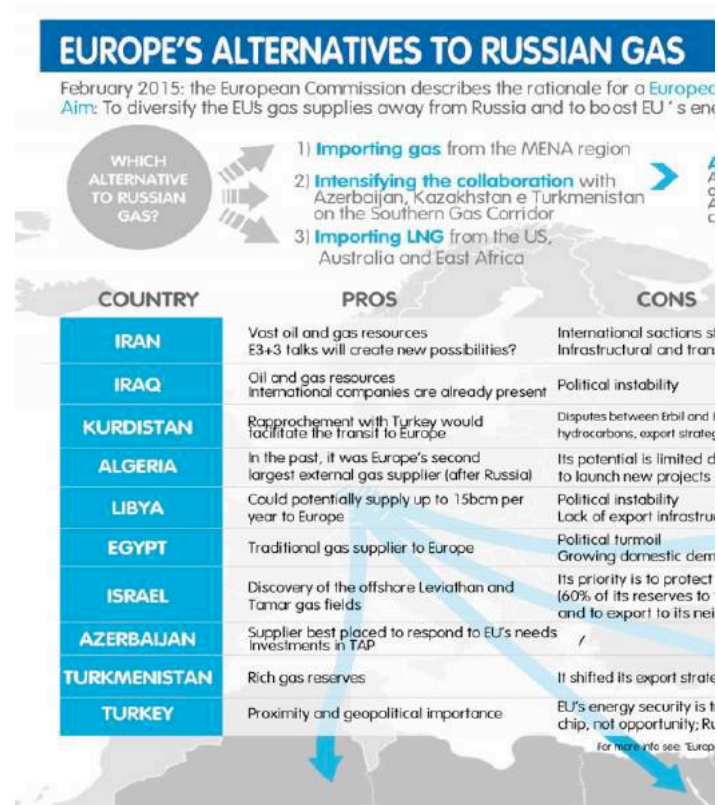
Source: Chi-Kong Chyong, Louisa Slavkova, Vessela Tcherneva, Europe's alternatives to Russian gas, European Council on Foreign Relations, 9th April, 2015, http://www.ecfr.eu/article/commentary_europes _alternatives_to_russian_gas311666.

The initial capacity of the TANAP is 16 bcm. It is expected that the first volumes of gas will be delivered to Europe by 2019. Under the intergovernmental agreement between Turkey and Azerbaijan, Turkey will purchase 6 bcm of the gas from the TANAP. Thus, the TANAP will be able to deliver 10 bcm/year gas to the EU by 2019. The transportation capacity of the pipeline can be expanded to 23 bcm by 2023 and to 31 bcm by 2026. Thus, taking into account the gas earmarked for Turkey, the TANAP will be able transport 25 bcm per year to the EU starting from 2026.

The inauguration of the TANAP represents the opening of the fourth gas corridor to Europe, i.e. the Southern Gas Corridor (SGC) [19]. The TANAP is considered to be a milestone in the creation of the SGC, which will deliver natural gas from the Caspian Basin and/or the Middle East to Europe. At the moment only Azerbaijan has committed to supply natural gas to Europe.[1]

Graphic 2: **Natural Gas Production and Consumption in EU Countries (Bcm)**
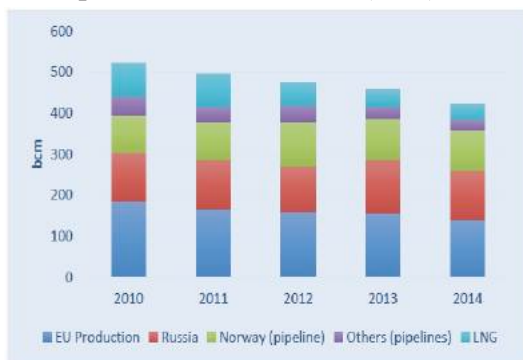
Source: Marie-Claire Aoun, Slyvie Cornot-Gandolophe, The European Gas Market Looking For Its Golden Age, The Institut français des relations internationales (Ifri), France, 2015, p. 9.

While the TANAP is not considered as a "*silver bullet*" for energy diversification, because it represents only around 2% of Europe's gas demand, it is certain that the SGC in general, and the TANAP in particular, will bolster EU energy security. Although the political and security aspects of delivering natural gas from the Caspian Basin to the EU

have been investigated in depth,[2] the economic aspects of this project have not yet been investigated fully. According to BP's estimates, the Shah Deniz Stage 2 and the Southern Corridor projects will bring in over USD 45 billion of investment across six countries: Azerbaijan, Georgia, Turkey, Greece, Albania and Italy. The pipelines alone will cost more than USD 15 billion. It is expected that these two projects will create over 30,000 direct jobs, namely, around 10,000 direct local jobs in Azerbaijan, 2,000 jobs in Georgia, 15,000 jobs in Turkey, and 2,000 jobs in Greece over the next five years. In addition, the projects will induce significant foreign direct investment inflows into these countries and create tens of thousands of indirect jobs[20]. Apart from boosting the national economies of the participating countries, the development of the SGC will also have significant impacts on the European natural gas market[21]. However, the Southern Gas Corridor will further contribute to the region's political and economic independence[22].

---

[1] "Azerbaijani national oil company SOCAR signed a contract with European companies for supply of natural gas over 10 bcm/year for a period of 25 years", 19th September, 2013, http://oilprice.com/Energy/Natural-Gas/Azeri-GasSells-Big-in-Europe.html.

[2] See, for example, Zeyno Baran, "EU Energy Security: Time to End Russian Leverage", **The Washignton Quarterly**, 2009, 30, 4, 131-144; Gareth M. Winrow, "Turkeyand the East-West Gas Transportation Corridor", **Turkish Studies**, 2004, 5, 2, 23-42; Dominique Finon, "The EU foreign gas policy of transit corridors: autopsy of the stillborn Nabucco project", 2011, **OPEC Energy Review**, 35,1, 47-69; John Roberts,"TheSouthern Corridor: Baku-TbilisiCeyhan's Gas Legacy", **Turkish Policy Quarterly**, 2012, 11,2, 77-85; Gulmira Rzayeva"Azerbaijan And Energy Security Of Europe: Balancing National Priorities And International Commitments", **Caspian Report**, Spring 2013, 105-118; Gareth M Winrow, **Problems and prospects for the "fourth corridor": the positions and role of turkey in gas transit to Europe**, Oxford Institute for Energy Studies, NG 30, 2012.

4. The TANAP Pipeline

Turkey and Azerbaijan signed a major gas deal on October 25, 2011, sealed by a binding intergovernmental agreement in June 2012. Turkey will get 6 bcm of gas annually from Azerbaijan's Shah Deniz-II field, recovering what it lost from Russia by its earlier termination of the contract with Russia for gas from the Western Balkans pipeline. Turkey will also serve as a transit point for another 10 bcm annual supply of Azerbaijani gas to Europe through spare capacities in its pipelines. These accords also envisage building the new TANAP pipeline for Azerbaijani gas through Turkey, while the existing line's operation (which transports Azerbaijani Gas from the Shah Deniz-II field) should go into effect by 2017 and send gas until 2043[23].

Figure 3: The TANAP Route

Source: TANAP, "Trans-Anadolu Doğalgaz Boru Hattı Projesi", http://www.tanap.com/medya/basin-bultenleri/trans-anadolu-dogalgaz-boru-hatti-tanap-projesi/.

These agreements ensure that for the first time, Azerbaijani gas can traverse a dedicated infrastructure to Turkey and then flow to Europe through the TANAP pipeline, and onward through one of the several alternative pipelines under consideration, the Trans-Adriatic Pipeline (TAP), NabuccoWest or BP's projected Southeast European pipeline (SEEP)

[24-26]. In June 2013, TAP was chosen as the primary route for Shah Deniz II, but the possibility of some gas flowing through a revived Nabucco-West at a future date is not excluded. Moreover, since the announced agreement refers to the new TANAP pipeline as carrying an "initial" volume of 16 bcm, this suggests that Azerbaijan hopes to increase its annual volume first to 24 bcm, especially as it projects an estimated annual production of 50 bcm by 2017[27]. Gazprom will thus lose significant revenue in sales to Turkey and then the Balkans, and Russia considerable political leverage, as Azerbaijan charges a significantly lower price to Turkey than Russia charges and received a side payment to make up the difference between its price and what Gazprom charged. These agreements also resolve all issues of gas transit between SOCAR and BOTAŞ—Turkey's state-run energy company—who have both essentially replaced Gazprom with Azerbaijan as gas suppliers at least to the extent outlined above[28].

Equally importantly, the Azerbaijani-Turkish agreement has generated possibilities for Azerbaijan in the Balkans. In November 2011, i.e. right after the Azerbaijani-Turkish accords, Bulgaria and Turkey agreed on a natural gas contract to supply presumably Azerbaijani gas via the ITG [Interconnector Turkey-Greece] to a 115- kilometer Interconnector Greece-Bulgaria (IGB). The volumes under discussion are in the range of 1 to 3 bcm/y, with the possibility of this initial amount rising to 5 bcm/y. Since this quantity exceeds Bulgaria's needs, it opens for transit or resale to other countries in Southeastern Europe. These happen to be among the worst affected by Russia's several winter cutoffs of gas to Ukraine. The construction of a small number of relatively inexpensive reversible interconnectors in the region such as the IGB (and including, for example, the already completed Arad-Szeged line from Romania to Hungary) could lead to the implementation of a gas ring in Southeast Europe. Azerbaijan would be not only the gas

supplier but also the gas seller. Baku particularly insisted on this point during the long negotiations with Ankara over the terms for transit of Shah Deniz II natural gas, and it was finally agreed[29].

Finally, and worse for Russia, these accords open the way for Moscow's greatest fear, namely the southern corridor for gas that the EU is pursuing and by which Turkmen and Azerbaijani gas (if not also Kazakh gas) will flow directly to Europe rather than across Russia, and strike a decisive blow to Gazprom and Moscow's power over them and Europe. This would apply equally to Turkmen (and/or Kazakh) gas coming from the Caspian either as LNG or through a Trans-Caspian pipeline. This deal also strikes at the original plans for the Nabucco pipeline, since there will be no need for a Turkish sector and the builder of Nabucco need only connect gas from Turkey to Bulgaria and to the distribution point of Baumgarten in Austria. Thus this deal has led to the substitution of a plan for a so-called NabuccoWest pipeline from the Turco-Bulgarian border through the Balkans to Europe. Indeed, at the end of 2012 Turkish officials raised the possibility of a Turkish pullout from Nabucco, not least because the project has göne nowhere and key German firms already showed signs of abandoning it, but also because TANAP makes it superfluous[30]. Wheather or not Nabucco or the new Nabucco West pipeline is actually built, Turkey will get Azerbaijani gas, and what it cannot use will then go to Europe.

Meanwhile, the start of construction of TANAP has made Azerbaijan a sought after investor throughout Eastern Europe. As Vladimir Socor has observed, the advent of TANAP, along with Azerbaijan's careful management of its oil revenues, and the prospect of a genuine Trans-Caspian pipeline has given Azerbaijan a triple role as supplier, transit country, and as an investor abroad[31]. The prospect of obtaining real gas supplies from the Caspian area in general and Azerbaijan in particular has opened up a whole new field of activity for Azerbaijan to invest money throughout Eastern Europe and enhance its political standing throughout that area. Especially in the Balkans where Russia is strongly pushing its South Stream pipeline project, the TANAP is emerging as the only apparent viable alternative to countries who naturally wish to maximize their access to all available gas supplies and avoid excessive dependence on Russian gas. Consequently they welcome Azerbaijani investment.

Given Baku's decision to link TANAP with the TAP, Azerbaijan will now be a player in Eastern European economics and security. Azerbaijan's ability to offer reliable hydrocarbon supplies to Europe (and we should not forget that the Baku-Ceyhan oil pipeline currently ships over 1 billion barrels of oil to Europe annually) and invest there constitute part of a broader strategy of foreign party diversification to ensure that Azerbaijan has many patrons, partners, point of influence abroad, and supporters and need not depend excessively on any one power, in particular Russia. Thus this process epitomizes or resembles the phenomenon of multi-vector foreign policies pursued by Central Asian states, who also wish to maximize their circle of partners and freedom of maneuver in world politics. These energy projects simultaneously embody a complementarity of interests between Azerbaijan and the Balkan states, Ukraine, Georgia, and even Baltic states like Latvia, none of whom wishes to be dependent, and certainly not excessively dependent, on an exclusive Russian gas supply given the clear political and strategic ambitions that underlie Russia's energy policies.

After struggling with fluctuations and instability until 2002, the Turkish economy has reached stability and positive growth figures in the last 12 years. Despite many negative developments, Turkey's economy continued to grow and carried plenty of giant projects into effect. In this context, TANAP is a key project

for Turkey to become an energy hub in the region and a transition country between the East and the West. It is also a cost-reducing project as far as the import of energy supplies is concerned and means numerous opportunities for Turkey.

TANAP was inaugurated in June 2010 after BOTAS Petroleum Pipeline Corporation, a state owned crude oil and natural gas pipelines and trading company in Turkey, and State Oil Company of Azerbaijan (SOCAR) signed a partnership agreement in İstanbul. Turkey and Azerbaijan signed a memorandum of understanding on December 24, 2011 establishing a consortium to build and operate the pipeline. Another agreement followed on May 30, 2014 to strengthen up partnership between the Shah Deniz Natural Gas Production Site and TANAP; with this agreement 20 percent share of BOTAS in TANAP is upgraded to 30 percent[32]. The state-run TPAO has inked a $1 billion loan agreement with Turkish state-run lender Vakıfbank and the country's largest non-state lender İşbank, so it can purchase more shares in the Shah Deniz project to increase its shares from nine percent to 19 percent[33].

TANAP pipeline is planned to enter Turkey from Türkgözü border gate and transect the country. The length of the pipeline will be 1900 km with a diameter of 1422 mm (56 inches) pipes. The construction phase is planned to start in 2015 and to be completed by 2018. A total of 1.2 trillion cubic meters of natural gas from the Shah Deniz field in Azerbaijan will be delivered as of 2018. The planned capac ity of the pipeline is 16 billion cubic meters (570 billion cubic feet) of natural gas per year at initial stage and will be increased later up to 23 billion cubic meters (810 billion cubic feet) by 2023, and 31 billion cubic meters (1.1 trillion cubic feet) by 2026. The planned route of TANAP will be via: Ardahan, Kars, Erzurum, Erzincan, Bayburt, Gümüşhane, Giresun, Sivas, Yozgat, Kırşehir, Kırıkkale, Ankara, Eskişehir, Bilecik, Kütahya, Bursa, Balıkesir, Çanakkale, Tekirdağ, Edirne and Kırklareli provinces in Turkey[34].

As seen clearly, Turkey should sign projects to reduce energy cost against increasing energy consumption despite the lack of energy sources. Turkey imports natural gas from Azerbaijan, Russia and Iran but pays 450 dollars per thousand cubic meters for the gas imported from Iran, the most expensive. Turkey pays 405 dollars for per thousand cubic meters natural gas purchased from Russia and 380 dolars for the same amount of gas imported from Azeirbaijan, therefore the most reasonable[35]. In this sense, TANAP will be an important opportunity for the growing Turkish economy. Since Turkey and Azerbaijan reached an understanding on various energy issues in 2011, they have entered a new critical phase in their energy cooperation. This new phase involves deeper partnership in the gas sector and increased foreign direct investment by Azerbaijan in Turkey's downstream markets[36].

The significance of TANAP increases every passing day for Europe, as the EU countries depend on Russian gas but seek alternative sources. On the other hand, Turkey's mission as an energy bridge between Azerbaijan and the EU will reinforce the country's EU membership bid. In this context, it is a wish to see the energy chapter among the "chapters pending for approval at the European Council" is opened for negotiations after the aforementioned agreements signed[37].

Turkey should be aware of TANAP's significance in terms of energy supply security as far as natural gas is concerned and take its steps very carefully. In energy deals, it is quite difficult to reach the desired result at once; therefore, energy investments should be promoted and paid attention to as they may have tendency to change direction due to incidents along the way. As the energy consumption increases, Turkey should have

warm relations with the countries it imports energy from[38]. Turkey, making a remarkable progress in becoming an energy hub, should turn its mission of bridging the East with the West into an advantage and be in contact with leading actors of energy market in a way to protect its own interests.

5.The Trans-Adriatic Pipeline (TAP)

Although the EU countries exhibit different tendencies towards different energy sources, the need for natural gas still remains high. Another key component of the SGC which will create alternatives to Russia centered natural gas sources is the Trans-Adriatic Pipeline (TAP). TANAP will join the TAP in the Greek village of Kipoi. TAP will transfer the natural gas originating from Greece, via Albania and the Adriatic coast to Italy. TAP will be 870 km in length, 550 km, 210 km, 100 km, and 10 km of which will transect Greece, Albania, the Adriatic Sea and Italy, respectively. TAP will carry natural gas from the Shah Deniz II field of Azerbaijan to Greece, Albania, the Adriatic Sea and Italy to meet Europe's need[39].

Figure 4: The TAP Route
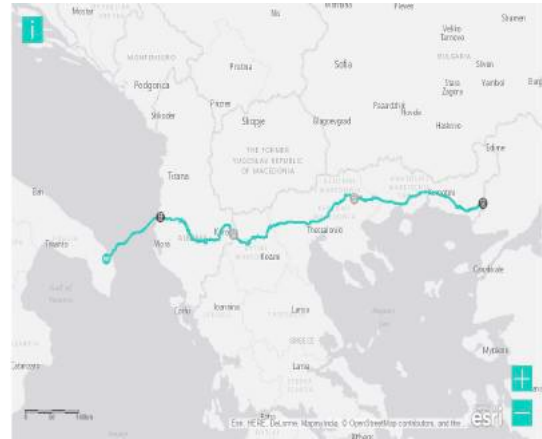
Source: TAP, http://www.tap-ag.com/the-pipeline/route-map

On 13 February 2008, Swiss AXPO and the Norwegian energy company Statoil signed an agreement to realize the TAP, a joint venture to develop, build and operate the pipeline. The German E.O.N. Corporation joined the venture in 2010. AXPO and Statoil own 42.5 percent shares each and E.O.N 15 percent. The estimated cost of the project is about 1.5 billion dollars[40]. Natural gas transfer is expected to begin in 2019.

After the Fukushima accident, natural gas became the energy source of the 21st century due to the stagnancy felt in the nuclear energy field, run-down nuclear plants, efforts to limit the share of coal in electricity production as a result of the measures introduced in the Kyoto Protocol and ever increasing electricity consumption Considering the EU countries' dependency on natural gas, TAP becomes more significant for Europe.

Considering that Greece has suffered an economic crisis for quite some time, TAP is vital for this country too. Greeks expect about 18 billion euros and high number of employment from this project in the next 50 years; therefore, TAP, backed by private sector, is a tremendous opportunity to revive the Greek economy[41]. On the other hand, Italy currently benefiting from Libyan natural gas is on the same page with Greece. Italy depends on

external energy sources by 25 percent, 90 percent of which comprises oil and natural gas. The Azeri gas via TAP becomes a priority for Italy as the use of natural gas in electricity - compared to nuclear plants and renewable sources – is on the rise in the country. TAP becomes the fourth gas supply channel for Italy after the already functioning ones–from Northern Europe, Northern Africa and Russia; it is also important for Italy to ensure security of energy supply and sustainability[42].

Therefore, neither Greece nor Italy hesitate to provide government support for this project. Albania, on the other side, backs up the TAP with the expectation of economic activities and new employment opportunities through foreign investments in the country. Geostrategical significance of Albania increases with TAP and economic stability is also expected owing to this project.

In conclusion, the TAP project in general is never negatively approached by any transit or buyer countries; and it is supported by politicians, too. However, some environmentalist groups have raised their voice against TAP for environmental concerns in their countries. The project has managed to convince all sects and proceeds steadily. The EU countries hope that the TAP will decrease energy dependency on a single country.

7. Conclusions

Hydrocarbon resources comprise an important share of global primary energy consumption, and in some parts of the world, the dependence on hydrocarbon resources is increasing. In this context, access to secure and reliable sources is more and more important for long-term sustainable economic growth. For producer countries, the focus on hydrocarbon reserves has dramatically increased due to the rapid increase in oil and gas prices over the last decade.

Europe needs new sources of gas to meet its long-term energy demand, replace its own declining energy production and diversify energy supply. Natural gas is expected to play an increasingly important role in the European energy mix for decades to come. As the EU gas imports increase, the security of supply issue will become more pressing and structural. In this context, today member state of the EU might not perceive security of gas supply as a direct threat, could become vulnerable in the future. Russia is the main supplier of crude oil and natural gas to the EU. Russia, with the world's second largest natural gas reserves, does not hesitate to exploit its energy power as a weapon in the international arena; and energy dependency on Russia stands a great deal of threat for Europe. When the EU dependency on Russian gas gradually increases, they seek new alternatives. However, diversifying away from Russian gas is not unrealistic in the short and medium term, several technical and political obstacles must be overcome. Therefore, the proven energy resources in the Caspian present an enormous opportunity for Europe to meet its energy challenges.

With its large reserves of untapped oil and natural gas, the Caspian region is expected to become an important supplier for world energy markets. The energy rich countries in the region namely Azerbaijan, Turkmenistan and Kazakhstan - have benefited from oil and gas revenues over the last couple of years. However, there is still significant potential for these countries to further develop their oil and gas resources, and become secure and reliable suppliers for European and global markets. The realization of the Southern Corridor has been regarded as a strategic undertaking for addressing growing concerns over potential natural gas supply to Europe. However there are certain shifts in the global energy dynamics that would make eventual effect in European energy map. This research is analyzing the role of the Southern Corridor in changing European energy landscape. The analysis provides analytical insight concerning current and potential situation in the EU energy market and what

place Southern Corridor would have in evolving energy future of the Europe.

With gas supply routes already connecting European markets to supplies in Russia, Africa and the North Sea, the new energy corridor from the Caspian will ensure a diversity of gas supply and reduce the risk of over-reliance on a single energy source. It will help to open a new transportation route and provide a new source of gas for Europe.

Increasing consumption in the face of declining domestic production is forcing the EU to search for reliable and secure sources of natural gas. In addition, the EU needs to diversify its supply sources and routes in order to reduce dependence on imports from Russia and to improve its overall energy security. Therefore, developing a fourth gas corridor, namely the Southern Corridor, to supply natural gas to Europe from the Caspian Basin has long been considered to be a strategically important project for the European Union. With the possibility of expanding the pipeline to include other Central Asian and potentially Iranian sources, Europe's long term energy security could also benefit.

The Caspian Basin and Middle East region have enormous natural gas resources. Currently, the maximum capacity of the TANAP for gas supply to the EU is forecast to be 25 bcm per year by 2026. It is evident that the currently projected capacity of the Southerns Gas Corridor will not be sufficient to transport the net volume of natural gas planned for export to the EU in the future. The TANAP and TAP pipelines, which would transmit the Azeri gas to Europe, are not capable of becoming an alternative to the Russian gas in the European market considering the existing capacities thereof. With this project, Europe will have access to Azeri gas today and to other Asian and Middle Eastern sources in the future insofar as circumstances permit. The gas from these regions can be transported to the EU only if there exists sufficient transmission capacity. Building new transportation capacities and developing new interconnection lines will increase the economic gains of the EU and widen the base of beneficiaries. Therefore, the EU must provide significant support, including financial support, for the development of the Southern Gas Corridor. Express political and financial support from the EU may encourage private investments and thus ensure sufficient capacity for gas supply.

References

1- Benjamin K. Sovacool, The interpretive flexibility of oil and gas pipelines: Case studies from Southeast Asia and the Caspian Sea, Technological Forecasting & Social Change, 2011, 78, 610-622, p. 612.

2- David G. Victor, Amy M. Jaffe and Mark H. Hayes, Natural Gas and Geopolitics From 1970 to 2040, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2006, pp. 5-6.

3- Necdet Pamir, Enerjinin İktidarı, hayykitap, Istanbul, 2015, pp.304-310.

4- Stanislaw Zhiznin, Russian Energy Diplomacy and International Energy Security, Geopolitics and Economics, http://journals.kantiana.ru/upload/iblock/e68/Zhiznin%20Stanislav%20_7-17.pdf, pp. 2-3.

5- Natural Gas Europe, EU Gas Use Grows 4 % in 2015: EUROGAS, March 31st, 2016, http://www.naturalgaseurope.com/eu-gas-use-rises-4-in-2015-eurogas-28875.

6- International Energy Agency, World Energy Outlook 2012, Paris, 2012, pp. 11-12.

7- European Commission, EU Energy Trends to 2030, update 2009, Directorate-General for Energy, 2010, pp. 10.

8- Irena Dimitrova, EU-Russia Energy Diplomacy: 2010 and Beyond?, The Quarterly Journal, Fall 2010, Volume IX, Number 4, 1-17, p. 4.

9- Amanda Paul, Gulmira Rzayeva, Azerbaijan – The key to EU energy security, European Policy Center, 24th December, 2011, http://www.epc.eu/documents/uploads/pub_1357_azerbaijan_-_the_key_to_eu_energy_security.pdf, p. 2.

10- Pasquale De Micco, A cold winter to come? The EU seeks alternatives to Russian gas, Policy Department, Directorate-General for External Policies, PE 536.413, October 2014, p. 5.

11- BBC, Russia signs 30-year gas deal with China, May 21, 2014, http://www.bbc.com/news/business-27503017.

12- Dimitrios Triantaphyllou, Eleni Fotiou, The EU and Turkey in Energy Diplomacy, Insight Turkey, 2010, Vol. 12 / No. 3 / 2010, 55-62, p. 57.

13- Erdal Tanas Karagöl, Saliha Kaya, Energy Supply Security and The Southern Gas Corridor, SETA, 2014, p. 29.

14- Commission of the European Communities, Second Strategic Energy Review: An EU Energy Security and Solidarity Action Plan, November 11, 2008, http://www.aie.eu/files/Directives_EU/strategic_energy_review_communication_EN.pdf, p. 5.

15- Manfred Hafner, The Southern Gas Corridor and the EU Gas Security of Supply: What's Next, March 28, 2015, http://www.naturalgaseurope.com/southern-gas-corridor-and-eu-gas-security-of-supply-22688.

16- Efgan Niftiyev, Fatih Macit, Energy Future of Europe and the Role of the Southern Corridor, HASEN, September 2013, p. 9.

17- European Parliament Directorate-General for Internal Policies, An Assessment of the Gas

and oil Pipelines in Europe, Policy Department A: Economic and Scientific Policy. Industry, Research and Energy, PE 416.239, 2009 November.

18- Atlantic Council, Central Europe Energy Partners, Completing Europe From the North-South Corridor to Energy, Transportation, and Telecommunications Union, Atlantic Council, Washington, 2014, p. 11.

19- Mübariz Hasanov, Economic Benefits of Southern Gas Corridor, HASEN, February 2014, p. 4.

20- BP, Shah Deniz 2 and Opening of the Southern Corridor, 2014, http://www.bp.com/content/dam/bp/pdf/press/shah_deniz_2_brochure_english.pdf.

21- Hasanov, ibid, p. 16.

22- Nino Kalandadze, The Southern Gas Corridor – Window of Oppurtunity or Challange fort he West?, Caspian Report, Fall 2014, 56-67, p. 64.

23- Younkyoo Kim and Stephen Blank, Russo-Turkish Divergence (PART II): The Energy Dimension, MERIA Middle East Review of International Affairs, September 2012, XVI, No. 3, http://www.rubincenter.org/2012/11/russo-turkish-divergence-part-ii-the-energy-dimension-2/

24- John Roberts, Turkish-Azeri Gas Deal to Hook Up SE Europe, Resource Investor, November 17, 2011, http://www.resourceinvestor.com/News/2011/11/Pages/Turkish-

25- John Roberts, Azerbaijan-Turkey Gas Deal's Impact on Supply to Europe, Moldova.org, November 4, 2011, http://www.economie.moldova.org.

26- Vladimir Socor, BP's SouthEast European Pipeline: More Questions Than Answers on Nabucco and Turkmen Gas, Eurasia Daily Monitor, November 3, 2011.

27- Karagöl, Kaya, ibid, p. 13.

28- Azernews, "Azerbaijan's Gas Exports to Reach 40-50 bcm by 2025", November 15, 2012, www.azernews.az/oil_and_gas/46303.html.

29- Robert Cutler, The Southern Gas Corridor Gets a Kick-Start, Economonitor, December 8, 2011, http://www.economonitor.com/blog/2011/12/the-southern-gas-corridor-gets-a-kick-start/.

30- Stephen Blank, Azerbaijan's Security and U.S. Interests: Time for Reassessment, Central Asia-Caucasus Institute & Silk Road Studies Program, Silk Road Paper, December 2013, p. 24.

31- Vladimir Socor, Projects in Synergy: Trans Caspian, Trans-Anatolian Pipelines, Eurasia Daily Monitor, Volume: 9, Issue: 44, 1-2, p.1.

32- Aksam, Tarihi imzalar atıldı, Avrupa Türkiye'siz Enerjiyi Unutsun, May 31, 2014, http://www.aksam.com.tr/ekonomi/tarihi-imzalar-atildi-avrupa-turkiyesiz-enerjiyi-unutsun/haber-312248.

33- Milliyet, TPAO'ya İs Bankası ve Vakıfbank'tan 1 Milyar Dolarlık Petrol Kredisi, August 21, 2014, http://www.milliyet.com.tr/tpao-ya-is-bankasi-ve-vakifbank-tan-ankara-yerelhaber-346534/.

34- Efgan Niftiyev, Trans Anadolu Doğal Gaz Boru Hattı (TANAP): Enerji İşbirliğinde Önemli Bir Atılım, Hazar Strateji Enstitüsü, June 27, 2012, http://www.hazar.org/content/publications/trans_anadolu_dogal_gaz_boru_hatti_tanap_enerji_isbirliginde_onemli_bir_atilim_292.aspx.

35- European Union Natural Gas Import Price, https://ycharts.com/indicators/europe_natural_gas_price

36- Saban Kardas, The Turkey-Azerbaijan Energy Partnership in the Context of the Southern Corridor, IAI Working Papers 14, 04 March 2014, p. 7.

37- Republic of Turkey Ministry for EU Affairs, Current Situation, December 15, 2016. http://www.ab.gov.tr/index.php?p=65&l=2.

38- Kardas, ibid, p. 5.

39- BP, Shah Deniz 2 and Opening of the Southern Corridor, 2014, www.bp.com/content/dam/bp/pdf/press/shah_deniz_2_brochure_english.pdf, p. 6.

40- Ilgar Gurbanov, Between Tap and Nabucco: Who is the WINNER? Azerbaijan or Russia?, Bilgesam, August 28, 2013, www.bilgesam.org/en/incele/448/-between-tap-and-nabucco--who-is-the-%E2%80%9Cwinner%E2%80%9D--azerbaijan-or-russia-/#.V1dL0jWLQdU.

41- TAP: Avrupa'nın Enerji Geleceği İçin Önemli Bir Boru Hattı, Hazar World, Analiz, November 2013, 40-47, pp. 44-45.

42- Paolo Magri, The Southern Corridor Relevance For Italy, Caspian Report, Winter 2014, 134-137, p. 136.

A Research On Branding City Process: Identifying Branding City Potentials And Creating Future Strategies For Kirsehir (Turkey)[1]

Mustafa Kocaoğlu[2], Albeniz T. Ezme[3] and Vildan Güneş[4]
Ahí Evran University, Turkey

Abstract

Globalization causes political, social, economic, cultural and ecological challenges to cities around the world. Concordantly, as a result of different influxes of migration, money, tourism and investment, urban population rapidly increases; and this situation brings along many issues into the cities such as unemployment, insufficient housing, etc. These kinds of issues push local and state governments to find contemporary solutions and think about new development approaches such as sister city agreements, competitive cities theme and/or branding city idea. All these new development paths are based on similarities and differences of the cities. With the globalization effect, some successful examples are implemented in other cities around the world by globetroting. From these new urban development concepts, "branding city" which can be implemented on different scale of cities became useful for local governments. Every single city has started to think about its unique characteristics and how they could use these as a potential for local development. The idea of branding was discovered in the 1950's; businesses found themselves in a marketplace by producing similar goods and realized that in order to increase their profits they had to differentiate their offering from the competitors. Today, the cities find themselves in a similar situation. Globalization has highlighted that today's world is a market where cities are getting in increasing global competition to attract investments and tourists.

This study sets out to examine how Kirsehir (Turkey) is perceived by its inhabitants and how Kirsehir should position its brand in order to raise its city break destination appeal in regards to the chosen target group. The study aims to explore a brand identity for Kirsehir, based on its strengths, weaknesses, opportunities and threats; and to write a strategic plan by benefiting from surveys with Kirsehir inhabitants and observations of the authors.

Key words: branding city, globalization, local economic development, Kirsehir.

---

[2] Assist. Prof., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Political Science and Public Administration, Kirsehir, Turkey. m_kocaoglu@hotmail.com
[3] Res. Assist., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Political Science and Public Administration, Kirsehir, Turkey. atugceezme@ahievran.edu.tr
[4] Phd Candidate, Department of Production Management and Marketting, Institute of Social Sciences, Sakarya University, Sakarya. Res. Assist., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Business, Kirsehir, Turkey. vildan_gunes@hotmail.com

1. Introduction

In academic literature, the definition of globalization mostly tends to emphasize the economic dimensions of the process instead of cultural, social and environmental results. On the one hand, this seems true for globalization effect to urban space; on the other hand, it is not sufficient to see the whole picture relates to urban issues. Cultural globalization term raised from this obscure part of the big picture. It is viewed as a more autonomous process than economic procedure, and also as a different enabling form of economic globalization. Cultural globalization can be explained as an acceleration in the transformation of cultural symbols among people around the world, to such an extent that it causes changes in local identities and vernacular cultures. The acceleration of processes of cultural globalization in recent years may be explained by the increased availability of mass communication, transportation and information technologies by the effect of cheaper air travel cost, increasing numbers of global radio-television channels and accessible internet sources [16]. As a result of this acceleration of the global process, "consumption" changes its meaning and dimension; today, it crossed the limits, and cities around the world are affected by this new consumption movement. Concordantly, this global transformation pushes local and state governments to find a contemporary solution to the urban issues, and think about new development models including their new consumers from all around the world.

Cities are important spatial entities in the globalization process because of their mass transportation and communicaions facilities. They constitute the basic codes of the global cultural network and are the main points of origin and destination of cultural flows [16]. As it is seen from the global flows, which have occurred in recent years, every city in the world is more or less connected to global networks; and even if they do not have a link yet, it is impossible to say that they will not be affected by cultural globalization in a few years. Today, both their local culture and identity are subject to change; and many local governments think about how their cities could be transformed according to inhabitants' wishes more than global flows, to save the identity of the place and its cultural values.

While this transformation process occurs, there are many different global approaches to be implemented as a development attraction in the cities such as sister city agreement, competitive cities theme, Olympic city dream and/or branding city idea. All these new development paths are based on similarities and distinctness of the cities, and many of them see the local values and cultural signs as a development tool. With the global circulation effect, succeed implementations revolve around the world; and they are attempted on the other cities of different countries like greased lightning. From these new approaches, "branding city" which can be implemented about different scale of cities became useful for local/state governments. Every city starts to think on its unique characteristics and how they could use these as a potential to development by the effect of marketing. In this context, many cities in the world target to create their unique identity and to build an experience for tourists and residents alike.

This paper investigates the applicability of a specific brand construct in Kirsehir as a middle-scale Anatolian city of Turkey. There are two specific research objectives for the study: (1) to explore branding potantial of the city; and (2) to understand the residents' recognition preferences to create a brand for Kirsehir.

In the first part of the study, the literature relating to city branding is discussed. Following this section, the case of Kirsehir is summarized. Then, in the methodology part, the research design is explained, and finally, the results of the study are summarized. In conclusion, recommendations for practitioners and the limitations of the study are presented.

2. Branding City

The idea of branding was discovered in the USA in the late 1950's as a part of the concept of marketing. Businesses found themselves in producing similar goods in the marketplace and realized that to increase their profits they had to differentiate their offering from the competitors. At the time when Kotler and Levy found the concept of marketing, they did not know that this concept would be implemented also on urban areas [7, 12]. O'Leary and Iredal were the first researchers to identify place marketing in the literature [17]. They describe place marketing as activities "designed to

create favourable dispositions and behaviour toward geographic locations" [17]. In the 1980s, the first studies on place marketing focused on the promotional and selling aspects of places [1]. Therefore, place marketing, today, is not only about promotional activities; it is, more of a, based on urban policy, development strategy and tourism [6]. Braun identify place marketing as coordination of marketing tools based on exchanging urban offerings which have value for the city's visitors (customers) [3]. Ashworth and Voogd describe the aim of place marketing as maximization of social and economic functions in the city and/or area [1]. Another definition explains place marketing as a process of promoting, selling, distributing, and communicating places as services and products [8].

Such in marketing strategy, "brand" plays a significant role in place marketing as well. According to Keller and Lehmann, brand as a concept shapes customers' mental brand representations and evaluations [11]. Also, they argue that brand is based on the perception of the different target groups in cities, and making branding is a multi-faced subject. Place branding emphasizes on visual identity, image building and profile in order to create associations for the cities [8, 15]. Braun and Zenker identify place branding as a network of associations in the customers' mind by focusing on visual, verbal and behavioural expressions of a place [4]. According to Kazancoglu and Dirsehan, "place branding focuses on residents' perceptions and images, a useful starting point for the process of city marketing, i.e. the management of the image of a place" [8]. Therefore, Zenker and Beckmann argue that place branding focuses on the perceptions of different target groups, and Kotler, Haider and Rein specify these groups as visitors, residents, workers, businesses, and investors [12, 21].

In recent years, cities branding has gained more popularity. Nowadays, cities all over the globe find themselves in the same situation as businesses; they include more marketing strategies in their administration and governing philosophy. Globalization has highlighted that today's world is a market where cities are getting in an increasing global competition to attract investment and tourism.

3. The Case of Kirsehir

Kirsehir is located at the triangle of Capadoccia with Nevsehir and Nigde, in central Turkey. The city is situated in the middle of the Inner Anatolia region. It is located on one of the most important intersection points including the highway network which leads east to west and north to east. For this reason, Kirsehir has an important accessibility from all the other cities of Turkey by using road transportation, which is the most common intercommunication system in the country. In the city, there is no railway station and airport; the city residents prefer to use Yerkoy railway station which is 70km away from the city or Kayseri (130km), Nevsehir (60km)and Ankara (200km) airports.

According to 2015 census, the population of the city is 139.2355. The city area comprises 6,570 km², including seven counties (Mucur, Kaman, Cicekdagi, Boztepe, Akpinar, Akcakent, Merkez).

Kirsehir's history goes back to the Old Bronze Age (3000-2000 B.C.); it was dominated by the Hittites, Phrygians, Persians, Macedonians, Romans, Byzantines, Seljuks, and Ottomans. In the city center, you still can see historical remains that came from the Seljuks, such as Cacabey Mosque, Alaaddin Mosque, Asikpasa Mausoleum.

The city does not have only historical artifacts; it is also culturally rich. One of the most important cultural richness of the city is the Ahi Brotherhood, which played a significant role in Anatolia's economic and commercial structure. This tradesman's organization was established in Kirsehir by Ahi Evran-ı Veli, in the 13th century. The organization is known as a trade guide based on honesty, respect and mutual help. Also, the city raised many other thinkers such as Asik Pasha, Cacabey, Haci Bektas. In addition to these, the city has another significant cultural value, which is known as "Abdallık (wandering dervish)." Many famous musicians have come to light from this culture such as Muharrem Ertas, Neset Ertas, Cekic Ali. For this reason, the city is known as the center of wandering dervish culture. Therefore, during the history of the republic, the city always has been known as one of the most educated cities

---

in Turkey, and has raised many diplomats and statesmen.

Kirsehir has not only these cultural and historical values but also natural and archeologic sites. Seyfe Lake (Bird Paradise) which is the home to 167 species of waterbirds has been declared a nature preservation site. Kalehoyuk is an archeological site in the city centre of Kaman, Kirsehir. It has been lived in since before Christ. Also, the Mucur Underground city has built around 300 and 400 B.C. The city has not only historical treasure, underground cities and natural beauties but also thermal sources. This source provides an important advantage to the city residents; in the city centre, many apartments use thermal heating system as more cheaper than the other options. Also, this source is used in health-tourism by a few hotels such as Makisos (Ramada) Hotel and Terme Hotel.

4. Research Methodology

A city brand needs to be rooted in reality, rather than a dream peddled by marketers. While the city branding process is built by government officials, it should be supported by the private sector but also include the residents' views and wishes. This paper is produced by the Scientific Research Project (Project No: PYO-IKT.4001.15.002) which is supported by the Ahi Evran University. In a single paper, it is hard to present all the survey questions due to page limit. In this paper, we aim to present Kirsehir' branding potentials according to residents' views and the authors' obzervations and experiences in the city.

As indicated in the literature part, this study aims to reveal branding city potentials of Kirsehir and create future strategies for the city. The paper was built on two significant steps: (1) SWOT analysis and (2) survey study. SWOT analysis has been developed by the interviewees' comments on the city, written sources about Kirsehir, and officials figures. Also, it is possible to say that the SWOT analysis involves the three authors' individual experiences in the city for years, and their scientific observations according to their academic professions (marketing, public administration, and urban planning) which are very significant on this topic.

Within the context of the survey study, 384 residents from different age groups and genders answered seventeen questions. The survey contains not only household information but also the interviewees' wishes for the city, their favorite Turkish cities, the cities which they would like to visit in the world, and their remarks on Kirsehir. In the survey, we asked people: how they would summarize Kirsehir in three words, what are the most important three things about Kırsehir, which potentials of the city could be used to develop a city brand.

5. Results of the Study

The process of involving the public makes the consequences more relevant to the society's needs. In fact, participation provides local knowledge and thus makes the decisions of public authorities and planners more appropriate to local specificities. This paper was created based on public opinion presented in the interviews with the people during the survey study. With the help of written sources, we created a SWOT table and then the table was superposed with the survey result at the end.

In this section, we first summarize the results of the SWOT analysis in Table-1. In the table, you can find the strengths and weaknesses of the city of Kirsehir. Also, the table gives clues on how the city's strengths and weaknesses include opportunities and threats.

STRENGTHS
The number of educated people in the city.
Thermal springs
Having a university in the city.
Having large pasture areas in Boztepe district.
Hacı Bektas Veli Mausoleum is 40km from the city center.
Historical values (Mosque, mausoleum, castle, tumulus, church…)
Vineyard houses
Japanese Garden
Having industrial plants such as Petlas and Çemaş companies…
Kızılırmak River
Having an important intersection point including the highway network which leads east to west and north to east.
High-school students' success in the university entrance exam.
High grainspace rate.
Having poultry raising and stock breeding within the boundaries of the city.
Having a significant location close to Cappadocia.
Having Hirfanli Dam on the city land.
Having a Medical Faculty under the Ahi Evran University.
Having a plain land which is sufficient to settle.
Having drinkable water from the tap.
Rich agricultural products.
Families' consciousness about education
The first Turkish-Muslim Women's Union (Baciyan-i Rum) in Anatolia was founded in Kirsehir.
High literacy rate

No security issue
Not having too many multinational and national corporations in the city.
Having a culture of tolerance in the community.
Having some cultural events: Ahi Brotherhood Festival, Seyh Edebali Festival, Kaman Walnut Festival, etc.
%70 of the city land is arable
Havind different ethnic and socio-cultural groups together.
Raising famous poet-singers such as Neset Ertas, Muharrem Ertas, Cekic Ali, etc.
Regional cuisine and local products such as Kaman walnut, molasse syrup, etc.
Having the Seyfe Lake and Bird Paradise
Kaman Kalehoyuk Archeological Site
WEAKNESSES
Weak hard-working culture
Informal employment
Immigrants from the Middle-East
Weak skilled workforce
Money on deposit is spare, but the entrepreneurship is weak.
Infrastructure, transportation, and parking area have problems.
Organized industrial zone is inadequate.
The number of large industries is very low.
The relationship between the university and industrial enterprises is weak.
Organic Farming is weak.
Geothermal sources are not used enough in agricultural activity and tourism.
Low water levels in the Seyfe Lake and decreasing birds numbers.
Lack of infrastructure in the city center.
Solid waste storage facility is close to the city center.
Decreasing green areas and increasing concretion in the city center.
There is no railway station in the city.
Lack of trust among people while working together.
Irrelation between Kırsehir people and the university students.
Lack of agricultural organizations
Ahi Brotherhood
Having a single cinema
Successful people who stayed in Kırsehir before do not come back or have relationship with their city.
Lack of dorm and student residences
Wandering Dervish culture
The cultural center is very old, and the new one's construction was not completed yet.
Lack of cultural areas and recreation centers
Old house paint looks bad because of the mismatch with historical buildings.
Weak visual arts
Lack of advertising about the city and its cultural value
Lack of tourist guides for Kirsehir
Absence of a city logo
Lack of festivals and cultural events
Lack of hotels and hostels

Table-1: Strengths & Weaknesses of Kirsehir

It can be seen from the table that the city has many strengths to be used for branding strategies. Many of the strengths are based on socio-cultural and historical values in the region. While some of these values, currently, increase the recognition level of the city; some others are not known, even by the local people. During the interviews, we noticed that many Kirsehir people did not visit Kaman Kalehoyuk archeological site and/or never heard about the Japanese garden.In fact, we must confess that, during the survey study, we also learned many new things about Kirsehir which we did not know before.

OPPORTUNUTİES
The city is close to big cities such as Ankara and Kayseri
Thermal Sources
The city's climatic conditions offer four seasons
The number of visitors to the city in the summer time, especially from Turkish-European families.
New sustainable energy projects around the city.
Multicultural city characteristic
Increasing university student capacity
THREATS
Drought and its effects on water sources because of climate change, especially Seyfe Lake.
Earthquake risk
Decreasing local budget
The number of refugees in recent years.

Table-2: Opportunuties & Threats for Kirsehir

The following aspects of the SWOT analysis seem especially significant: on the strength side, a rich socio-cultural heritage along with unique wandering dervish (Abdal) culture and Ahi Brotherhood. On the weakness side, the lack of a city brand and low identification of inhabitants with the city is a liability in regards to tourism. The lack of a brand makes Kirsehir less distinguishable from other cities in the same region, such as Nevsehir, Konya, Kayseri.

Within the context of the survey study, 384 residents from different age groups and genders answered seventeen questions. In this paper, the questions which focus on how do Kirsehir inhabitants perceive their own city have been analyzed. Explaining inhabitants' views on the city, the profile of interviewees will be presented.

44%

56%

■ Woman ■ Man
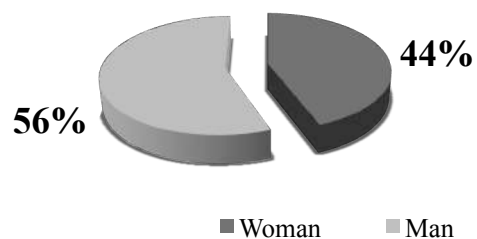
Table-3: Gender Distribution of the Interviewees

%56 of the people who attended the survey were men. This is a very meaningful distribution to see gender role while perceiving the city. Also, another important distribution in the study was the interviewees' hometowns. This was a very significant point because it helps to understand how people' knowledge

was shaped by the time that they spent in the city. %51 of the interviewees were born in Kirsehir.
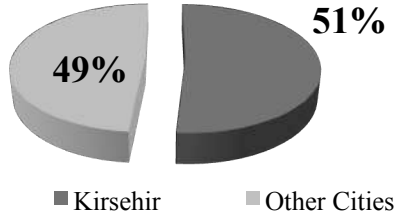
Table-4: Hometown Distribution of the Interviewees

The age distribution of the interviewees is also very meaningful for this study because young people are more concerned about the branding process. They are not conservative like senior citizens about their hometown; therefore, they can criticise the city where they live easier.
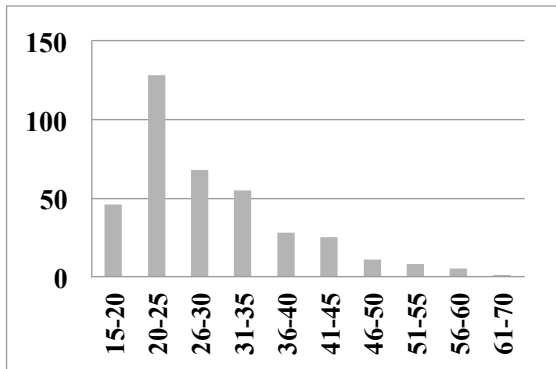
Table-5: Age distribution in the Interviewees

Interviewees were asked to choose three words which remind them of Kirsehir (Table-6). The results show that interviewees identify Kirsehir with Neset Ertas, one of the most famous musicians in Turkey, who was born in Kirsehir. The other most repeated two answers were also about famous historical figures who lived in Kirsehir such as Cacabey, Ahi Evran. These three answers are mostly given by both Kırsehir people and interviewees who are from other cities. Ahilik (Ahi Brotherhood), City Park which was built in the last years, and molasse syrup, which became famous with the brand of Akıllı Pekmez (Clever Syrup) are the other most repeated answers by the interviewees.
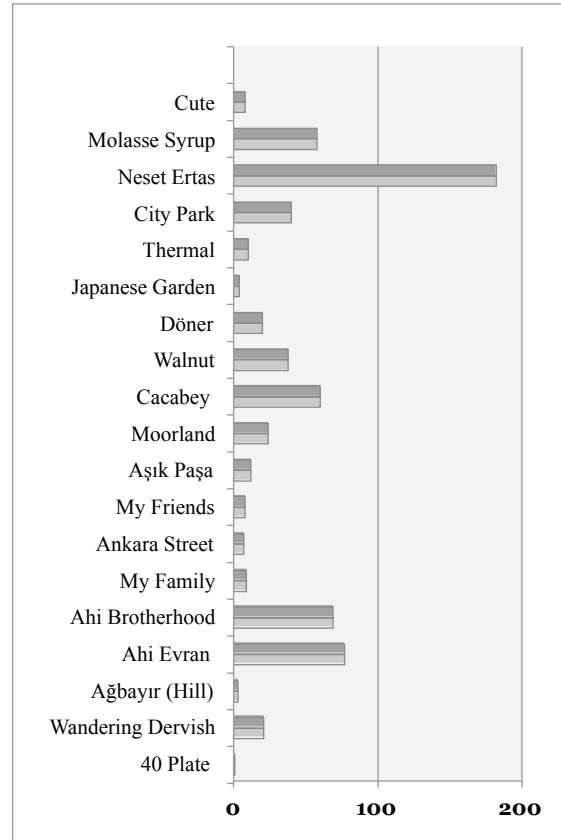
Table-6: What reminds of you Kirsehir?

In order to determine the interviewees' primary word association with Kirsehir, they were asked to name the first thing that comes to mind when they think of Kirsehir. The results show that people who have been in Kırsehir for a long time, associate Kirsehir with moorland, streets' names, and with undeveloped, small and quite characteristics of the city. Further associations were, again, Ahi Brotherhood (Ahilik), Wandering Dervish (Abdallar), sincere, boring. The answers of cute and small were used by both interviewees who are from Kirsehir and others who are from other cities; this is why these two answers were the most repeated ones in the survey study.
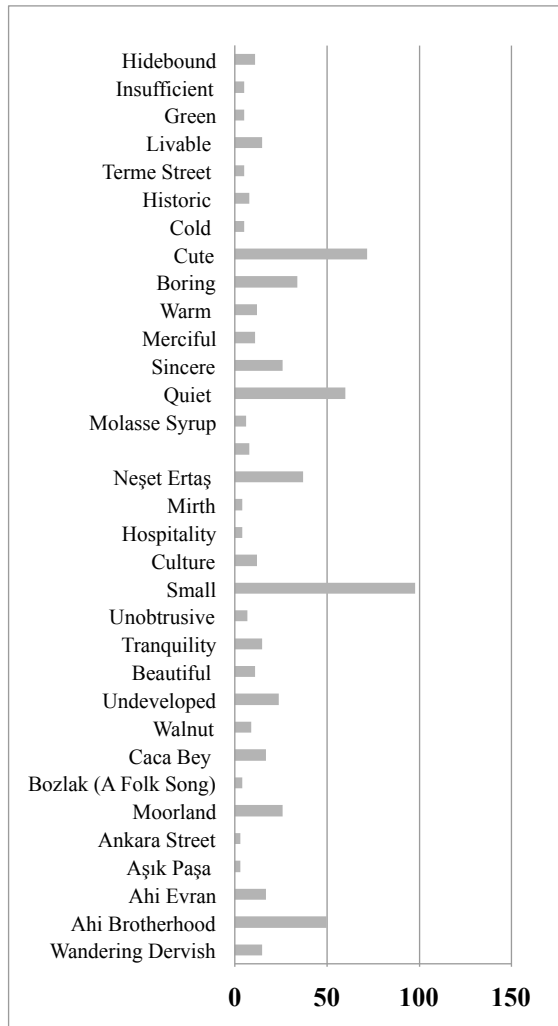
Table-7: How would you describe Kirsehir in three words?

6. Conclusion

As previously stated, this paper presents one part of a scientific research project which is done at the Ahi Evran University. Therefore, this paper can be seen as the first step for the branding process of Kirsehir. The aim of the paper was to investigate how Kirsehir is perceived by its residents, and what can be used as a brand from the city's historical, cultural, socio-economic values.

In order to this, Kirsehir's identity was first to be examined. This was done by summarizing written sources about the city on the SWOT tables. The goal of this analysis was to uncover Kirsehir's desired image. Then, Kirsehir inhabitants' image of the city was examined by the help of survey results. The overlap of these two images is considered to be Kirsehir's actual/ true identity.

The research showed that Kirsehir's true identity consists of the following components:

small, quite and cute. Besides of these, the city is associated with Neset Ertas, Ahi Evran and Cacabey who are the most important persons in the city's history. The city's geographic features are also mentioned in the study such as moorland, flat, etc.

It should be mentioned here that this study shows that the city of Kirsehir has many significant values to create a brand as a small middle-Anatolian city; all the important clues for the branding process are implicited in the inhabitants' wishes. If the local government spends more energy in the branding process and provides community participation into the process; Kirsehir can be a branded city, which attracts tourist, and supplies local economic development based on this idea in future years.

Consequently, we should underline that inhabitants of the city wish for a developed city and for this, they are ready to walk together with the local authorities. They are aware of the city's potantials which could be used for the branding process besides urban issues in the city. As a middle-scale Anatolian city, Kirsehir shows properties to be branded but it needs a small touch by the local government. This touch should be shaped by the wishes of the Kirsehir people and cooccured by non governmental organizations in the city, the university located in Kirsehir, and inhabitants of the city.

7. References

[1] G. J. Ashworth and H. Voogd, *Selling the city: marketing approaches in public sector urban planning.* London: Belhaven, 1990.

[2] S.C. Beckmann and S. Zenker, Place Branding: A Multiple Stakeholder Perspektive, 41st Europen Marketing Academy Conference, Lisbon, Portugal, 22-25 May, 2012.

[3] E. Braun, *City Marketing: Towards An Integrated Approach.* Rotterdam: Erasmus Research Institute of Management (ERIM), 2008.

[4] E. Braun, M. Kavaratzis and S. Zenker, My city – my brand: the role of residents in place banding. 50th European Regional Science Association Congress, Jönköping, Sweden, 2010.

[5] K. Dinnie, *City Branding: Theory and Cases.* Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.

[6] G. Hankinson, Location branding: a study of the branding practices of 12 English cities. Brand Management, 9(2), 2001, pp.127-142.

[7] M. Kavaratzis, *From City Marketing to City Branding: An Interdiciplinary Analysis with Reference to Amsterdam, Budapest and Athens,*

PhD thesis, Groningen: Rijksuniversiteit Groningen, 2008.

[8] I. Kazancoglu and T. Dirsehan, Exploring Brand Experience Dimensions for Cities and Investigating Their Effects on Loyalty to a City, *Business and Economics Research Journal,* V.5, n.1, 2014, pp.17-37.

[9] K.L. Keller, Conceptualising, measuring and managing customer-based brand equity. *Journal of Marketing*, 57(1), 1993, pp.1-22.

[10] W.G. Keller, C. Lee and S.J. Hiemstra, Effects of an online virtual community on customer loyalty and travel product purchases. *Tourism Management*, 25, 2004, pp. 343-355.

[11] K.L. Keller and D. Lehmann, Brands and Branding: Research Findings and Future Priorities. *Marketing Science*, 25, 6, 2006, pp. 740-759.

[12] P. Kotler, D.H. Haider and I. Rein, *Marketing Places: Attracting Investment, Industry, and Tourism to Cities, States, and Nations.* New York: The free Press, 1993.

[13] P. Kotler, C. Asplund, I. Rein and D. Haider, Marketing places- Europe. Harlow, UK: Pearson Education, 1999.

[14] P. Kotler and D. Gertner, Country as Brand, Product, and Beyond: A Place Marketing and Brand Management Perspective. Journal of Brand Management, 9, 4-5, 2002, pp. 249-261.

[15] A. Lucarelli and P.O. Berg, City Branidng: A State-of-the-Art Review of the Research Domain. *Journal of Place Management and Development*, (1), 2011.

[16] J. Nijman, Cultural Globalization and the Identity of Place: The Reconstruction of Amsterdam, *The Urban Geography Reader*, (Ed. Nicholas R. Fyfe & Judith T. Kenny), Routledge Urban Reader Series, Great Britain, 2005, pp. 93-102.

[17] R. O'Leary and I. Iredal, The marketing concept: quo vadis? European Journal of Marketing, 10, 3, 1976, pp. 146-157.

[18] B. Parkerson and J. Saunders, City Branding: Can Goods and Services Branding Models be used to Brand Cities? *Place Branding,* 1(3), 2004, pp. 242-264.

[19] S. Zenker, E. Knubben and E. Braun, The Place Brand Centre- A Conceptual Approach for the Brand Management of Places. Presented: 39th European Marketing Academy Conference, Copenhagen, Denmark, 2010.

[20] S. Zenker, E. Knubben, and S.C. Beckmann, Your city, my city, their city, our city— different perceptions of a place brand by diverse target groups. 6th International Conference Thought Leaders in Brand Management Lugano, Switzerland, April 18-20, 2010.

[21] S. Zenker and S.C. Beckmann, My place is not your place – different place brand knowledge by different target groups. Journal of Place Management and Development, 6(1), 2013, pp. 6-17.

Earthquake Resistant Design In Architectural Education From Design To Application: Comparison Of Design And Application Samples

Bedriye Asımgil, Barış Özkul, Erkan Karaman
Balıkesir University, Architecture Faculty, Department of Architecture
basimgil@hotmail.com

Abstract. Structural system   refers to a structure's load-bearing sub-systems in civil engineering. Structural system transfers to building loads to along the load bearing elements interconnected with them. Architect's knowledge about structural systems is essential for resistant and high-performance building structure. Insufficient knowledge of the architects on structural system is one of the most important causes of defects in the structure, as a static and dynamic. Architecture design errors are seen clearly, especially after the 1999 earthquake in Turkey. Designing earthquake-resistant buildings is the basis of architectural education. But, the painful consequences of the earthquake led to the questioning of architectural education. In particular, the structural system curriculum is scrutinized that is taught by architecture faculty. In this study; density of carrier systems in some university curriculum in architecture department of Turkey will be compared with universities in Japan and United States. In this examination, it was observed that the structural system curriculum of architecture department in Turkey was inadequate compared to other countries. To reduce earthquake damages, structural system curriculum should be increase. In this study conducted for the structural system curriculum, the process up design to the application will be explored through examples of contributions to the theory and practice courses in Japan and United States samples.

Keywords: Earthquake resistant design, archiitectural educatıon, Curriculum, Japan, United States.

1. Introduction

According to Orhan Sahinler (Şahinler, O. 2000); "Architect is a researcher people and designs the column, beams, walls, floors that creates structural system. He/she design gives importance to the spatial integration with structural system. Static information received from experts and provide the foundation of the structural system with data. In design, architect is responsible from the spatial composition the fine structure details, the operational decisions, the choice of materials and the aesthetic value. In a country like Turkey, which is the risk of

earthquakes, the necessity of consideration of seismic effects has emerged once again because of experienced in recent earthquakes. The architectural design to earthquake resistant is very important approach designed with awareness of structural system because of design phase of building structure and general rules determined by the architect. (Küçük, D.2006)

Architectural education covers a wide area encompassing the numerous sciences and the art branches. The overall aim; is to design the most suitable artificial environment for

human and society. There are many responsibilities of the architectural profession. The most important responsibility of the architectural profession is to assess users' requests and to investigate the design and implementation alternatives. This situation could be possible provided that the architect who will serve to architectural profession must be trained in a very good way. (Taş, M., Taş, N., Çosgun, N. 2004).

The architectural design to earthquake resistant and building's construction require having robust structural knowledge and realistic structure behavior knowledge. In addition to structural knowledge, it requires information about the relevant regulations beyond the superficial knowledge. (Eğitim Komisyonu, Deprem Surası. 2004). The aim of the courses in the curriculum, is to gain these qualifications to architecture students. According to Charleson, the undergraduate architecture students must have the following characteristics before graduating: The architecture student should be have the structural element knowledge for the analysis and design of structural element. The architecture student should be have the structural sizing knowledge to determine the size of the columns and beams. The architecture student should be have ability to understand the concrete strength and carrier performance. The architecture student should know the structure layout that can resist against to gravity and to lateral loads and should use this knowledge in designs. The architecture student should know structural behavior of the floor and this structural behaviour how it affects building design, performance and architectural applications. The architecture student should understand the importance of regular structure in meeting the building's earthquake effect. The architecture student should know the interaction of structured and unstructured elements and should know implementing the appropriate strategy. The architecture student should be aware which type building structure and building material will improve quality in building design. (Charleson, A., W. 1995).

2. Methodology of the study

To design earthquake-resistant buildings is the basis of architectural education.

The painful consequences of the earthquake led to the questioning of architectural education. Especially, course contents in architecture department is investigated that the architecture departments have adequate course content or not as to earthquake resistant design.

The effect of the seismic safety of the architectural design and the importance to structural system given by architects are examined with examples. In the scope of work, education programs of important architecture faculties are researched in our country.
The intensity of the structural system course content resistant to earthquake of architecture departments of some universities in Turkey are compared with America United States universities and Japan universities.
As a result, in the process of design up to implementation, contributions to the theory and practice of course content resistant to earthquake will researched with samples.

3. Building design resistant to earthquake in the architectural practice change

The concept of "Earthquake resistance" means designing a structure with calculation and implementation in human mind according to current seismic code. It is thought that the design appropriate to seismic code provide to safety against earthquakes loads. However, this and similar comments, when tested is partly accurate. (Zacek, 2000a).

The aim of the earthquake regulations is not prevent damage of the structure, the aim is to avoid life loss. The structure can undergo structural and non-structural damage in under the large amount earthquake intensity, as long as the building did not collapse, regulations are considered that was achieved their goal (Arnold et al., 1982).

Therefore, the damages during earthquakes stems from incorrect design often although continuous development of seismic regulations, laws and regulations that strictly enforced. Even in countries such as US, Japan, Italy, with the quality of materials and applications over a certain level is seen. (Figure 1 and Figure 2).

Figure 1. In 1995 Kobe Earthquake, the first and third floors were collapsed totally because of irregularities in planning between adjacent floors of building. In Kobe earthquake, the total collapse of the ground floor depends on the soft layer arrangement in architectural planning. (Clark, W. Peter, Kobe Collection, Nisee) (Niseehttp://nisee.berkeley.edu/images/servlet/EqiisDetail?slide=K0068).

Figure 2. The collapse of the apartment on the ground floor depending on the effect of soft floor arrangement. (California earthquake in, 1994, Northridge).

Earthquake resistant design is not only a problem to be solved by addressing the structural system according to the seismic action. When integrated with proper form and accordingly appropriate structural architectural design, construction is earthquake resistant building. Therefore, the architectural design work in the structure should be addressed as a whole problem in terms of earthquake. The experiences of the earthquake in Turkey and the world, reveal the need that earthquake resistant design should start in the architectural design phase. (Bayülke, N. 1998). Wang who is conducting studies on earthquake damage in Algeria, the United States and Japan, in his research on structures damaged in California, concluded that the architectural design decisions were more clearly decisive than the other design decisions in some damaged structure samples. (Charleson, 1995).

Architect, acting freely in design, should aim appropriate form, structure, material and construction techniques, while designing earthquake resistant structures. This approach will help keep standing of structure.

The important factor affecting the design of earthquake-resistant structures no doubt is the technological level of the country. When you look at the world practice, it is possible to see really interesting examples. For example, it is known that Osaka-Kansai Airport in Japan each year have structural collapsed average 10-15cm. Structural collapse is removed by the jack every year. Although Japan seismicity activity, appropriate technologies have been developed and have been implemented in accordance with such structures.

When it was studied Mimar Sinan buildings who is an architect or engineer still being debated, it is seen that he designed buildings structures resistance to earthquake loads. Therefore, the structure seems to be standing still despite the earthquake.

To build earthquake-resistant structures is possible through the intertwining of construction engineering and architecture disciplines.

Japanese Union of Architects consists the half of architect and the other half of is civil

engineer. Therefore, in our country in the earthquake zone, architects and earthquake engineers should collectively work with without distinction.

The new materials brings new solutions as a result of the enforcement system. Therefore, today's steel, glass designs, designs that require special manufacturing line, details, such as requiring special structural system design or architect's 10-15 m console demands also requires work together and disciplined.

Lately, after the entry into force of the earthquake law, construction engineers' efforts to be effective on construction process and theirs demands on structural system without the consent of the architect arises.

Seen from this point of view, the negativities experienced in the past, building production requires as a unitary structure production of building.

Especially, the soft floor arrangement resulted eighty per cent building by collapse in Turkey is a matter to be considered. It is seen that the by the soft floor strengthening of existing buildings may been reduced demolition. It's not just in the cities, villages, even in residential areas, 2-story building's ground floor is used as a shop. It is known that functional changes lead to the formation of soft floor. As a precaution, curtain walls is to build or to suggest strong structures is possible with architects' and engineers' collective works. It is possible to design and to build large-span apartment blocks, as in California or Holland. At this point, there is a great responsibility on the architect. This responsibility requires knowledge based on analysis that learned and detailed. For example, former Interpreter Newspaper building in Istanbul with 10 m console openness is still standing. All these samples point to structural system knowledge in architectural education.

Besides the structural system knowledge, there is an architectural language coming centuries that will continue. Architect through architectural language, reveals a cultural level and art work. Architectural work while ensuring the continuity of culture, also reveal the age's architectural language.

Architect and engineer should make preliminary design, especially, the important decisions and steps should act together.

Architect as a building expert, whether the beam hanging beams, curtain systems to be placed close to the center of rigidity of the structure, space solutions and wall openings, floor type, unless they have sufficient static information about the construction materials, cannot make earthquake resistant design, freely.

At this stage, the concept of earthquake engineering is a concept used in the construction industry, commonly.

3.1 The concept of earthquake engineering

Although Earthquake engineering is a relatively new concept, gained momentum after the 1960 earthquake as a science discipline. Before 10-15 years, the flexible structures were important structural behavior for building. For this reason, the designers avoided from curtain system. Later, it is seen that curtain systems carried more load and seismic load. At this stage, there are many lessons that can be learned from the earthquake living countries, often.

The architects and engineers who make research on the cracks in the beams, declared that the building was destroyed. According to the Japanese earthquake engineering, demolition decision should be taken for earthquake-damaged buildings, because the cost of strengthen the building will be more. Even, damage of combination of beam-column joints is sufficient reason to remove the demolition order for the building.

Ensure the safety of lives in earthquake engineering is also very important issue. In this sense, the new materials and new technologies, such as isolator type materials absorbing earthquake energy placed under the building base, have made significant progress in ensuring the life safety without building's collapse.

3.2 Changing trends in architecture education and earthquake engineering concept

Although the earthquake engineering is very basic and general concept,is a science

branch including many concept which each one have specific content. Building Structure, Structure Theory, Structural Units, Structural Mechanics, Structural Design Analysis, Structural Design Method, Mechanics and Seismic Design of Building Structures are some of these concepts.

In many university's department of architecture in the world, course content are taught analyzing the structural behavior of building during an earthquake, such as structure-specific structural and seismic design methodologies, system design methodologies and system mechanic.

In the next part of the study, structural system course contents located in architecture curriculum in Turkey, America and Japan will be compared. Before this comparison, the current state of earthquake-resistant structural system lessons and problems will focus.

Architectural design decisions require transitions from technical level to practical information, or in other words, from passive information to active cognition.

Therefore, the design studio's role is critical. The design studios offer to students a transition medium for real applications. (Heylighen et al., 1999). Therefore, architectural education should demonstrate unique combination of studio and design focused method, based on the traditional course. In addition to studio education, architectural education should use a unique approach combining methods from various disciplines that contribute to creativity and art. The design studios are the focal point of architectural education called, talked and discussed in media, as alternative architecture school (Gökmen et al., 2003).

Therefore, earthquake-resistant architectural education within the scope of design studios is necessary to ensure the integration of the design studio in addition to making traditional basic course.

Problems in the earthquake-resistant design education in our country are caused by new materials and technologies developed in the field of earthquake engineering that not adapted to education system. It seems that earthquake engineering as a very basic concept has been dealt with reductionist approach in curriculum. Often structural system design education, determination the size of the beams and columns and strengthening cannot go beyond.

In architectural education, especially, it is seen that the recent buildings produced by new Deconstructivism have not developed in the direction of the design methods in the information structural system. Such lessons are not included in the curriculum. The architect need to improve the project's structural methodology in addition to philosophy and theory and besides the influence of deconstructivist movement.

In point of professional competence, it is not possible that to solve structural system of deconstruktivist building with standard static software packages. Unusual design solutions should be developed and related lessons should be included in the curriculum of the department of architecture.

The legibility of architectural project and the convenient structural system proposal is closely related to static engineers' professional knowledge. If it is not a very specific structure, building project and its details should be perceived by static engineer.

This situation is not different in student projects. Project consultant, in the functioning of architectural studio can perceive indispensable point of student projects. However, architectural design lessons have resulted by intervention in process of architecture design and implementation, because architectural education is not enough enriched with static lessons. As a result, in project implementation process, the interventions by unsuitable structural system proposal can emerge in the spatial arrangement.

Although it is accepted that the architect have no detailed and specialized knowledge on structural system so engineers information, architect should has an opinion on the building structure and the professional equipment. The architect should make the building design the building with the structure's main decisions. Design decisions determine the building's structural system. Architect having

construction knowledge, should construct the structural system with sensing the building's structural behavior. He/She should have enough information about section changes in structural elements and these section changes how will behave during the earthquake. In Japan's Kobe earthquake, the collapse cause of the eight-storey building 5. storey is that 5th floor is concrete system while other systems are steel system. The section change in building elements caused to collapse of all system.

The concept of "ductile structure" and "flexible building" in 1960s architecture literature lost its current discourses today with the earthquake engineering field. The curtain and rigid construction systems are called today. At this stage, this concept change must take its place in architectural education.

Giving the interdisciplinary coordination in architectural education is also another important issue. In both discipline must receive an education that will help them to coordinate with each other.

As a result, architects should be the main technical coordinator and should receive training in this regard. Civil engineers should also help architects as static expert.

3.3 Earthquake resistant structural system lessons in architecture curriculum in Turkey

In some architecture faculties in Turkey, earthquake resistant structural system lessons is shown in Table 3.1 that were obtained from research results. (Table 3.1)

Table 3.1. Earthquake resistant structural system curriculum

	UNIVERSITY	CURRICULUM
1	ODTÜ	1. Structural Behavior and Analysis 2. Static
2	ESKİŞEHIR OSMANGAZI UNIVERSITY	1. Structural systems in architecture
3	MUSTAFA KEMAL UNIVERSITY	1.Statik-Strength
4	SELÇUK UNIVERSITY	1Structural System Preferences in Architectural Design 2. Earthquake behavior in Structural System
5	MERSIN UNIVERSITY	Static
6	İSTANBUL TEKNIK UNIVERSITY	1. Static-Strength 2. Steel buildings 3. Building and Construction Methods 4. Structural analysis 5. Construction systems 6. Structural system materials 7. Light Component Structural Systems 8. Construction Techniques 9. High building design
7	MIMAR SINAN UNIVERSITY	1. Structural Analysis 2. Static- Strength 3. The structure's History 4. Advanced Technology Reinforced Concrete Construction 5. Prefabricated Building Project 6. Systematic Approach to Architectural Design 7. Steel buildings 8. Structure and Building Envelope Design 9. Concrete prefabrication 10. High buildings 11. Advanced Technology Wood Construction
8	ÇUKUROVA UNIVERSITY	1. Static-Strength 2. Reinforced

		Practice in Architecture 3. Contemporary System Design 4. Building static 5. Steel buildings in architecture
9	BİLKENT UNIVERSITY	1. Construction systems 2. Static-Strength 3. Structural Design I-II 4. Form and Structure

3.4 Earthquake resistant structural system lessons in architecture curriculum in United States

In some architecture faculties in United States, earthquake resistant structural system lessons is shown in Table 3.2 that were obtained from research results. (Table 3.2).

Table 3.2. Earthquake resistant structural system curriculum

	UNIVERSITY	CURRICULUM
1	SOUTH CALIFORNIA UNIVERSITY	1. Seismic Design 2. Seismic Tasarım 3. Building Structure Design
2	WASHINGTON UNIVERSITY	1. Introduction to architectural structure 2. Introduction to structure theory 3. Introduction to reinforced concrete 4. Beam and steel frames 5. Structural unities 6. Advanced Technology Timber design
3	ARIZONA STATE UNIVERSITY	1. Building systems I-II-III 2. Building structure I-II-III
4	CORNELL UNIVERSITY	1. Building technology

		2. Structural concepts 3. Structural elements
5	TEXAS A&M UNIVERSITY	1. Architectural structures 2. Architectural structure elements

3.5 Earthquake resistant structural system lessons in architecture curriculum in Japan

Japanese society's earthquake awareness is felt in architecture, as in all areas of education. In some architecture faculties in Japan, earthquake resistant structural system lessons is shown in Table 3.3 that were obtained from research results. (Table 3.3).

Table 3.3. Earthquake resistant structural system curriculum

UNIVERSITY	CURRICULUM
CHIBA UNIVERSITY	1. Building structure 2. Structural mechanic IA, IB, II 3. Material strength 4. Seminar: Material strength 5. Structural design I-II-III 6. Seminar: Structural design I-II-III 7. Mathematic for structural engineering 8. Fire Safety Engineering 9.. Seminar: Earthquake engineering and seismic design
WASEDA ÜNIVERSITESI	1. Architecture and Building engineering 2. Design and engineering 3. Static 4. Mechanics of Building Structures 5. Structures 6.Structural design and planning for architects 7. Structural Design Drawing

		8. Analysis of Structural Design 9. Steel Frame Structural Design 10. Mechanic. of Structural design
	KYOTO UNIVERSITY	1. Mechanics of Building Structures I-II 2. Reinforced concrete
	TOKYO TEKNOLOJI INSTITUTE	1. Geotechnical engineering 2. Structural mechanic 3. Structural design
	TOKYO UNIVERSITY	1. Structure and Earthquake Engineering 2. Evaluation of ground behavior 3. Steel structure 4. Earthquake Engineering 5. Structural design method 6. Earthquake analysis 8. Seismic Wave Analysis

4. Results

In this study, structural system lessons selected from five universities in Japan and the United States are compared with Turkey's universities. According to results of this study, curriculum is enough in some universities in Turkey, but in some universities is inadequate. In particular, the importance given by Japan where has very high earthquake risk has is also seen in architectural education. America and Japan were chosen because both countries being is in the first degree earthquake zone. Course contents of earthquake resistant design have specific content in earthquake engineering such as Building Structure, Structure Theory, Structural Units, Structural Mechanics, Analysis of Structural Design, Structural Design Method, and Seismic Design. These curriculum helps to develop special structural design methodologies to buildings. Curriculum covers the lessons analyzing the building's structural behavior seismic designs. To teach

methods for improving the seismic analysis and design methodology should be aimed in these curriculum. Collective working environment should be created among civil engineer-static expert and an architect. The importance of collective work should be included to curriculum of architecture faculties.

References

[1] Küçük, D.(2006). Deprem Zararlarını Azaltma Çalışmalarında Mimarlık Eğitiminin Yeri. Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Gazi Üniversitesi Fen Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Ankara.
[2] Taş, M., Taş, N., Çosgun, N. (2004) Mimarlık eğitimi deprem ve prefabrikasyon. *Beton Prefabrikasyon Dergisi,* Ekim, 34
[3] Eğitim Komisyonu, Deprem Surası. (2004). Bayındırlık ve İskan Bakanlığı. 512-542, Ankara.
[4] Charleson, A., W., Seismic Design Within Architectural Education, Proceedings of Pacific Conference on Earthquake Engineering, Melbourne, Nov. 1995, pp. 43-48 and reprinted in Bulletin of the New Zealand National Society for Earthquake Engineering, Vol. 30. No. 1, 1997, 46-50.
[5] Zacek, M., 2002a. Depreme Dayanıklı Yapı Tasarımı Ön Proje Aşaması (Conception Parasismique Des Batiments, Niveau Avant-Projet), Depreme Dayanıklılık Semineri 1999 Fransa, Yıldız Teknik Üniversitesi ICUS Uluslar arası Kentsel Çalışmalar Araştırma Merkezi, Üniversite Yayın No: YTÜ.ICUS.YK-02.0660, İstanbul.
[6] Arnold, C., Reitherman, R., 1982. Building Configuration & Seismic Design, John Wiley&Sons Inc., USA.
[7] Bayülke, N. (1998). Depreme Dayanıklı Betonarme ve Yığma Yapı Tasarımı.
[8] Heylighen, A., Bouwen, J., E., Neuckermans, H. 1999. Walking On a Thin Line-Between Passive Knowledge and a Active Knowing of Components in Architectural
[9] Design, Between Passive Knowledge and Active Knowing of Components and Concepts in Architectural Design, Design Studies 20, England.
[10] Gökmen, H., Süer, D., 2003. Mimarlık Eğitiminde Tasarım Stüdyolarına Farklı Yaklaşımlar, Ege Mimarlık Sayı 47, İzmir, s: 4-5.

Customer Satisfaction Analysis Of The Housing Sector

Erkan Karaman, Barış Özkul, Bedriye Asımgil
Balıkesir University, Engineering Faculty, Civil Engineering Department
ekaraman@balikesir.edu.tr

Abstract. In recent years, the concept of customer satisfaction has been at the forefront of the housing industry, and it has been discussed in academic literature as well. Investors want their residences, for which they pay high prices, to meet their expectations during construction and afterwards. This study focused on the two fundamental indicators of customer satisfaction: customer expectations and service quality. This study also statistically analyzed how customer satisfaction correlates with customer expectation and service quality. In the data collection process, the researchers selected home-owners to form the study sample. The study data were collected using survey forms with a 5-point Likert type scale. It included 14 questions about customer satisfaction (7 questions) and customer expectation (7 questions), and six questions about service quality. The researcher tested the reliability of the study data using a statistical program and tested the study hypotheses. The findings of this study show that meeting customers' expectations and service quality are important to ensure customer satisfaction.

Keywords: Customer satisfaction, Housing sector, Structural equation modeling.

1. Introduction

Considering competition in the present day, it is highly important for companies that intend to enlarge their market share to identify the factors that yield customer satisfaction, build houses that satisfy customers and get feedback afterwards to learn about home-owners' satisfaction. Another criteria for customer satisfaction is reselling (Fornell, 1992). However, this is not very common in the housing industry. Instead, the recommendations of satisfied customers to other customers appear to be the most important indicator of customer satisfaction.

Developing technology, easy access to information and increasing economic welfare all increase customer expectations. Home building companies cannot wait without doing nothing to respond to changes in customer expectations and demands. Until the 2000s, homes were built to meet people's need for accommodation. Today, they are designed as functional living spaces. Meeting expectations is one of the most important factors in ensuring customer satisfaction (Almsalam, 2014).

Customers want their houses to be high quality since they pay very high prices for them. Both the quality of the materials used in the construction of homes and the quality of the service provided during construction and afterwards are important for customer satisfaction. Aware of this, home construction companies approach customers using sales strategies that emphasize the quality of materials and service. This study was intended to assess customer satisfaction in the housing industry in Turkey. The study proposed two hypotheses for ensuring customer satisfaction, and these hypotheses were analyzed using a structural equation model.

2. Customer satisfaction

Customer satisfaction is one of the main goals of marketing and is accepted as the most important factor in competition (Erevelles and Leavitt, 1992). Customer satisfaction at the product level can usually be described based on feedback about the use of the relevant product or the service (Yi, 1990). Customer satisfaction research was initiated in the 1970s in the field of marketing, and now it is based on the paradigm of not meeting customers' expectations (Cadotte et al., 1987). In the housing industry; the complex nature of the process, changes in the project organization and unique problems in each project are overcome based on experiences from past projects and feedback regarding customer satisfaction (Kärnä, 2004). This study used seven statements to assess customer expectations. The study attempted to determine users' satisfaction levels by posing them questions under the topics of the desire to buy another house from the same construction company, promises being kept at the end of the project, post-sale service, information and communication and consideration for customer preferences.

3. Customer expectations

The expectations of customers are shaped by their needs and the quality of the service provided by the construction company. Customers have prejudices about companies if they are not informed about whether or not these companies are capable of meeting their expectations. They will assess their expectations better regarding the capacity of the company as they learn more about the company (e.g., commercials, personal contact, information), and make their choices based on this information (Almsalam, 2014). This study used seven statements to assess customer expectations. The study also determined companies' level of meeting customers' expectations by asking them about product quality, communication and information, financial payment and spatial volume. Companies' meeting customer expectations led to this hypothesis:

H₁: There is a positive and significant correlation between customer expectations and customer satisfaction.

4. Service quality

According to Grönroos (1984), service quality has two dimensions: technical quality and service and functional quality. In the housing industry, technical quality expresses the precise implementation of the project, the materials used and craftsmanship. Service and functional quality expresses the quality of the process and the stage of usage. The factors that influence customers' satisfaction include: service during construction, keeping promises, being friendly with customers, a sincere approach and being customer-focused. This study used six statements to assess service quality. The correlation between service quality and satisfaction led to this hypothesis:

H₂: There is a positive and significant correlation between service quality and customer satisfaction.

5. Research hypotheses and method

This study focused on the two fundamental indicators of customer satisfaction: customer expectations and service quality. This study also statistically analyzed how customer satisfaction is correlated to customer expectations and service quality. Figure 1 shows the effect of customer expectations and service quality on customer satisfaction.

The assessment questions used in this study were taken from the literature (Almsalam, 2014) and revised for the housing industry. The researcher created a survey form to be used by construction companies. Customer expectation was assessed by seven questions, service quality was assessed by six questions, and customer satisfaction was assessed by seven questions. The participants' responses were evaluated statistically. The researcher asked the participants to what extent they agreed with the statements given to them. The levels of agreement with the statements were determined using a 5-point Likert type scale ranging from agree to disagree.

The researcher prepared 200 survey forms to be used in this study. The researcher

participants purchased their houses in 2015-2016, 23% purchased their houses in

Figure 1. Research Model for the Assessment of Customer Satisfaction
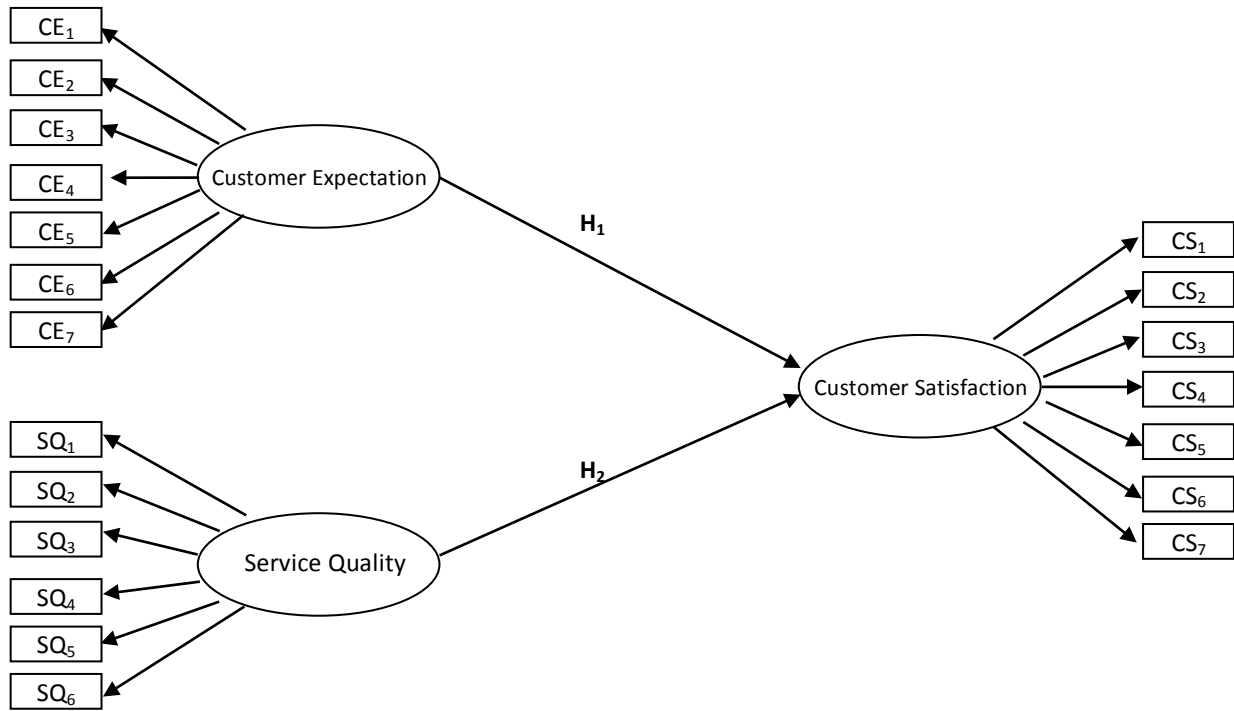
contacted with home-owners individually and

2013-2014, and 23% purchased their houses in

ensured that they responded to the questions on the survey forms. Of the 200 individuals contacted, 11 said that they would not fill out the survey forms for various reasons, and 189 filled out the survey forms.

This study proposes two research hypotheses about the model presented on Figure 1.

H1: There is a positive and significant correlation between customer expectations and customer satisfaction.

H2: There is a positive and significant correlation between service quality and customer satisfaction.

5. Research Findings

Figures 2 and 3 show the general characteristics of the house-owners who participated in the survey. Figure 2 shows the ages of the participants: 2% were 20-25, 3% were 26-30, 18% were 36-40, 17% were 41-45, and 23% were 46-50 years of age.

Figure 3 shows the years when the participants purchased their houses: 16% of the

2011-2012.
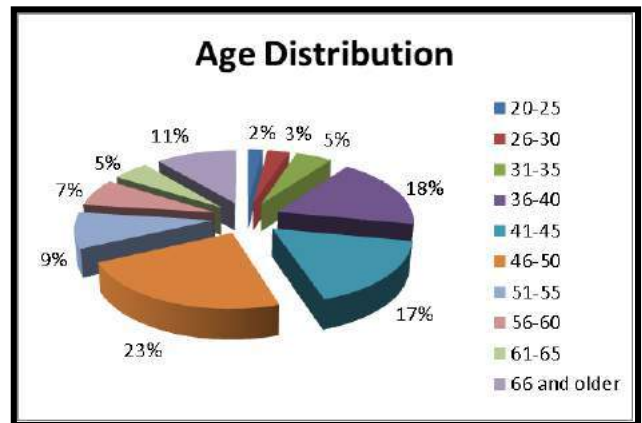
Figure 2. Age Distribution
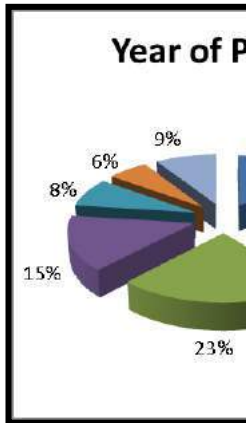
Figure 3. Year of Purchase

impossible to calculate the Cronbach's alpha value. Cronbach's alpha value is a weighted standard change average calculated by rating the total variance of the questions in the sample by the overall variance.

.

Table 1. The means (μ) and Cronbach's alpha values (α) of the variables used in the study

It is necessary to test the reliability of the data from the survey forms to conduct a statistical analysis. Thus, the study data were entered into a statistical analysis program (SPSS). The researcher did the reliability analysis of the questions on the survey using this statistical analysis program (Table 1). Reliability analysis is conducted to determine the internal consistency of the questions considering Cronbach's alpha (α) values, which ranges from 0 to 1 ($0 \leq \alpha \leq 1$). Cronbach's alpha values greater

The Cronbach's alpha value for customer satisfaction was found to be 0.903, the Cronbach's alpha value for customer expectation was 0.784, and the Cronbach's alpha value for service quality was 0.742. The assessment was statistically reliable since the Cronbach's alpha values of all the variables were greater than 0.70.

In this section of the study, the theoretical model was tested statistically (Figure 4). The researcher used the Amos program's bootstrap algorithm to increase the sample size. The bootstrap algorithm is used to increase the sample size according to normal distribution when the sample size is not

VARIABLES	Number of Questions	Mean (μ)	Cronbach's alpha (α)
Customer Satisfaction	7	3.299	0.903
Customer Expectations	7	3.756	0.784
Service Quality	6	3.557	0.742

than 0.70 ($\alpha \geq 0.70$) are accepted as reliable (Nunally, 1978).

Table 1 shows that there is only one age value of the participants, which made it

sufficient (Arbuckle, 1999; Dong et al., 2005; Peterson, 1991). In this study, the number of the bootstrap was determined to be 500 (Bentler and Chou, 1987; Kline, 1996). Table 2 presents the fit criteria used to evaluate the structural equation model

Figure 4. Statistical Testing of the Research Model

(Chou and Bentler, 1995; Hoyle and Panter, 1995).

satisfied	<---	expectation	0,216	*
satisfied	<---	quality	0,412	***
CS_1	<---	satisfied	,800	***
CS_2	<---	satisfied	,857	***
CS_3	<---	satisfied	,918	***
CS_4	<---	satisfied	,973	***
CS_5	<---	satisfied	,864	***
CS_6	<---	satisfied	,860	***
CS_7	<---	satisfied	,927	***
CE_7	<---	expectation	,850	***
CE_6	<---	expectation	,964	***
CE_5	<---	expectation	,910	***

The fit criteria derived from the analysis of the research model are shown in Table 2, and the path coefficients for the variables (β) are shown in Table 3. Fit criteria values of the research model: X2/degree of freedom=1.477, GFI=0.921, AGFI=0.862; NFI=0.917, CFI=0.971, and RMSEA=0.049.

Table 2. Structural equation model fit criteria

	Recommended Threshold Value
X^2/Degree of Freedom	≥3.0
GFI (Goodness of Fit Index)	≥0.90
AGFI (Adjusted Goodness of Fit Index)	≥0.80
NFI (Normed Fit Index)	≥0.90
CFI (Comparative Fit Index)	≥0.90
RMSEA (The Root Mean Square Error of Approximation)	≥0.05

Statistical evaluation of the research model found that it is a reliable structural equation model.

Table 3. Path coefficients of the variables

Variables	B Coefficient	Significance Value

6. Results

Studies of customer satisfaction have also become common in the housing industry. In Turkey, residences designed to meet accommodation needs are being replaced by houses, housing estates and living complexes that meet people's technological and social needs.

Analysis of the path coefficients (Table 3) showed that the effect of customer expectation variable on customer satisfaction was 0.216 (p*≤0.05), and the effect of service quality variable of on customer satisfaction was

β=1.413 (p≤0.05). The statistical significance values for all B values regarding assessment questions were determined to be p≤0.001. The study results confirmed that both study hypotheses were valid, and the B coefficients were statistically significant..

Variables			B Coefficient	Significance Value
CE_4	<---	expectation	,799	***
CE_3	<---	expectation	,398	***
CE_2	<---	expectation	,395	***
CE_1	<---	expectation	,443	***
SQ_6	<---	quality	,750	***
SQ_5	<---	quality	,575	***
SQ_4	<---	quality	,576	***
SQ_3	<---	quality	,424	***
SQ_2	<---	quality	,324	***
SQ_1	<---	quality	,387	***

This study tried to determine customer satisfaction in the housing industry by considering customer expectations and service quality. Both of its hypotheses were confirmed, which shows that these two parameters are very important for customer satisfaction.

7. References

Almsalam, S. (2014), "The Effects of Customer Expectation and Perceived Service Quality on Customer Satisfaction," International Journal of Business and Management Invention, ISSN 2319, Volume 3, Issue 8.

Arbuckle, J. L. (1999). "Amos 4.0 Users Guide," SPSS, Inc.

Bentler, P. M. & Chou, C-P. (1987). "Practical Issues in Structural Modeling", Socio Meth Res., 16: 78.

Cadotte, E., Woodruff, R. & Jenkins, R. (1987). Expectations and norms in models of consumer satisfaction‖, Journal of Marketing Research, Vol. 24 No. 3, pp. 305-14.

Chou, C. & Bentler, P.M. (1995). "Estimates and Tests in Structural Equation Modeling", Sage Publications, London, 37-55.

Dong, L., Neufeld, D. and Higgins, C. (2005). "Testing Klein and Sorra's innovation implementation model." Academy of Management Conference.

Erevelles, S. & Leavitt, C. (1992). A comparison of current models of consumer satisfaction/dissatisfaction." Journal of Consumer Satisfaction, Dissatisfaction and Complaining Behavior, Vol. 5, pp. 104–114.

Fornell, C. (1992). A national satisfaction barometer: the Swedish experience, Journal of Marketing, Vol. 56, pp. 6-21.

Hoyle, R. H. & Panter, A. T. (1995). "In Structural Equation Modeling: Concepts, issues and applications," Sage Publications, London, 158-177.

Kärnä, S. (2004). "Analysing customer satisfaction and quality in construction: The case of public and private customers," Nordic Journal of Surveying and Real Estate Research-Special Series Vol. 2.

Kline, P. (1996). "An easy guide to factor analysis," Routledge, Great Britain.

Nunally, J. C. (1978). "Psychometric Theory (2nd edition)," McGraw-Hill, New York.

Peterson, I. (1991). "Pick a sample", Science News, 140, 56-57.

Yi, Y. (1990). A critical review of consumer satisfaction, in Zeithaml, V. A. (Ed.), Review of Marketing 1990, American Marketing Association, Chicago, IL, pp. 68-123.

Urban Issues, Citizens' Satisfaction and Branding City Strategies: The Case Of Kirsehir[1]

Albeniz EZME[2], Vildan GÜNEŞ[3] and Mustafa KOCAOĞLU[4]
Ahi Evran University

Abstract

This paper discusses the place of urban issues and citizens' (dis)satisfactions in a branding city process. It argues that existing issues in the city and current satisfactions and dissatisfactions of the city inhabitants should take an important role in the branding process of an urban area. With this hypothesis, this study focuses on Kirsehir, which may be seen as an example of mid-scale Anatolian cities. The study aims to understand what the urban issues determined by inhabitants of the city are and how they read the city whey they live by using the results of the fieldwork in Kirsehir. The research methods of the study are settled on a public survey comprised of open and closed ended questions, and participatory observation. There are two significantly important results of the study found in the research. Firstly, branding city strategies based on the current citizens' satisfactions and dissatisfactions are more successful than the strategies based on visitors' views in the process of branding city. Secondly, before creating the brand strategies, the urban issues which should be dwelled on by the local government and local actors revealed by the help of citizens' satisfaction analysis.

Key words: Urban Issues, Citizen's Satisfaction, Branding City, Kırşehir.

---

[2] Res. Assist., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Political Science and Public Administration, Kirsehir, Turkey. atugceezme@ahiervan.edu.tr
[3] Phd Candidate, Department of Production Management and Marketting, Institute of Social Sciences, Sakarya University, Sakarya. Res. Assist., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Business, Kirsehir, Turkey. vildan_gunes@hotmail.com
[4] Assist. Prof., Ahi Evran University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Political Science and Public Administration, Kirsehir, Turkey. m_kocaoglu@hotmail.com

1. Introduction

Nowadays, cities are significant to understanding human future. In the cities, many problems such as housing, unemployment, substructure, transportation, environment, poverty, spatial segregation, equality, and unbalanced population continue to increase. Since the occurrence of rapid industrialization in developing countries such as Turkey, big cities are experiencing a transformation process, which is also affecting small and middle scale cities indirectly. Under globalization, Turkey is experiencing a shift from industrial economy to a provision-of-services economy, in accordance with the ideals of modernization and capital investment. In this period, while the state government focuses on big cities such as Istanbul and Ankara, middle scale Anatolian cities try to find their own solution to be affected by globalization positively.

Today's cities transform based on this new spatial composition; and this composition does not refer only a spatial transformation but also a socio-economic and cultural change. With globalization process, cities get involved in a cross-border competitive market. In this competitive process based on the cities' differences, a competitive environment have been created based on different themes such as competitive cities, sustainable cities, historic cities, sister cities, by using similarities & differences of the cities. While this process occurring, the "brand" as one of the most important factors, which increases gravity force and competition ability of the cities, is observed.

The term of brand, which was developed by Kotler and Levy at the end of the 1960s did refer "meta." At the end of the 1970s, O'Leary and Iredal added the term of "place marketing" into literature and the meaning of brand changed; it came into use in broad terms. The term of place marketing shaped on the cities' historic, cultural, geographic and also economic values showed us Tokyo, London and NYC as capitals of money, Milan as the capital of fashion. In this process where not only economic factors but also social, geographic and cultural factors were determinant; Chicago has been mentioned as the "windy city", Rome has been called as the "lovers' city"; and the brand created on the slogan of "I love NYC" came into sight all around the world, from Kayseri to Amsterdam, in all city levels.

It is also possible to find unsuccessful examples of city branding process besides successful examples, which serve for using cultural and social values advertisement successfully as an economic development tool. It is not wrong to advocate that success has been achieved in cities, which has developed socio-economic structure, sufficient infrastructure facilities and being available to cover visitor capacity, which shall increase after being marketed. However, there are adverse reactions of the inhabitants to visitors amongst examples within branding processes being developed without taking counter-measures for existing urban problems and prioritising the complaints and recommendations of the inhabitants. Examples such as urban infrastructure insufficiency in small and medium size cities, failure to be familiar with difference cultures in closed communities, social disintegration being experienced in case when out-comers benefit from scarce employment facilities in cities where unemployment is high etc. derive examples, which interrupt branding process and end with the unsuccessful attempts of local authorities.

2. Method

The site study being conducted in Kirsehir within the scope of research project, which ensured us to obtain study data, presented that local community has been supporting the branding process of the city and ready to accept the slogan (Sweet Kirsehir, Land of the Bards), colour (green), cultural asset (Ahiism, Abdals) and historical elements (Ahi Evran, Asik Pasa, Neset Ertas) as determinant actors in order to determine right strategies towards the aim on one hand and also revealed dissatisfaction against existing urban problems of the city on the other hand.

The study forms one of the sections of a comprehensive site study being conducted in April-May 2016 in Kirsehir to define the potential of Kirsehir to be a brand city and to determine strategies towards future. The study

has been based on mixed method where both quantitative and qualitative methods have been used together. While the observations of researchers residing in Kirsehir, which constitute the study site, on the participants and face-to-face interviews with the city inhabitants form the verbal data of the study, 411 participants have been reached by using random sampling method in the inquiry conducted with 99% confidence interval and 384 healthy data have been reached after required elimination. Despite the fact that random sampling has been used, it has been seen that both female (44%) – male (56%) and from Kirsehir native (51%) and Kirsehir non-native (49%) ratios were able to reflect urban population range. Again, age interval and occupational rage is able to represent the city.

The manifest has no claim of generalisation on mid-scale Anatolian cities apart from Kirsehir; however, it contains comprehensive data to conduct forward-looking comparable studies.

3. Approach

Kirsehir being able to be qualified as a typical Anatolian city, one-to-one experiences the transformation being dictated by local and central policies on spatial and socio-economic dimension with its geographical structure being squeezed between two big cities such as Ankara and Kayseri, social structure holding heterogeneous feature both in socio-economic and cultural-ethnic terms and historical riches. Some of the problems such as unemployment/employment, housing, historical and cultural assets wearing, water problem, insufficient green areas, excessive concretion and environmental pollution, which may be observed in different cities of the world, being arisen due to aforementioned transformations also do exist. When existing socio-economic uniqueness, cultural and touristic sources and geographical position of Kirsehir have been evaluated in this study where the brand city notion being seen as a solution formula of these problems and which may partly perform such function has been positioned on the applicability in Kirsehir, it has been determined that Kirsehir had much potential, which may be used during the process of forming a brand city. However, increasing existing living standards and satisfaction of the inhabitants through participation are amongst primary strategies besides deriving strategies towards these potentials within city branding process.

The "urban living quality" or in other words "city-dweller satisfaction" being used as a new tool in today's city planning studies is an important notion, which may shape the future of the cities and increase participation in planning. Many different criteria have been determined since then to measure the notion of "urban living quality" being introduced to scientific literature in 1960s. While some researchers make interpretations upon environmental pollution (air, water, noise, solid waste etc.), others form their analysis upon family life and socio-economic status. Again, while some researchers move forward upon items such as crime ratio, education and social environment, others provide analysis with subjective data such as arts, culture and spare time, personal development. While Andrews and Whitney [1] interpret the living quality upon satisfaction derived by the individual in social life; Dalkey and Rourke [5] interpret the same upon personal satisfaction of the individual.

4. Kirsehir

Kirsehir is one of our provinces being located at Middle Kizilirmak Region of Middle Anatolia with a population of 139,235 as of 2015. According to 2010 TUIK data, there are 7 towns along with the central town, 23 districts and 234 villages in the province. While Ankara is located on the west of the city being geographically neighbour to many cities, Kirikkale is on the north-west, Nevsehir on the south-east, Aksaray on the south and Yozgat on north-east. The city holding many advantages geographically serves as a gateway on the highway, which connects the east of Anatolia to west besides having an important river like Kizilirmak and being close to big cities like Ankara and Kayseri. Kirsehir, being a historical city at the same time, has hosted different civilisations like Hittite, Roman, Byzantine and Seldjuki; grown many different philosophers like Ahi Evran, Asik Pasa, Cacabey and Hadji Bektash and also hosted "Ahiism" and "Abdal" culture.

5. Site Study Results

It is followed that Kirsehir has a potential to become a brand city as a mid-scale Anatolian city when all these features are considered. The city may appear as the first Middle Anatolian brand city in following years with a strategic plan being drafted by taking the opinions of a local authority, which implements rights strategies and urban actors. However, the primary element to achieve this is to provide city dwellers to become aware of their cities and increase the recognition of the city. Existing (dis)satisfaction should be exhibited and participation at a level representing the city should be ensured to form this process. While this study is important in these terms, the site study has mentioned of two significant points aforementioned: **awareness** and **recognition**. We have asked whether Kirsehir is amongst important cities of Turkiye to measure the awareness of the city dwellers. While 36% considers Kirsehir as an important city, 16% have remained abstainer.
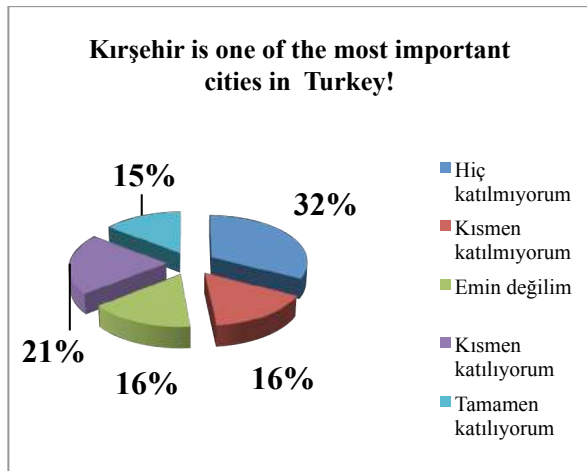
Table-1: Importance of the City
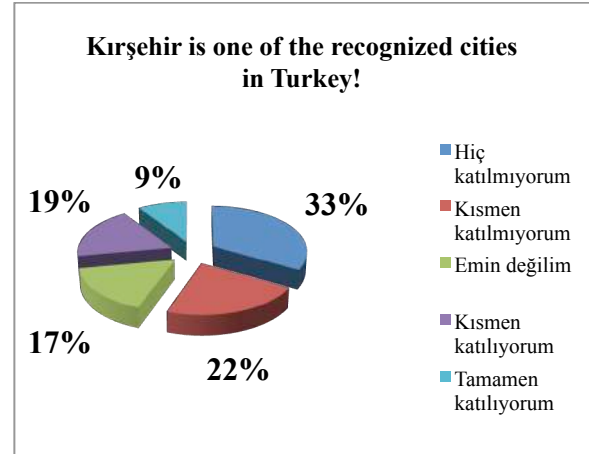
Table-2: Recognization of the City

Again, 28% of the of city dwellers consider that Kirsehir is a city being recognised in Turkiye, such a big ratio like 17% have not declared any opinion regarding the matter. However, the information that big part of Kirsehir inhabitants are aware of the success achieved by the city in education; that the young adults highly settle in big cities after this success and as a matter of fact that the number of Kirsehir natives living in Kirsehir is lower than the ones living out of Kirsehir from the interviews conducted during site study. The very existence of Kirsehir population moving to Europe between 1970-1980s as labourers has been determined from the interview results and observations on participants. While this points to "guest worker" population almost in every family in Kirsehir, this has, as a matter of fact, been noted as an element available to increase the recognition of the city in Europe.

Kırşehir has a recognition strategy for the future!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Kırşehir has an important location!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
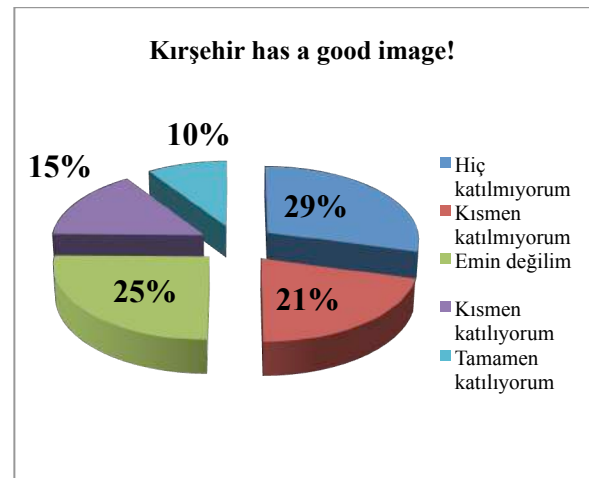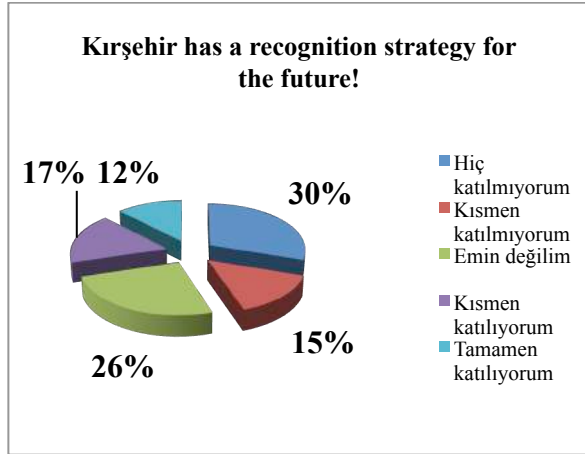
Another important point being dwelled upon in the site study is the problems on the image of Kirsehir. Same reproach has been observed on the participants almost all study regarding this matter. Big part of the inquiry participants has declared that they would have given different responses if this study had been performed before. People still being reactive to social events experienced on September 8, have declared that the image of Kirsehir has highly been damaged. For example, artisan O.D. (Male, 50) with whom we had an oral interview told as follows "Kirsehir was a city remembered with Ahiism, Neset Ertas and with the success achieved in education however, we are all sad as Kirsehir natives that we will be remembered as the city "burning a bookstore down" and this presents that this part of our analysis has been affected from the agenda of the country and not absolutely reflected true opinions.
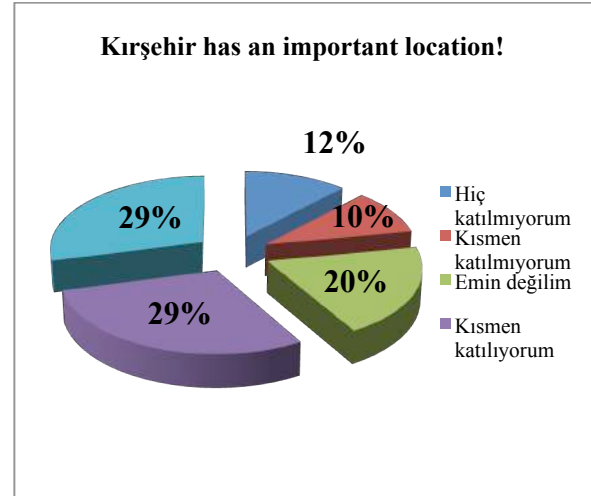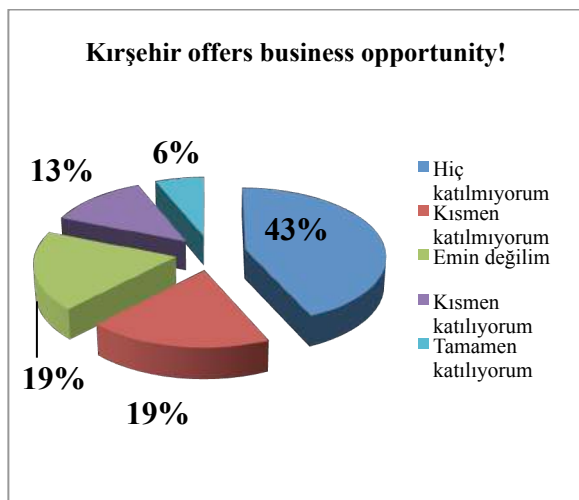
Another important point being dwelled upon in the site study was to measure the awareness of people on economic and geographical potential of Kirsehir. Only 19% of inhabitants consider that Kirsehir is a city offering job opportunities. This actually reveals that why young adults do not return to the city as result of success achieved in education. However, we should point out that the researchers have determined the development movements being experience in the city within last five years and the inhabitants in the interviews have approved these movements. If the economic activity and investments made in service sector in the city continue with current speed then, a remigration will be experienced in following 10 years.

During the study, we have tried to measure the awareness of city dwellers on the historical and cultural assets in the living areas of the city. 44% of city dwellers are aware that Kirsehir is a multi-cultural city. We should again point out that while some of the participants have responded to this question upon historical-cultural values such as "Ahiism" and "Bektashism"; some of the participants have responded this question with the comment as the city being a host for social communities from different cultures such as "Abdals", "Desert Tribe", Black Sea People, Balcan Migrants etc. However, both responses contain richness on multi-cultureless of the city.

Kırşehir offers business opportunity!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Kırşehir is a multicultural city!

22% 16%

18%

22% 22%

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Kırşehir is a historic city!

37% 7%

10%

31% 15%

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum

Kırşehir is a secure and livable city!

33% 11%

12%

27% 17%

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Infrastructure of Kırşehir is good!

15% 8%

41%

21%

15%

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Another important determination of the study is to measure physical factors of urban satisfaction. In problems where we have measured the satisfaction of city dwellers upon items such as climate, infrastructure and security, 57% of the inhabitants have stated their satisfaction on the climate of the city they have been living in, 16% have been pessimistic regarding the matter.

While 60% of the inhabitants describe Kirsehir as a safe city, they connect this Kirsehir's being a small city, which still inhabits Anatolian culture, in oral interviews. While 56% of the city dwellers complaint on infrastructural services, they have mentioned particularly on potable water and roads.

Dissatisfaction of inhabitants on transportation infrastructure may be seen from tables in which digital data on "city transportation" and "mass transportation" have been given. 59% of the city dwellers consider that city transportation is insufficient; and the insufficiency of minibus system on university-city centre axis has been determined in oral interviews conducted with university students. University student B.C. (Male, 23) has stated that the problem in mass transportation had been interrupted education stating as follows: "We are waiting for the minibus to get full to go to university; the timetable of minibuses is not certain and unfortunately, we are late to classes especially during morning hours due to insufficient number of minibuses."

In general, dissatisfaction of all Kirsehir inhabitants on the transportation system points out a big ratio with 59%. It has been determined by the researchers that mass transportation axis should be determined on many different routes especially after the construction of new housing areas on the city periphery. In recent years, the increase in the number of vehicles in the city arisen from insufficiency of mass transportation and the traffic problem being experienced in connection with the same rapidly progress for a mid-scale Anatolian city.

47% of the inhabitants consider that Kirsehir is a good city for university students. According to data obtained from oral interviews, this is caused by the very fact that Kirsehir is a small and safe city and does not put the students in a hard situation in economical terms. However, it has also been determined through observations on participants and oral interviews being conducted with the students that the city had been insufficient for university level students in cultural-artistic terms besides its positive aspects.

Kırşehir'de toplu ulaşım sistemi yeterli düzeydedir!
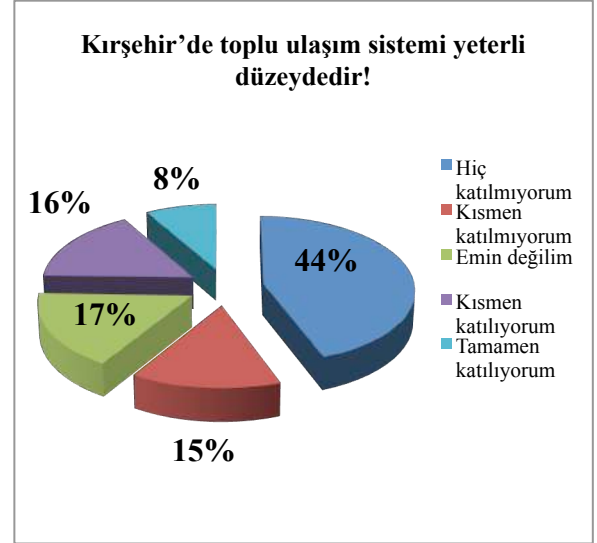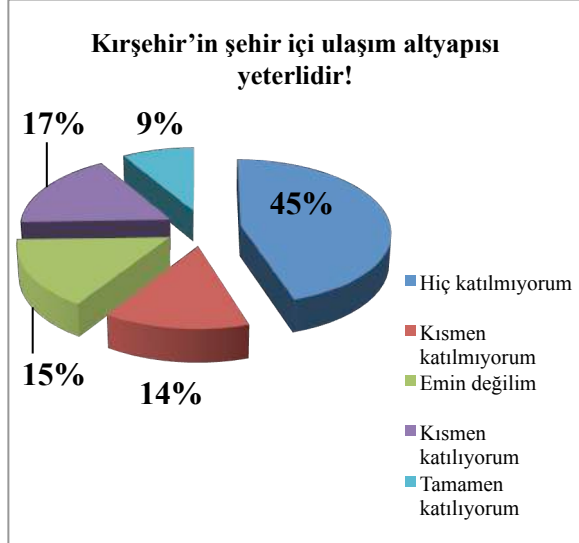
Despite the fact that city dwellers consider the city as a good city for university students, 62% of the students consider the city as insufficient due to aforementioned determination. Solution making by the city, which endeavours to keep the economic development movement accelerated by service sector, which leaps with the education sector, on the problems stated by university students will an important forward looking strategy. A way to carry the success achieved in the education in the city to the university located within urban borders also passes from this very point.

Kırşehir'in şehir içi ulaşım altyapısı yeterlidir!

Kırşehir is a good city for university students!

**-The Unviversity Students' Views:
"Kırşehir is not a good city for university
students! "**

Category	Value
Tamamen katılıyorum	22
Kısmen katılıyorum	24
Emin değilim	27
Kısmen katılmıyorum	19
Hiç katılmıyorum	43

(axis: 0 10 20 30 40 50)

**I want my child to study at the
university in Kırşehir!**

- Hiç katılmıyorum: 42%
- Kısmen katılmıyorum: 8%
- Emin değilim: 18%
- Kısmen katılıyorum: 12%
- Tamamen katılıyorum: 20%

**Kırşehir is an important city for
investments!**

- Hiç katılmıyorum: 30%
- Kısmen katılmıyorum: 17%
- Emin değilim: 24%
- Kısmen katılıyorum: 15%
- Tamamen katılıyorum: 14%

Kırşehir has a strong economy!

- Hiç katılmıyorum: 33%
- Kısmen katılmıyorum: 18%
- Emin değilim: 24%
- Kısmen katılıyorum: 16%
- Tamamen katılıyorum: 9%

Another important research finding, which gives hints on the economic future of the city, is the question whether the inhabitants consider the city as an area appropriate for investment making. While 29% of the city dwellers define the city as appropriate for investment making; 24% of the city dwellers have vacillated. 51% of the participants have defined the economy of the city as weak. We should state that this ratio points out an economic interpretation upon investments in the city.

Kırşehir has tourism potentials!

- Hiç katılmıyorum: 31%
- Kısmen katılmıyorum: 18%
- Emin değilim: 17%
- Kısmen katılıyorum: 21%
- Tamamen katılıyorum: 13%
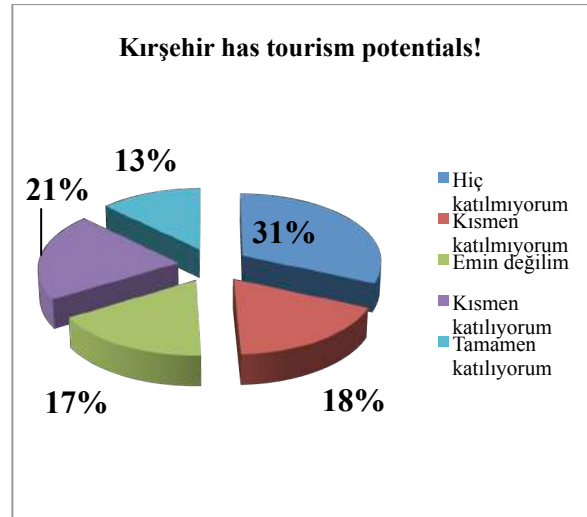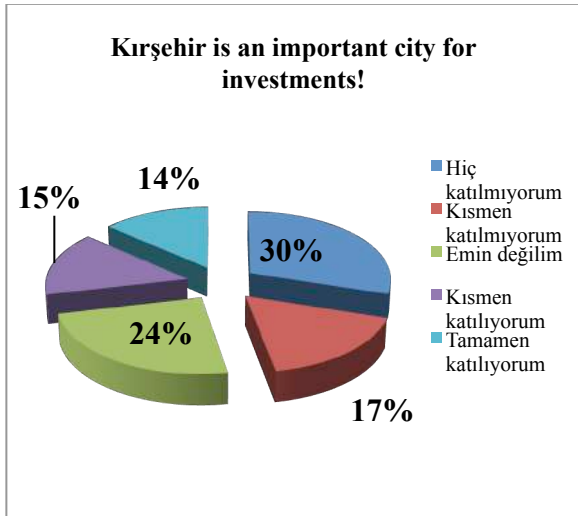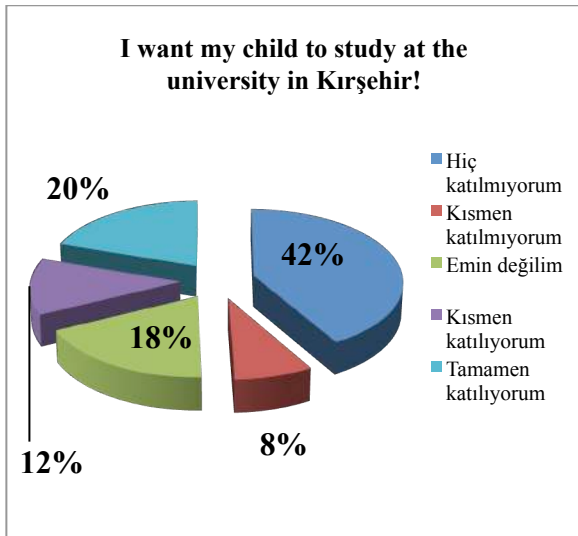
Actually, Kirsehir is a city being amongst initial five provinces when foreign currency deposits are examined, and where money flow from Kirsehir natives residing in Europe is dense. It has also been determined that the city economy is strong however, that this fails to come out in the city soil in a manner to be felt by the public

when the zoning movement and real property prices in the city are considered.

While 33% of the city dwellers define Kirsehir as a city with tourism potential, they have stated their critics that the city fails to benefit from it. Participants at a high rate such as 62% consider that tourism activities where such potential is benefited should be increased and investments to achieve this should be made.

There should be more activities to support tourism in Kırşehir!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

Kırşehir is a beautiful city!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

I believe that Kırşehir will be more livable city in the next five years!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

I have to live in Kırşehir because of a specific reason; if I do not I would live in another city!

- Hiç katılmıyorum
- Kısmen katılmıyorum
- Emin değilim
- Kısmen katılıyorum
- Tamamen katılıyorum

References

[1] F. Andrews and S. Whitney, *Social lndicators of Well-being: Americans' Perception of Life Quality*. Plenum, New York, USA, 1976.

[2] S. Anholt, *Competitive Identity: The New Brand Management for Nations,*

Cities and Regions. In: City Branding Theory and Cases, (Ed) K. Dinnie. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2007.

[3] M. Barke, City marketing as a planning tool. In: Pacione, M. (ed), *Applied Geography: Principles and Practice*, Routledge, London, 1999.

[4] S. C. Beckmann and S. Zenker, Place Branding: A Multiple Stakeholder Perspektive, 41st Europen Marketing Academy Conference, Lisbon, Portugal, 22-25 May, 2012.

[5] N. Dalkey and D. Rourke, The Delphi Procedure and Rating Quality of Life Factors, in *The Quality of Life Concept*, Environmental Protection Agency, Washington, DC, USA, 1973.

[6] K. Dinnie, *City Branding: Theory and Cases.* Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.

[7] P. Kotler, D. H. Haider and I. Rein, *Marketing Places: Attracting Investment, Industry, and Tourism to Cities, States, and Nations.* New York: The free Press, 1993.

[8] J. Nijman, Cultural Globalization and the Identity of Place: The Reconstruction of Amsterdam, *The Urban Geography Reader*, (Ed. Nicholas R. Fyfe & Judith T. Kenny), Routledge Urban Reader Series, Great Britain, pp. 93-102, 2005.

[9] R. O'Leary and I. Iredal, The marketing concept: quo vadis? European Journal of Marketing, 10, 3, pp. 146-157, 1976.

[10]   B. Parkerson and J. Saunders, City Branding: Can Goods and Services Branding Models be used to Brand Cities? *Place Branding,* 1(3), pp. 242-264, 2004.

[11]   S. Sassen, The Urban Impact of Economic Globalization, *The Urban Sociology Reader*, Routledge Urban Reader Series, Great Britain, pp. 230-240, 2007.

[12]   S. Zenker and S.C. Beckmann, My place is not your place – different place brand knowledge by different target groups. Journal of Place Management and Development, 6(1), pp. 6-17, 2013.

A City Branding Practice Based On The City Characters Defined By City-Dwellers (Kirsehir, Turkey)[1]

Vildan Güneş[2], Albeniz T. Ezme[3] and Mustafa Kocaoğlu[4]
Ahí Evran University, Turkey

Abstract

All cities have an image. The images owned by cities form their physical and social structures. Historical processes, through which a city passes, create characteristic features of that city. Therefore, the cities are initially divided as historical and newly found cities. Historical cities contain castles/rampart, central sanctuary and market place, inn-covered bazaar in their physical features while their social features contain accent-dialect, unique cuisine culture, folklore and traditions. Newly found cities lack these features and their traditions have not completely emerged. The images laid by the dwellers of the city on the region have been analysed and the characteristic features of the city shall be revealed in the study we have conducted in Kırsehir Province under aforementioned information.

Key words: City image, Historical cities, Kirsehir.

1. Introduction

The images of cities or their geographical views are revealed depending on different reasons. It is possible to list effective factors on this matter as follows: Physical and human features of geographical environment, cultural and social features, settlement history, historical past, economic status (agricultural, industrial and post-industrial economy) and religious factors [2]. The cities sustain their existence by changing and developing until today during historical development process. They carry cultural layers of cultures for which they have hosted during historical development process, to this very day. The cities sustaining their existence until today are historical cities with their physical structures and social traditions. In these cities, it is possible to see layers of many cultures since ancient times. These cultural layers constitute that city's identity. Within this context, the cities are latest locational artworks of humanity [3].

Cities look like human beings in many aspects. Cities also have personalities. While these identities may sometimes be their agnomens and symbols and sometimes be their characters and colours with which they express themselves. People living in a city express that city with different colours. For instance; the city of Bursa come forth with "Green Bursa" slogan, nevertheless, it evokes with colour green in the subconscious minds of people. "Black diamond" being identified with Zonguldak Province takes this name from coal being mined in this province. Cultural reasons also affect the identity of cities besides other factors.

This study is analysed by considering with which character and colour the individuals living in Kırşehir identify the city. Our sample group is formed of individuals living in Kırşehir province in this analysis. Inquiry has been used as research technique and the identity of Kırşehir province has been surveyed with the responses given to questions.

The image of a place is simple, general and generally stereotype impressions of people on that place. It is required to reduce the complexity of truth to several impressions in order to make sense out of the environment. The image of location is formed by acting in a selective manner. Whether location images typically are physical, social, cultural and economical or combination of all, they come out with reducing or excluding other features and exaggeration of some features.

Historical cities have some basic features in physical aspect. In time, their names change however, they may come from different cultures in different periods. Cultural differences are basic elements, which form the identity and character of that city [3].There are castles/ramparts in cities when cities formed are considered in physical aspect. There is definitely a rampart in all classical cities to protect people from external factors. A castle is located within ramparts where rulers of the period live and precious documents and treasury are protected. There are many cities in Turkiye, which has such castles and ramparts. The ramparts in Diyarbakır and Istanbul may be given as examples to this physical feature. The second and indispensable physical place is central sanctuary-church/mosque. There always exists a sanctuary generally at the central region of the old city. Since oldest ages, this sanctuary is a shrine, church or mosque. Interesting thing is that the location of this sanctuary never changes but that sanctuary is converted as sanctuary of the new inhabitants of the city. For instance, Caca Bey Mosque in Kırşehir and the madrasah at the city centre has been had built as observation house and madrasahbetween 1271-1272. The structure has been converted to mosque afterwards. Third of all, the physical locations of the city are shopping centres such as market place/inn/covered bazaar. Kırşehir, when considered within the context of historical city, is constituted of mosque, madrasah, inn and triangle of marketplace located amongst the aforementioned.

Historical cities have four certain features in social aspect [3].The primary one is accent/dialect. Accent and dialect varies from region to region and from city to city. Second social feature is the cuisine culture. Other social feature of historical cities is their own folklore and those cities have their unique traditions. Tradition, in other words usage and custom is the whole of behaviour patterns transferred from generation to generation. Common administrative, economic, social and cultural behaviours are acquired in time and with the collective experience. This is called tradition [1].

Finally, scholarly and literary gathering places have been developed in those historical cities depending on conditions, views and ideas

of the time. Literary & cultural works such as lodge literature, poetry, music, amorousness tradition and calligraphy have been derived and significant personalities have been come through in this field depending on the tradition.

2. ResearchMethodology

A comprehensive literature scanning related with studies being conducted before related with the matter has been performed within the scope of the project executed. After branding city literature has been examined during literature scanning, development of Kırşehir within historical process has been analysed. During this analysis, strong aspects (potentials), weak aspects (disadvantages), opportunities and threats in Kırşehir have been put forth via SWOT Analysis Method with which successful results have been obtained simultaneously in urban studies. In this study, certain questions in inquiry study within the scope of the project have been selected and the views of city characters defined by inhabitants of Kırşehir on the city and potentials to be used during branding process have been put forth. Qualitative and quantitative data analysis methods have jointly been used for the research.

A poll has been conducted to the sampling group formed of city inhabitants and artisans where they may tell their complaints and solution recommendations on the city and perspectives on city management and development while preparing the inquiry. Questions groups being prepared from open and close end questions from which we may read the city likes of inquiry participants, their opinions and critics on Kırşehir and the potentials of the city which may be used during branding process of the city besides demographical information.

Required adjustments have been made on the inquiry form after the poll conducted and the final form of the inquiry has been set. Sampling of the research is Kırşehir Province. Convenience sampling method has been used to select the participants of the inquiry. The sampling is formed of 384 persons in a manner to represent the universe. The inquiry has been conducted with 411 persons between April-May 2016 and 384 usable inquiries have been analysed via Microsoft EXCEL after necessary adjustments.

3. Results of theStudy

The process of involving the public makes the consequences more relevant to the society's needs.

It is seen that 56% of the participants were male and 44% female and 51% of the same were from Kırşehir and 49% from other cities demographically when the findings section of the research is examined.
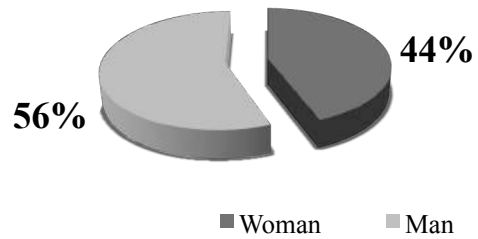
Table-1: Gender Distribution of the Interviewees

It is revealed in the study being conducted previously within the scope of the project that the philosophers lived in Kırşehir during historical development have still influence on the city when the question which is "What are the three things come to mind when you hear Kırşehir?", has been asked.
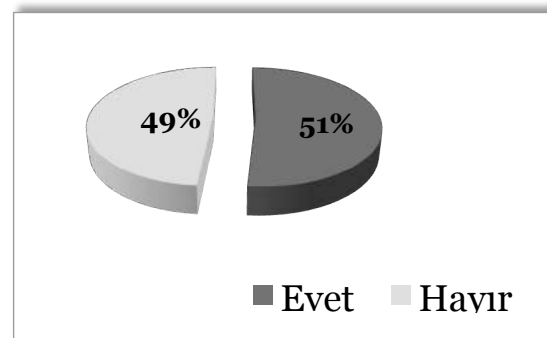
Table-2: Rate of Kırşehir Natively Participants

Those philosophers are Cacabey lived in Kırşehir during Seljukis and Ahi Evran who has founded Ahi Order and lived in Kırşehir afterwards. Neşet Ertaş from wandering dervish culture, lived in Kırşehir and became known worldwide is one of the important values of the city. When it is asked to participants what has been reflecting the very character of Kırşehir at this leg of the study, it is seen that most of the participants preferred

wandering dervish culture and Ahi Order in their responses. In this perspective, the characters being used and preferred by the city inhabitants of Kırşehir while defining the city present that they were characters from historical process.

Which of the following reflect the very character of Kırşehir?
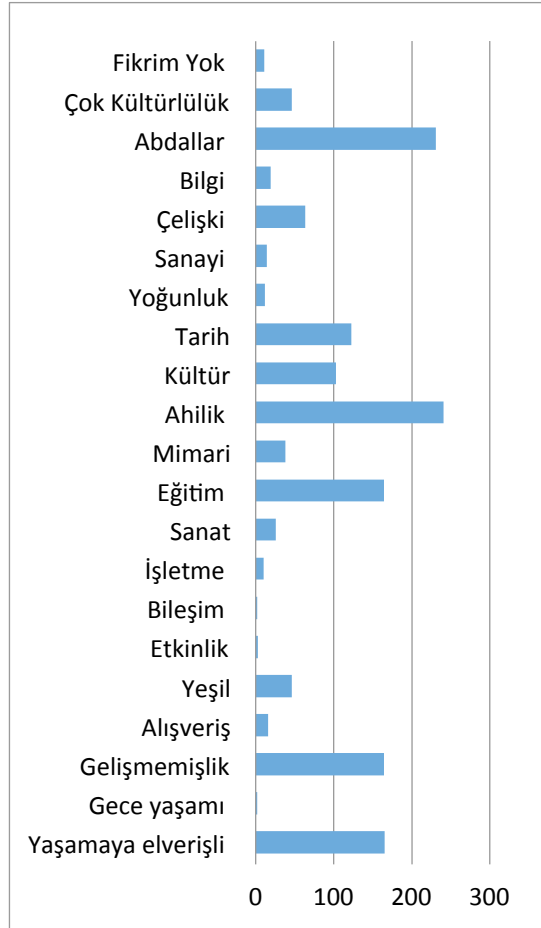
Table-3: Features reflecting the very character of Kırşehir

(I have no idea, Multiculturalism, Wandering Dervishes, Knowledge, Ambiguity, Industry, Density, History, Culture, Ahi Order, Architecture, Education, Arts, Enterprise, Composition, Activity, Green, Shopping, Underdevelopment, Night Life, Convenient for living)

The notions being second on the list, which reflect the character, are education, convenience for living and underdevelopment. Being convenient for living comes from the fact that Kırşehir is a small city. Since this smallness affects the city in a way that people know each other and many cultures under tolerance, it facilitates living in Kırşehir and makes the same more convenient for living. It is underdeveloped since it is a small city. Even though scarce job opportunities and almost non-existing industry seem as negative, in fact, it presents that the culture of the city is preserved. The city may still continue its customs and traditions and sustains its "Sweet Kırşehir" image connected with the city slogan. In another question to the participants, it is asked which of the characters given in the previous question reflect Kırşehir best and most of the participants have chosen Ahi Order. The city still endeavours to sustain Ahi Order perception. Shopping mall construction is rejected in Kırşehir in order to preserve Ahi Order and Culture and yet, there is no shopping mall in the city.

Ahi Order is an artisan solidarity organisation founded by Ahi Evran with the recommendation of Haji BektashVeli. It is an organisation which ensure Muslim Turkmens from Khorasan origin and living in Anatolia during Seljuki and Ottoman Periods to improve in various professional fields such as crafts, commercial and economy, which improves them in both economic and moral aspects, which regulates working life based on good person virtues. It has its own rules and councils. Ahi Order having similar functioning to today's artisan chambers is a socio-economic order where good morals, righteousness, fraternity, charitableness, briefly, all good virtues are combined. Ahi Evran is also called as Ahi Baba. Ahi Order week and celebrations are performed in some cities by Turkish Artisans and Craftsmen Chambers in order not to forget Ahi Order tradition related with this organisation founded by Ahi Evran buried in Kırşehir. Ahi Order has been used to grow youth well and have them professions. There had been solidarity during bad times such as wars, natural disasters etc. between order members and the public. Sultans of Ottoman Empire and other officers have wished Ahi Order to grow by supporting it.
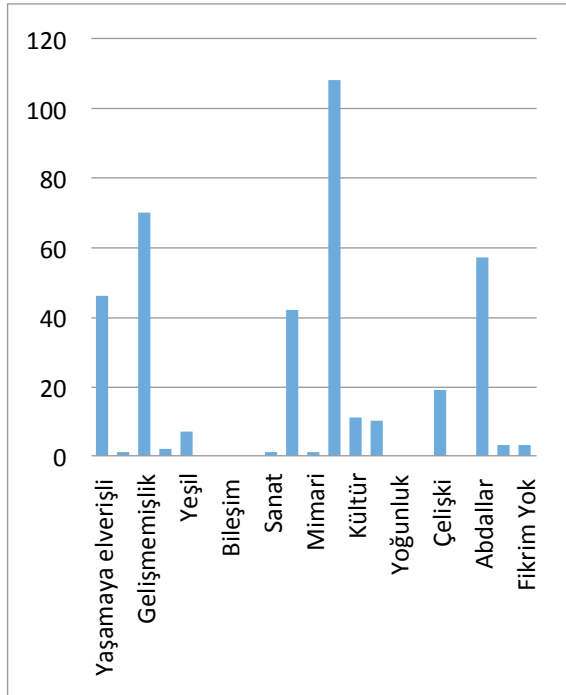
Table-4: Feature Best Reflecting Kırşehir's Character

(Convenient for living, Night Life, Underdevelopment, Shopping, Green, Activity, Composition, Enterprise, Arts, Education, Architecture, Ahi Order, Culture, History, Density, Industry, Ambiguity, Knowledge, Wandering Dervishes, Multiculturalism, I have no idea)

(Which of the characters best reflects Kırşehir?)

Second best character selected by participants, which reflects the city, is wandering dervishes.

They may be found at Central Anatolian Region in Turkiye. Wandering dervishes live their lives as devoted to music in Kırşehir, Keskin and Bala regions. Cultural basin of Bala and Keskin is identical. In general halay is danced in Bala and Keskin. The mission of wandering dervishes of Kırşehir is different. Belly dance music is famous in Kırşehir. Wandering dervishes from Bala and Keskin deem HacıTaşan as the "most privileged personality" of the society. Wandering dervishes from Kırşehir deem Neşet Ertaş as the "most favourite person deserving to be taken as a sample by the society". The instruments of these two regions differ from each other. Their way of living is to play and sing with their unique instruments and earn money. They are famous with their talent in music. Their musical hearing is highly developed. They do not know musical notes. It is told that the wandering dervishes from Bala and Keskin have come from Khorasan region of today's Iran.
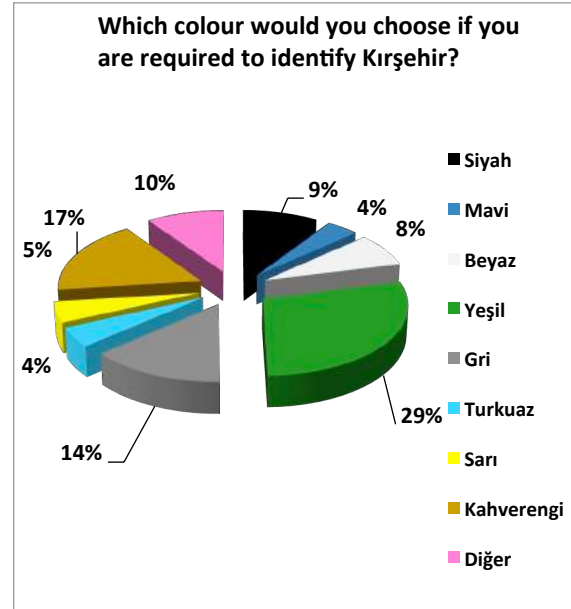
Table-5: Colour Identifying Kırşehir Selected by the Participants

Another important notion, which presents the characters of cities, is colours. Cities have colours with which they define themselves. Significant features of a city affect the character colour while making these explanations. For instance, in Bursa's identification of itself as Green Bursa, huge forests of the city, vast number of shrines and mosques and the green colour of shrines have great effect on this. Again, identifying Zonguldak with black diamond and colour of black due to its different feature present the colour character of the cities. When we have asked the participants with which colour they identify Kırşehir in our study, the response has been "Green" at the rate of 29%. The most important reason for the most of Kırşehir inhabitants to identify the city with green is the very fact that the slogan of Kırşehir Sports Club is "Green Kırşehir Sports Club".

4. References

[1] EKİCİ, Metin (2004), "Halk bilgisi (folklor) derleme ve inceleme yöntemleri", Geleneksel yayınları, 2004.
[2] Hall, T., (2001), Urban Geography (2nd edition), Routledge, London.
[3] ÖZTÜRK, Mustafa (2009), **"**Tarihî Seyrin Şehirlerin Fizikî Ve Sosyal Yapısına Etkileri Üzerine BazıTespitler*"*, *Gazi Eğitim Fakültesi* Dergisi, 626-640.

Strategic Planning And Strategic Management In Local Government: The Case Of Van Municipality

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Zekeriya NAS
Yuzuncu Yil University
idilbret@hotmail.com

Lecturer Yakup ASLAN
Bitlis Eren University
yakupaslan42@gmail.com

Abstract. The obligation to satisfy the unlimited human needs with scarce resources revealed the situation for organizations to make continuous innovation and adapting themselves to the chancing system. There is a need for strategic planning which is more comprehensive than planning in order to increase the efficient and effectiveness of decision-making that constitute the main viewpoint management and located between main management function. Therefore, strategic planning has gained a very deep place in management. Strategic management and strategic planning have come forward by the aspect of their dynamism, shedding light to the future and using data and analysis as a manual. Municipalities are the most intensive administrative unit and these units use synergy and vision that created by strategic planning in order to predict where they are and where they are going to. Strategic planning is a management system and include transparency and accountability and strategic planning are shipped the systems in to be more disciplined.

Keywords: Strategic Planning, Strategic Planning in Municipalities, Strategic Management

1. Introduction

With reference to the organization's strategic planning goals, to make long-term planning and efficiency in the organization doing work in accordance with the content of these plans is an instrument that allows the effectiveness and success [1]. Considering the current situation of the institution and after should be a comprehensive road map to walk to a different target. Overall long-term strategic goals, make a plan of action will be created stickler for goals, objectives and targets with a measurement method to measure the quality of homework is needed performance evaluation strategy. The strategic planning process that requires careful study with a long-term road [2]. The impact of globalization that has become a village that took place in parallel with the developments in the world is to differentiate changes in the expectations of society. The head of the private sector led by individuals who benefit from the public services they want to take advantage of the speed of the transformation. By revising the intensity of the organizational structure of these demands naturally it brings in new management approaches agenda.

1.1. Background

Each day a different position come to the organization, carrying constantly changing environment, the increase in the coefficient economic reasons, the overwhelming competition, technological deprivation, changing social structure and legal requirements, survival of the organization for reasons such as market mechanisms can and be successful becomes almost impossible [3]. Experts consider it their duty was to detect links between the regulation of strategic planning of the organization's environment [4]. Therefore both the public and private sector organizations in the whole structure of the visionaries, the changes to be integrated as soon as possible and capable of responding rapidly and requires the administrator's group strategies to implement it. Foundation stones in the evolution so much in the forefront of strategic planning; the fact that change is inevitable, dizzying changes in the technological field, competitive market and is ranked as democratization [5]. However, the promise that the issue of strategic planning and strategic planning how to hit the target record is ignored

1.2. Problem Statement

Municipalities with a population of over 50,000 to prepare a strategic plan for 5 years. Is preparing strategic plans, however well prepared, have implemented strategic plans prepared? The answers to these questions will contribute to the solution of problems. In fact, this development goals with a sense of strategic planning are considered coverage will be provided. Strategic planning is extremely meaningful to local governments put new goals and targets set in terms of determining what the criteria is reached. That is the significance of the measurement problems that did the paper on strategic planning in an effort to make known the unknown or what is written is to determine whether the application is used effectively and efficiently [6]

1.3. Purpose of the Research

The purpose of this research, strategic planning and strategic management in local government in general and in particular the Eastern Anatolia Region is located in Van Metropolitan Municipality to obtain information about strategic planning. Recently strategic plan initiated in the framework of the restructuring of Turkish public administration, the population was brought to the necessity of strategic planning all the more than 50,000 municipalities. Strategic planning in the municipalities in our country related to various investigations have been made. However, this research is not seen in a study of the Eastern Anatolia Region. In the study, which is driven by the private sector in strategic planning, management techniques, there is a need to implement in local government and tried to put forward the applicability within their own structures of local government. As a result of research in the understanding of strategic planning, strategic planning and expectation it is to obtain data about their views on the strategic planning process. The aim of this study is to examine a sample of the Eastern Anatolia Region municipality's strategic plan. Strategic planning guide for the content of the strategic plan examined in the study and compared in accordance with the principles of strategic planning is to establish a consensus on this issue.

1.4. The Importance of Research

This research has shed light on each municipality located in the Eastern region. Seem importance of how successful it was in achieving the objectives of strategic planning will be better understood. Institutions of the differences in the effective use of time, why waste will fall to the planning mistakes. Accordingly, the private and the public sector need technical performance indicators of effectiveness, efficiency and will enable a considerable increase in the efficiency of registration points.

2. Methodology

2.1. Research strategy

In this study the method in the literature elaborates legislation, academic publications, including subject, articles, periodicals and non-periodical publications, annual reports and good practices were examined. Finally we examined the Van Metropolitan Municipality of 2015-2019 and 2010-2014 Strategic Plans were made and benchmarks. With the municipal employees were reached through e-mail and surveys. What they have tried to estimate the level of strategic planning of municipal employees as fundamental perspective. Take care to understand the selected survey questions are shown for study. In this way, education level, age, etc. The effect of such parameters is reduced to a minimum. Corporate managers were also surveyed the working hours of the employees to be healthy considering the appointment procedure of selecting the sample based ideas.

2.2. The Number of Participants

As executive director of the strategic planning process and active duty officers and employees 512 workers in each unit consisting of "accessibility" samples by the method selected. In this way it is aimed to be more informed answers to the statements in the questionnaire.

2.3. Data Collection Instruments

The actual data underlying our research, which is a sampling of Van Metropolitan Municipality strategic plan. For this purpose, the said has reached the municipality's strategic plan and municipality located in the strategic planning teams, strategic planning to actively participating staff were interviewed about their strategic plans, questions were asked and the data were collected. Questionnaire techniques of data collection instruments and were applied to the participants in the study have been preferable. For these types of studies for the detection of multiple-choice questions as well as the attitude scale "3x or 5s" Likert-type questions it was considered in the survey. The questionnaire consists of 1 part and a total of 20 questions. Also the staff in the strategic planning team has been necessary information with e-mail and telephone. The method of this research, in particular research with theoretical knowledge library collection, then, by examining strategic plans of the municipalities in the scope of the research is a method of extraction of statistical data. Mainly analysis method is used.

Information obtained from the municipalities examined a sample is used as a generalization. Review on the strategic plans of municipalities and their research has been done. In addition to these methods, phone calls, interviews with municipal employees were also utilized methods such as observation. The survey questions most relevant questions in mind while creating the conceptual framework of strategic management and strategic planning have been selected. Strategic planning and resources as the survey sample Beykoz municipality on strategic management in local government [7] it is selected study. The resulting questionnaire was sent to a senior post with municipal employees and implemented. Our most important data source was the 20 question survey that we have applied to municipal employees.

2.4. Data Analysis Process

A survey of 20 questions to clarify their strategic planning perceptions of Van Municipality employees were implemented. The questionnaire developed to collect data from various periods and were delivered to participants via e-mail personally. The contact information of participants in order to accelerate the return has been pursued. Data survey of participants entering or incorrect filling or faulty input in the form of multiple choices by checking the markings were provided the correct input of data. In survey question, "strategic planning of expectations", "strategic planning approach" and "views on the strategic planning process" has to be measured. The data obtained from questionnaires were coded and transferred to SPSS version 23 software.

2.5. Response Rate

The population of the study, Van Metropolitan Municipality has been identified as working in strategic planning manager and director took part in the study. The authorized and knowledge in strategic planning and participate in the planning of research attention has been given to that person's individual institutions. In this way it is aimed to be more informed answers to the statements in the questionnaire. Participants filled in a questionnaire distributed to 740 units at regular intervals and the collection has taken a long time back. In particular, the subject of entrepreneurship, there has been a slight separation shortage of time due to the intensity of the participants in the survey since they cover. The return of the questionnaires distributed to the participants made 512 of them and work was carried out with 69% response rate. This is significant to give an accurate idea of the work. These studies lay the foundation for further studies in the upcoming strategic planning process and is intended to be used more efficiently.

2.6. Reliability

According to the survey questionnaire in the form of scales it is necessary to examine the reliability aspect in order to give accurate results. Reliability, same is expressed as consistency between independent measurements. Reliability is a measure that does not mean low scientific value. But also show that the reliability is made for the purposes of study means that high. In this study the reliability analysis has emerged as 0.691. Working in a highly reliable level (0.60 to 0.80) within the range of the ratio shows that work is quite reliable.

Perception and understanding of strategic planning, strategic planning, and analysis of the expression is limited to municipal employees in this survey. Besides this, as in all empirical studies, the results obtained in this study is also limited by the sampling. All countries attempt is made to spread to the general conclusions. Because each region has different characteristics from each of the cities and institutions. Besides a lack of time available. This study was limited by thought at the time made.

3. Research Analysis

Van Metropolitan Municipality was carried out with the active participation of its staff between 2006-2010 strategic planning for the strategic planning activities 2010-2014 between but has received services from consulting firms with the purchase method. Strategic planning of municipal strategic planning in order to measure employee perceptions and perspectives of Van Municipality employees of the research was conducted.

In this study, Van Metropolitan Municipality is to measure employees' perspectives and perceptions of strategic planning. Strategic planning of municipal managers and employees in a positive way and to be perceived by the municipality's strategic planning and provide some practical benefit not believe that will facilitate the implementation of strategic planning and will increase the success. The private sector's strategic planning, which induced a management technique, there is a need to implement in local government and tried to put forward the applicability within their own structures of local government.

The results related to the participants in this framework are as follows.

	Frequency	%
Master / PhD	32	6,3
University / College	336	65,6
High School / High School Equivaent	108	25,0
Intermediate / Middle Equivalent	16	3,1
Total	512	100,0

Table 1: Sample Distribution Education Level

6.3% of respondents Master / PhD, 65.6% of university / college, 25.0% of high school / high school equivalent of 3.1% Medium / Medium equivalent is a graduate school. Of employees surveyed a large part of the education of university / college graduates to be working in strategic management and strategic planning of the Van Municipality can adapt more quickly.

	Frequency	%
I am using	400	78,1
Yes, but I cannot use / do not use	48	9,4
I do not use.	48	9,4
Working conditions are not suitable	16	3,1
Total	512	100,0

Table 2: Distribution of the Intranet System User Status

Municipal employees who participated in the survey that there are 78.1% of in-house systems and network I use, there is 9.4%, but I do not use / do not use, do not

	Frequency	%
There are	344	69,3
No	152	30,7
Total	496	100,0

use the 9.4%, 3.1% is not suitable for working conditions It has marked. Looking at the overall strategic planning is intended as a more active and effective use of agency workers to be used within the network and access information more quickly.

Table 3: Internet Distribution of the System Usage Status

I do not need the internet within the 3.1% work of the employees surveyed, would benefit from the flow of information and 6.3% / I do not use, I use the required 87.5%, 3.1% frequently causes loss of time using the internet answers yielded. A large majority of employees "I use when necessary" with the answer, we can mention the existence of an effective use of the Internet for access to information needed by the organization.

	Frequency	%
There are	192	42,9
Partly	176	39,3
No	16	3,6
I benefit from writing files	64	14,3
Total	448	100,0

Table 4: Electronic Documentation System Status of Distribution

There are 42.9% of employees surveyed, 39.3% are partly, not 3.6%, while 14.3% gave the answer I benefit from writing files. This is the analysis of electronic documentation cannot be used in a way that everyone can benefit from working effectively in the system, but the system is

	Frequency	%
I do not need the internet for business	16	3,1
I benefit from the flow of information. I do not use.	32	6,3
I use when needed.	448	87,5
Frequent use of the internet leads to loss of time	16	3,1
Total	512	100,0

used as a source of information it is understood that tried to improve every day.

Table 5: Website Status Distribution

There are 69.3% of the employees surveyed, 30.7% gave no answer. Ensuring the strategic planning and management of internal and external customers in one of the first cornerstone of the information flow, the views and suggestions can be reported easily.

	Frequency	%
Strategic Management	48	12,5
Strategic planning	160	41,7
Quality management	32	8,3
Performance Management	48	12,5
None	96	25,0
Total	384	100,0

Table 6: Strategic Education Distribution

12.5% of respondents' strategic management, strategic planning, 41.7%, 8.3% quality management, performance management, 12.5% gave the answer to any of 25%. The majority of employees have received training on strategic planning and scheduling.

	Fre-quency	%
There for the entire organi-	192	41,4
In ongoing studies	48	10,3
The unit is made on the ba-	144	31,0
None	80	17,2
Total	464	100,0

Table 7: Status of the Studies in the Strategic Planning Area Distribution

Of employees surveyed for the entire organization are 41.4% and 10.3% of the ongoing studies, 31.0% of the units is made on the basis of 17.2% gave the answer is no. Strategic planning and administrators are continuing the strategic planning activities.

	Frequency	%
Concluded	192	46,2
Work continues	112	26,9
In preparation	16	3,8
The study is not yet con-	64	15,4
Ever made	32	7,7
Total	416	100,0

Table 8: Quality Management Regarding the study

46.2% of respondents were concluded, 26.9% work in progress, in preparation 3.8%, 15.4%, but no work is thought, was the answer made no 7.7%. As can be seen from the answers concerning quality management is taken half way work is still in progress.

	Frequency	%
Yes	160	31,3
Partially	224	43,8
No	112	21,9
No need to project presentation	16	3,1
Total	512	100,0

Table 9: Proposals / Project Presentation Facility

31.3% of the respondents yes, partially 43.8%, 21.9% no, the answer does not have to be 3.1% of project presentations. 75% slice of the employees answer yes and partly by the development of institutions / the thought of working for the improvement reflects the given value as building democratic institutions.

	Frequency	%
Regular meetings	176	45,8
Information notes	96	25,0
Surveys	80	20,8
Suggestion box	32	8,3
Total	384	100,0

Table 10: Proposals / Projects How to Get the Status of Distribution Figure of Opinion

Regular meetings of the respondents, 45.8%, 25.0% more notes, 20.8% of the survey was to answer the suggestion box 8.3%. Van Metropolitan

Municipality said that regular meetings are held with the employees be informed of the opinions and suggestions of employees.

	Frequency	%
Highly	112	28,0
Partially	224	56,0
Not reflected	64	16,0
Total	400	100,0

Table 11: Suggestions / Feedback of the project and the projected activities Status of Distribution

28.0% of the respondents largely 56.0% partially, was not reflected in the answer 16.0% Employee suggestions / opinions are reflected in the evaluation of projects and activities. Project / views and think whether the proposal is reflected in every project has a very small staff / views and considered to be the ability to be used if the proposal.

Table 12: Suggestions / Feedback Project Status and Distribution of comments

32.1% of respondents yes, the 50.0'% no, the answer that they see no need to 17.9%. They offer to falling and productivity of employees who are not offended internal stakeholders advice / opinions on the project and should be evaluated and feedback provided must be made in them.

	Frequency	%
Yes	96	20,7
No	368	79,3
Total	464	100,0

Table 13: External Stakeholders Products / Services towards Distribution Status Feedback

20.7% of respondents yes, has said no to 79.3%. With external stakeholders and partners work with citizens, companies and institutions also should not be offended. Today, they want citizens to feel more involved in the management and valued. Likewise, products / services to companies and institutions for joint work done to get the views and suggestions of products / services is important in terms of improving the quality.

	Frekans	%
Customer satisfaction survey	96	24,0
File a complaint	192	48,0
Independent evaluation reports	32	8,0
The statements through the In-	32	8,0
Other	48	12,0

	Frequency	%
Yes	144	32,1
No	224	50,0
They do not see the need	80	17,9
Total	448	100,0
Total	400	100,0

Table 14: Product / Service Distribution Status Feedback How that provided

24% of those surveyed customer satisfaction survey, 48.0% of the complaint, the independent evaluation reports 8.0%, from 8.0 notifications via the Internet%, and the other in the 12.0%. External stakeholders with citizens and business partners made the company and the improvement of service quality and the satisfaction of every municipal corporation / institution is one of the most important tasks.

	Frequency	%
	Frequency	%
Yes	336	77,8
No	32	7,4
They do not comment		11,1
Meaning	48	
Over time the system will be installed	16	3,7
Total	432	
		100,0
Yes	108	25,8
Highly	64	12,9
Very little	176	35,5
No	128	25,8
Total	496	100,0

Table 15: Manager and Employee Communication between Level Status Distributions

25.8% of respondents yes, 12.9% substantially, by 35.5% very little has been said no to 25.8%. Internal stakeholders that the lack of adequate communication between employees and managers and the efficiency of the health institution and the product / service quality leads to being corrupt. Managers working in environments where administrators gained the sympathy

of the respect of subordinates become effective.

	Frequency	%
Enough	32	6,5
Highly	144	29,0
Partially	144	29,0
Insufficient	176	35,5
Total	496	100,0

Table 16: Service Training Program Qualification Status Distribution

Enough of the respondents 6.5% 29.0% largely, partially 29.0%, 35.5% is insufficient. In-service training of employees with internal stakeholders in order to get better efficiency must be given importance. Continuously detected the perception of in-service training and refresher training is repeated. "The only thing constant is change" to move employees from continuous in-service training should be mentioned.

Table 17: Distribution of Human Resources Management Status

77.8% of respondents yes, 7.4% no, they do not interpret the meaning of 11.1%, with 3.7% of the time and the system will be installed.

	Frequency	%
Have	112	23,3
Partially	192	40,0
No	144	30,0
Nobody does not want to cede authority	32	6,7
Total	480	100,0

Table 18: Internal Duties and Powers Status

Of the respondents have 23.3% 40.0% partially, not 30.0%, 6.7% was also nobody wants to delegate authority. Staff mission analysis for intra-conflict institution authorized to do well and everyone should be doing its job well. Nevertheless, in case of good intentions and the intensity of the conflict of jobs it must be fulfilled duties with sincerity and solidarity.

	Frequency	%
Effective leadership	112	26,9
Team work culture	160	38,5
Flexibility in the area of strategic planning	96	23,1
Flexible budget structure	48	11,5
Total	416	100,0

Table 19: Applicability Statement Status of Strategic Planning Distribution

26.9% of respondent's effective leadership, teamwork culture 38.5%, and flexibility in the area of strategic planning 23.1%, 11.5% answered the flexible budget structure.

	Frequency	%
Yes	240	48,4
Partially	224	45,2
No	32	6,5
Total	496	100,0

Table 20: The State Administration of Quality Distribution of Strategic Planning

48.4% of respondents yes, partially 45.2%, 6.5% had no answer. Almost all employees are aware of the strategic planning and strategic planning will lead to quality management. The information obtained from the employees said they are willing to practice the concept of strategic planning.

4. Conclusion and Recommendation

Strategic planning is essentially indicated there is a great concern for senior management. Because it concerns the future of the organization's strategic planning and senior management also stated that those who will give him direction [8]. Although the powers and duties of its senior executives have handed over to specialists from inside or outside the organization, even if the risk and responsibility will belong again to the senior executives.

The strategic planning process can be encountered some difficulties because it is a new management model for public institutions. One of these problems is the issue of leadership [9].

If the determination made by the strategy development strategy within the organization or who you're done, or the need to act with a goal of the organization around the identified strategy is thought that hampered the implementation of the strategy [10]. Strategic planning is a fundamental change [11]. Show resistance to change is that there is a natural human instinct to protect and behavior. Adequately informed of all parties to not interfere with the resistance to change will occur in workers and ensuring their participation in decision-making is required [12]. Key condition for the strategic plan to be effective, has to involve most employees as soon as possible. The principles to achieve the success of the strategy, it is important that the goals and objectives adopted by employees.

We examine in particular we have achieved for Van municipal results support the work done in this area. Revised again should the synergy created with the vision and mission of strategic planning in order to estimate the most intense exercise is that the municipalities where they are and where to go in the public service. Strategic planning system would be transparency and accountability would lead the system to be more disciplined because they contain the shape ability policy will run continuously effective control mechanisms.

References

[1]. Shimaoka, M., *Strategic career planning for physician-scientists.* Journal of Orthopaedic Science, 2015. **20**(3): p. 452-456.

[2]. Demirkaya, Y., *Strategic Planning in the Turkish Public Sector.* Transylvanian Review of Administrative Sciences, 2015: p. 15-29.

[3]. Maier, K., *Visions, Planning and Strategic Urban Development: The Example of Prague.* Architektura & Urbanizmus, 2015. **49**(3-4): p. 157-165.

[4]. Malekpour, S., R.R. Brown, and F.J. de Haan, *Strategic planning of urban infrastructure for environmental sustainability: Understanding the past to intervene for the future.* Cities, 2015. **46**: p. 67-75.

[5]. McGee, S.A., et al., *Strategic planning for saving the lives of mothers, newborns and children and preventing stillbirths in KwaZulu-Natal province South Africa: modelling using the Lives Saved Tool (LiST).* Bmc Public Health, 2016. **16**.

[6]. Sinitsyn, M.V., *The 1st Byelorussian front and the strategic planning of the "Bagration" military operation in April-May of 1944.* Rossiiskaya Istoriya, 2015(1): p. 29-45.

[7]. Yalçınkaya, Ş., *Yerel Yönetimlerde Stratejik Planlama ve Statejik Yönetim Üzerine: Beykoz Belediyesi Örneği.* Beykent Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, 2010.

[8]. Zuckerman, A.M., *Successful Strategic Planning for a Reformed Delivery System.* Journal of Healthcare Management, 2014. **59**(3): p. 168-176.

[9]. Yan, J.M., F.Z. Xia, and H.X.H. Bao, *Strategic planning framework for land consolidation in China: A top-level design based on SWOT analysis.* Habitat International, 2015. **48**: p. 46-54.

[10]. Van Ravensway, J. and R.E. Hamlin, *Strategic Planning in Us*

Municipalities. Transylvanian Review of Administrative Sciences, 2015: p. 55-70.

[11]. Zak, M., *Creating a strategy and strategic planning. Theory and practice.* Politicka Ekonomie, 2015. **63**(2): p. 275-276.

[12]. Tama, J., *Does Strategic Planning Matter? The Outcomes of US National Security Reviews.* Political Science Quarterly, 2015. **130**(4): p. 735-765.

Burnout syndrome and job satisfaction in banking

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Zekeriya Nas
Yuzuncu Yil University
idilbret@hotmail.com

Leyla Dilara YAŞAR
Yuzuncu Yil University,
Social Sciences Institute MS student
ldyasar@gmail.com

Abstract
The aim of this study is to discover the levels of stress, sources of stress and ways of coping with stress of managers and employees working in the banking sector, to question and analyze whether the burnout syndrome and level of job satisfaction of bankers show any difference in regard to demographic variables. Also it is to investigate whether the job satisfaction and organizational devotion of the employees differ according to their statuses. The research has been carried out with the data collected from a total of 100 bank personnel working at Yapı Kredi Bankası, Türkiye Finans Bankası, Akbank, Finansbank, Şekerbank, Vakıfbank, Bank Asya, Halk Bankası, Kuveyt Türk Bankası, Türkiye İş Bankası in the city Van. The data obtained at the end of the research has been finalized with SPSS analysis.

With this research, it can be said that there is no general contentment regarding job satisfaction yet the bank personnel are stuck in between dissatisfaction and indecisiveness. They don't think that they are experiencing a burnout syndrome at the moment but the worry that they generally feel shows that it is inevitable to go through burnout syndrome later on. this research shows that bank personnel are generally not pleased with their working conditions, the banks that they are working at, their salaries, their social rights and therefore they do experience a state of burnout syndrome even though not advanced. Also it has been observed that the level of job dissatisfaction is generally high disregarding sex, age, marital status, educational status, affiliated unit.

Key words: Banking sector, burnout syndrome, banking stress issue, job satisfaction, demographic variables, job stress, job contentment.

1. INTRODUCTION
1.1 Background

It is seen that employees working under stress and pressure in an intense working schedule go through a physical and mental loss of energy in time and as a result burnout syndrome arises. As a result of all of these, the banking sector has become a job where employees can experience burnout syndrome due to having stressful and intense workload, financial risks faced by force of the job and various problems experienced by the sector because of rapid changes occurring recently in the banking sector.

Burnout syndrome is a condition that affects the lives of bank personnel adversely and is a subject which must be investigated and evaluated for problem-free continuation of bank employees' lives. This condition raises its importance once bank working conditions in our country are taken into notice. Burnout syndrome is a condition which must be investigated and its causative factors must be ameliorated since it leaves a set of physical, psychological and sociological negative effects on bankers. It is understood that the concept of burnout syndrome was first used by the employees working at the customer service at the bank in America in 1970 to explain the occupational depression that they faced. Factors like emotional burnout, desensitization, personal failure affect the efficiency, health and even the psychology of the employees. (Gürbüz and Karapınar, 2014).

1.2. Problem Statement

Banking sector is a sector where the employees are in continuous communication with people, work one to one; banking is a stressful job the most sensitive point of which is to work face to face with customers. The share of the job to create wear on employees is quite high due to sensitivity of the job regarding financial matters. Banking which is a sector that advances every day faces a lot of various problems with this advancement.

Burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction have become an important problem for bank personnel and especially the banking sector, which must be investigated in detail. The results obtained at the end of the researches carried out have shown that when the working conditions of bank personnel in Turkey are investigated, dissatisfaction and burnout syndrome that they feel reflect on their personal lives, hence it has been observed that their productivity falls. When the effects of this condition on the entire sector are taken into account, detailed investigations must be done over this issue in order to prevent the result that it would create from causing bigger problems (Güner, Çiçek and Can, 2014).

1.3 The aim of the research

It might be necessary for banks to achieve inside customer satisfaction alongside outside customer satisfaction in order to obtain sustainable competition superiority ahead of their rivals in the fields of activity that they are working in. because; inside customer satisfaction might increase the level of organization devotion. This state, by turning into strength, can cause banks to stand strong in front of their rivals and become the most preferred. (Dolu, 2011). Hence this work can occupy an important place in solving the problems caused by various obstacles faced by bankers.

The aim of this research is to determine, with this research, the level of burnout syndrome that arises as a result of job stress that the employees working in the banking sector are exposed to, job dissatisfaction, hierarchical pressure etc. and to prevent or to reduce to the minimum level the psychological and physiological decline that arises as a result.

1.4 The research questions

Q.1) what are the main causes leading to job dissatisfaction, occupational stress and burnout syndrome experienced by bankers?
Q.2) what are the solution suggestions that can eradicate or reduce to the minimum level the occupational deformation faced by bankers?
Q.3) do burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction experienced by bank personnel show any difference in regard to demographic variables (age, sex, educational

status, job experience, span of working hours, status and job choice status) ?

1.5 The research hypotheses

H.1) There is consistence between salaries and job satisfaction of bank employees.
H.2) explaining a problem faced at the bank comfortably to the manager increases job satisfaction.
H.3) job satisfaction is directly proportional to attitudes of managers, approval and appreciation of them.
H.4) the bank worked at contributes to personal and occupational development of employees.
H.5) banking sector's being hectic causes employees' becoming unsuccessful.

1.6 Importance of the research

There are various problems that the bank personnel are exposed to. At the beginning of these problems, there is the factor of intense competition among employees working at enterprises alongside the conditions in the working world due to the effect of globalization, requirement of employees to work more effectively and efficiently. This is why, attitude and behaviors of employees in this intense occupation are important. It is seen that stress which limits effectiveness and efficiency of employees, causing them to decrease causes burnout syndrome in employees; efficiency at work environment falls due to variables causing job and life dissatisfaction, moral and material problems faced by bankers; hence it gets interrupted in the sector. (Güner, et al., 2014).

Moreover burnout syndrome, according to researches done by Maslach and Jackson in 1981, is an observed finding that reflects onto health problems faced in personal life, family life, along with stress experienced in the job (Kocabıyık and Çakıcı, 2008). Banks are required to achieve inside customer satisfaction along with outside customer satisfaction in order to be ahead of their rivals in their fields of activity, to obtain sustainable competition superiority. Inside customer satisfaction can increase organizational devotion level. This devotion can sometimes cause banks to stand against rival enterprises by turning into an impenetrable strength and lead them to become the most preferred (Dolu, 2011). Hence this study holds an important place on the matter of solving problems caused by various obstacles that the bankers are exposed to. Burnout syndrome is a serious syndrome that is a complete occupational deformation resulting from being in one to one communication with customers and being the first person to look for a solution to their problems. The preference to investigate occupational stress, burnout syndrome, job satisfaction and life satisfaction of employees working at banks in this research reveals its importance.

2. LITERATURE REVIEW

In this day and age, working areas are platforms that necessitate one to one interaction with customers as an outcome of the modern era. Hence the bank personnel also establish face to face communication with customers. It is shown in the researches done that, as a result of intense working pressure, in the category of jobs which mandate face to face communication with customers, or more generally with people, burnout syndrome is experienced as a result of occupational deformation. Some of these occupational groups can be polices, bank workers, doctors, nurses, salespeople, hotel employees, psychiatrists and teachers (Cemaloğlu and Şahin, 2007).

It is possible to come across many definitions of burnout syndrome. According to Güner, et al., (2014) "burnout syndrome is a syndrome which shows itself as physical, mental, emotional exhaustion, seen in people whose jobs mandate continuous face to face working with other people and who are exposed to intense stress." As understood from this definition, burnout syndrome is a complete occupational deformation, a serious syndrome caused by being in one to one communication with customers and being the first person to look for solutions to their problems.

Development and advancement of banking sector is completely dependent on ameliorating bankers' working environments and conditions. Employment of personnel enlarges with the advancement of the sector. Individuals with working lives that are hectic, pressurized and stressful spend a part of their lives looking for solutions to their problems. Especially, bank personnel face more stress due to financial risks faced by the institution that they work for. In fact, stress that they face in their working lives reflect on their personal lives negatively. Employees are the human source of main determinants of quality of efficiency and service in the market of goods and services. Bankers' providing good service to their customers is completely related to having good conditions themselves. This satisfaction is eventuated with the line of contentment extending from those at the head of the banking sector to customers. The attitude of bank managers to their personnel is directly proportional to the attitude of personnel to their customers. Discontentment of one affects all addressees as though creating a domino effect and as a result affects the entire sector (Erbaşı, 2012; Gündoğan and Atabey, 2014).

Job dissatisfaction and burnout syndrome is a situation that arises especially in individuals working in the service sector such as medicine, policing, nursing, psychological counselling, teaching, social service specialty, banking etc. (Sat, 2010). In the researches done, it has been found out that there are various factors affecting job satisfaction of individuals positively or negatively. These factors differ from person to person. Some of these factors are salary earned, promotion opportunities at work, colleagues, the job done itself, occupational development opportunities, superior-subordinate relationship at work, taking part in decision making at work, work environment and its opportunities. İt can be said that this condition is a result of job dissatisfaction affecting both individuals and enterprises in various physical, social and mental ways (Babaoğlu, Cevizci and Arslan, 2012).

Burnout syndrome is a condition that adversely affects the lives of bank personnel and is a subject which must be investigated and evaluated for the problem-free continuation of lives of bank personnel. This condition becomes more important when working conditions of banks in our country are taken into account. Burnout syndrome is a condition which must be investigated and the causative factors of which must be ameliorated as it leaves a set of physical, psychological and sociological negative effects on bankers. Moreover, as a result of one's own assessment of themselves gaining a negative quality, feeling of one's self as inadequate on various matters related to work and a feeling of failure in interactions with people met at work appear. As a result, effort spent going down the pan and the feeling of guilt, prevent the employee from carrying out the necessary behaviors for success by lowering his motivation (Şahinoğlu and Arkar, 2011) .

With global intense and effective competition, working conditions might necessitate individuals to struggle with a focus on both effectiveness and productivity. The factor affecting effectiveness and productivity of employees is thought to be stress (Güner, et al,. 2014). On the other hand, it is thought that this job stress arises from inadequacy of employees, from physical and psychological causes and this situation creates anxiety in employees (Polat, 2008).

Another problem regarding burnout syndrome is job satisfaction. Job satisfaction is employees' worth regarding their work being met in the job environment, the job being appropriate for employees' needs, one taking pleasure while doing his job or the function of getting emotional satisfaction (Kocabıyık and Çakıcı, 2008). The happiness of bank personnel in their working lives doesn't only remain limited to their working lives but also reflects onto individual's entire life and its effects are seen in his whole life. The period of job satisfaction as a whole means job satisfaction and at the same time entire life satisfaction of the employee.

2.1) Job satısfactıon and burnout syndrome

Job satisfaction is expressed as individual's or employee's general positive opinion or reaction toward his job and is directly related to factors like job environment and colleagues (Diskienė and Goštautas, 2013). Fisher (2011) alleges that job satisfaction is a contentment that has factors carried out by manpower having human resources, which are really important to him as well and it arises with the intention of implementing the qualities belonging to these factors. On the other hand Oshagbemi (2000) specified job satisfaction as the general attitude of employees toward both job environment and the employer. As a result, employees are confronted with both a positive and negative mood at their job environment. Positive mood can be defined as job satisfaction while negative mood can be defined as job dissatisfaction.

Job satisfaction is the concept of behavior and satisfaction that the employee has towards his job environment (Sevimli and İşcan, 2005). Job satisfaction is very important in the banking sector just like it is in other sectors. As a matter of fact, bankers whose job satisfaction is high make an effort to conduct their job at work as efficiently as possible.

While these are said about job satisfaction, following definitions are made about burnout syndrome. It especially appears in those enterprises and occupational groups that provide service to the environment that they are in, to society and to people; however it appears as job dissatisfaction and burnout syndrome and this can cause productivity and efficiency to fall. Even sometimes, problems like prevention of professionalism may arise (Günüşen and Üstün, 2010).

When Maslach Burnout Syndrome Model is investigated, it would be noticed that burnout syndrome is a group of psychological symptoms that arise from employees working face to face at enterprises. Employees that feel this burnout syndrome can sometimes feel themselves emotionally overly burdened and even worn out in their relationships with their colleagues. Employees can behave both insensible and indifferent towards their colleagues. Because of this, signs such as reduction in personal performance and adequacy etc. towards their job can occur (Yıldırım, 1996).

As a result, "burnout syndrome is a kind of occupational stress that arises with an increase in emotional burnout and insensitivity and a decrease in the feeling of personal success" (Maslach and Jackson, 1985). According to Maslach, emotional burnout comprises the principal dimension, beginning and a vital component of employees' burnout syndrome. Occupational stress rather appears with emotional burnout and as mentioned before, is observed in those fields where employees work person to person (Akçamete, Kaner and Sucuoğlu, 2001). This is why, the required positive data can be obtained if burnout syndrome is investigated where person to person confrontation of manpower is more and in those business lines that necessitates this condition. Therefore the subject of burnout syndrome has become a subject on which scientist carry out intensive studies recently.

It has been determined in the scientific studies that job satisfaction of bank personnel decreases but both emotional burnout and emotional insensitivity increase and at the same time feeling of personal performance decreases (Yıldırım, 1996). On the other hand it has been revealed that factors like sex, age, educational status, marital status, professional experience, performance etc. which are personal characteristics of employees are correlated with their job satisfaction and that their levels of effeteness are influenced by these personal characteristics on various levels(Ok, 1995; Ok, 2004) . Similarly on Siliğ (2003), it has been alleged that various factors related to personal qualities and characteristics of bank employees, qualities and characteristics of the bank, perception and expectations of employees towards the job they are working at are related to their level of effeteness in a positive direction.

Banking sector is a sector where people are worked with face to face, where there are serious occupational risks; it is a line of business where financial standing is essential. This state is a line of work where those who work connected to the sector have to take great responsibilities in their working area and in accordance with this causes great stresses. Researchers have determined the following in the studies that they have done. At the helm of factors which trigger effeteness of those working at banks, cause them to experience it and turn it into a job where their personal lives are affected negatively are this job's having an intense workload, some of the banks closing due to various reasons, their activities getting dismissed or getting unified with another or their ownerships getting handed over and the appearance of problems related to finding a job (Siliğ and Ceyhan, 2003).

Various definitions have been made about the concept of burnout syndrome. According to Boru and Ciper (2007), "it can be enumerated as laying down on the job, tendency to leave the job, deterioration in the quality of service, absence without notice, extending leave, decrease in group devotion, increase in physical and emotional symptoms, increase in health expenses, deterioration in human affairs, incompatibility, low work performance, job dissatisfaction, increase in injuries and accidents".

Even though banking is not among the most stressful jobs, it has been shown in the studies done that those working in the banking sector are also nearly exposed to a certain extent to the sources of stress that those working in other lines of work are exposed to. In a study done in England on 9000 employees working in 14 various industries, 86% of the participants in sectors like banking, finance, insurance have seen stress as the biggest problem. 74% of participants in sectors of banking, finance and insurance have seen heavy workload as the most important source of stress, 53% of them have seen it as fear of getting fired, 44% of them have seen it as change in job, 39% of them have seen it as lengthiness of working hours and 30% of them have seen it as practice of job rotation (Veysey, 2000).

Whereas in a study done in turkey, it is possible to list some of the sources of stress in banking as follows: excess of workload caused by the number of customers, correspondingly, the time pressure that is created in rushing these customers' works, both long and indefinite working hours, problems caused by communication with customers, banking profession requiring a lot of attention, weight of personal responsibilities, inability to leave the bank in time due to unbalanced cash, breakdowns occurring in the computer system, obligation of bank employees to work with a computer, continuously ringing phones which put the employees in stress, moreover, both the temperature of the work environment and its light, cleanliness, design being a problem, unbalanced work distribution among individuals, inability to spare enough time to social activities and family due to causes related to these factors (Aydın, 2008).

As a result, bank employees' perceptions and attentions are required to be alert and at the highest level during the working hours since their primary fields of interest are matters of money, that is to say, attention requiring numeral calculations. That is why; they work in an area where both personal and organizational levels of stress are really high. Also, wage deductions as a result of a mistake that they have done are the most important sources of stress of bank employees. Conditions that would minimize such mistakes are support by employee's fellow worker, team-mate, by unit chief, using banking technology at the highest level and sparing time for themselves out of working hours.

3. METHODOLOGY
3.1 Research strategy
In this study, while the primary aim is to identify the situations related to organizational and personal sources of stress that the employees working in the banking sector face, with the findings that would be obtained from the research, organizational and personal stress sources that the bank employees are exposed to and the relation between these sources have been revealed and sex , job choice status, age, educational status, professional experience, job duration and status variables are also among the conditions that are predicated on. in a study done on a total of 100 bank employees working in various positions in various units of banks in the city of Van, such as Türkiye İş Bank, Türkiye Finans Bank, Akbank, Finans Bank, Yapı Kredi Bank, Vakıfbank, Şekerbank, Albaraka Türk, Bank Asya, Denizbank, two of which are public banks while the remaining are private, survey method has been benefited from in the collection of the required data. The survey comprises three sections directed at obtaining personal and occupational characteristics, job satisfaction and job motivation and a total of 45 questions. The data obtained in the research has been obtained by the use of SPSS program.

3.2 Data collection instruments
The survey questions used in this study were prepared by benefiting from an extensive literature search that has been done over a long period of time. The survey questions were distributed to the participants periodically with the intention of collecting data and the data has been brought together in accordance with the answers obtained. Survey form has been used as the data collection tool in the research. For these types of researches, attitude scales containing generally "3 point or 5 point likert type" questions have been developed alongside multiple choice questions. A survey form suitable for our research has been prepared by benefiting from these scales. The survey form comprises 3 sections and a total of 45 questions.

In the first section, 9 questions related to personal, occupational and demographic characteristics of bankers living in the city of Van have been prepared. In the second section, there are 32 questions related to job satisfaction. And in the third section, there are a total of 4 questions about job motivation that the bankers living in the city of Van answered. While a part of these questions consists of multiple choice questions, a large part consists of likert type questions.

3.3 Response rate
A total of 100 bankers living in the city of Van were included in this survey. 88 participants have completely answered the survey questions whereas 12 participants were declared null and void due to various reasons. Hence answer rate is quite high; 88%.

4. ANALYSIS
4.1 Personal and occupational characteristics

Table1: Gender

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	Female	34	38,6	38,6	38,6
	Male	54	61,4	61,4	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 1**, gender data of bankers participating in the survey has been observed. Surveys of 88 out of a total of 100 bankers participating in the survey have been approved; 34 women, 54 men have participated, participation percentage of women is 38.6 while that of men is 61.4.

Table:2 Age

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	18-24	5	5,7	5,7	5,7
	25-30	53	60,2	60,2	65,9
	31-39	26	29,5	29,5	95,5
	40 and above	4	4,5	4,5	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 2**, the vast majority of the bankers participating in the survey comprise age group 25-30 as they are 53 individuals out of 88 individuals with a 60.2 percentile. These numbers show us that, banking which is a developing sector in our country prefers mostly a young age group or an age group that can be counted as young. Age group of 40 and above has the smallest percentage with a total of 4 people and a percentile of 4.5. As for this number, it shows us how wearing banking sector is and that it is not preferred, even to a certain extent, by the advancing age group.

Table:3 Marital status

	Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid married	41	46,6	46,6	46,6
single	47	53,4	53,4	100,0
Total	88	100,0	100,0	

According to **Table 3**, 41 of the bankers participating in the survey are married with a percentage of 46.6 while 47 of them are single with a percentage of 53.4. As understood from these numbers, it is possible to say that the majority belongs with a slight difference to single bankers.

Table:4 Educational status

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	High school	4	4,5	4,5	4,5
	Vocational high school	11	12,5	12,5	17,0
	faculty-high school	67	76,1	76,1	93,2
	Postgraduate	6	6,8	6,8	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 4**, it is observed that the educational statuses of individuals belonging to the banking sector are faculty-high school with a great difference. It has been observed that with a vast majority 67 of the participants corresponding to a percentile of 76.1, individuals included in the banking sector are faculty and college graduates that have been increasing in number especially in the recent years. As for the lowest percentage, it is constituted by a total of 4 high school graduates with a percentile of 4.5. And this percentage shows us that the number of high school graduates corresponds to a low percentage in banking (in accordance with the survey data) and that they are at the bottoms of the line of preference in hiring.

Table 5: Worked unit

	Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid Cash desk / department operations /external transaction operations –	46	52,3	52,3	52,3

	Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
cambium				
Customer relations-marketing sales/financial analysis	42	47,7	47,7	100,0
Total	88	100,0	100,0	

Table 5 shows that there is not much difference between the units that the participants included in the banking sector work at and that the number of personnel in almost every unit is balanced. A total of 46 people in units of cash desk/department operations/external transaction operations-cambio have a percentile of 52.3; 42 people in units of customer relations/marketing sales/ financial analysis, have a percentile of 47.7.

Table 6: Duty position

	Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid Assistant- officer	45	51,1	51,1	51,1
Career group	24	27,3	27,3	78,4
Department manager	19	21,6	21,6	100,0
Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 6**, we see that in duty distribution, assistant-officer unit (service officer, attendant or assistant) which is the first step in entering banking constitutes the great share. This unit has a percentile of 51.1 by containing 45 of the 88 bankers participating in the survey within itself. As for the unit that follows this is the career group (expert, assistant expert or customer representative) with 24 people and a percentile of 27.3. As for the unit that has the smallest share of the percentage, it is department manager unit (departmental manager, deputy manager or manager) which requires more time in terms of experience. And this unit has 19 participants and a percentile of 21.6.

Table 7: Socio-cultural environment

	Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid High level socio-cultural environment	3	3,4	3,4	3,4
Intermediate socio-cultural environment	66	75,0	75,0	78,4
minimal (low-limited) socio-cultural environment	19	21,6	21,6	100,0
Total	88	100,0	100,0	

Table 7 gives us information about the socio-cultural environments of people working at banks. That is to say, the vast majority of the participants belong to an intermediate socio-cultural environment, 66 out of 88 people, with a percentage of 75.0 shows this to us openly. As for the lowest percentage, it belongs to high level socio-cultural environment with a percentile of 3.4 and 3 participants.

4.2 Characteristics about job satisfaction

Table 8: My job's being suitable to my knowledge and skills increases the pleasure it take from

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	Yes	86	97,7	97,7	97,7
	No	2	2,3	2,3	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 8**, the vast majority such as 86 of the 88 bankers participating in the survey with a percentile of 97.7 side with their job being suitable to their knowledge and skills and this condition shows us that they would take greater pleasure from their job and they would become more beneficial individuals to their institutions.

Table 9: The pleasure it takes from my job increases as does my salary

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	Yes	80	90,9	90,9	90,9
	No	8	9,1	9,1	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

Just like every other line of business, in banking sector as well, employees' receiving a recompense for their work would satisfy them more on the matter of getting pleasure from their job and would bring them to that much success. As a matter of fact, participants' answer to the question of "the pleasure I take from my job increases as does my salary" being 'yes'

from 80 people is a hallmark of proof. The yes answer given by 80 people gives us a percentage of 90.9. As for the number of those who gave the no answer, it is 8 with a percentile of 9.1.

HYPOTHESES

H.1: There is a significant concordance between the salaries of bank employees and their job satisfaction. Our first hypothesis is whether there is a significant concordance between the bankers' salaries and job satisfaction or not. Just like any other line of business, in banking as well, the working individual's receiving a complete recompense for his work is very important in terms of both his own satisfaction and success of institution.

Table 9: The pleasure it takes from my job increases as does my salary

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	Yes	80	90,9	90,9	90,9
	No	8	9,1	9,1	100,0
	Total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 9** as well, as 88 bankers participating in the survey making this question reach to a percentage of 90.9 by answering it with a yes is corroborative with our hypothesis, we can say that the salaries that bankers earn increase their job satisfaction.

H.2: being able to explain a problem faced at the bank comfortably to the manager increases the satisfaction you get from your job. Our second hypothesis is towards bankers conveying a problem that they face comfortably to the manager and hence increasing job satisfaction, work productivity, and success. While **Table 10** shows that majority of the participants don't have this opportunity, it is observed that the percentage of 29.5 is the majority of the answers given which are the answers of much and moderate. These given answers verify our hypothesis.

H.3: the satisfaction you will get out of your job is directly proportional to attitudes of your managers and your appreciation and approval of them.

Table 11: your level of appreciation and approval of your managers with regard to your job satisfaction

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	least	5	5,7	5,7	5,7
	low	18	20,5	20,5	26,1
	moderate	29	33,0	33,0	59,1
	much	30	34,1	34,1	93,2
	most	6	6,8	6,8	100,0
	total	88	100,0	100,0	

In **Table 11** as well, while it is observed that a share of 34.1 (30 people) of the bankers participating in the survey abstained from this question by answering it with 'moderate', the given answers show that managers are a little strict when it comes to management and that the employees don't get job satisfaction mostly due to this reason. Even though low as a percentage, the given answer verifies our hypothesis.

H.4: the bank worked at contributes to personal and occupational development of employees.

Table 12: Contribution to personal and occupational development with regard to job satisfaction

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	least	4	4,5	4,5	4,5
	low	11	12,5	12,5	17,0
	moderate	38	43,2	43,2	60,2
	much	28	31,8	31,8	92,0
	most	7	8,0	8,0	100,0
	total	88	100,0	100,0	

While the contribution of bank employees to the bank is directly proportional to their salaries, working conditions and work environments, the bank should also contribute to the personal and occupational development of its employee. As seen in table 12, while the majority of bankers participating in the survey, which consists of 38 people with a percentage of 43.2, gave the answer of 'moderate' to this question, 4 people gave the answer of least with a percentage of 4.5. These numbers show that the participants coming in on this survey are abstainers on the matter of personal and occupational contribution to themselves by the banks that they work for.

H.5: banking sector's being intense prevents bankers from sparing time to themselves and their families and hence causes them to be unhappy and unsuccessful in their both personal and occupational lives.

Table 13: Your ability to spare time for your family, your loved ones, your other works, your resting or your hobbies

		Frequency	Percent	Valid Percent	Cumulative Percent
Valid	least	29	33,0	33,0	33,0
	low	24	27,3	27,3	60,2
	moderate	18	20,5	20,5	80,7
	much	13	14,8	14,8	95,5
	most	4	4,5	4,5	100,0
	total	88	100,0	100,0	

5th hypothesis asserts that inability of bankers to spare time from work for themselves, for their families and their hobbies both makes them unhappy and unsuccessful and also creates problem for their institutions. Hence the vast majority in table 13 suffer from this problem and they answered the question of 'your ability to spare time for yourself and your family' with the answer of 'least', corresponding to a percentage of 33.0.

Q.1: what are the main reasons leading to job dissatisfaction, occupational stress and burnout syndrome experienced by bankers?

During the entire study, the factors causing the burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction experienced by bankers were centered upon and by way of the surveys done, various factors causing this condition have been revealed. At the helm of the factors come to light a number of reasons such as the selling pressure on employees, salaries of employees being inadequate, absence of an environment that would provide motivation in the workplace and managers' failing to make a positive contribution to this matter, bank's failing to provide personal and occupational contribution to its employees. Alongside all of these, it is possible to see a set of demographic factors as reasons as well. It is possible to enumerate a number of factors such as age, sex, educational status, status, living conditions.

Q.2: what are the solution suggestions that would eradicate or minimize the occupational deformation that bankers are exposed to?

As intense working conditions are at the helm of problems experienced by bankers, first of all, going for amelioration of working conditions can be considered as the most important step for solution. Amelioration of working conditions is a very important step for both the personal success of bankers and also for the success of the bank itself. As a matter of fact, each improvement done, each personnel's arrival at the workplace happily, welcoming the customer, carrying out more productive transactions take the satisfaction to highest level for both the bank and the employee and the customer. The most important factor that would minimize or eradicate the occupational deformation that bankers are exposed to is

the amount of value given to the employee. The answers given in the survey study done are also corroborative with this. Factors like intensity of working conditions, disorder of work environments, scantiness of their salaries, failure of fulfillment of their social needs come into question on the matter of burnout syndrome experienced by bankers. Elimination of all of these problems would eradicate occupational deformation, would create healthier working conditions and would lead to more successful bankers and hence more successful banks.

Q.3: do burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction experienced by bankers show any difference in regard to demographic variables (age, sex, educational status, professional experience, and span of working hours, status and job choice status)?

The answers given to the surveys show that burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction experienced by bank employees are both dependent, to a large extent, on demographic variables. A banker with an advanced age believes that he wouldn't be able to make the ends meet if he were to retire and he ends up not willing to retire; hence, due to his age, he fails to keep in pace with his young colleagues, advancing technology and experiences burnout syndrome. Similarly, it is possible to say that female bankers face more problems as compared to male bankers. Another example can be given about marital status. As banking is a job that has intense working conditions, sometimes flexibility in working hours may come into question. While this condition becomes a great problem for married bank employees, burnout syndrome and job dissatisfaction due to facing this problem becomes inevitable. The present banks are required to carry out studies that are directed at solving these problems of their employees in

order to get more efficiency from their employees and hence to bring customer satisfaction to a high level.

5. RESULT AND SUGGESTIONS

While burnout syndrome is a syndrome that can be experienced in every sector that is in communication with people, the sector where it is experienced at the highest level is the area of banking. Burnout syndrome which becomes inevitable as a result of stress that bankers are exposed to creates both psychological and physical effects. Eradication or minimization of these effects is related to the improvements that would be done in the sector.

Regulations done are very important in regard to employee's motivation and job satisfaction. As employee's satisfaction is ensured, a more quality service would be provided; hence customer satisfaction would be secured. A bank that provides quality service would contribute positive values to the sector with the customer satisfaction that it would obtain and as a result, would contribute to the country's economy.

As a result of the responses that bank employees have given in the surveys, a general contentment regarding job satisfaction cannot be spoken of but it is possible to say that bank employees are stuck in between dissatisfaction and indecisiveness. They don't think that they are experiencing a burnout syndrome at the moment but with the worry that they generally feel, experiencing burnout syndrome later on is inevitable.

This study shows us that bank employees are generally not satisfied about working conditions, the banks that they are working at, their salaries, the social rights that they have and hence even though not advanced, they do experience a state of burnout syndrome. Moreover it is observed that their levels of job dissatisfaction are generally high disregarding sex, age, marital status, educational status, affiliated unit.

As a suggestion, in order for banking sector to advance further in the country economy where it occupies an important place, customer satisfaction should be ensured and this is a condition that is completely dependent on satisfaction of the employee. Bank stakeholders should provide the most systematic working environment, the healthiest banking technology to their employees and should give the kind of environment to their employees that would make them feel the safest. Unit chiefs should carry out activities that would motivate their personnel to work and they should never put selling pressure on them. They should form a proper and cultivated competition among employees. Matters of promotion, leave, wage increase should be treated completely justly and all the social rights that the employee possesses should be surrendered all the way. Also, they should behave sensitively on the matter of payment of actual service increase since employees experience physical and psychological deformation.

Implementation of all of these improvements would cause bankers living in the city of

Van to conduct their work more willingly, with no mistakes; hence would contribute to providing better quality services.

REFERENCES

Akçamete, G, Kaner, S. & Sucuoğlu, B. (2001). Burnout syndrome, job satisfaction and personality in teachers. Ankara: *Nobel publishing*.

Aşan, Ö. & Erenler, E. (2008). Job satisfaction and life satisfaction relationship, *Suleyman Demirel University Faculty of Economics Administrative and Social Sciences Journal* 13(2): 203-216.

Aydın, İ. (2008) Stress in working life, Ankara: *Pegem Academy Publishing*.

Babaoğlu, T. Ü.; Cevizci, S. & Arslan, M. (2012). Job satisfaction and levels of burnout syndrome of veterinary physicians living in İstanbul.

Börü, D. & Çiper, A. (2007). The effect of burnout syndrome on the performance of employee, *Sakarya University 15. Congress of Public Management and Organization 25-27*, 552-558.

Cemaloğlu & Şahin (2007). Investigation of teachers' levels of occupational burnout syndrome according to various factors, *Kastamonu Education Journal*.

Demirel, E.T. (2013). The effect of occupational stress on job satisfaction: the intervention role of organizational support, *Niğde University İİBF Journal*, 6(1): 220-241.

Diskienė, D. & Goštautas, V. (2013). A fit between individual and organizational values and its implications for employees' job satisfaction and performance: *Ekonomika* 92(2): 93-107.

Dolu, B. (2011). A research on organizational devotion levels of those working in the sector of banking. Non-thesis master's program finishing project, *Suleyman Demirel University*.

Erbaşı, O. & Ünüvar, T. A. (2012). Determination of organizational stress factors and satisfaction levels that affect the performance of bank employees. *Verimlilik Journal*.

Ergin, C. (1996). Turkey health personnel norms of Maslach burnout syndrome scale: *3P Journal*.

Fisher, R.T. (2001) Role Stress, the Type a Behaviour Pattern, and External Auditor Job Satisfaction and Performance: *Behavioural Research in Accounting* Vol: 13, No: 143.

Gündoğan, A & Atabey, S.(2015). The effect of levels of satisfaction of students from Job Internship on their career goals: *Economy and Management Researches Journal*.

Güner, F.; Çiçek, H. & Can, A. (2014). The relation of occupational stress of bank employees and their levels of burnout syndrome with levels of job satisfaction and life satisfaction: *International Journal of Alanya Faculty of Business*.

Günüşen, N. & Üstün, B.(2010). Burnout syndrome in nurses and doctors working in secondary care health service in Turkey.

Gürbüz, H. & Karapınar, M. (2014). Measurement of levels of burnout syndrome of those working in the sector of banking according to Maslach criteria: *International Management Economy and Business Journal*.

Kocabıyık, Z.O. & Çakıcı, E. (2008). Burnout syndrome and job satisfaction in health care workers*: Anadolu Psychiatry Journal*.

Ok, S. (1995). Investigation of job satisfaction of bank employees with regard to various factors: unpublished master's thesis. *Ankara Hacettepe University*. 3(21), 1-11.

Ok, S. (2012). İnvestigation of levels of burnout syndrome of bank employees with regard to job satisfaction, role conflict, role ambiguity and some personal characteristics: *Turk Psychological Counselling and Guidance* .

Oshagbemi, T. (2000). Satisfaction with Co-Workers' Behaviour: Employee Relations Vol. 22 No. 1, pp. 88-106.

Polat, N.(2008). Job related stress and job satisfaction in nurses: unpublished master thesis, *Başkent University*.

Sat, S. (2010). Investigation of job satisfaction and levels of burnout syndrome of bank employees: *Çukurova University Faculty of Economic and Administrative Sciences*.

Sevimli, F. İşçan, Ö.F. (2008). Comparison of job satisfactions of sport managers working in private and public sectors.

Siliğ, A. & Ceyhan, E. (2003). Investigation of levels of burnout syndrome of bank employees with regard to various factors: unpublished master thesis. *Eskişehir Anadolu University*.

Şahinoğlu, N. & Arkar, Ş. (2011). Relationship between burnout syndrome and personality: comparison of Maslach burnout syndrome inventory with disposition and character inventory*: New Symposıum Journal* 49 (3), 159-164.

Veysey, S. (12.11.2000). Study Names Stress Biggest Concern in U.K. Workplaces: Business Insurance, Vol. 34, Issue 50, pp.23-25.

Yıldırım, F. (1996). Relationship between job satisfaction and the perceived role conflict in bank employees and burnout syndrome: unpublished master thesis, *Ankara Hacettepe University*.

The Effect of Competitive Threat over Response Behaviour of Top Management Team

Ertan Gündüz
Istanbul Gelisim University International Trade
egunduz@gelisim.edu.tr

Abstract. The subject of this paper is to scrutinize the effects of competitive threat on reaction attitude of top management team. Competitive threat from a given rival would probably block the focal firm and affect the behavior of taking hostile attitude. Other conductive options of the focal firm against the rival might be forbearance and efforts to get rid of the competition. This research has tried to denominate perceived threat of competition. Because the managers, shareholders and industry stakeholders assess competitors by the effects of four factors: rival's attack volume, capturing attention, relative scale, and similarity. This study also attempts to find the influence of competitive threat on strategic decisions and implementations. The research results indicate that competitive threat not only directly affects the volume of attacks to rival but also ends up with indirect effects such as value innovation.

1. Introduction

Competition between firms and rival analysis will probably be always important. Interfirm rivalry is best explained by two theories one of which looking industry environment first and the other giving precedence to resources. These types of viewpoints have their own examination procedure to scrutinize the interfirm rivalry. While Porter's five forces framework [17] represents elder, Chen's model [18] was in the latter. Chen's framework based on firm dyads had used market moves as interpreter for effects of competition [21]. Other researches take the position of manager of a single firm and consider all other rivals whether checking industry/ group dependence, size, customer conflict [7,9,26] or perceptions [24] and firm strategy concerns [4]. The identity of the principle rival of the focal firm and the degree of competitive pressure were answered directly or indirectly [14]. These researches were alike by methods but different in literature building ways. The research stream using dyadic method had pointed out three main predictors from a wide range of variables [14, 21]. Awareness, motivation and capability predictors could explain more strategic actions than the perceptual data approach to competitive tension [21, 24]. This tension born from competitive threat would mediate for either attacking to or forbearing from the rival by differentiating.

2. Rivalry and strategic forbearance choices

Innovation is a matter for differentiation. Cyert and March pointed out the innovation as a matter in firm theory building [25]. It seems still

the case. Two challenges in innovation implementation process are improving and deciding to present the new product to customers [23]. Blue ocean strategy which deserves mostly to be labeled as strategic innovation proposes redefining market forces in light of value creation. Despite the originality the practice how to create is very few. Without analytic frameworks for creating blue oceans and the effective risk management it is found to be risky to follow as a strategy. If the technological change is rapid and environment is volatile it is the time for looking into innovation depots. While reconciling competition with innovation on the other hand firms focus to get rid of competition by the way of value innovation. To cope with this concern one should examine the construct of competitive threat between a focal firm and main rival as in the model of this study. Awareness motivation and capability perspective leads to examine if relative scale, rivals attack volume and capability to contest affect the focal firms respond rate [21]. The respond behavior is a function of perceived competitive tension.

3. Competitive threat affecting forbearance

The mediator role of competitive threat on the interfirm rivalry would be considered as shown in the proposed Figure 1. First the three predictor of competitive threat would be checked. Salience and similarity were used to form up capability to contest.

3.1. Reasons of competitive threat

3.1.1. Relative scale

Size had been considered as a conditional variable affecting the strategy of firm [1]. Traditional strategy thought have taken size to be one of main subjects of competition analysis. The relatively large size is seen as ensign and salience of market power [1, 13]. Competitive research showed that bigger firms acted different competitive attitudes relative to smaller firms in the industry [8]. When the bigger firms are attacked they apprehend to protect their reputation more. It can be predicted that the competitive threat perception of stakeholders is positively related to size and sphere of influence of the firm [20, 21]. Than related hypothesis would be:

– *Hypothesis 1*. Compared to focal firm the size of the rival affects perceived competitive threat.

3.1.2. Rival's attack volume

The interaction and interdependence of the firms in the market are the most distinct variables affecting economy and competitive attack range [11]. If the firms had competed in many markets they are direct competitors [11, 21]. So they feel free to act against each other. Among other things they attack, defend or retreat for market share and success. Managers and shareholders consider any moves of the other firm aiming at market enlargement and entry as intransigent.
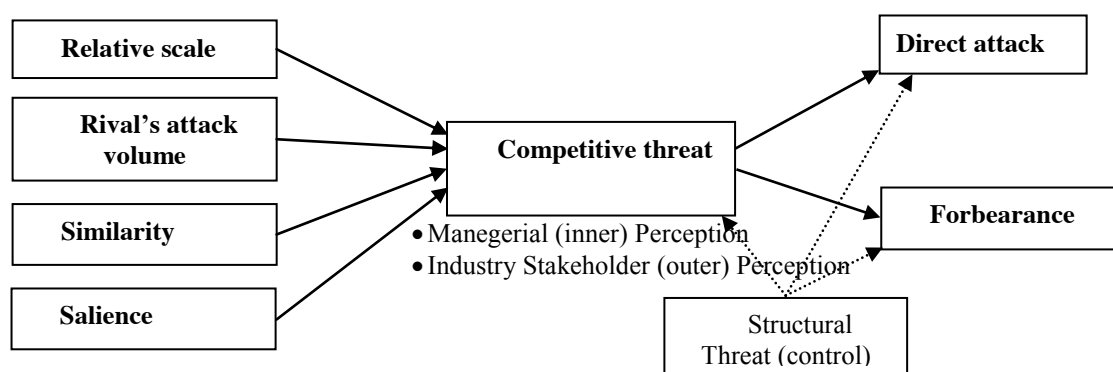
Fig. 1: Reasons and results of Competitive threat

Motivation perspective of manager and shareholders consider the main rival's moves towards the focal firm's market as the primer resources of tension forcing to defend the turf [19]. In support of the idea the research founded that firms competing in more than one market tend to retreat less [8]. There are different attack properties like duration and violence but the movement quantity is the subject for this research to count for the level of attacks. Rival attack level would increase the tension perceived by managers and stakeholders naturally. Than related hypothesis would be:

- *Hypothesis 2*. The bigger the attack quantity to market of focal firm the more perception of competitive threat.

3.1.3. Capability to contest

A critical variable of perceived threat is the forcing level of the rival move in the shared market. The capability to contest of the rival depends on two conditions. First similarity of the resources and the second is salience of the role of the rival over valuable resources. The rival will be considered to be dangerous for the focal firm if the resources are more or less have the same image. The challenge would be more dangerous when the rival has the power to control the scarce resources. In other words the firms having similar strategy and structure exert more pressure on each other having similar resource profile and capabilities [3]. Industry stakeholders are likely to assess the rival with similar resource profile with the focal firm as a direct rival. In addition, the capability to contest of a rival is related with the control power and salience over the scarce resources in the industry they operate in [10]. Two firms depending on similar vital resources and compete for the other's vital resource then they are directly rivals and there is a strong perceived tension between their managers and stakeholders [18]. Related hypothesis are:

- *Hypothesis 3*. The similarity of the focal and the rival firms' resources increase the competitive threat
- *Hypothesis 4*. The salience of the rival firm's resources increases the competitive threat

3.2. Reasons of competitive threat

Researchers found that firms tend to be assailant either by market entry barriers or multimarket competition to evident rivals [13]. Also the researchers found that the perceptions of managers and stakeholders are alike in competition assessments and these perceptions are successful predictors of competitive actions in a certain industry [19]. So the behaviors of the managers in the end turn out to be consistent actions. If both managers and industry stakeholders decide on focal firm experiencing high competitive threat then focal firm would probably try to lessen the threat and gain the relative supremacy by attacking the rival [19]. Thus perceived threat would be able to cause continuous competition and affect long term industry balance [17]. In the balance some firms might find ways to differentiate and cost reduction either by forbearance or making good use of others innovations.

Strong competitive threat perception might lever the attack volume of the focal firm to the markets of the rival firm. But to investigate the effects of competitive threat on competitive moves it is required to control the effects of structural tension and market dynamics first. So hypothesis would be about:

- *Hypothesis 5*. When the objective structural tension is controlled for, the bigger the perceived threat to focal firm the more competitive attacks to market of the rival.

Managers have two choices besides being indifferent: attack and forbearance [12]. Forbearance is an indirect but long lasting choice of response as certain as direct attack and using other's innovations. Not rising to notice for strong market leader firms but filling the niches is good enough to count as strategy. But in longer term a forbearer firm should consider leverage of balanced cost leadership and differentiating together. For example value innovation is a better one in other words Blue Ocean strategy [27]. Firm decisions, especially value innovation decisions and implementations have a long time interval (more than two years) of latency [6]. Though thanks to rigidity of firms the innovative advantage of competitive threat depends the size of innovation depots which are consisted of the new industrial projects waiting a crisis to launch. The rigidity of the firms helps them to survive in crisis time if they have innovation buffers. Thus researchers should consider the risk absorption capacity of managers and take innovation decisions and implementations separately into consideration. The implemented innovation quantities of the firms depend on the decisions taken two years before. As a strategy value innovation able to cost reduction and differentiation at the same time is hard to manage. It requires talent to create new and uncontested markets. The related hypothesis are:

- *Hypothesis 6.* The more perceived competitive threat, the more strategic innovation decisions,
- *Hypothesis 7.* The more perceived competitive threat, the more strategic innovation implementations,

4. Method

4.1. Sample and data collection

4.1.1. Sample

Airways passenger transportation industry considered to be the most proper sample for this type of research [11, 13]. The researches of competitive actions have been made before on the airways industry because of the collective business relations are rare, reputation as a competitive industry, rivals are known firms and boundaries are distinct. Though the strategic group borders are vogue because of the industry is still is in growth stage Turkish domestic airways industry is chosen as the area of research. As every industry has a unique competition set up the generalization of the results will be limited.

Target sample is the main group of ten (10) domestic firms which have operated in Turkey between the years 2005 and 2010. The primary inner respondents of the firms are top management team and shareholders while outer respondents are industry stakeholders consisted of stock market, insurance, airways specialists and bigger than average income of travel agencies' managers.

4.1.2. Data collection

Research has two stages of primary and secondary data collection. First stage namely primary data collected by a survey applied to the entire main group. Firm members with no decision involvement, relatively small (without International Air Transportation Agency Document) travel agencies and small ranked officers were excluded. Target main group assumed to be homogenous. Airways passenger transportation with large media network, well identified market borders, and developed competitiveness with the deregulation act in 2003 represents the best area of research. Choosing the 2005-2010 time series is useful to see the improvement after the deregulation and the 2008 economic crisis effects. Market consisted of 156 domestic lines derived from the secondary data from Civil Aviation Directorate and media archives.

Survey stage to estimate the perceptions of managers lasted between November 2010 and April 2011. For inner valuation 126 airway manager and shareholder; for 55 outside stakeholders (39 travel agency managers, 5 insurance company expert, 2 stock exchange analyst, 1 flight control supervisor, 1 airport director, 7 non domestic airway firm managers) total 181 potential respondent has got the survey forms. The respondent lists were obtained from the official sites of the firm and public relation offices of the firms.

The response rate for inner valuation was 45% (n=56 and 1 is void, for ten airways firms) and outer valuation was 62% (n=34). For each airway firm the response numbers for inner respondents varies 1 to 29 respondents. And outer respondents per firm vary between 1 and 7. Respondents and non-respondents did not vary by a bias of firm size, industry, and firm experience.

4.1.3. Depended variables

∗ Perceived competitive threat: To assess this ordinal variable the respondents asked to what extend a certain rival could be considered as the primary rival [21]. Respondents are asked to eliminate 5 out of 9 rivals and put an order considered competitive threat. The assessment procedure gives 5 to primary rival 4 to secondary, 3 to third, 2 to fourth, 1 to fifth and 0 to the rest which produce less threat for the focal firm. The points considered as proportional measure and averaged per rival firms. On the way every value reflects a certain rival's competitive threat perceived by the managers and stakeholders of the focal firm. The inner and outer respondents had been separated when the results are gathered. Thus three 10x10 matrix shoved inner, outer and all respondents' perceptions. These variables normalized based on "Z scores" before use. Afterwards a hyperbolic transpose was done based on matrix cells. Hyperbolic transpose formula was:

$$Y = maximum - X + minimum$$

In other words matrix cells were inverted before the correspondence analysis. Because the perception measures were collected based on firm dyads, there was a concern that whether the average of respondents' perception reflects the total pressure a rival produce for focal firm or not. To check for inner consistency of the construct Shrout and Fleiss' intra-class correlation coefficients (ICCs) were used for each of 10 firms [22]. Average inner group correlation coefficient (ICC1) value was 0.17 showed that each of 9

rival airways were highly consistent for all the respondents [15]. Inner group correlation coefficient (ICC2) value 0.95 showed additionally average assessment of the rival group was stable. Thus supporting the gathering of firm dyads concluded the design of the model was reliable.

* Direct attack to the rival: Only entry to a new marked was used as the attack quantity. For focal firm secondary data between the years 2005 and 2010 derived from 156 air routes' changes counted to form the variable. It was considered enough to assess a firm resident to operate on the route in 2005. The satiation of the routes was not a concern as the maximum of 5 firms makes minimum 20% market share which is quite sufficient to count a firm resident on the route. Attack levels were represented by the operation on a new route or increase in the service on any routes [21]. The data gathered from at least two independent broadcast sources to make sure the change of service on 156 domestic routes which represents the attack degree to rivals. To be resident would be a source of threat one move for every dyad was added to the attacks to all the other firms. All the variables had been treated the same way as told for perceived competitive threat.

* Forbearance decision of top management team: To assess the forbearance decisions of top managers a multiple choice and an open ended supporting question had been asked about defining chosen response actions to rival attacks. Behind others in multiple choices two definitions were about value innovation decisions.

* Forbearance reaction of top management: To assess the forbearance reaction of top managers the quantity of value innovation implemented within the same year of the attack. The secondary data surveillance from at least two independent broadcast sources had been executed for over six years starting from 2005 to May 2011 which represents a kind of response to rivals. Travel agency specialists helped to discriminate value innovations from regular operations. The 10x10 matrix prepared by the formula:

<u>Quantity of value innovation/ Years investigated</u>

Sum of value innovation within the industry
Some data about the innovation news were eliminated and had not been taken into consideration because of the fact that they are advertisements giving the starting to a new application or research and development project efforts. Focus was only on implemented new business ideas.

4.1.4. Data analysis

Multiple regression quadratic assignment procedure had been used to verify dependent variables. This procedure is specially designed for solving autocorrelation problem in dyadic data [2, 29]. The matrix procedure applied to all variables using Ucinet (Software for Social Network Analysis ver.: 6.0.0289). Software, relates a dyadic variable (an actor-by-actor matrix) to a monadic variable (a vector representing an interval-scaled attribute of each actor). For example, if the dyadic variable is who friends with whom are, and the monadic variable is height, the procedure tests whether friendship is patterned by height (e.g., children prefer to be friends with children who are the same height as themselves). Model helps both directly compare matrix data and to overcome the auto correlation problem of this type of systematically related data samples. Multiple regression quadratic assignment procedure is a non-parametric algorithm which measures the relation between the averages of dependent matrix with the independent ones. The algorithm first applies a standard algorithm between the same addresses of the dependent and independent matrixes. Afterwards randomly changes the order of columns and lines before measuring the new relation level. To reach the desired error level this procedure reiterates (e.g. 5000) many times. Thus it allows to be sure about the relation of the matrixes is not a coincidence besides overcoming the autocorrelation problem.

To evaluate the results are four square additionally random effect least squares regression analysis and fixed effect regression analysis had been used. The result screens showed no difference with that of the first procedure.

For the second dependent variable Poisson and negative Binom distribution model had been used. Considering Poisson distribution model could not be able to measure variable outputs correctly, to control over dispersion problem negative Binom distribution model had been chosen [6]. Both primary and secondary data were used for the independent variables predicting second dependent variable. For the data Microsoft Excell 7, SPSS (ver: 13.0.0.246) softvare packages were used. Variables transformed based on Z distributions to normalize the error terms before statistical analysis.

Table 1. Averages, standard errors and correlations

Variables	Aver	s.e.	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1.Competitive threat combined	1.433	1.399														
2.Competitive threat outer perception	8.660	20.468	0.474**													
3.Attack to rival's market	1.711	3.034	0.469**	0.274*												
4.Relative scale 2005-2010	4.803	12.328	-0.140	-0.113	-0.061											
5.Rival's attack volume	1.711	3.034	0.318**	0.077	0.163	-0.031										
6.Salience	0.015	1.031	0.164	0.150	-0.048	0.660	0.080									
7.Similarity	-5.994	44.509	0.139	0.063	0.065	0.013	0.065	0.059								
8.Structural Threat 2005-2010	-0.004	0.035	-0.105	-0.100	0.124	0.062	0.530**	-0.070	0.021							
9.Routes of the rival not shared	22.589	14.584	-0.101	0.163	-0.046	-0.086	0.127	0.027	0.000	-0.108						
10.Average occupancy rate of rival's f.	2.043	0.662	-0.269**	-0.181	0.039	0.182	0.014	-0.092	-0.182	0.097	-0.027					
11.Attack behavior to primary rival	0.489	2.130	0.495**	0.643**	0.237	0.084	0.170	0.482	0.041	0.050	0.091	-0.125*				
12.Difference in the age of the firms	0.289	0.654	0.439**	0.300*	0.125	-0.080	0.043	0.083	0.058	-0.088	-0.064	0.086	0.375**			
13.Forbearance decision from pr. rival	0.578	1.577	-0.382	-0.612	-0.288	0.291	-0.051	0.423	-0.492	-0.039	-0.283	0.389	-0.170	-0.467		
14.Forbearance reaction to pr. rival	0.554	0.432	0.273**	0.302	0.182	-0.172	-0.080	-0.039	0.214*	-0.358**	-0.014	-0.432	0.073	0.101	0.331	
15. Competitive threat inner perception	1.649	1.948	0.809**	0.326**	0.428**	-0.202	0.241*	-0.037	0.112	-0.069	-0.135	-0.149	0.299*	0.299**	-0.352	0.287**

n = 90, (Attack to rival's market and Structural Threat: n=72). *p< 0.05, **p< 0.01

5. Results

Table 1, shows the averages, standard errors and correlations for all the variables examined. For 10 airways firms 90 (or 10x9) couple observation of perceived competitive threat had been derived. Table 1, showed that inner and outer perceptions of the competitive threat were highly correlated which proved that the model setup was consistent (p<0.01). Just as expected from a mediator variable no relation have been found between predictors and results of it. Two shadow variable of capability to contest namely salience and similarity or relative size had no connections with any of dependent variables.

To check for multiple connectivity problems, variance inflation factors were estimated. As expected assumed model fit and hypothesis test was safe and included no multiple connectivity problems.

Table 2, displays the regression analysis of predictor variables of competitive threat. Resolution is via 4 regression equation. First model adopts competitive threat as a function of age, slack resources which is a strong potential to innovate and objective structural threat. Controlling the same variables second model considers relative scale, rival's attack volume and capability to contest. 2nd model tests all respondents', 3rd model managers' and 4th model stake holders' perceptions of threat. The measurements of these models were standing for first four hypotheses.

Table 2. Predictors of perceived competitive threat (Regression analysis)

Variables	Model1	Model2	Model3	Model4
Age of focal firm	-0,069	-0,117	0.148	0.282*
Past performance of focal firm	-0,047	0,075	-0,092	-0,032
Slack resources of focal firm	0,024	-0,009	-0,226*	-0,206*
Age of rival firm	0,151*	0,169*	0,160*	0,178*
Past performance of rival firm	0,338**	0,330**	0,375**	0,324**
Slack resources of rival firm	0,006	0,071	0,034	0,122
Objective structural threat	-0,196*	-0,192*	-0,212*	-0,096
Relative scale		-0,155	-0.178*	-0.164*
Volume of rival's attacks		0,415**	0.336**	0,458**
Salience		0,191*	0.214*	0.072
Similarity		0,002	-0.062	-0.068
n	90	90	56	34
R^2 (Adjusted R^2)	0,181(0,122)	0,336(0,252)	0,164(0,094)	0,241(0,176)

*p< 0.05, **p< 0.01

Table 3. The effect of competitive threat over the attack response of top management team

Variables	Model1	Model2	Model3
Age of focal firm	0,022	-0,027	-0,014
Past performance of focal firm	0,294**	0,265**	0,250**
Slack resources of focal firm	0,101	0,109	0,104
Age of rival firm	0,060	-0,051	-0,007
Past performance of rival firm	-0,076*	-0,133*	-0,126*
Slack resources of rival firm	-0,014	0,001	-0,011
Average intensity of the rival routes	0,045	0,064	0,088
Average number of the rival routes	0,078	0,046	0,101
Objective structural threat	0,574**	0,586**	0,583**
Relative scale	-0,013	0,019	-0,003
Perceived competitive threat			
Inner perception	0,329**		
Outer perception		0,432**	
Total perception			0,435**
n	56	34	90
R^2 (adjusted R^2)	0,481(0,415)	0,539(0,481)	0,542(0,484)

Hypothesis 1 was about if the size of the rival affects perceived competitive threat. The answer was no. Because the regression coefficient was negative and was slightly out of acceptable limits ($p < 0.10$) for managers and shareholders. Though for other respondents and totally the reliability were acceptable ($p < 0.05$) H1 was rejected. Hypothesis 2 predicted the bigger the attack quantity to market of focal firm the more perception of competitive threat. The results were quite supportive for both inner and outer respondents and of course totally ($p < 0.01$).

Thus H2 was accepted. With Hypothesis 3 was the similarity of the focal and the rival firms' resources and with Hypothesis 4 was the salience of the rival firm's resources increasing the competitive threat. The coefficient for salience was positive for only managers and shareholders. Other coefficients were indeterminate. So the H3 was rejected and because the total perception was positive and supportive ($p < 0.05$) H4 was accepted except for the stakeholders' perceptions. Table 3 shows the Binom regression analysis results for the effect of competitive threat over the attack response of top management team.

The regression analysis to test Hypothesis 5 consisted of three equations. First of the three equations was the basic equation about the inner perception of competitive threat. Second model was about the threat perceptions of outer respondents and the third one was total perceptions of all the respondents.

All three models were checking by perceptions the predictors' role on the decision making process about the attack response to rivals. Shortly models contain all the control variables and inner, outer and combined threat perceptions respectively. According to Hypothesis 5 considering the focal firm when the objective structural tension is controlled for the more perceived competitive threat the more attacks to the markets of the rival. The coefficient for that condition was positive and supportive at the highest ratio ($p < 0.01$). This finding was still at the same strength when the strong effect of objective structural threat was controlled ($p < 0.01$). Table 4 shows the regression results for the focal firm's forbearance behavior.

Also the regression analysis for the Hypothesis 6 had been executed by three equation models. First was for the threat perceptions of inner firm managers and shareholders, second was for outer stakeholder', and third was for combined perceptions. Hypothesis 6 predicts the competitive threat would increase innovation decisions within the focal firm. The coefficient for innovation decisions was positive and supportive for the three groups of respondents ($p < 0.05$). Thus H6 was also accepted with the control of objective structural threat. Table 5 shows the focal firm forbearance actions after the rival attacks. The independent variables were the same as in the table 4. As the strategic innovation decisions, strategic innovation implementations are supported for all three groups of respondents.

Table 4. The effect of competitive threat on forbearance decisions of top management team

Variables	Model1	Model2	Model3
Age of focal firm	0,005	0,078	-0,050
Past performance of focal firm	0,081	0,049	0,033
Slack resources of focal firm	0,199*	0,247**	0,163*
Age of rival firm	0,060	-0,051	-0,007
Past performance of rival firm	0,276**	0,296**	0,168*
Slack resources of rival firm	-0,022	-0,080	-0,071
Average intensity of the rival routes	0,154*	0,182*	0,189*
Average number of the rival routes	0,051	0,090	0,064
Objective structural threat	0,112	0,046	0,099
Relative scale	-0,382**	-0,408**	-0,357**
Perceived competitive threat			
Inner perception		0,199*	
Outer perception			0,214*
Total perception	0,222*		
n	90	56	34
R^2 (adjusted R^2)	0,281(0,251)	0,272(0,243)	0,292(0,259)

*$p < 0.05$, **$p < 0.01$

Hypothesis 7 predicts that the more perceived competitive threat, the more strategic innovation implementations. Thus H6 was accepted as the coefficients for value innovations were all positive and supportive ($p < 0.01$) for all three groups under the control of objective structural threat which had its own independent effect ($p < 0.05$).

6. Discussion and conclusion

A competitive dynamic which was a crucial topic in the middle term discussions of strategic management have not fallen into contempt yet. Following this stream of works this study has enriched the connections built between strategy and competitive analysis [5, 16].

Table 5. The effect of competitive threat on forbearance actions of top management team

Variables	Model1	Model2	Model3	Model4
Age of focal firm		0,117	-0,008	0,051
Past performance of focal firm		-0,002	-0,013	0,039
Slack resources of focal firm		0,281**	0,202*	0,234*
Age of rival firm		-0,079	-0,043	0,021
Past performance of rival firm		0,337**	0,204*	0,313**
Slack resources of rival firm		-0,119	-0,112	-0,058
Objective structural threat		0,131	0,096	0,108
Relative scale		-0,199*	-0,196*	-0,210*
Perceived competitive threat				
Inner perception			0,382**	
Outer perception				0,415**
Total perception	0,657**	0,442**		
n	90	90	56	34
R^2 (adjusted R^2)	0,391(0,384)	0,410(0,390)	0,365(0,343)	0,367(0,345)

*$p < 0.05$, **$p < 0.01$

To use firm dyads opposes the idea to assume all the rivals are homogeneous. This approach discriminates and puts a hierarchical order to threats generated by rivals subsequently. The results of the study pointed the success of the research design: when objective tension was controlled, focal firm's reactions to rivals changes by perceived threat. In case of the absence of the rival assessments the outer perceptions subsidize the respondents successfully for parallel outputs for study. İnner and outer perceptions have high similarity ratings. Competition seems like a sort of social set up. Especially when inner respondents were thought to be biased by the sensitive firm dynamics the outer respondents would form a reliable and useful tool in future researches. Moreover it might be thought that while inner perceptions reflect the managerial concerns the outer perceptions show the real strategic competitive position of the firm. Albeit similarity, relative scale predictions had no and, salience had limited support for current sample the reverse relation reminded when setting up a competitive threat model one should consider the importance of mutual forbearance [11]. The other reason of the prediction and result difference might be the firms had combined forms of ownership/ partnership relations than common rivals. The competitive threat has not only affected market moves but also has contributions to strategic planning and long term investments. The future research would be helpful to highlight the effect of competitive threat to value innovation decision and implementations.

References

[1] D. C. Hambrick, I. C. MacMillan and D. L. Day, Strategic Attributes and Performance in the BCG Matrix—A PIMS-Based Analysis of Industrial Product Businesses, Academy of Management Journal 25 (3), 1982, pp. 510–531.

[2] D. Krackhardt, Predicting with Networks: Nonparametric Multiple Regression Analysis of Dyadic Data, Social Networks 10, 1988, pp. 359–381.

[3] D. Miller and J. Shamsie, The resource view of the firm in two environments: The Hollywood film studios from 1936- to 1965. Academy of Management Journal 39, 2006, pp. 519-543.

[4] E. Gündüz and F. Semerciöz, The Relation between Competitive Tension and Strategic Innovation. Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences 58, 2012, pp. 29-39.

[5] G. P. Hodgkinson and P. Sparrow, The multidivisional structure: Organizational fossil or source of

value? Journal of Management 19, 1993, pp. 269-298.

[6] H. R. Greve, A behavioral theory of R&D expenditures and innovations: evidence from shipbuildıng, Academy of Management Journal 46, 2003, pp. 685–702.

[7] J. A. Baum and H. J. Korn, Competitive dynamics of interfirm rivalry: Linking structural conditions of competition to patterns of market entry and exit. Academy of Management Journal 39, 1996, pp. 255–291.

[8] J. A. Baum and H. J. Korn, Dynamics of dyadic competitive interaction, Strategic Management Journal 20 (3), 1999, pp. 251–278.

[9] J. A. Baum and T. K. Lant, Hits and misses: Managers' (mis)categorization of competitors in the Manhattan hotel industry, J. A. C. Baum and O. Sorenson (Ed.), Advances in strategic management, Greenwich, CT: JAI 20, 2003, pp. 119–156.

[10] J. B. Barney, Firm Resources and Sustained Competitive Advantage, Journal of Management 17 (1991), 99–120.

[11] J. Gimeno, Reciprocal threats in multimarket rivalry: staking out 'spheres of influence' in the U.S. airline industry, Strategic Management Journal 20 Issue 2, 1999, pp. 101–128.

[12] J. W. Upson and A. L. Ranft, When strategies collide: Divergent multipoint strategies within competitive triads, Business Horizons 53, 2010, pp. 49-57.

[13] K. G. Smith, C. M. Grimm, M. J. Gannon and M. J. Chen, Organizational Information Processing, Competitive Responses, and Performance in the U.S. Domestic Airline Industry, Academy of Management Journal 34(1), 1991, pp. 60–85.

[14] K. G. Smith, W. W. Ferrier and H. Ndofor, Competitive Dynamics Research: Critique and Future Directions, (Ed.) M. Hitt, R. Freeman and J. Harrison, Handbook of Strategic Management, London, Blackwell Publishers, 2001, pp. 1–76.

[15] L. R. James, Aggregation bias in estimating perceptual agreement, Journal of Applied Psychology 67, 1982, pp. 219–229.

[16] M. A. Hitt, R. D. Ireland and R. E. Hoskisson, Strategic Management: Globalization and Competitiveness, Mason, OH: Thomson South-Western, 2005.

[17] M. E. Porter, Competitive Strategy: Techniques for Analyzing Industries and Competitors, New York, Free Press, 1980.

[18] M. J. Chen, Competitor Analysis and Inter-Firm Rivalry: Towards a Theoretical Integration. Academy of Management Review 21, 1996, pp. 100–129.

[19] M. J. Chen and I. C. MacMillan, Nonresponse and delayed response to competitive moves: The roles of competitor dependence and action irreversibility, Academy of Management Journal 35, 1992, pp. 539–570.

[20] M. J. Chen and D. Miller, Competitive Attack, Retaliation and Performance: An Expectancy- Valence Framework, Strategic Management Journal 15, 1994, pp. 85–102.

[21] M. J. Chen, K. H. Su and W. Tsai, Competitive tension: The awareness-motivation-capability perspective, Academy of Management Journal 50, 2007, pp. 101–118.

[22] P. E. Shrout and J. L. Fleiss, Intraclass correlations: uses in assessing rater reliability, Psychological Bulletin 86, 1979, pp. 421-429.

[23] R. A. Burgelman and L. R. Sayles, Inside Corporate Innovation: Strategy, Structure and Managerial Skills, The Free Press, 1986.

[24] R. K. Reger and A. S. Huff, Strategic Groups: A Cognitive Perspective, Strategic Management Journal 14, 1993, pp. 103–124.

[25] R. M. Cyert and J. G. March, A behavioral theory of the firm, Englewood Cliffs Prentice Hall, 1963.

[26] S. H. Ang, Competitive intensity and collaboration: Impact on firm growth across technological environments, Strategic Management Journal 29 (10), 2008, pp. 1057–1075.

[27] W. C. Kim and R. Mauborgne, Blue Ocean Strategy, (Ed.) Ş. Alpagut, CSA Global Pulishing İstanbul, 2005.

[28] W. H. Greene, Econometric analysis (5th Ed.). Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall, 2003.

[29] W. Tsai, Social Structure of "Coopetition" within a Multiunit Organization: Coordination, Competition, and Intra-organizational Knowledge Sharing, Organization Science 13, 2002, pp. 179–190.

Evaluation of OECD Countries Using DANP Method in Reference to Better Life Index Criteria

Pembe Güçlü
PhD
Çankırı Karatekin University Business Administration Department
pembeguclu@karatekin.edu.tr

Abstract. The Organization for Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD) reports people well-beings and living conditions of member countries under the name of "Better Life Index" by considering housing, income, jobs, community, education, environment, civic engagement, health, life satisfaction, safety, work-life balance criteria. There are 11 main criteria (dimension) and 24 sub criteria are taken account and countries are ranked for each criterion separately. The purpose of this study is to evaluate and compare the OECD countries' life quality level by using multi criteria decision-making methods. For this purpose relations between criteria has been determined and network relation map has been demonstrated by the help of DEMATEL (Decision Making Trial and Evaluation Laboratory) method. Then the criteria weights were computed and countries were ranked by using DANP (DEMATEL Based Analytic Network Process) method. Life quality in OECD countries was evaluated according to the ranking results.

Keywords: DEMATEL, DANP, Better Life Index

1. Introduction

OECD has worked on measuring well-being since 2001. As a result of this work, the OECD Better Life Initiative was generated in 2011. The OECD Better Life Initiative focuses on developing statistics to capture aspects of life that matter to people and that shape the quality of their lives [1]. It features a regularly updated set of well-being indicators, regular monitoring and benchmarking through an interactive web-application, the Better Life Index [2]. The web-based tool Better Life Index profiles the 34 OECD member countries and two non-member countries across the 11 topics of well-being with 24 secondary indicators; • (1) Income (Household income; Household financial wealth) • (2) Jobs (Employment rate; Personal earnings; Job security; Long-term unemployment rate) • (3) Housing (Rooms per person; Housing expenditure; Dwellings with basic facilities) • (4) Work–life balance (Employees working very long hours; Time devoted to leisure and personal care) • (5) Health (Life expectancy; Self-reported health) • (6) Education (Educational attainment; Years in education; Students' skills) • (7) Community (Social network) • (8) Civic engagement (Consultation on rule-making; Voter turnout) • (9) Environment (Water quality; Air pollution) A Composite Indicator for OECD Better Life Index • (10) Safety (Homicide rate; Assault rate) • (11) Life Satisfaction (Life Satisfaction) [3].

The aim of this research is to evaluate and compare the OECD countries' life quality level in reference to Better Life Index criteria by using multi criteria decision-making method DANP. For this purpose relations between criteria has been determined and network relation map has been demonstrated by the help of Decision Making Trial and Evaluation Laboratory (DEMATEL) method. Then the weights of criteria were computed and countries were ranked by using DEMATEL Based Analytic Network Process method DANP. This is the first study that weights Better Life Criteria.

2. Literature review

There are a few studies that handle all Better Life Index Criteria in the literature. Kaya [4] has used VIKOR method to evaluate life quality of European Union Countries and European Union Candidate Countries based on Quality of Life Survey (EQLS) variables. Akar [5] has evaluated Better Life Index in terms of Turkey. Turkey was compared with other OECD countries based on all criteria severally. Önay [6] has assessed Better Life with TOPSIS and MOORA methods by using non-weighted criteria. He recommended weighting the better life criteria. OECD countries were also compared in reference to different criteria (economic growth, job quality, income inequality, poverty, health spending etc.) separately by different authors.

Oxford Poverty & Human Development Initiative (OPHI) handles well-being subject different from OECD. OPHI evaluates well-being from the point of poverty. Global Multidimensional Poverty Index (MPI) was calculated in [7]. MPI includes three dimensions (Health, education, living standards) and 10 criteria (nutrition, child mortality, years of schooling, school attendance, cooking fuel, improved sanitation, electricity, flooring, assets).

Warson et all. [8] has also calculated Index of Multiple Deprivation (IMD). The IMD has identified seven domains of indicators that measure the different aspects of deprivation (Income; Employment; Health and Disability; Education, Skills and Training; Barriers to Housing and Social Services; Living Environment; and Crime). Domains were weighted and most important domains were found income and living environment.

3. Methodology

Multi-criteria decision making (MCDM) is one of the well-known topics of decision making Multi attribute decision making (MADM) and Multi objective decision making (MODM) are two main approaches in MCDM. MADM approach requires that the choice (selection) be made among decision alternatives described by their attributes [9].

DEMATEL based ANP (DANP) method is a hybrid multi-criteria decision making method, and it is used to weight the Better Life Index Criteria and ranking the OECD countries based on these criteria in this study.

Many of the multi criteria decision making methods don't consider the relationships between decision criteria. In real world, there can be mutual independence among decision criteria. Relationships can be network structure and in this case the problem can't be analyzed by these linear methods. Saaty [10] developed Analytic Network Process (ANP) method to release this restriction of linear methods. In original ANP method network relations are determined by using zero-one matrix of criteria against criteria using the number one to signify dependence of one criterion on another, and zero otherwise [10]. But degrees of effects can't determine by zero-one matrix.

In DEMATEL Based ANP (DANP) method, the network structure and the weightiness of the dimensions are determined by Decision Making Trial and Evaluation Laboratory (DEMATEL) method [11]. DEMATEL is a multi-criteria decision making method that was developed by Battle Geneva Institute between 1972 and 1976 [12]. DEMATEL is utilized to analyze and illustrate the direct and indirect relations between decision criteria. It uses zero to four influence matrix to find out network and strength of relations.

DANP method has used different research areas like as interactive trade [13], banking [14], airline safety [15], performance evaluation [16], investment decisions [17], maintenance management [18] etc.

DANP method's solving steps are as follows [16, 19, 20, 11];
Step1: Generating the direct influence matrix
Respondents are asked to indicate the degree of influence among criteria on a scale of "0 (Completely no influence), 1 (Low influence), 2 (Medium influence), 3 (High influence) and 4 (Very High Influence)". When there are more

than one respondent, arithmetic mean of the responses are used to generate direct influence matrix A;

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} \dots a_{1j} \dots a_{1n} \\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \\ a_{i1} \dots a_{ij} \dots a_{in} \\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \\ a_{n1} \cdots a_{nj} \cdots a_{nn} \end{bmatrix} \qquad (1)$$

In the matrix A, a_{ij} indicates the influential degree of the criterion i to the criterion j and the diagonal of the matrix is "0".

Step 2: Normalizing the direct influence matrix

Normalized influence matrix X is calculated as follows;

$$X = s.A \qquad (2)$$

$$s = \min \left[\frac{1}{\max_i \sum_{j=1}^n |a_{ij}|} , \frac{1}{\max_j \sum_{i=1}^n |a_{ij}|} \right] \qquad (3)$$

Step 3: *Deriving the total influence matrix*

A continuous decrease of the indirect effects of problems along the powers of matrix X, guarantees convergent solutions to the matrix inverse similar to an absorbing Markov Chain matrix [21]. Note that $\lim_{m\to\infty} X^m = [0]_{n\times n}$ where 0 is null matrix and I is identity matrix total influence matrix is obtained by

$$T = X + X^2 + \cdots + X^h = X(I - X)^{-1} \qquad (4)$$

Step 4: Producing the diagraph and network relation map

Let D denotes the vector that is consisted row totals of the T total influence matrix and R denotes the vector that is consisted column totals of the T. d_i is the sum of the i th row of matrix T, and shows the sum of direct and indirect effects of criterion i on the other criteria. Similarly r_j is the sum of the j th column of matrix T and shows the sum of direct and indirect effects that criterion j has been received from other criteria.

$$T = \begin{bmatrix} t_{11} \dots t_{1j} \dots t_{1n} \\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \\ t_{i1} \dots t_{ij} \dots t_{in} \\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \quad\ \vdots \\ t_{n1} \cdots t_{nj} \cdots t_{nn} \end{bmatrix} \qquad (5)$$

$$d_i = \sum_{j=1}^n t_{ij} \ \blacktriangleright \ D = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ \vdots \\ d_i \\ \vdots \\ d_n \end{bmatrix}_{n\times 1} \qquad (6)$$

$$r_j = \sum_{i=1}^n t_{ij} \ \blacktriangleright R = [r_1 \quad \cdots \quad r_j \quad \cdots \quad r_n]_{1\times n} \qquad (7)$$

By the help of D and R vectors, degree of central roles of criteria $(D + R^T)$ and net effects of the criteria to the system $(D - R^T)$ is calculated. If net effect of criterion i is positive, the criterion i affects the other criteria and if $(d_i - r_j)$ is negative, it means the criterion i is affected by other criteria. The central roles of criteria $(d_i + r_j)$ indicates the degree of relationships with the other criteria [16]. Influence diagraph can be generated by mapping the calculated pairs of $(d_i + r_j, d_i - r_j)$, the casual relationships criteria can be visualized on diagraph.

A threshold value has to choose to draw the network. Threshold value can be determined different ways. Experts can declare, arithmetic mean of the total influence matrix's element can be threshold value or maximum de-entropy method algorithm can be used to calculate threshold value.

After choosing threshold value, effects' directions are determined. Columns are looked for receivers. The higher value from threshold means that the column dimension/criterion is affected by row dimension/criterion. Similarly rows are looked for dispatchers. In the row, the higher value than threshold means that relevant row dimension/criterion affect relevant column dimension/criterion. All the relation directions are reflected to network diagram.

Step 5: Forming Unweighted Supermatrix

The total influence matrix T can be divided into $T_C = [t_{ij}]_{n\times n}$ criteria based matrix and T_D dimensions based matrix. T_D is achieved from criteria based total influence matrix T_C by averaging the groups/dimensions in itself. Criteria based total influence matrix is shown in Eq.(8).

$$ (8) $$

Then the total influence matrix is prepared for the unweighted supermatrix. For this purpose the matrix T_c is normalized into matrix T_c^α and then T_c^α is transposed to achieve unweighted supermatrix W. The process steps are given with Eq (9, 10, 11, 12).

$$T_c^\alpha = \begin{array}{c} D_1 \\ \vdots \\ D_i \\ \vdots \\ D_n \end{array} \begin{array}{c} {}_{c_{11}}^{c_{11}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{12}} \\ {}_{c_{1m_1}} \\ {}_{c_{i1}}^{c_{i1}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{i2}} \\ {}_{c_{im_i}} \\ {}_{c_{n1}}^{c_{n1}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{n2}} \\ {}_{c_{nm_n}} \end{array} \begin{bmatrix} T_c^{\alpha 11} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha 1j} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha 1n} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ T_c^{\alpha i1} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha ij} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha in} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ T_c^{\alpha n1} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha nj} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha nn} \end{bmatrix} \quad (9)$$

$$T_c^{12} = \begin{array}{c} c_1 \\ \vdots \\ c_i \\ \vdots \\ c_n \end{array} \begin{bmatrix} T_c^{\alpha 11} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha 1j} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha 1n} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ T_c^{\alpha i1} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha ij} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha in} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ T_c^{\alpha n1} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha nj} & \cdots & T_c^{\alpha nn} \end{bmatrix} \begin{array}{l} \rightarrow \quad t_1^{12} = \sum_{j=1}^{m_1} t_{1j}^{12} \\ \\ \rightarrow \quad t_i^{12} = \sum_{i=1}^{m_i} t_{ij}^{12} \\ \\ \rightarrow \quad t_{m_i}^{12} = \sum_{j=1}^{m_i} t_{m_i j}^{12} \end{array} \quad (10)$$

$$T_c^{\alpha 12} = \begin{array}{c} c_1 \\ \vdots \\ c_i \\ \vdots \\ c_n \end{array} \begin{bmatrix} t_{11}^{12}/t_1^{12} & \cdots & t_{1j}^{12}/t_1^{12} & \cdots & t_{1m_i}^{12}/t_1^{12} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ t_{i1}^{12}/t_i^{12} & \cdots & t_{ij}^{12}/t_i^{12} & \cdots & t_{im_i}^{12}/t_i^{12} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ t_{m_i 1}^{12}/t_{m_i}^{12} & \cdots & t_{m_i j}^{12}/t_{m_i}^{12} & \cdots & t_{m_i m_i}^{12}/t_{m_i}^{12} \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} t_{11}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{1j}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{1m_2}^{\alpha 12} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ t_{i1}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{ij}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{im_2}^{\alpha 12} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ t_{m_1 1}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{m_1 j}^{\alpha 12} & \cdots & t_{m_1 m_2}^{\alpha 12} \end{bmatrix} \quad (11)$$

$$W = (T_c^\alpha)^T = \begin{array}{c} D_1 \\ \vdots \\ D_i \\ \vdots \\ D_n \end{array} \begin{array}{c} {}_{c_{11}}^{c_{11}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{12}} \\ {}_{c_{1m_1}} \\ {}_{c_{i1}}^{c_{i1}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{i2}} \\ {}_{c_{im_i}} \\ {}_{c_{n1}}^{c_{n1}} \\ {}_{\vdots}^{c_{n2}} \\ {}_{c_{nm_n}} \end{array} \begin{bmatrix} W_{11} & \cdots & W_{1j} & \cdots & W_{1n} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ W_{i1} & \cdots & W_{ij} & \cdots & W_{in} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ W_{n1} & \cdots & W_{nj} & \cdots & W_{nn} \end{bmatrix} \quad (12)$$

W_{ij} denotes the principal eigenvector of the influence of the criteria in the j th cluster compared to i th cluster. If the j th cluster has no influence on the i th cluster $W_{ij} = 0$.

Step 6: Obtaining the Weighted Supermatrix

By multiplying the unweigted supermatrix and normalized total influence matrix, the weighted supermatrix is obtained.

$$T_D = \begin{bmatrix} t_D^{11} & \cdots & t_D^{1j} & \cdots & t_D^{1n} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ t_D^{i1} & \cdots & t_D^{ij} & \cdots & t_D^{in} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ t_D^{n1} & \cdots & t_D^{nj} & \cdots & t_D^{nn} \end{bmatrix} \quad (13)$$

$$T_D^\alpha = \begin{bmatrix} t_{11}/t_1 & \cdots & t_{1j}/t_1 & \cdots & t_{1n}/t_1 \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ t_{i1}/t_i & \cdots & t_{ij}/t_i & \cdots & t_{in}/t_i \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ t_{n1}/t_n & \cdots & tj/t_n & \cdots & t_{nn}/t_n \end{bmatrix} \quad (14)$$

Weighted supermatrix W^α is calculated as Eq (15).

$$W^\alpha = T_D^\alpha W = \begin{bmatrix} t_D^{\alpha 11} \times W^{11} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha 1j} \times W^{i1} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha 1n} \times W^{n1} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & & \vdots \\ t_D^{\alpha i1} \times W^{1j} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha ij} \times W^{ij} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha in} \times W^{nj} \\ \vdots & & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ t_D^{\alpha n1} \times W^{1n} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha nj} \times W^{in} & \cdots & t_D^{\alpha nn} \times W^{nn} \end{bmatrix} \quad (15)$$

Step 7: Calculating the overall priorities

In practice as long as the limiting supermatrix becomes stable, the process of raising power h can be stopped to get the final influential weights of each criterion [22]. So the ANP weights are achieved.

$$\lim_{h \to \infty} (W^\alpha)^h \quad (16)$$

4. Application

It's aimed to generate the relation network structure of dimensions/criteria of better life index and determine the most important dimensions and criteria in this study. For this purpose DANP method is applied to calculate weight of better life index criteria. Eleven academician with professional knowledge of economics, international relations, political science and public administration and business administration were asked to give ratings for each criterion with a five point scale ranging from 0 (no influence) to 4 (very high influence) to obtain the direct influence matrix. The arithmetic mean of the ratings has been reflected to direct influence matrix A. By use of Eq. (2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7) the Central Roles and Net Effects of the Better Life Index Dimensions and Criteria are derived then dispatcher and receiver criteria are determined (see Table 2).

It can be seen in Table 1 that Housing, Income, Jobs, Community and Education have stronger relationships with other performance dimensions. They are dispatchers and most effective dimensions on other dimensions. Environment, Civic Engagement, Health, Life Satisfaction, Safety and Work-Life Balance dimensions are receivers (Table 2). As a result of DEMATEL technique the graph diagram and network structures are constituted in Figure 1 (Threshold value=0,08).

Table 1. Total Relation Matrix for Better Life Index Dimensions

	A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K
A	0,0578	0,0540	0,0378	0,0584	0,0619	0,0348	0,0419	0,0702	0,1029	0,0569	0,0729
B	0,1039	0,0848	0,0835	0,0939	0,0957	0,0645	0,0745	0,1131	0,1470	0,0940	0,1158
C	0,0941	0,1020	0,0817	0,0850	0,0855	0,0539	0,0748	0,1062	0,1391	0,0895	0,1034
D	0,0577	0,0631	0,0578	0,0366	0,0595	0,0330	0,0595	0,0741	0,1000	0,0623	0,0678
E	0,0704	0,0834	0,0826	0,0809	0,0747	0,0480	0,0766	0,0863	0,1148	0,0774	0,0906
F	0,0249	0,0325	0,0338	0,0283	0,0254	0,0286	0,0343	0,0697	0,0767	0,0320	0,0337
G	0,0292	0,0379	0,0374	0,0344	0,0326	0,0384	0,0336	0,0357	0,0584	0,0408	0,0319
H	0,0460	0,0596	0,0573	0,0554	0,0590	0,0384	0,0509	0,0587	0,0983	0,0534	0,0622
I	0,0541	0,0652	0,0608	0,0678	0,0635	0,0452	0,0676	0,0872	0,0643	0,0752	0,0728
J	0,0267	0,0298	0,0267	0,0376	0,0344	0,0153	0,0365	0,0366	0,0606	0,0349	0,0303
K	0,0556	0,0707	0,0625	0,0644	0,0614	0,0404	0,0514	0,0869	0,1148	0,0587	0,0676

Table 2. Central Roles and Net Effects of the Better Life Index Dimensions

Dimensions	d	r	d+r	d-r
Hausing	0,6496	0,6202	1,2698	0,0294
Income	1,0706	0,6830	1,7536	0,3877
Jobs	1,0152	0,6220	1,6372	0,3932
Community	0,6715	0,6428	1,3143	0,0287
Education	0,8856	0,6536	1,5392	0,2320
Environment	0,4199	0,4404	0,8603	-0,0204
Civic Engagement	0,4102	0,6015	1,0118	-0,1913
Health	0,6390	0,8248	1,4638	-0,1858
Life Satisfaction	0,7238	1,0769	1,8006	-0,3531
Safety	0,3693	0,6749	1,0442	-0,3056
Work-Life Balance	0,7343	0,7491	1,4834	-0,0148

Figure 1. Graph and Network Diagram of Dimensions
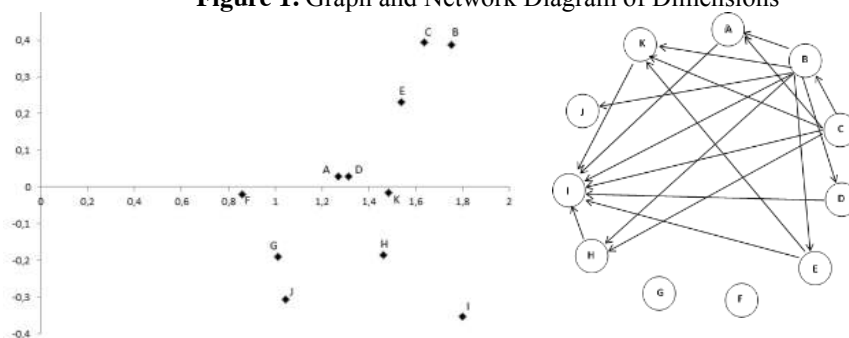
According to analyze results (Table 3) Life Satisfaction is the most important dimension with a weight of 0,1454. Second most important dimension is Health (0, 1101) and the third one Work-Life Balance (0,0943) for the Better Life Index. Environment is the least important area with a weight of 0, 0597.

The global weights are shows that the Life Satisfaction is the most important criteria with the weight of 0,1454 among the 24 better life index criteria; whereas Job Security is the least important criteria (0,019) according to the expert group.

Data set is obtained from web-based tool OECD Better Life Index [23]. Countries had been ranked based on criteria severally and the mean rank score was calculated for each country. By ranking mean rank scores OECD rank-

ing results were obtained. There is no weight effect in this ranking.

DEMATEL weights were reflected to mean rank scores to calculate weighted mean rank scores then the ranking was renewed.

Table 4. Local and Global Weights of Criteria and Dimensions

Dimension	Local Weights	Criteria	Local Weights	Global Weights	Ranking Global Weights
Hausing	0,0780	A1. Dwellings without basic facilities	0,3111	0,0243	21
		A2. Housing expenditure	0,4161	0,0325	13
		A3. Rooms per person	0,3263	0,0255	19
Income	0,0898	B1. Household net adjusted disposable income	0,5103	0,0458	8
		B2. Household net financial wealth	0,5529	0,0496	6
Jobs	0,0841	C1. Employment rate	0,2688	0,0226	22
		C2. Job security	0,2258	0,0190	24
		C3. Long-term unemployment rate	0,2620	0,0220	23
		C4. Personal earnings	0,2981	0,0251	20
Community	0,0838	D1. Quality of support network	1,0000	0,0838	2
Education	0,0843	E1. Educational attainment	0,3584	0,0302	17
		E2. Student skills	0,3212	0,0271	18
		E3. Years in education	0,3588	0,0303	16
Environment	0,0597	F1. Air pollution	0,5114	0,0305	15
		F2. Water quality	0,5409	0,0323	14
Civic Engagement	0,0824	G1. Consultation on rule-making	0,4658	0,0384	12
		G2. Voter turnout	0,5365	0,0442	9
Health	0,1101	H1. Life expectancy	0,5508	0,0607	3
		H2. Self-reported health	0,4999	0,0550	4
Life Satisfaction	0,1454	I1. Life satisfaction	1,0000	0,1454	1
Safety	0,0894	J1. Assault rate	0,4833	0,0432	10
		J2. Homicide rate	0,5163	0,0461	7
Work-Life Balance	0,0943	K1. Employees working very long hours	0,4499	0,0424	11
		K2. Time devoted to leisure and personal care	0,5507	0,0520	5

Table 5. Rankings of countries

Countries	OECD Mean Rank Score	OECD Ranking	Weighted Mean Rank Score	Proposed Model Ranking	Countries	OECD Mean Rank Score	OECD Ranking	Weighted Mean Rank Score	Proposed Model Ranking
Australia	10,4167	4	0,4275	4	Japan	16,0833	18	0,7257	20
Austria	15,1250	16	0,6522	17	Korea	18,1667	20	0,8515	24
Belgium	15,1667	17	0,6006	15	Luxembourg	12,7500	10	0,5514	13
Canada	11,2917	5	0,4675	7	Mexico	27,0417	33	1,1275	33
Chile	26,3333	32	1,0958	32	Netherlands	11,8750	7	0,4875	8
Czech R.	19,8333	23	0,8753	25	New Zealand	12,7500	10	0,5110	9
Denmark	11,9167	8	0,4217	5	Norway	9,3333	1	0,3734	2
Estonia	21,4167	27	0,9720	28	Poland	21,3333	26	0,9091	26
Finland	13,7917	13	0,5335	12	Portugal	23,2500	30	1,0156	30
France	17,4583	19	0,7253	19	Slovak R.	22,7500	29	0,9362	27
Germany	11,8333	6	0,5119	10	Slovenia	19,0000	22	0,8413	23
Greece	25,1667	31	1,0646	31	Spain	18,5000	21	0,6961	18
Hungary	22,7083	28	0,9890	29	Sweden	10,2083	3	0,4174	3
Iceland	12,4583	9	0,4483	6	Switzerland	9,9167	2	0,3694	1
Ireland	13,4167	12	0,5134	11	Turkey	28,1667	34	1,1670	34
Israel	20,7500	24	0,7904	21	United Kingdom	14,4167	15	0,6096	16
Italy	20,8333	25	0,8188	22	United States	13,8750	14	0,5940	14

According to the results Norway, Sweden and Switzerland were found most livable countries. These countries are dominant on others with regard to well-being. On the other hand,

life quality is the worst level in Turkey, Mexico and Chile.

There are small differences between two rankings (OECD ranking and proposed model

ranking). Wilcoxon Signed Rank Test is used to test significance of difference. According to analyze results there is no significance difference between rankings (p=0,988>0,05). Weights of criteria don't change the board.

5. Conclusion

DANP method was used for evaluate Better Life Index criteria and ranking OECD countries in this paper. Housing, income, jobs, community and education criteria were founded as dispatchers. Environment, civic engagement, health, life satisfaction, safety and work-life balance dimensions were founded as receivers.

Weights were calculated for main and sub criteria. According to weights life satisfaction (0, 1454), health (0, 1101) and work-life balance (0, 0943) are the most important Better Life dimensions. Life satisfaction (0, 1454), quality of support network (0, 0838) and life expectancy (0, 0607) are the most important Better Life Criteria.

While Switzerland, 2. Norway and 3. Sweden are the best countries of better life ranking, 32. Chili, 33. Mexico and 34. Turkey are the worst countries of better life ranking. Results are similar to OECD rankings (1. Norway, 2. Switzerland, 3. Sweden, …, 32. Chili, 33. Mexico, 34. Turkey). Weights have not made a significant effect on ranking board.

Weights of the criteria can be calculate different methods, like OPHI methods, entropy method in the future studies.

References

[1] OECD, "Executive summary" in Society at a glance 2014: OECD Social indicators, OECD Publishing, Paris.

[2] M. Durand, the OECD better life initiative: how's life? And the measurement of well-being, Review of Income and Wealth 30-1 (2015), 4-17.

[3] H. Mizobuchi, Measuring World Better Life Frontier, Discussion Paper Series, 13-01 (2013), 1-23.

[4] P. Kaya, İpekçi Çetin E. and Kuruüzüm A., Çok kriterli karar verme ile Avrupa Birliği ve aday ülkelerin yaşam kalitesinin analizi, Ekonometri ve İstatistik, 13 (2011), 80-94.

[5] S. Akar, Türkiye'de daha iyi yaşam endeksi: OECD ülkeleri ile karşılaştırma, Journal of Life Economy, 1 (2014), 1-12.

[6] O. Önay, Multi-criteria assessment of better life via TOPSIS and MOORA methods, International Journal of Business and Social Science, 7-1(2016), 225-234.

[7] OPHI (MPI) Golobal Multidimensional Poverty Index, http://www.ophi.org.uk/multidimensional-poverty-index/, Access date: 31.08.2016.

[8] V. Watson, Sutton M., Didden C. and Ryan M., Deriving weights for the index of multiple deprivation based on societal preferences: The application of a discrete choice experiment, OPHI Working Paper, 23 (2008).

[9] C. Kahraman, Fuzzy multi-criteria decision making theory and applications with recent developments , Springer, USA, 2008, pp. 1-2.

[10] T. L.Saaty, Decision Making with Dependence and Feedback: The Analytic Network Process, RWS Publications, Pittsburgh, 1996.

[11] O. Özveri, Güçlü P. and Ayçin E., Evaluation of service supply chain performance criteria with DANP method, ASSAM International Refereed Journal, (2015), 104-119.

[12] J.-I. Shieh, Wu H.-H. and Huang K-K., A DEMATEL method in identifying key success factors of hospital service quality, Knowledge Based Systems, 23 (2010), 277-282.

[13] T.-C. Wang, The interactive trade decision making research: An application case of novel hybrid MCDM model, Economic Modeling, 29 (2012), 926-935.

[14] W.R. Lin, Wang Y.-H. and Hung T.-E., Selecting mobile banking system service for consumers by using a combined DEMATEL and ANP approach, Journal of Accounting, Finance & Management Srategy, 7-1 (2013), 1-14.

[15] J.J.H. Liou, Tzeng G.-H. and Chang H.-C., Airline safety measurement using hybrid model, Journal of Air Transport Management, 13 (2007), 243-249.

[16] F.-H. Chen, Hsu, T.-S. and Tzeng, G.-H., A balanced scorecard approach to establish a performance evaluation and relationship model for spring hotels based on a hybrid MCDM model combining DEMATEL and ANP, International Journal of Hospitality Management, 30 (2011), 908-932.

[17] W.-S. Lee, Huang A.Y., Chang Y.-Y. and Cheng C.-M., Analysis of decision making factors for equity investment by DEMATEL and Analytic Network Process, Expert System and Applications, 38 (2011), 8375-8383.

[18] D. Vujonovic, Momcilovic V., Bojovic N. and Papic V., Evaluation of vehicle fleet maintenance management indicators by application of DEMATEL and ANP, Expert Systems with Applications, 29 (2012), 10552-10563.

[19]   Y.-L. Wang, and Tzeng, G.-H., Brand marketing for creating brand value based on a MCDM model combining DEMATEL with ANP and VIKOR mthods." Expert Systems with Applications, 39 (2012), 5600-5615.

[20]   C.-H., Su, Tseng, H.-L., Furuzuki, T. and Tzeng, G.-H., Application DANP with MCDM model to explore smartphone software. SCIS-ISIS 2012, Kobe, Japan.

[21]   J.-L., Yang and Tzeng, G.-H., An integrated MCDM technique combined with DEMATEL for a novel cluster weighted ANP method. Expert Systems with Applications 38 (2011), 1417-1424.

[22]   K.-Y. Shen, Yan M.-R. and Tzeng G.-H., "Combining VIKOR-DANP model for glamor stock selection and stock performance improvement." Knowledge Based Systems 2013, http://dx.doi.org/10.106/j.knosys.2013.07.023, Access date: 07.02.2014.

[23]   OECD Better Life Index, www.oecdbetterlifeindex.org, Access date: 11.05.2016.

Fear Marketing Effect on Selling Weapons: 2014-2015 Lebanon Analyses

Uygar ÖZTÜRK
Bitlis Eren University, Vocational School of Ahlat
uozturk@beu.edu.tr
uygarozturkk@gmail.com

Abstract. Power of fear is used over individuals as well as over societies, groups and even states. Intimidation is an easy means of capturing the money of people and also an effective technique of persuasion. People do fear more over daily events (theft, accident, disease, bankruptcy, natural event). A direct relation is established between all these and the product and services of companies, where fear marketing comes into play.

Lebanon, one of the countries that experienced the Arab Spring, witnessed sectarian conflicts erupting in 2011 and also engagement of external groups. Continued events, explosions, conflicts, increase of crime rates, and remarks of government officials and prominent international actors escalated the fear further. People, groups and even the state itself resorted to purchasing arms in order to protect and continue their lives. When there remained no legal problem with arms import, the import of "Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof'' product group, which was $ 22.964.000 in 2014, rose up to $ 147.431.000 in 2015. The import in the product group increased by 642 % between the years of 2014 and 2015.

Keywords: Fear Marketing, Lebanon, Weapons Trade, Conflict, Effect of Civil War,

1. Introduction

Marketing is a significant means of making a profit and increasing sales. Fear marketing, on the other hand, is used by numerous companies despite the discussion of its ethics ongoing for years. This study analyzes the relation of Lebanon, one of the countries that experienced Arab Spring and that has been through major problems over the past years, with the imported "Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof'' product group and its sub-products with the annual with fear marketing. The methodology in the study is based on a theoretical frame. Product-based foreign trade statics were obtained from the website www.trademap.org

2. Fear Marketing And The Factors Affecting The Increase of Fear In Lebanon

2.1. Marketing and Fear Marketing

It is quite natural for enterprises to tend towards sectors with low probability of incurring a loss. These enterprises therefore make strategic decisions and investments. Companies operating in various sectors today also engage in

arms sale; e.g. Mitsubishi, Rolls Royce, Hewlett Packard, Saab, General Electric [1]. According to a research conducted in Europe in 2009, the brands ranking among the first 100 were observed to gain a value by 2 % during the years of 2007 and 2009 when millions of enterprises worldwide went bankrupt [2]

The fear of loss is among the most prominent factors that lead the consumers to purchase[3]. Time is another leading factor affecting the purchasers [4]. For this reason, some products are observed to be purchased in large quantity from time to time. Purchase does not have any meaning once the time of need passes.

Maslow analyzes the human needs in five groups [5]. Well being is the first must to have a need for each of these needs and the individual will need to strain its budget to preserve the well being.

Marketing-oriented utilization of the power of fear is mainly encountered in products and services that protect people from danger, such as gas masks, security materials and similar things. Especially after September 11, 2001, people worldwide were taken with the fear of facing a terror danger any time, and they madly rushed towards numerous conceivable and inconceivable products and services to ensure their security. The market expanded afterwards.[6]

Kim Witte, an important author in this area, defined fear appeals as ''*persuasive messages that arouse fear by depicting a personally relevant and significant threat, followed by a description of feasible recommendations for deterring the threat*" [7].

If a firm made a profit maximization with the fear appeal on advertsing, firm will a evidence that use more effective and common fear theme [8]. Likewise this situation can use in the sectors. Fear addict, well motivated for people and have an easy way of getting money of people [9]. Until today, marketers have at first been concerned with improving the effectiveness of advertising's use of fear appeals [10].

Fear appeals raise issues of ethics. Threat-based advertisements conduct use the force of fear to try to manipulate human behavior [11].

Advertisements as well as handmade calamity is can raise issue of ethics.

2.2. *Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon By Years*

To analyze the case of Lebanon in the years of 2014-1015 requires to look at the situation in 2011 when the conflict erupted and the following years for the conflict arose and grew during this period.

2.2.1. *Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon In 2011*

In the history of Lebanon, one of the Arab Spring countries [12], lies a bloody civil war between ethnic groups and sects (1975-1991).

The religious state of the population in 2011 is as follows [13]

Table 1. Religions rates in Lebanon 2011

Muslim	Christian	Others
% 59.7	% 39	% 1.3

With a look at the 2011 data, it mustn't be difficult to anticipate what awaited Lebanon in 2012. These rates reveal sectarian differences and a dynamism. For instance, the Alevis and Shias living in Lebanon sympathize with the Assad regime, while the Sunnis sympathize with the Opponents. There have been violent conflicts among these groups from time to time [14]. In consideration of also the influence of the fellows of these sects that live outside Lebanon, the environment is observed to be convenient for a new civil war.

2.2.2. *Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon In 2012*

UN Special Envoy Kofi Annan, *King Abdullah* of *Saudi Arabia*, UN Secretary General Ban Ki-moon and US Secretary of State Hillary Clinton stated that these conflicts could evolve into a war.[15] The institutions to provide international security were also aware of the danger, acknowledge the unease in the country, and hinted that they should fear more.

Due to the careless use of arms, increase of abductions and the eventual increase of deaths, the security issue in Lebanon is becoming more

important every day. The Lebanese government's lack of a serious reaction in the face of the border violations from the Syrian side, the effectiveness of radical groups, the political vacuum [16], the risk of safety of life and the feeling of being to face with an imminent unfavorable situation led the people of Lebanon to resort to ways to fend for themselves.

People started to tend towards protecting those from their own sects and killing those who are not. The killing of leading Sunni cleric Sheikh Ahmed Abdul Wahed at a military checkpoint and the release of suspected soldiers and policemen do prove this case. The decisions to be made by the government also became a controversial topic [17]. The probability of state officials' biased decision-making got also internalised by the people.

Lebanese Interior Minister *Marwan* Charbel stated that the crime rate in the country increased by 50 percent after immigrants fleeing from the Syrian civil war took shelter in Lebanon and that Syrian refugees were committing crimes almost every day [18].

2.2.3. Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon In 2013

The killing of at least 66 people as a result of explosions in Lebanon in 2013's August revealed the magnitude of the situation and the fact that events were leading to a civil war [19]

Approximately 60.000 refugees entered Lebanon every month and this number was expected to reach 914.000 till 2013's August, and to exceed one million with the illegal entrances into the country. This figure would make up 25 percent of Lebanon's population and render Lebanon's demographic fragility more sensitive [20].

2013 Attack Occurred: 15 August 2013 Roueiss Bombing, 23 August 2013 Tripoli's Dual Bombings,19 November 2013 Beir Hassan Bombing, 3 December 2013 Hassan Lakkis assassination, 27 December 2013 Mohamad Chatah [21]

2.2.4. Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon In 2014

The ending of the new year without the election of a new President resulted in the continuation of the already existing problems in every stage from the social structure to armed threat risks [22].

*The UNHCR (*United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees) gave the first signals that the crisis would get even deeper as they could get only 14 % of the $ 6.5 billion fund for the Syrian refugees in Lebanon[23]. Protests that focused on what the fighting forces left behind rather than those fighting actively, did not only create an environment of fear and worry on masses but also dragged the entire region to an uncertainty and carried polarization to even more dangerous dimensions [24].

France and Saudi Arabia made an agreement to donate weapons to the Lebanese government in order to weaken the Hezbollah in Lebanon. Accordingly, Saudi-funded France would send weapons worth $3 billion to Lebanon [25].

A militant by the name of Abu Sayyaf *al-*Ansari announced in a recorded speech the creation of a Lebanese franchise for the ISIS [26]. With the ISIS being added to the existing radical groups, it wouldn't be hard to see that conflicts, explosions, attacks, insecurity and fear would become more violent.

In the year of 2014, Lebanon engaged in the civil war in Syria and the country was thereby dominated by a continuous feeling of threat and tension [27].

One other major issue is the social, economic and security-related problems caused by the number of Syrian refugees. According to official figures provided by Lebanese authorities, the number of Syrian refugees in Lebanon was 1.5 million and this number reached 2 millions with the informal refugees [28].The increase of crime rate at the same rate, was also inevitable.

2014 Attack Occurred: 2 January 2014 1st Haret Hreik Bombing, 16 January 2014 1st Hermel Bombing, 1 February 2014 2nd Hermel Bombing, 3 February 2014 Van bombing, 19 February 2014 Iranian cultural center, 22

February 2014 3rd Hermel Bombing, 29 March 2014 Arsal Bombing, 20 June 2014 Dahr al Baidar Bombing, 24 June 2014 Beirut Cafe Bombing, 27 June 2014 Hotel Bombing, 6 August 2014 Tripoli Bomb, 19 September 2014 2nd Arsal Bombing, 20 September 2014 Hezbollah bombing, 14 November 2014 3rd Arsal bombing, 3 December 2014 4th Arsal Bombing [29]

2.2.5. Factors Influencing the Increase of Fear in Lebanon In 2015

Hezbollah declared a war against ISIS in 2015. [30] The Lebanese Army's obtainment of the second largest arms shipment from China [31], Turkey's willingness to send 1.1 billion dollars to Lebanon [32] and the well financing of the groups and the Lebanese Army for battle indicated that the chaos and conflict would deepen even more and challenging times were awaiting the residents in Lebanon.

There always existed a need for arms till 2015. According to 2011 remarks of a black market arms dealer from Lebanon [33], there was a leap in the number of arms asked from Syria. The reason for tendency to black market and the non-reflection of this increase on official figures was the restriction of arms purchase during previous years [34]. The arms deal made between the United Nations and Lebanon on October 27, 2014 [35] resulted in the reflection of the figures on official data.

2015 Attack Occurred: 10 January 2015 Jabal Mohsen cafe, 26 January 2015 Ghassan Ajaj, 2 March 2015 Bader Eid, 5 October 2015, Second Hezbollah Bombing, 5 November 2015 5th Arsal bombing, 6 November 2015 6th Arsal bombing, 12 November 2015 Bourj el-Barajneh, 5 December 2015 Deir Ammar [36].

Table 2. List of products imported by Lebanon: At the same aggregating level as the product: 93 Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof [37]

Unit: US Dollar Thousand	List of products imported by Lebanon: At the same aggregating level as the product: 93 Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof				
Years	**2011**	**2012**	**2013**	**2014**	**2015**
Imported Value	28.138	19.955	23.249	22.964	147.431

Graphic 1: Prospect for diversification of a product imported by Lebanon in 2015 Product: 93 Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof [38]
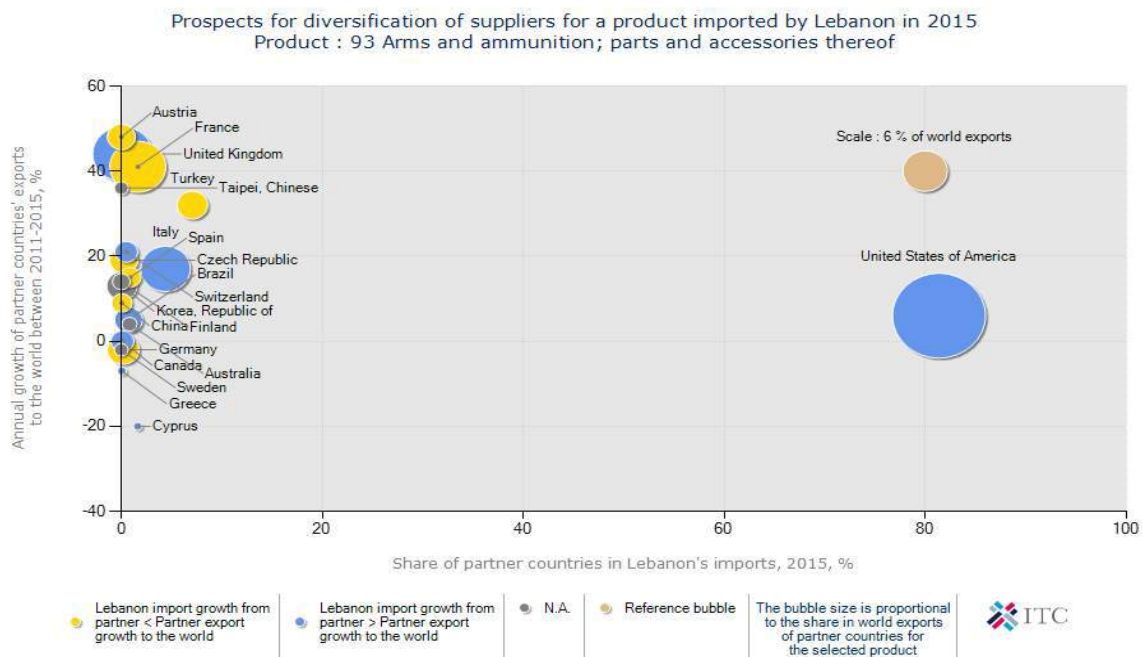
Table 3. List of products imported by Lebanon Metadata detailed products in the following category: 93 Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof [39]

Unit : US Dollar tho- usand	List of products imported by Lebanon Metadata detailed products in the following category: 93 Arms and ammuni- tion; parts and accessories thereof					
Code	Product label	Imported value in 2011	Imported value in 2012	Imported value in 2013	Imported value in 2014	Imported value in 2015
9301	Military weapons, incl. sub-machine guns (excluding re- volvers and pistols of heading	6	10	1	0	73388
9306	Bombs, grenades, tor- pedos, mines, missi- les, cartridges and other ammunition and projectiles	2939	3137	4751	3426	53019
9303	Firearms and similar devices which operate by the firing of an explosive charge, e.g. Sporting	23953	15723	17024	18313	15772
9305	Parts and accessories for weapons and the like of heading 9301 to 9304, n.e.s.	315	296	281	359	1844
9304	Spring, air or gas guns and pistols, trunc- heons and other non- firearms (excluding swords, cutlasses	858	704	811	798	1505
9302	Revolvers and pistols (excluding those of heading 9303 or 9304 and sub-machine guns for military	1	16	332	28	1500
9307	Swords, cutlasses, bayonets, lances and similar arms and parts thereof, and scabbards and sheaths	65	69	50	41	1

When we look at the financial return of the "Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof" product group Lebanon imported from around the world at Table 2, we see that this figure was $28.138.000 in 2011, when the conflict erupted, and that it decreased to $19.955.000 in 2012. This figure rose up to $23.249.000 in 2013, decreased to $22.964.000 in 2014, and increased again up to $146,073.000 in 2015. The 2015 value of this product group is 642 % higher than its value in 2014. The self protection motive of the people, groups, society and even the state increased at this rate.

Graphic 1 contains a bubble map showing the density of the countries that export the arms and ammunition in this product group to Lebanon and the percentages of the increase in their sales in comparison to the previous year. As is seen on the graphic, the Unites States of America is the leading country in the arms sale to Lebanon with 81.4 %. On the other hand, Austria, United Kingdom, France, and Turkey did increase their arms sale.

Table 3 provides product-based details of the "Arms and ammunition; parts and accessories thereof" product group. The most effective and typical products of this product group are military weapons, sub-machine guns and 9306 Bombs, grenades, torpedos, mines, missiles, cartridges and other ammunition and projectiles. When examining two product groups, we see that the product group numbered 9301 was 0 in 2014 whereas it rose up to $73.388.000 in 2015. On the other hand, the product group numbered 9306 was $3.426.000 in 2014 and this rose to $53.019.000 in 2015; which reveals an increase by 1.547 %.

3. Conclusion and Recommendations

Conflicts, explosions and abductions continue in Lebanon, one of the Arab Spring countries, since 2011. While the internal sectarian differences and various groups were already enough to cause a conflict, the ISIS opening of a front in Lebanon exacerbated the conflicts further. The number of refugees fleeing the Syrian civil war- going beyond 2 millions with legal and illegal crossings- the proportional increase of the crime rate, foreign

funds escalating the conflicts, failure to elect a President, political vacuum, and remarks of leading politicians from the world politics such as Kofi Annan, King Abdullah, Ban Ki-moon and Hillary Clinton that warned against the probability of an imminent civil war escalated the fear among the people. It was not only the people but also groups, communities and the state itself that were caught by the fear marketing tactics.

Increase of the unemployment rate, deterioration in macro economic indicators, plummeting of tourism -one of the major sources of income- and increase of the budget deficit every passing year indicate the worsening of the economy. For the state, society and groups, there is one common ground which is much more important than poverty, drought, famine, fragmentation and disintegration; well being. Arms is the only thing to be possessed in Lebanon to preserve the well being. No matter to what extent the economy worsens, arms becomes the fundamental product to be possessed.

The fact that France - one of the countries producing arms- sells weapons valuing 3 billion dollars to Saudi Arabia rather than Lebanon, the economy of which is stronger than the latter, and the fact that it sells these weapons for Lebanon, reveals that its already produced weapons are meant to be sold ultimately. These weapons are meant to be given to who needs them and to be paid by another/ who owns money. In short, arms producers do sell their arms under the name of funding, donation, aid and agreement.

The basic difference of marketing from sales is that sales management is an effort to sell the existing product, whereas marketing management is the production of a product needed. Fear marketing has brought marketing to a new point; ensuring the emergence of a need for an already produced product. When this is the case, people can be intimidated and they are made to need arms by means of human-made artificial disasters without there being a need for an effort of promotion. Sales valuing billions of dollars are made without any advertisement.

Consumer behaviors or modern marketing tactics can be examined in Lebanon, other

countries that witnessed Arab Spring or in societies under chaos.

References

[1] https://www.theguardian.com/news/datablog/2012/mar/02/arms-sales-top-100-producers Accessed on: 17.10.2016

[2] Monrabal, J., Marketing in a turbulen environment: How can crisis and brands coexist, https://issuu.com/brandchannel/docs/486_wp_marketing_turbulent_environment Accessed on: 17.10.2016

[3] İ. Kaya, Pazarlama Bi'tanedir! Bir Pazarlama Ansiklopedisi, 1. Basım, Babıali Kültür Yayıncılık, İstanbul, 2010, p. 137

[4] Ö. Torlak and R. Altunışık, Pazarlama Stratejileri Yönetsel Bir Yaklaşım, 2. Basım, Beta Basın Yayın Dağıtım, İstanbul, 2012, p. 147

[5] Gawel, Joseph E. Herzberg's Motivation Theory and Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs. Eric/AE Digest, ERIC Clearinghouse on Assessment and Evaluation Washington DC, 1997, p. 5

[6] İ. Kaya, Pazarlama Bi'tanedir! Bir Pazarlama Ansiklopedisi, 1. Basım, Babıali Kültür Yayıncılık, İstanbul, 2010, p. 137-138

[7] A. Stephan, ''Fear Appeals in Social Marketing'', Aarhus University, Business and Social Sciences, 2012, p. 18

[8] Homer E. Spence and R. Moinpour, ''Fear Appeal in Marketing A Social Perspective'', Journal of Marketing, Vol. 36. No. 3, 1972, pp. 42

[9] http://selimtuncer.blogspot.com.tr/2007/02/korku.html Accessed on: 17.10.2016

[10] Homer E. Spence and R. Moinpour, Fear Appeal in Marketing A Social Perspective, Journal of Marketing, Vol. 36. No. 3, 1972, p. 43

[11] G. Hastings and M. Stead, ''Fear Appeals in Social Marketing Strategic and Ethical Reasons for Concern'', Psychology and Marketing, November 2014, p. 972

[12] B. Duran and N. Yılmaz, "Ortadoğu'da Modellerin Rekabeti: Arap Baharı'ndan Sonra Yeni Güç Dengeleri" Türk Dış Politikası Yıllığı 2011 Ed.. B. Duran, K. İnat and A.R. Usul, SETA Yayınları XIV, I. Baskı: Kasım 2012, Ankara, p.73

[13] C. Doğrusözlü and A. Üçağaç, Lübnan 2011, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2011, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, F. Aydın and B. Yıldırım, Açılım Kitap, 2012, p. 119

[14] ibid., p. 119-139

[15] C. Çakmak, Lübnan 2012, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2012, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, Açılım Kitap, 2013, p. 124-125

[16] İbid., p. 111

[17] İbid., p. 124-125

[18] http://news.xinhuanet.com/english/world/2012-04/26/c_131553686.htm Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[19] C. Doğrusözlü, Lübnan 2013, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2013, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, Açılım Kitap, 2014, p. 99

[20] https://tr.sputniknews.com/turkish.ruvr.ru/2014_03_05/suriyeli-multeci-akini-lubnani-tehdit-ediyor/ Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[21] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_attacks_in_Lebanon Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[22] A. S. Özdemirci, Lübnan 2014, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2014, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, Açılım Kitap, 2015, p. 83

[23] Lübnan'da 1 Milyon Suriyeli, *Sabah*, 4 Nisan 2014.

[24] A. S. Özdemirci, Lübnan 2014, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2014, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, Açılım Kitap, 2015, p. 87

[25] Para Suudilerden Silahlar Fransa'dan, *Hürriyet*, 31 Aralık 2014.

[26] A. S. Özdemirci, Lübnan 2014, Ortadoğu Yıllığı 2014, Ed. K. İnat, M. Ataman, Açılım Kitap, 2015, p. 87

[27] ibid., p. 88.

[28] ibid., p. 90

[29] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_attacks_in_Lebanon Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[30] http://www.thenational.ae/world/middle-east/hizbollah-declares-war-on-isil Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[31] http://www.dailystar.com.lb/News/Lebanon-News/2015/Jul-16/306972-lebanese-army-receives-second-weapons-shipment-from-china.ashx Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[32] http://www.naharnet.com/stories/en/202612 Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[33] http://www.csmonitor.com/World/Middle-East/2011/0517/Syrian-refugees-describe-gangs-fomenting-sectarian-strife Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[34] http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/?uri=CELEX:02006R1412-20130701&qid=1460461462984 Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[35] http://disarmament.un.org/treaties/t/att Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[36] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_attacks_in_Lebanon Accessed on: 18.10.2016

[37] http://trademap.org/Product_SelCountry_TS.aspx?nvpm=1|422||||TOTAL|||2|1|1|2|1|1|1 Accessed on: 19.10.2016

[38] http://trademap.org/Country_SelProductCountry_Graph.aspx?nvpm=1|422||||93|||2|1|2|1|1||2|1|1 Accessed on: 19.10.2016

[39] http://trademap.org/Product_SelCountry_TS.aspx?nvpm=1|422||||93|||4|1|1|1|2|1|1|1|1 Accessed on: 19.10.2016

The Determinants of FDI Flows in Textile and Clothing Sector: Bangladesh-India-Turkey

Gizem Erboz
Szent Istvan University- PHD Student
gizemerboz.ge@gmail.com

Abstract. The purpose of this paper is to investigate the main determinants of FDI flows in Textile and Clothing sector of Bangladesh, India, and Turkey in which the apparel activities are mainly dominated in the last few years. Unlike the common holistic approach, decreasing labor costs could not be the sole effect on investments of developed economies into these countries; therefore, this paper attempts to find out other significant factors on FDI flows. The research is based upon the idea of whether these factors are changed in terms of different characteristics of the nations. The factors represent the political, economical, and social dimensions approved by both national and international units. The data observed consists of ten years' time scale due to lack of data availability for the previous years. The various mathematical models are examined by using nine factors in order to reach the appropriate outcomes for each country.

Keywords: FDI, T&C, India, Bangladesh, Turkey

1. Introduction

Throughout history, the textile and clothing (T&C) sector is counted as the backbone of the industrial developments of the nations, despite the negative outcomes of competitive forces toward manufacturing industry in which repulses the companies in producing bottom-line on their profits. Beyond the improvements of globalization, the leading companies seek for the locations where they produce cheaper than their rivals, are close to potential markets to stimulate their sales or obtain higher returns on the capital invested; this led to the discovery of new clusters offered by the developing countries for multinational companies. 'For decades, European and US apparel buyers as well as consumers benefited from the steady movement of production activities to low cost countries in the Far East (McKinsey Apparel CPO Survey, 2013, p.1). In the early stages of the developments of T&C, the strategy had been conducted into earning huge profits by producing cheap costs and selling to the high income level customers. However, regarding the effects of globalization on T&C, the companies have been influenced by the competitive measures and giving more importance to supply chain issues where the opportunities are given

to disperse their activities on a global level (Gereffi and Memedovic, 2003).

Before the 1960s, the industry was driven by the developed countries such as Germany, France, Italy, and the US due to their high level of industrialization. However, after the 1960s, the profound alters had been seen in the industry such as shifting the production plants into the Asian countries. As a result of this, the supply of fibres in the developing countries reached more than 21% of the total world supply by 1980 (ILO, 1996).

In the 1990s, the high concentration of retail firms through improvements of their networks had been a positive impact on demand of the customers likewise canalizing the integrations between the suppliers, manufacturers and retailers on T&C. The leading retail firms have moved the production facilities into the other countries while controlling their networks from their suppliers and distribution channels to the customers. For instance, in 1992 the apparel products made in the US was counted as 49% of total production whereas this figure decreased to 12% in 1999 (Gereffi & Memedovic, 2003).

After the 2000s, there had been many improvements in favor of developing countries on the sector. In 2005, by phasing out of the Multifibre Agreement (MFA), the quota restrictions were eased on the exports of the developing countries into the US, Canada, and Europe (Evans and Harrigan, 2005). In 2008, the financial crisis had intensified in drop of the customer demands on the T&C. Hence, the slowdown of the sector urges some MNCs in restraining their FDI activities particularly in developed countries in which the sector has been immensely affected by the recession. Furthermore, developing and transition economies have been more resilient in response to recession; FDI flows were still positive in 2008 although the growth of FDI flows were less than the previous year (UNCTAD, 2009).

In fact, forty years ago, the sector had been dominated by developed countries; whereas the developing countries have become the leaders of producing the textile and apparel products today (UN,2005). The competitive challenges foster MNCs to expand their networks by adding up new partners and markets into their supply chain network from developing countries. After the improvements in customs union with EU in 1990s, the biggest newcomer, Turkey, has taken a large proportion of exports for overall consumption in the world

in the T&C sector. In 2012, the country was the ninth biggest supplier in textile and seventh in the clothing sector in the world (EMIS, 2013, p. 4). In the 2000s, Bangladesh ranked among the ten largest exporters in the T&C sector while Switzerland, the fourth largest exporter of the world, dropped out of the list (Nordas, 2004, p. 19). Furthermore, India ranked second as the world's largest supplier in both the textile and clothing sectors in 2013 (WTO, 2014, p. 58). The potential manufacturing activities of these countries have taken the attention of the leading apparel companies.

Since the apparel sector has been implementing the low fix and manufacturing costs, it would be more favorable than any others; however, huge competitive pressures enable the companies to take some precautions; mainly cutting labor costs (Smith, 2016). Therefore, the basic approach is that labor cost is a significantly important factor of shifting the FDI flows from developed countries into the developing economies. However, in the changing world, the cost challenges do not arise in only one factor, but the several factors could undermine the positive impact of the main determinant. In T&C sector, it is expected that labor cost factors play an important role in FDI decisions of MNCs but companies have to consider multi factors such as macroeconomic or political determinants that could decrease the benefits of labor cost (Abernathy et al, 2006).

The purpose of this paper is to investigate the FDI determinants in T&C sector of the three main countries; Bangladesh, India and Turkey, which are attractive host economies of this sector by TNCs. The research attempts to find out the other important factors, except labor cost, of FDI upon T&C sector in different countries. Therefore, the hypothesis is conducted on the idea that labor cost is not the only determinant of FDI flows in T&C sector, there could be some other factors on the effect of FDI. Besides, the research gives an idea whether these factors influence FDI on T&C positively or negatively in terms of the different characteristics of the countries.

2. Literature Review:

2.1.The Definition of FDI:

According to Ridgeway (2004), the common definition of FDI is stated as 'an *enterprise*

(institutional unit) in *the financial or non-financial corporate sectors* of the *economy* in which a *non-resident* investor owns 10 per cent or more of the voting power of an incorporated enterprise or has the equivalent ownership in an enterprise operating under another legal structure'. As a basic definition, according to UNCTAD (2007), FDI is the significant degree of the investors on controlling the management activities of the enterprise residents in another economy. The minimum threshold (10%) distinguishes FDI from portfolio investments. The concept of 'controlling the management activities' does not only refer to transferring the ownership, but also acquiring the technology, substantial resources, organizational skills and capital between the home and host countries.

Additionally, the companies are invested in other economies in several ways such as establishing the subsidiaries, building the production plants up associated with the centralized or decentralized approaches or investing through merger & acquisitions or joint ventures. Simply put, FDI involves the decisions of internalization strategies of the companies. If the firms would rather internalize the business activities any kind of ways mentioned above except the decisions of franchising or licensing, that decision leads to FDI (Kayam-Hisarcıklılar, 2009)

2.2. The Determinants of FDI:

2.2.1.Labor cost:

Labor cost is described by the costs that occur in the case of employing the workers by the employers; therefore, it comprises the total expenditure paid for the employees such as the payments of working and non-working periods, bonuses and ex gratia payments, taxes, social contributions, security payments and so on adopted by the Eleventh International Conference of Labor Statisticians (ILO, 1988, p. 61).

The subsistence theory of wages, launched by Adam Smith (1797), analyzes the wages related with the labor supply. This theory also has some similarities with the 'Population Theory' of Thomas Malthus (1798). In light of these theories, the countries embodied with higher population would face with the lower wages offered by MNCs because of large labor supply.

According to comparative advantage theory, labor cost is closely related with the price of the products especially in labor driven industries.

The competitive forces urge the manufacturers transfer the facilities into the low labor cost countries (Wang, 2013). That means the companies acquire the benefits upon low labor cost by staying competitive on the prices, higher revenues and profit margins or investing more on another factors such as technology, R&D activities and etc.

The H-O theory suggests that the countries mostly focus on the abundant factor when two countries are engaged in trade. The factor endowments (labor and capital) must be held in the country in which they are intensively used while the commodities are traded. Developing countries have labor factor in abundance while capital is offered by developed economies. However, factor endowments could be transferred through FDIs or trade activities between the countries. Therefore, FDI could be accepted as the complimentary and the substitute of the trade (Sarna, 2005).

Fields (2010) mentions the differences of labor market contexts between the developing and developed countries in his research. According to him, the salaries are very low in developing countries compared to the developed ones despite the long working hours in these countries. Also, informal labor markets, especially women and children workers undermine the average wages with the effect of dropping. Due to the negative effects of uncertainty in financial institutions and high income flows, the employees in these countries need to manage their incomes carefully and usually they always need the job in order to survive.

The developing countries are embodied in large populations, labor abundance and low skilled labor so they offer low labor cost to MNCs engaged in labor driven industries particularly in textile and clothing. Therefore, the labor cost is the significant determinant of indulgences of FDIs to developing countries; however, the other factors also should be examined linked with FDIs.

2.2.2.Productivity:

Productivity is defined as the ratio of a volume measure of output to volume measure of input usage (OECD, 2001, p.9). In other words, the term refers to how efficient usage of the factor endowments such as labor and capital are used in order to produce the output given in the economy. The numerous studies supported

by Vaughan (1978), Baeza (1991) and Bloom (2010) indicate strong relationship between the productivity and FDI. Borensztein et al. (1998) states that the investments of human capital could increase the benefits taken by the host economy in terms of productivity so as FDI. Bloom (2010) indicates that the transfer of both capital and technology through FDI into the host countries increase productivity in these economies in the long run. The more productivity could result in the competition of the countries in both export level and impact on future FDI of the MNCs. The correlation between FDI and productivity have positive effects directly on the economic growth of the nations.

2.2.3.Exchange Rate:

According to OECD (2001), exchange rate refers to the price of one country's currency into another. The empirical results supported by Benasssy et al (2001) and Kiyota et al (2004) indicate that exchange rate movements are negatively related with FDI., The devaluation of the host economy currency means the cheaper foreign assets invested for this country; therefore, weaker currency could be strengthened the FDI flows into the nations. Another advantage of the appreciated foreign assets holded by the foreign firm against the currency of the host economy is to obtain the international financial assets at lower costs more than the domestic companies. Therefore, the more profit earned by the same projects than the company's competitors (Udomkerdmongkol et al, 2006).

2.2.4.Inflation:

Inflation term is used by the economists as ongoing rises on general price levels in units of money. Sayek (1999) shows in her thesis how FDI flows respond if the inflation rates change in different countries. Her theoretical model consists of FDI inflows of US into both Canada and Turkey and how the FDI flows are affected by the inflation of the host economy. The results are not extremely staggering; 3% increase in Canadian inflation has a decreasing effect by 2 percent in US flows to Canada by increasing US domestic investments by 1 percent. However, the highest inflation rate in Turkey in 7 percent only responses in reducing 1.9 percent of US flows to Turkey. That means the developing

countries would be affected less than the developed ones on higher inflation rates over FDI flows (Hakro-Ghumro, 2011).

Dornbusch (1991) believes that the nominal exchange rate brings down the inflation to the economies; therefore, exchange rates and inflation are correlated. Necşulescu and Şerbanescu (2013) show that the higher inflation is closely linked to the depreciation of the currency; that would result in lower FDI flows in the host economies. Toulaboe and Terry (2013) advocate that different exchange rate regimes highly affect inflation in developing countries.

On the other hand, Omankhanlen (2011) analyzed the exchange rate and inflation effect on FDI and economic growth on Nigeria. According to him, the exchange rate has an effect on FDI inflows to Nigerian economy while the inflation is not the effective variable on FDI. Furthermore, the empirical studies are conducted by Walsh and Yu (2010) indicate that exchange rate is significantly important for the primary, secondary and tertiary sector investments in emerging economies while inflation is not any effect on the investments for all sectors.

2.2.5.Openness:

Openness is calculated as the value of merchandise trade (export + imports) divided by the rate of gross domestic production of the country (World Bank, 2014). Singh and Jun (1999) created the three hypotheses regarding the FDI determinants. The first one includes the impacts of political risks on FDI where the model directly shows the negative relationship. The second one is the conditions of business operations found the positively related with the FDI flows. However, the third one, export orientation, determines the most significant factor for the countries in which show prone to attract more FDIs. The abutment of the hypothesis is the standard regression model and Granger casuality tests.

On the other hand, Jordaan (2004) advocates that the influence of openness could vary on the type of FDI investment. According to him, trade restrictions would lead to less openness of the host economy; however if FDI is market seeking which means that the companies supply the products or services to the host economy or neighboring regions, that could be taken as an advantage for MNCs due to the limited imports of the other competitors. In contrast, if FDI is more likely to be export-oriented, then more open economy is preferable because MNCs are

willing to sell their products or services to the other economies rather than host economy. Otherwise, the MNCs are generally exposed to the higher transaction costs associated with the exporting.

Demirhan and Masca (2008) obtain the positive strong relationship between the degree of openness and FDI in developing countries. However, Schmitz and Bieri (1972) find the weak connection on the variables.

2.2.6.Human Development Index (HDI):

HDI Index was created by United Nations in order to assess the development of a country, not only the economic growth. The key dimensions of human development are considered in index such as long and healthy life (life expectancy index), being knowledgeable (education index) and standard of living (GNI index). HDI evaluates by the geometric means of the indices of the three dimensions.

According to Alsan et al. (2006), the life expectancy is strongly and positively associated with the FDI inflows. Health is a major component of the human capital; therefore, the high human capital encourages the more FDI driven into the countries. The findings of Reiter et al (2010) also shows that there is a positive linkage between FDI and human development. In this case, the higher FDI affects the higher human development.

In the basis of starting point of economy, technical progress and growth are managed by the creation of the knowledge. According to Blomström and Kokko (2002), the economic growth of developing countries is more prompt than developed countries in terms of human capital and knowledge. That means the high human development creates more human capital spillovers and in the long run the growing number of the skilled labor would exist in developing countries. The human development is also supported by the foreign technology which is achieved through foreign investments. Therefore, the relationship effect between the education and FDI based on the vice versa.

Yasmin et al. (2003) indicate the role of standard of living is important on the attractiveness of FDI in lower income countries. However, the continuous improvements of standard of living would lead to higher incomes of people that live in certain countries. Therefore, the investors could face with the increase in wages of the employees, which is not favorable for

MNCs. On the other hand, the rises of the standard of living on the host economy would result in more spending in this country; for this reason, the demand increases would result in higher investments if FDI is market seeking. From those standpoints, the relationship between standard of living and FDI could be determined by the type of FDI.

In this paper, these three indicators are compiled as the one indicator, HDI, shows the human development effect on FDI.

2.2.7.Worldwide Governance Indicators (WGI):

WGI indicators consist of the six dimensions of the governance; voice and accountability, political stability and absence of violence, government effectiveness, regulatory quality, rule of law and control of corruption. Each dimension is calculated separately on the basis of the data taken by national units and created by the aggregate results of the World Bank. The data is taken by the 30 different data sources included in the surveys of households and firms, commercial business information providers, nongovernmental organizations and public sector and organizations.

Haksoon (2010) investigates the relationship between the political stability and FDI by using three different techniques of panel data. The results are summarized in three conclusions. The first result indicates that the host economies with higher political rights could be faced with the higher FDI outflows. Secondly, higher levels of corruption and low democracy of the host economies influence more FDI inflow attractiveness into these countries. As for the third result, the inward FDI performance is positively associated with the corruption level of the countries and negatively related with the low level of democracy.

On the other hand, the uncertainty on the political issues could lead to huge losses for the enterprises on the economy; that is called the political risks on FDI. The report of MIGA (2011) conducted on the political risks on world investments shows that political risks are significant concerns for MNCs which would like to invest in developing countries. Also, the government actions of the host economies have an impact of the decisions of the investors. The strict rules and regulatory controls create the disputes between the foreign investors and the governments of the host economies; which

would have negative effect on inward FDI flows of companies.

WGI describes the control of corruption as the measurement of how much public power is being used for private interests; this includes both small and huge levels of corruption. However, the empirical results are divided into the significance level of the corruption effect on FDI; while some of them find the strong relationship with FDI, some others fail to find any relationship. Smarzynska and Wei (2002) claim that corruption causes higher FDI inflows due to less transparency of local bureaucracy; however, it also affects the entry mode of the foreign investors. The MNCs are tend to enter into the host economies with joint ventures generally by choosing the local partners because of the fears of the effects of corruption. As opposite of this, Gaviria (2002) finds that there is no relationship between FDI and corruption. His analysis consists of 2.612 firms in 29 countries.

Under these assumptions, the indicators are used as separately in linear model; those show the higher level of importance on FDI in literature. Therefore, the three of them are considered highly important on FDI are selected for the model; these are political stability and absence of violence, regulatory quality and control of corruption.

Hypothesis 1a: From the literature mentioned above, the hypothesis is conducted that labor cost is not the only determinant of textile and clothing sector; however, it is substantially important.

Hypothesis 1b: The determinants of FDI change by country to country because of the different characteristics of the host economies.

3.Methodology:

In this chapter, the methodology is described in analyzing the factors on FDI inflows into the following countries; Bangladesh, India and Turkey. Ordinary Least Squares (OLS) Model is used in estimating the significant indicators of FDI inflows on textile and clothing industry.

The data used is compiled by the different sources, consists of the international and national units of the three countries over a period of 10 years (2005-2014). The model is composed over nine constructs; labor cost, productivity, exchange rate, inflation, openness, HDI, political stability and absence of violence, regulatory quality and control of corruption.

The validity of the data is tested by using scatter plots and deviances. The values of panel data for each country was described by the plots in order to identify the best fitted indicators with FDI. Additionally, all of the indicators are analyzed separately in the simple linear regression model in order to see the significance level of each variable with FDI. Only the indicators that show the accurate model with all dimensions are used in multiple regression model. Some of the indicators are represented in Ln form in different models because of their high standard deviations and means.

After simple regression models, multicollinearity test is conducted with the indicators selected from scatter charts and simple linear regression model in order to evaluate the dependency relationship between the variables. The independent variables should not be closely linked with each other in order to obtain the accurate results in multiple linear regression.

As a final step, the multiple regression model, where all indicators are put into the same model, and the indicators are tested in terms of their significance level, t statistics, coefficients and estimation errors. The significance level of each indicator represents the degree of dependency of FDI affected by the independent variable. The equation of the multiple regression model is the following;

$(FDI)_{BIT} = \alpha + \beta_1 * (laborcost)_{BIT} + \beta_2 * (productivity)_{BIT} + \beta_3 * (openness)_{BIT} + \beta_4 * (exchange\ rate)_{BIT} + \beta_5 * (inflation)_{BIT} + \beta_6 * (HDI)_{BIT} + \beta_7 * (political\ stability)_{BIT} + \beta_8 * (regulatory\ quality)_{BIT} + \beta_9 * (control\ of\ corruption)_{BIT}$ where B, I and T denote the countries, value of β is the regression coefficient and α is the value of intercept

In this paper, Excel programme is used for the analysis. If unit labor cost is significantly important in multiple regression model and the other factors are not considered significant; then the hypothesis is rejected. However, if there are any other variable(s) which influence FDI flows in the model besides unit labor cost; then the hypothesis is approved. As for simple linear regression, if unit labor cost is not considered as a variable which affect FDI; that means there are other factors which explain FDI flows into the countries so hypothesis is approved before the results of multiple regression model.

4. Emprical Results:

4.1. Bangladesh:

As for the data analysis through nine constructs, the findings indicate no relationship between three constructs toward FDI inflows of Bangladesh; these are political stability, regulatory quality and inflation. Therefore, these variables are ignored for the further stages. The rest of six variables are tested in the multicollinearity test in order to analyze the dependency between the independent variables. As checked the results of the multicollinearity test, unit labor cost is only related with productivity, exchange rate and openness where show the higher VIF values (>10). The productivity is correlated with the all other indicators; therefore, this indicator is ignored in the multiple regression model. The other indicators show lower VIF values with each other; that means they have the low dependency with each other. However, since some of them is related with the unit labor cost, two different multiple regression models are examined in case of Bangladesh. The first model is applied in the indicators non-correlated; unit labor cost, HDI and control of corruption. In second model, the unit labor cost is extracted from the model and the rest of the indicators, exchange rate, HDI, openness and control of corruption is taken in multiple regression model.

4.1.1. Model 1 in case of Bangladesh: Multiple Regression Model with Unit Labor Cost;

The model is analyzed with unit labor cost, HDI, inflation and control of corruption and the results show whether these variables are significant for FDI or not. However, the result of the model carried out by three variables is not supported by mathematically; only if HDI indicator is removed from the model, the model reveals the accurate results in regression model.

Therefore, the results of the final model indicate that the best model is created by two variables; unit labor cost and control of corruption.

The model represents the equation as follows;

$Ln(FDI)_B = \alpha + \beta_1 * (unit\ labor\ cost)_B + \beta_2 * Ln\ (control\ of\ corruption)_B$

Table 1 shows the mathematical results of the Model 1 calculated in Excel in case of Bangladesh.

Table 1. The results of Model 1 in case of Bangladesh

Variables	P value	T stat.	Estimated coefficient	Standard error
Unit labor cost	0,0082	3,64	3,35	0,91
Control of corruption	0,02	2,99	0,52	0,17
R^2: 0,88 Significance: 0,0005 Standard error: 0,24				

Source: Author's own calcuations in Excel

The p values of two variables are less than standard value (0,05) and the standard errors show the lower rate than coefficients of the variables. Therefore, the results of the value of t statistics are more than 1 where minimum standard errors are calculated for both variables. The significance level shows the multiple regression model with unit labor and control of corruption is definitely relationship with FDI. As the p value of labor cost show the variable is strongly relationship with FDI, more than control of corruption. Although control of corruption has less importance of FDI decisions into Bangladesh than unit labor cost does, still this indicator is related with the FDI inflows.

4.1.2. Model 2 in case of Bangladesh: Multiple Regression Model without Unit Labor Cost

The result of the multicollinearity test shows that unit labor cost is extremely correlated with some other indicators except HDI and control of corruption. Therefore, model 2 is created by removing the unit labor cost; conducting with the rest of the determinants, HDI, exchange rate, openness and control of corruption. However, the empirical results are not concluded by these four constructs because of the higher significance values of HDI and exchange rate. Therefore, as final result only two variables are tested for the model, openness and control of corruption.

The equation of Model 2 is;

Ln (FDI)$_B$ = α + β$_1$ * Ln (openness) + β$_2$ * Ln(control of corruption)

Table 2 depicts the results of Model 2 in case of Bangladesh.

Table 2. The results of Model 2 in case of Bangladesh

Variables	P value	T statistics	coefficient	Standard error
openness	0,015	3,34	4,404	1,315
Control of corruption	0,032	2,76	0,65	0,23
R²: 0,89 Significance: 0,002 Standard error: 0,24				

Source: Author's own calcuations in Excel

As regards of the result of Model 2, both the p values of openness and control of corruption are lower than 5% significance level and t statistics are higher than 1. That means the coefficients of the indicators are higher than standard errors; the difference between these values are high. The value of the significance level of the model is quite high and R square is too high, these show that these two variables are significantly related within FDI inflows in Bangladesh.

4.2. India:

Regarding the results of the multicollinearity test, the model is conducted with all indicators except inflation and control of corruption in which the data is not normally distributed within FDI inflows of India. For this reason, the rest of the seven variables are tested in multiple regression model; these are labor cost, productivity, exchange rate, openness, HDI, political stability and regulatory quality. On the other hand, this final model is distorted by the higher significance values of four indicators; exchange rate, openness, political stability and regulatory quality. Therefore, these variables are extracted from the model.

The final model is conducted with three variables; unit labor cost, productivity and HDI. The equation of the model is stated below;

Ln (FDI) = α + β$_1$ * (unit labor cost) + β$_2$ * (productivity) + β$_3$ * (HDI)

Table 3 shows the results of final model in case of India.

Table 3. The results of multiple regression Model in case of India

Variables	Estimated coefficient	Standard error	T stat.	P value
Unit labor cost	1,45	0,34	4,20	0,005
Productivity	-5,89	1,71	-3,43	0,01
HDI	-9,05	2,19	-4,11	0,006
R²: 0,86 Significance Level: 0,005 Standard error: 0,16				

Source: Author's own calcuations in Excel

The final model gives significant results on FDI for India. The each factor is estimated with higher significance level (<0,05), the result of T statistics for each variable is away from 0 value which means the standard error shows lower value than coefficient of each variable. The model is calculated as minimum standard error, R square is quite high and the final significance level is lower than standard value (0,05).

4.3. Turkey:

Productivity, exchange rate, inflation and HDI are eliminated from the model since their data is not normally distributed by scatter plots and simple regression model. Therefore the multicollinearity test is made by rest of five variables. The result is verified that these five variables are not correlated with each other. Therefore, multiple regression model is tested by unit labor cost, openness, political stability, regulatory quality and control of corruption. The model includes the equation below;

$$Ln (FDI)_T = \alpha + \beta_1 * Ln (unit\ labor\ cost) + \beta_2 * Ln (openness) + \beta_3 * Ln (political\ stability) + \beta_4 * (Regulatory\ Quality) + \beta_5 * Ln (control\ of\ corruption)$$

Table 4 indicates the result of the multiple regression model in case of Turkey.

Table 4. The results of multiple regression model in case of Turkey

Variables	coefficient	Standard error	T statistics	P value
Ln unit labor cost	5,27	5,72	0,92	0,40
Ln openness	-6,12	8,20	- 0,74	0,49
Ln pol. stab.	2,29	3,15	0,72	0,50
Ln reg. Qual.	55,43	72,75	0,76	0,48
Ln cont. of corrup.	6,50	7,11	0,91	0,41

Source: Author's own calcuations in Excel

However, the final model consists of higher estimation errors with the variables and lack of significance for FDI. All of the indicators indicate the lower significance level more than 5% and their t statistics values are lower than 1. Therefore, the coefficients are lower than the estimation errors; that means the model is calculated in higher standard error.

The model is attempted to be finalized by the significant indicators; therefore, the various models have been tried so far. Some of the indicators are eliminated from the model in order to reach the results; however, the research is not concluded for Turkey because none of the indicators correspond to FDI inflows of Turkey.

5.Shortcomings and Challenges of the Research

The various analysis and models have been tried in this paper in order to obtain the best results and identify the factors of FDI on T&C sector. The nine determinants are considered as significant for FDI after several studies from literature; however, only few studies are conducted about textile and clothing sector in last ten years. For this reason, less studies obstruct the determination of the factors and methods for FDI in this study. Some of the studies attempt to examine the factors of FDI as general; therefore, analysis of sector basis research could distort the results of the models in this research.

The main challenge is that T&C sector have begun to grow in 1990s in case of Bangladesh, Turkey and India; therefore, the countries are not observed in long scale; data could be received only for last ten years. Besides, there are no numerous sources for data of FDI as sector basis, only the national units of the countries are used in this research for FDI flows. Therefore, it is questionable of the reliability of data for the mathematical models. Besides, some data is converted from the original form; for instance, unit labor cost is given with the national currencies; therefore, the currencies are converted into US dollar by taking into consideration the exchange rates in given year. Therefore, the results could be distorted due to these challenges. Also, since the results are taken by less observations, the effect of some indicators on FDI could not clearly be identified on scatter plots and mathematical models.

As referring the shortcomings of the results, the R squares of the final models are taken too high. That means the percentage of variance of dependent variable predicted by explanatory variables is so close to real results; however, there could be many other factors which are not taken in this paper in effect of FDI; therefore, the results of the R squares could not be strongly accurate for the models. The reason of that could be the same as mentioned above. However, R square generally is taken higher in multiple regression models when more than one indicator is added up the model.

6.Conclusion:

In this paper, the main determinants of FDI on T&C sector are questioned by crediting that the labor cost is not the only reason of investments of MNCs into the host economies. Besides, the determinants that influence the decisions of MNCs could be distinguished by country to country; which depends on how the country responses in economical, political or social matters in which MNCs could obtain the benefits. Both the improvements or lags of the

countries in these matters could be taken as the advantages by foreign investors.

Concerning the multicollinearity results of Bangladesh, two different models are concluded in empirical results. In the first model, it is not staggering in obtaining high significance of labor cost in T&C sector since the country has been comparative advantage regarding in this for many years. The mathematical results of first model depicts that unit labor cost is the most significant factor in effect of FDI decisions in T&C sector. The other variable, control of corruption, is also found important in related with FDI flows in the country; however, not as significantly as the effect of unit labor cost. In model 2, two different variables, openness and control of corruption, show the effect on FDI flows in Bangladesh; however, these variables are not strongly effect in FDI flows of T&C sector. As checked in this research, FDI flows of Bangladesh in T&C sector have been growing up in the last decade and do not fluctuate extremely as observed data; therefore, it is believed that the estimated results are taken in accurately by low standard errors.

The findings of this research for India, three variables show the impact on FDI flows in T&C sector. These variables are unit labor cost, productivity and Human Development Index. Unit labor cost and HDI has almost the same significance level; which strongly affect decisions of foreign investors. Although productivity also influences on FDI flows in India; however, it is not as strong as the effects of labor cost and HDI on FDI.

As observed in data, FDI of India fluctuates in upward shape on 2008 and 2009; which means many foreign flows shift through the developing countries from developed worlds; particularly India has been the favorable location of the investors. However, in the last years, especially after financial crises, there has been a decrease on FDIs because of the competitive neighbors of India and strong regulations conducted on the country.

Although various mathematical models are established in this paper, the findings are not concluded for FDI of T&C sector in Turkey. In regarding the scatter plots and simple regression model, it is certain that there is no significant relationship between FDI and the following variables, exchange rate, inflation, productivity and HDI. The rest of the factors, unit labor cost, openness, political stability, regulatory quality and control of corruption are tested in multiple regression model; however, the results also could not be finalized for any variables impact on FDI.

The possible reason of unconcluded research for Turkey is the fluctuates of the observations in last ten years. FDI in T&C sector in case of Turkey could not be estimated in upward or downward trend; presumably, the observations are inadequate for FDI flows in Turkey.

As concluding remarks for three countries, unit labor cost is still the most of the important factor on investment decisions of multinationals in Bangladesh although the government has raised the minimum wages in recent years. However, main retail companies also underpin the decision of the government through increasing wages in textile & clothing sector because of the discomposures of their customers, NGOs and media across increasing sweatshops of these firms in the country. Unlikely in Bangladesh, the government enforces the tight laws and regulations upon workers right and bans in employing the child workers in India. Therefore, the possible reason of less foreign investments in recent years is counted as the government involvement in this sector. In the case of Turkey, the minimum wages are counted as more stable and less fluctuations observed in the last ten years; however, the country always holds the higher wages as compared to Bangladesh and India as observed period. Therefore, other factors could be effective on the decisions of the investments except labor cost.

Additionally, the political issues are much more likely in response to FDI inflows in Turkey; however, in Bangladesh, FDI activities are mostly based on the economical matters. In India, economical concerns are also significant impact on FDI inflows, but also social matters such as dimensions of HDI are observed as significantly important on the decisions of FDI. Therefore, the factors which explain the FDI flows of T&C sector in these economies are changed by country to country. The multifactors are found out explaining the FDI flows for each country, not only unit labor cost; for this reason, both hypotheses are approved by the empirical results since unit labor cost is not the only determinant of FDI flows of T&C sector.

References:

[1] Abernathy F. H., Volpe A., Weil D. (2006): *The future of the apparel and textile industries: prospects*

and choices for public and private actors, Environment and Planning A, Vol.38, No.12, pp. 2207-2232

[2] Alsan M.- Bloom D. E.-Canning, D. (2006): *The Effect of Population Health on Foreign Direct Investment Inflows to Low- and Middle-Income Countries,* World Development, Vol. 34, No. 4, pp. 613–630

[3] Baeza A. V. (1991): *Labor Productivity and Marxist Theory of Labor Value,* Investigacion Económica Vol. 50. No. 198, pp. 45-69

[4] Bangladesh Bank (2014): Foreign Direct Investment in Bangladesh, Survey Report, pp. 28-32, available at https://www.bb.org.bd/pub/halfyearly/fdisurvey/fdis urveyjuldec2014.pdf (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[5] Bénassy-Quéré A. Fontagné L., Lahrèche-Révil A. (2001): *Exchange-rate strategies in the competition for attracting foreign direct investment,* Journal of the Japanese and international Economies 15.2: 178-198.

[6] Blomström M.-Kokko A. (2002): *FDI and Human Capital:A Research Agenda,* OECD Development Center, Working Paper No. 195, August

[7] Bloom N.-Mahajan A.-Mckenzie D. J.-Roberts D. J. (2010): *Why Do Firms in Developing Countries Have Low Productivity?*, available at SSRN: http://ssrn.com/abstract=1533430 (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[8] Borensztein E.- Gregorio J.- Lee J. W. (1998): *How Does Foreign Direct Investment Affect Economic Growth?,* Journal of International Economics, Vol.45(1), pp. 115-35.

[9] Bureau of Labor Statistics (2016): *Labor force statistics, productivity and unit labor costs, consumer prices*, International Labor Comparisons – ILC, Retrieved from 2016, available at http://www.bls.gov/fls/data.htm (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[10] Demirhan E.- Masca M. (2008): *Determinants of Foreign Direct Investment Flows to Developing Countries: A Cross-Sectional Analysis,* Prague Economic Papers, Vol. 4, pp. 356-369

[11] Dornbusch Rudiger (1991): *Exchange Rates and Inflation,* MIT Press Cambridge, London

[12] DSIR (n/d): *Textiles & Garments: Productivity & Efficiency Benchmarking, pp. 37-50*, available at http://admin.umt.edu.pk/Media/Site/STD/FileManag er/OsamaArticle/january/2_9.pdf (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[13] EMIS (2013): *Textile and Clothing Sector Turkey,* EMIS Insight Report, December 2013, p. 4

[14] Evans C. L., Harrigan J. (2005): *Tight Clothing. How the MFA Affects Asian Apparel Exports,* International Trade in East Asia, NBER-East Asia Seminar on Economics, Volume 14, pp. 367-390

[15] Gereffi G., Memedovic O. (2003): *THE GLOBAL APPAREL VALUE CHAIN: What Prospects for Upgrading by Developing Countries,* UNIDO sectoral series, Vienna

[16] Hakro, A. N.- A. A. Ghumro (2007): *Foreign Direct Investment, Determinants and Policy Analysis: Case Study of Pakistan,* Working Paper No. 2007 (21789), Glasgow University

[17] Haksoon K. (2010): *Political Stability and Foreign Direct Investment, International Journal of Economics and Finance,* Vol. 2, No. 3, August, pp. 59-71

[18] International Labour Organization (1988): *Current International Recommendations On Labour Statistics,* ILO Publications, Geneva, Switzerland, p. 6

[19] International Labour Organization (1996): *Globalization Changes the Face of Textile, Clothing and Footwear Industries,* ILO Press Release, 28 October 1996

[20] Jordaan J. C. (2004): *Foreign Direct Investment and Neighbouring Influences,* University of Pretoria, Faculty of Economic and Management Sciences

[21] Kayam S.- Hisarcıklılar M. (2009): *Determinants of Turkish FDI Abroad,* Topics inMiddle Eastern and North African Economies , Vol. 11, No. September 2009

[22]Kiyota K.-Shujiro U. (2004): *Exchange rate, exchange rate volatility and foreign direct investment.* The world economy 27.10: 1501-1536.

[23] Malthus T. (1798): *An Essay on the Principle of Population,* Johnson J. , London

[24] Marx, Karl (1867-1879) (1925-1926), *Capital: A Critique of Political Economy.* 3 vols. Chicago, Kerr, Volume 1: *The Process of Capitalist Production.* Volume 2: *The Process of Circulation of Capital.*Volume 3: *The Process of Capitalist Production as a Whole.*

[25] McKinsey&Company (2013): *The global sourcing map-balancing cost,compliance, and capacity,* McKinsey Apparel CPO Survey, October, p. 1.

[26] MIGA World Bank Group (2011): World Investment and Political Risk, MIGA/World Bank Publications, Washington

[27] Ministry of Textile (2016): Textile Data- FDI Flows, available at http://texmin.nic.in/textile-data (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[28] Necşulescu C. I.- Şerbănescu L. L. (2013): *Impact of the inflation on the exchange rate and on the average salary,* CrossCultural Management Journal, Issue: 29, pp. 222-227

[29] Nordas H. (2004): *The Global Textile and Clothing Industry post the Agreement on Textiles and Clothing,* WTO Publications Discusssion Paper No:5, Geneva, Switzerland, p. 19

[30] OECD (2001): *A Guide to the Measurement of Industry-Level and Aggregate Productivity Growth,* Paris, March 2001, p. 9

[31] OECD (2001): *Glossary of Statistical Terms,* OECD Economic Outlook, September

[32] Omankhanlen A. E. (2011): *The Effect of Exchange Rate and Inflation on Foreign Direct Invest-*

ment and Its Relationship with Economic Growth in Nigeria, " University of Galati Fascicle, Economics and Applied Informatics

[33] OECD (2016): *FDI Flows by Partner Country,* OECD Statistics, Retrieved at 2016, available at https://stats.oecd.org/Index.aspx?DataSetCode=FDI_FLOW_PARTNER

[34] Reiter S. L et al (2010): *Human Development and Foreign Direct Investment in Developing Countries: The Influence of FDI Policy and Corruption,* World Development, December, Vol. 38, Issue 12, pp. 1678-1691

[35] Ridgeway A. (2004): *Definition of Foreign Direct Investment (FDI) Terms,* IMF Committee on Balance of Payments Statistics and OECD Workshop on International Investment Statistics, Statistics Canada, November 2004; Annex I-II

[36] Sarna R. (2005) *The impact of core labour standards on Foreign Direct Investment in East Asia,* Japan Institute for Labour Policy and Training. Tokyo, Japan. October

[37] Sayek S. (1999): *Foreign Direct Investment and Inflation; Theory and Evidence (Turkey, Canada Open Macroeconomics),* Duke University Economic, General (0501)

[38] Schmitz A-Bieri J. (1972): *EEC Tariffs and US Direct Investment,* European Economic Review, Vol. 3, pp. 259-270

[39] Singh H.- Jun K. W. (1999): *Some New Evidence on Determinants of Foreign Direct Investment in Developing Countries,* WB Policy Research Working Papers, November

[40] Smarzynska B. K.- Wei S. J. (2002): *Corruption and Cross-Border Investment: Firm-Level Evidence,* William Davidson Institute, Working Papers Series 494, University of Michigan

[41] Smith J. (2016): *Imperialism In The Twenty-First Century: Globalization, Super-Exploitation, and Capitalism's Final Crisis,* Monthly Review Press, New York

[42] Stirati Antonella (1994): *The Theory of Wages in Classical Economics: A Study of Adam Simith, David Ricardo and Their Contemporaries,* Edward Elgar Publishing Company, England

[43] Republic of Turkey Ministry of Economy (2013): *Foreign Direct Investments in Turkey 2012,* General Directorate of Incentive Implementation and Foreign Investment, October

[44] Toulaboe D.- Terry R. (2013): *Exchange Rate Regime: Does it Matter for Inflation?*, *Journal of Applied Business and Economics*, Vol. 14, No. 1, pp. 56-71

[45] Udomkerdmongkol M.- Görg H.-Morrissey O. (2006): *Foreign Direct Investment and Exchange Rates: A Case Study of U.S. FDI In Emerging Market Countries,* The University of Nottingham, School of Economics

[46] UNICTAD (2005): *TNCs and the Removal of Textiles and Clothing Quotas*, United Nations Publication, Switzerland

[47] UNITED NATIONS (2007): *Transnational Corporations, Extractive Industries and Development,* World Investment Report, pp. 245-249

[48] UNCTAD (2009): *Global FDI In Decline Due To The Financial Crisis, And a Further Drop Expected,* UNCTAD Investment Issues Analysis Branch, Investment Brief No:1

[49] UNITED NATIONS (2015): *Human Development Index Reports,* available at http://hdr.undp.org/en/content/human-development-index-hdi (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[50] US Department of State (2015): *2015 Turkey Investment Climate Statement,* available at http://www.state.gov/documents/organization/241987.pdf (Date of last download: 01.05.2016)

[51] Vaughan K. (1978): *John Locke and the Labor Theory of Value*, Journal of Libertarian Studies, Vol. 2 (4), pp. 311-326

[52] Walsh J. P.- Yu J. (2010): *Determinants of Foreign Direct Investment: A Sectoral and Institutional Approach,* IMF Working Paper, Asia Pacific Department

[53] Wang X. (2013): *The determinants of textile and apparel export performance in Asian countries,* Iowa State University, Paper 13642

[54] World Bank (2016): World Development Indicators, available at http://data.worldbank.org/indicator (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[55] World Bank (2015): *World Governance Indicators*, Country Reports, available at http://info.worldbank.org/governance/wgi/index.aspx#countryReports (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[56] WITS World Bank (2014): *Openness to Trade,* available at http://wits.worldbank.org/openness-to-trade-visualization.html (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[57] World Trade Organization (2014): *WTO International Trade Statistics 2014,* pp. 50-58, available at https://www.wto.org/english/res_e/statis_e/its2014_e/its14_highlights2_e.pdf (Date of last download: 28.04.2016)

[58] Yasmin B.-Hussain A.-Chaudhary M. A. (2003): *Analysis of Factors Affecting Foreign Direct Investment in Developing Countries,* Pakistan Economic and Social Review Vol. 41, No. 1&2, pp. 59-75

The Development of Active Venture Capital Markets and Determinants of Venture Capital Markets in Pakistan and Turkey

Hülya ÜNLÜ
Çankırı Karatekin University
Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences
Economics
unluhulya11@gmail.com

Abstract. The role of developing venture capital markets is important for community innovation activities. The venture capitalists are able to lower risks via supporting management. It allows increasing the expected profits of high-technology products. Venture capital market is known as one of the important funds for financing the innovation activities and it also has an effect on development of countries. In this study we examine the developments of venture capital markets and some important viewpoints which have effects on the genesis of venture capital markets. In addition to all we are interested in defining the determinants of venture capital markets. The main purpose of this study is to examine the needs of both Turkey and Pakistan while they intend to innovate. The growth of the countries is related to their effort on making innovations, which makes countries invest in innovation investments. What happens to Venture Capital Availability of countries, when Judicial Independence, Business cost of Terrorism and infrastructure's quality of countries is on the list of venture capitalist? We gather the Global competitiveness index data from the World Economic Forum from 2006-2007 to 2015-2016 and examine the determinants of venture capital markets by using panel data analysis. According to results VCs' priorities are different for both countries. Pakistani government should show more effort on the security of businesses and corruption. Turkish government should be following a different strategy for export. The products should be more advanced technology based. For Turkey another important point is that the asymmetry on the government procurement of advanced technology products should be controlled carefully

Keywords: Venture capital, Innovation, Global Competitiveness index

1. Introduction

The role of developing venture capital markets is important for the sustainable growth of the economies. The competitive business environment makes growth more difficult for the developing countries. This competitive environment forces to economy change its direction from traditional markets to more knowledge based markets. Enterprises come with the new ideas which have the power of change the quality and variety of the goods/services according to the needs of the market. The reason of all these changes perfectly correlated with seeking for profit and taking competitive advantage over the market via the creation of knowledge. All these necessities refers one special activity; "innovation". Schumpeter the world's leading researcher emphasizes that anyone seeking profits must innovate. The problem occurs when the needed fund could not be found by the investors. Venture Capital is the one which is the financing instrument that can fulfill this task, in a single institution[1].

The focus of this study is the Venture capital availability in Pakistan and in Turkey. Pakistan is the one of the major emerging in South Asia and Turkey is the one of the major economy in Europe and Central Asia. Both countries' economies are formed by the existence of Small and Medium sized Enterprises, which are the locomotive of the sustainable growth. In the history of both countries Venture Capital funds are only backs to 1990s. The first Venture Capital Investment Trust established in 1996 by Turkish Government as Vakıf Venture Capital Trust. Around the same period, in 1995 Pakistani government established the legal background of Venture Capital companies and in 2000 the first legal Venture Capital Company TMT (Telecom Media Technology) established. The modern history developed in late 19th and early 20th century around the world, especially in the USA.

Innovation investments are the main concern of the Turkey as well as Pakistan which are new at the Venture Capital Markets. The common problem of both countries is being stuck at the same level of income, which causes the lower middle income traps and upper middle income traps. The main purpose of this study is showing different characteristics of the countries effect on the availability of venture capital. The literature focuses on the economic side of the problem. While it is accepted that *the economy itself is problem on the way economy,* it is going to be investigated in different way in this study. The interested factors associated with the venture capital availability are the security perceptions of business environment, the strength of legal structure and judicial independency, governments intention and support of the innovation investments, ease of doing business, exporting capacity and innovation capacity of the countries.

In this study we examine the relationship between Venture Capital Availability (VCA) and factors effecting with using panel data. This study makes both theoretical and empirical contributions to the literature on the impact of factors on VCA. The Global Competitiveness Index data from the World Economic Forum from 2006-2007 to 2015-2016 used in the study and the determinants of venture capital markets are examined by using panel data analysis. The upper middle and lower middle income countries are the main interest of the study. 57 countries have been investigated. This study consists of the nature of innovation investment and the relation between Venture Capital, data analyses with description of variables, empirical strategy, and results.

2. Literature

In the literature a few study has been detected in related topics. Gompers and Lerner the earliest study which investigates the determinants of the U.S. venture capital market. They are interested in the period 1969-1994. According to their study economic growth, firm-specific performance and reputation are the factors which dominates the venture capital [2]. Black and Gilson work on capital markets which are stock market-centered and bank-centered capital markets. They investigate the link between an active stock market and a strong venture capital market. Their findings show the importance of a liquid stock market for Venture capital rather than economy centered in Bank funding systems [3].

La Porta et.al investigate the relation between the legal environment and capital markets, using a sample of 49 countries. Their result suggests that a good legal environment protects the investor / financiers and makes an in-

crease on the willing of funding investments in exchange of securities. They show that when the investor protection is measured by both the character of legal rules and the quality of law enforcement, countries which have poorer investor protections, results with smaller and narrower capital markets. [4]

Felix suggest that the unemployment rate, total entrepreneur activity have negative effect on venture capital activity, whereas market to book ratio has a positive and significant effect. The study analyzes 23 European countries during the years from 1998 to 2003 [5]. Hain analyzes venture capital investment flows from 2000 to 2012 for the 37 countries (22 developed and 15 emerging economies). In the study the effects of geographical, cultural, institutional proximity and, institutional and relational trust are considered. The result of the study suggest that the trust to mitigate the negative effects of geographical and cultural distance are more relevant for investments in emerging economies relevant , where institutional trust is relevant. Additionally they suggest that relational trust is more relevant for investments in developed economies.[1]

3. The Nature of Innovation Investments and Venture Capital

The enterprises of the emerging economies are mostly composed of Small and Medium sized Enterprises (SMEs) around 99% of the whole economy. Many SMEs require capital for their investment especially start-ups. On the need of high and sustainable growth of economies around world, funding the investment is the one of the main obstacles through the innovation activities. Venture Capitalist (VCs) takes a step ahead and plays an important role. VCs are connecting the idea and the source of fund by matching the entrepreneurs who do not have many with investors who do not have an idea [6]–[8]. The venture capitalists are able to lower risks via supporting management. It allows increasing the expected profits of high-technology products.

The nature of investments of innovative products/services is most important point to investigate in the case of venture capital. It is going to be investigated into two dimensions.

First; the intangible assets of the investment and second; high uncertainty of the investments are given in this chapter.

Innovation has two types of assets while one of them becomes prominent, "Intangible Assets". To be more precise one can say that the expenses beside fixed assets can be qualified as capital spending for intangible assets. Innovation based investments cover a range of 'intangible investments' [9]. Intangible assets are important for the process of innovation in two specific reason; the creation of knowledge and intellectual capital. For this reason many of the researchers interested in this hot topic [10], [11], [12].

Intangible investment is identified as computerized information, innovative property, and economic competencies[9] [12]. It is obvious that the R&D investments are core parts of innovation. In addition to R&D investments, enterprises need human resources, technological utilities and databases, while they invest in an innovation project [13]. The European Community Innovation Survey makes similar points, such as the acquisition of new capital goods, licensing fees etc. as innovative investments. It does not mean that every intangible asset can be qualified as innovation activities. These investments activities could be listed as; expenses on non-innovation oriented of advertising, market research and reputation building, on non-innovation related training and other types of human capital development, on software and database development not related to innovation, and on most activities in the context of organizational development [14].

Human Capital serves to innovation investments via the knowledge transfer; "From idea to innovation". The expenses of innovational activities consist of employer's wages. Especially highly educated workforce of firms creates intangible assets. They identify such knowledge created by human capital as "tacit", which could be lost when the human capital is lost [15].

Identifying the main differences between investing in intangible assets and tangible assets are important in our case. Intangible assets do not show characteristic of serving as collateral to obtain external funding. Liquidation of the intangible assets has limited salvage value and

is difficult in the case of bankruptcy, which worsens the credit problems [14], [16]. For this reason investments on innovational activities are more tend to be sunk and more prone to financing constraints. The presence of intangible assets could affect the lender's decisions to grant loans and this process finalizes with a serious obstacle [17], [18]. The values of the intangible assets are more tend to decrease in the presence of bankruptcy. Intangible assets are specific to the firms; this feature makes them more difficult to resell in the secondary market, for example special human expertise [19]–[21].

There is common mistake in the literature of innovation investments. Many researchers use risk and uncertainty interchangeably. In the context of innovation; returns which are expected from innovation investments are highly uncertain. When it is needed to understand the difference between risk and high uncertainty it is better to start with definition. The 'risk', which can be estimated by the first and second moments, most importantly the mean and variance of the distributions of future profits by referring the traditional finance models (e.g., in the capital asset pricing model) [14]. Due to a special situation of innovation projects, which makes the assessment of risk a difficult task, while uncertainty cannot seen very high, there is also a process which does not follow standard stochastic processes.

The difference between risk and uncertainty in the case of innovation process could be described with an example [22]. The likelihood of winning playing lottery or roulette is known in advance; on contrary the likelihood of success of investment in innovation is unknown. The probability of success or failure of the investments in innovation is impossible to calculate, because the forms of the potential outcomes are not clear. For this reason the expected return of that investment cannot be calculated and standard risk adjustment methods cannot be used by investors. The literature shows some evidence that "the Pareto distribution may hold for innovation investments, where the variance does not exist or converge in large samples" [16], [23], [24]. There exist two types of uncertainty such as the technological and market uncertainty of innovation activities and the mixture of them. For instance, when it is needed to give some examples; while developing a new method of curing a disease often needs high technology

which carries considerable technology risk, on the other hand it is easy to get number of people who have the disease makes the market certain. Green economy technologies carry technology risk but often have extensive market risk, which usually depends on government policies. Another good example for market uncertainty is that the new online businesses' market risk can be incredibly high, whereas technology risk is often pretty lower, (e.g. Facebook, Instagram, and Twitter) [16]. If the managers face with market uncertainty, they may exhibit two possible behaviors; they might delay the investment of additional resources in R&D, or acquire a growth option of another R&D project which has superior advantage over the previous R&D [25]. They prefer investing in less risky R&D projects. On the other hand, the manager who faces with the technological uncertainty, will have decision of not investing in R&D, and may decide to wait for the evolution of the technology.

The success of innovation investments is unpredictable; this makes the investment even more risky[26]. The uncertainty of innovation investment could be both arise from the unknown success of R&D project and the unknown reaction of the market[27]. Uncertainty of the innovation investments is taken long time to be solved [28], [29]. Information asymmetries between investors and managers additionally create uncertainty that affects financing conditions.

Because of the intangible nature of innovation activities, it is difficult to provide collateral. Another difficulty is high uncertainty of returns of the investment. Rather than being secured with collateral; venture capitalists behaves as an equity holder in the privately held enterprises in which they have investment and differently from an ordinary equity holders they are also responsible at the stage of managements during a limited time periods (predetermined)[30]–[32], [2], [33].

According to Dotzler, the major roles performed by a venture capitalist are as follows:

"• *Solicit or create investment opportunities*
• *Evaluate companies*
• *Negotiate the terms of investments*
• *Help build successful companies*
• *Liquidate investments*"[34]

As it seen from above VCs are not only promoting innovative activities [35]–[37], they also help to produce rapidly the innovative goods and services by additional value-added supports [3], [38], [1].

4. Empirical Analysis

4.1. Data

Taking into account the factors interested in this study, it was necessary to use various sources of data and it was important to work with the perfect matched data.

The World Economic Forum analysis the worlds more challenging and one of the hottest topic, which is competitiveness. The globalization makes it even harder to compare countries power of controlling the markets. As it is mentioned the business environment are beating the competitive world by doing innovation and by producing high added value products. Innovation and innovative activities makes it possible. While it is known, it is preferred to use the some of the components of World Economic Forum's competitiveness reports which is called Global Competitiveness Index (GCI), This data set has given the advantage of both the microeconomic and macroeconomic foundations of national competitiveness. In addition to the GCI, World Bank's The Doing Business Data also used in this study. Similarly with GCI dataset Doing Business data analyzes the regulations which apply on at domestic small and medium-size companies through their life cycle.

For the empirical analysis the interested period of the study starts from 2006 and comes to very last, to 2016. The upper middle and lower middle income countries are the main interest of the study. 57 countries have been investigated (See Table 1). It is necessary to use most suitable econometric analysis. For the empirical analysis panel data analysis is used, for interested 57 countries, from 2006 to 2016, which leads to a database of 627 observations for each variable. In this chapter, first the method is going to be explained, and then the variables are going to be introduced.

Table 2 represents the variables and their respective meanings as well as the sources of data.

Table 1:List of Countires

Albania	Colombia	Honduras	Morocco	Pakistan	Timor-Leste
Armenia	Costa Rica	Indonesia	Mexico	Panama	Tunisia
Azerbaijan	Dominican Republic	India	Macedonia, FYR	Peru	Turkey
Bangladesh	Algeria	Jamaica	Mongolia	Philippines	Ukraine
Bulgaria	Ecuador	Jordan	Mauritania	Paraguay	Vietnam
Bosnia and Herzegovina	Egypt, Arab Rep.	Kazakhstan	Mauritius	Romania	South Africa
Brazil	Georgia	Kenya	Malaysia	Senegal	Zambia
Botswana	Ghana	Kyrgyz Republic	Namibia	El Salvador	
China	Guatemala	Sri Lanka	Nigeria	Serbia	
Cameroon	Guyana	Lesotho	Nicaragua	Thailand	

Table 2: Description of Variables

VARIABLES	DESCRIPTION	DATA SOURCE
Venture Capital Availability	In your country, how easy is it for start-up entrepreneurs with innovative but risky projects to obtain equity funding? [1 = extremely difficult; 7 = extremely easy]	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Capacity for innovation, 1-7 (best)	In your country, to what extent do companies have the capacity to innovate? [1 = not at all; 7 = to a great extent]	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Gov. procurement of advanced tech products, 1-7 (best)	In your country, to what extent do government purchasing decisions foster innovation? [1 = not at all; 7 = to a great extent]	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Foreign market size index, 17 (best)*	Value of exports of goods and services, normalized on a 1–7 (best) scale	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Judicial independence, 1-7 (best)	In your country, how independent is the judicial system from influences of the government, individuals, or companies? [1 = not independent at all; 7 = entirely independent)	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Business costs of terrorism, 1-7 (best)	In your country, to what extent does the threat of terrorism impose costs on businesses? [1 = to a great extent; 7 = not at all]	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Business costs of crime and violence, 1-7 (best)	In your country, to what extent does the incidence of crime and violence impose costs on businesses? [1 = to a great extent; 7 = not at all]	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
No. procedures to start a business	Number of procedures required to start a business	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
No. days to start a business	Number of days required to start a business	WEF GLOBAL COMPETIVENS REPORT
Getting Credit-DTF	the strength of credit reporting systems and the effectiveness of collateral and bankruptcy laws in facilitating lending	THE WORLD BANK'S DOING BUSINESS

*The size of the foreign market is estimated as the natural log of the total value (PPP estimates) of exports of goods and services, normalized on a 1-to-7 scale. PPP estimates of exports are obtained by taking the product of exports as a percentage of GDP and GDP valued at PPP (source WEF)

4.2. Methodology

Panel data analysis is most popular method among social and behavioral science researchers. In a short definition, one can describe a panel as both a cross-section and time series. Panel data analysis is most popular method among social and behavioral science researchers. In Panel data analyses, there are two methods, which are fixed effect model and random effect model, to estimate the model, depending on the variation of the cross section part or the time part of the model.

The fixed effect method has constant slopes but different intercepts according to the cross-sectional (group) unit. The advantage of the fixed effects model is that the error terms may be correlated with the individual effects.

"In many applications the whole point of using panel data is to allow for α_i to be arbitrarily

correlated with the $X_{i,t}$. A fixed effects analysis achieves this purpose explicitly." [39]
(Wooldridge, 2010: 300)

"The DiD, fixed effects, and first difference estimators (within estimators) offer researchers the capacity to dispense with the random effects assumption and still obtain unbiased and consistent estimates when unit effects α_i are arbitrarily correlated with measured explanatory variables. This is widely regarded as the primary advantage of panel data."[40] (Halaby, 2004: 516)

If group effects are uncorrelated with the group means of the regressor, it would probably be better to employ a more parsimonious parameterization of the panel model. [41]

The random effects model is a regression with a random constant term [42]. To avoid the ignorance or errors, the intercept is assumed as a random outcome variable. The random outcome is a function of a mean value plus a random error. Nevertheless, this cross-sectional specific error term v_i, which indicates the deviation from the constant of the cross-sectional unit must be uncorrelated with the errors of the variables if this is to be modeled. The time series cross-sectional regression model with an intercept is a random effect.[41]

Model :
$$Y_{i,t} = \alpha + \beta_1 X_{1_{i,t}} + \beta_2 X_{2_{i,t}} + \beta_3 X_{3_{i,t}}$$
$$+ \beta_4 X_{4_{i,t}} + \beta_5 X_{5_{i,t}} + \cdots . + e_{i,t}$$
$$e_{i,t} = v_i + \varphi_t + u_{it}$$

$i = 1,2, \dots . . N \qquad \qquad t = 1,2, \dots . N$
Where i stands by the countries and t for time period.
$$H_o: \beta_1; \beta_2; \beta_3; \beta_4; \beta_5 = 0$$
$$H_1: \beta_1; \beta_2; \beta_3; \beta_4; \beta_5 \neq 0$$

The Hausman specification test is the well known test which gives the opportunity of examining the suitable model. Hausman suggests that if there is not any significant correlation between the unobserved person-specific random effects and the regressors then the random effects model may have effective and consistent results. If there appears such correlation, then the random effect model would be inconsistent

estimation and the fixed effect model should be chosen by the researcher.

$$H_o: Fixed\ effect\ model\ is\ significant$$
$$H_1: Random\ effect\ model\ is\ significant$$

5. Empirical Results

In this section the main estimation results are discussed briefly. In order to maintain the factors that foster venture capital availability (dependent variable) in lower income and upper income countries panel estimation methods are used. Both fixed effect and random effect estimators were estimated. According to Hausman test results, it is decided to include country specific effects into the model, which influence Venture Capital Availability and differ from country to country, while they are found to be quite stable over time. According to the experiences and the expectations of authors it is better to use two way fixed effects models. The short panel data availability makes sense in the case of country fixed effect model.

The results of the random effect and fixed effect estimators are shown in Table 3 with the Hausman test results. Some general overview of the results could be given; the estimated model presents strong overall significance. Both F and Wald tests results show that one can reject the null hypothesis of all coefficients are equal to zero. The joint significance test of all independent variables shows that they are relevant in explaining venture capital availability. The Hausman test result rejects the null hypothesis that the fixed effect estimators and the random effect estimators are equal.

Table 4 shows the results of interaction effects for both Pakistan and Turkey. The results tell us, whether the effect of treatment (X) differs between groups (G: 0,1). Here the G=1 denotes a specific country and G=0 denotes rest of the countries interested in the model. Column named (1-2) show the estimated results of Pakistan's case and column (3-4) gives the estimated results of Turkey's case.

The result for Pakistan indicates that when it is compared with peer group countries government's purchasing decisions for fostering innovation has a significant and positive effect on venture capital availability which increases

around 0.77 point higher than the peer group countries.. The importance of the government purchasing of advanced technology products is obvious in the case of Pakistan. Whereas in Turkey it is seen that the demand creation of government does not work well.

It is expected that the exports of the goods and services have positive effects on obtaining Venture Capital availability. While the VCs are looking at the historical challenges and success of the Innovatively active firms, exporting the innovative products satisfies their customer and supports the competitive environment [43], [44]. The value of exports of goods and services has a negative and significant affected on venture capital availability around 1.84 point lower than the peer group countries for Turkey; positive and significant effect can be seen for Pakistan. No of procedures to start a business hampers the venture capital availability for Pakistan. Number of days to start business has a positive impact on venture capital availability. In Turkey the Venture Capital availability is affected in a reverse way. Number of days to start a business makes it difficult to beat the competitive market. And number of the procedures makes the VCs trust the enterprise.

Judicial Independence can be view as the protection of VCs against the violation of the contract terms. If the Judicial Independency is higher in a country it is expected to have reassuring effect on VCs. It is an important protection tool of investment environment. Results suggest that in Turkey Judicial independency has a positive and significant effect as expected. The strength of credit reporting systems and the effectiveness of collateral and bankruptcy laws in facilitating lending affects the venture capital availability in a positive way. An interesting result found for Pakistan that none of the investor protection variable has positive effects on the availability of VC, which suggests that the level of trust of the judiciary system has broken in the country.

While other countries venture capital availability faced with the negative effect of the costs of terrorism on business, Pakistani business environment affected with terrorism more than any other country. One point change (in a positive manner) of the perception of the threat of terrorism impose costs on businesses makes the venture capital available 0.198 point higher from the peer group countries for Pakistan. On the other hand the perception of the incidence of crime and violence found to have an increasing effect on venture capital availability, which is very low. Differently from the case of Pakistan, in Turkey it is founded that when the perception of terrorism has lower effect on the business cost, it is difficult to obtain venture capital in the country. It is same for the second security variable, which is the incidence of crime and violence, is not affecting the cost of business, venture capital availability increases. Both security variables have same amount of effect around 0.090 point higher from the peer group countries.

|		
Table 3 :Determinants of Venture Capital Availability		
VARIABLES	Random Effect	Fixed Effect****
Capacity for innovation, 1-7 (best)	0.198***	0.217***
	(0.038)	(0.039)
Govt procurement of advanced tech products, 1-7 (best)	0.306***	0.261***
	(0.067)	(0.068)
Foreign market size index, 17 (best)*	-0.086**	-0.242***
	(0.036)	(0.051)
Judicial independence, 1-7 (best)	0.137***	0.154**
	(0.046)	(0.062)
Business costs of terrorism, 1-7 (best)	-0.051	-0.026
	(0.046)	(0.056)
Business costs of crime and violence, 1-7 (best)	-0.022	-0.036
	(0.048)	(0.060)
No. procedures to start a business*	0.020*	0.013
	(0.011)	(0.012)
No. days to start a business*	0.002	0.001
	(0.001)	(0.002)
Getting Credit-DTF	-0.003*	-0.004*
	(0.002)	(0.002)
Constant	1.177***	1.919***
	(0.351)	(0.399)
Observations	607	607
R-squared		0.361
Number of id	56	56
F test for Fixed Effect		18.99 ***
F test		34.07***
Wald test	100.92***	
Robust standard errors in parentheses		
*** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1, **** FE model		
Hausman Test: Ho: difference in coefficients not systematic		
chi2(9) = (b-B)'[(V_b-V_B)^(-1)](b-B) = 54.88 Prob>chi2 = 0.0000		

VARIABLES		Pakistan	Pakistan		Turkey	Turkey
Capacity for innovation, 1-7 (best)		0.217***	0.224***		0.213***	0.221***
		(0.0394)	(0.0379)		(0.0396)	(0.0381)
Capacity for innovation, 1-7 (best)	PAKISTAN	0.0826***	0.0286***	TURKEY	0.751***	0.729***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Govt procurement of advanced tech products, 1-7 (best)		0.252***	0.255***		0.265***	0.266***
		(0.0677)	(0.0711)		(0.0680)	(0.0718)
Govt procurement of advanced tech products, 1-7 (best)	PAKISTAN	0.799***	0.767***	TURKEY	-0.00846***	0.0167***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Foreign market size index, 1-7 (best)*		-0.248***	-0.237***		-0.247***	-0.238***
		(0.0520)	(0.0526)		(0.0526)	(0.0533)
Foreign market size index, 1-7 (best)*	PAKISTAN	0.323***	0.0382***	TURKEY	-1.848***	-1.837***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Judicial independence, 1-7 (best)		0.150**	0.166**		0.139**	0.152**
		(0.0608)	(0.0655)		(0.0614)	(0.0660)
Judicial independence, 1-7 (best)	PAKISTAN	-0.744***	-0.629***	TURKEY	0.0321***	0.0247***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Business costs of terrorism, 1-7 (best)		-0.0495			-0.0497	
		(0.0435)			(0.0427)	
Business costs of terrorism, 1-7 (best)	PAKISTAN	0.198***		TURKEY	-0.0905***	
		(0)			(0)	
Business costs of crime and vio-lence, 1-7 (best)			-0.0642			-0.0588
			(0.0496)			(0.0483)
Business costs of crime and vio-lence, 1-7 (best)	PAKISTAN		0.00505***	TURKEY		-0.0843***
			(0)			(0)
No. procedures to start a business*		0.0137	0.0125		0.0129	0.0116
		(0.0120)	(0.0118)		(0.0121)	(0.0118)
No. procedures to start a business*	PAKISTAN	-2.491***	-2.183***	TURKEY	0.517***	0.580***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
No. days to start a business*		0.00149	0.00146		0.00148	0.00147
		(0.00150)	(0.00155)		(0.00149)	(0.00154)
No. days to start a business*	PAKISTAN	0.433***	0.389***	TURKEY	-0.525***	-0.570***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Getting Credit-DTF		-0.00333*	-0.00359*		-0.00338*	-0.00362*
		(0.00181)	(0.00185)		(0.00181)	(0.00185)
Getting Credit-DTF	PAKISTAN	-0.0413***	-0.0383***	TURKEY	0.00558***	0.00962***
		(0)	(0)		(0)	(0)
Constant		2.232***	2.124***		2.095***	1.985***
		(0.382)	(0.345)		(0.383)	(0.347)
Observations		607	607		607	607
R-squared		0.367	0.368		0.364	0.364
Number of id		56	56		56	56
Country FE		YES	YES		YES	YES

Robust standard errors in parentheses

*** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1

Graph 1: Security perceptions effect on Business Cost of Pakistan
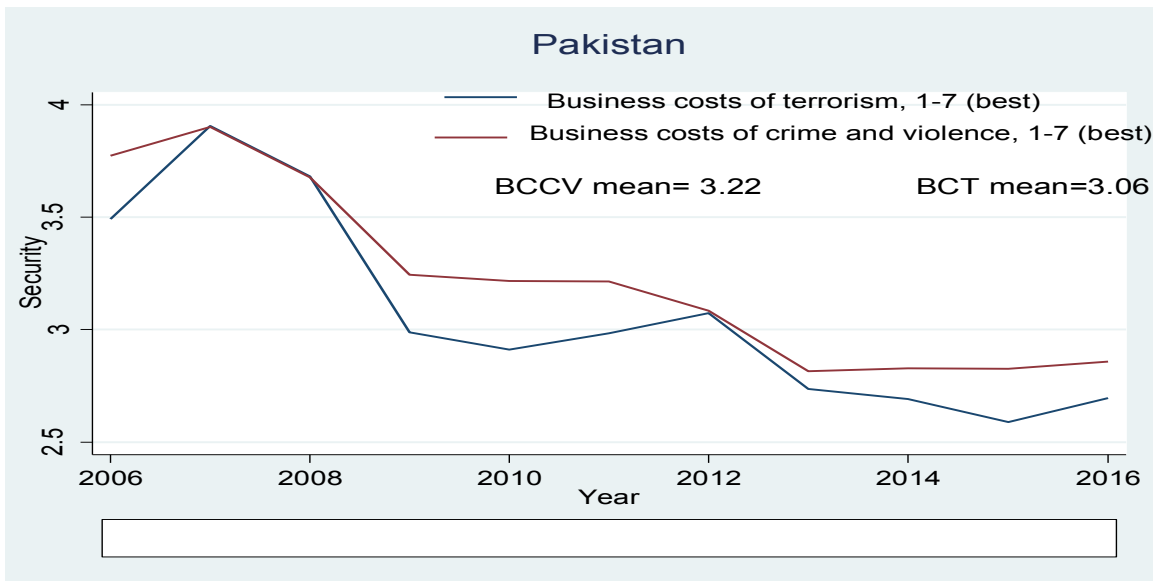
Graph 2: Security perceptions effect on Business Cost of Turkey
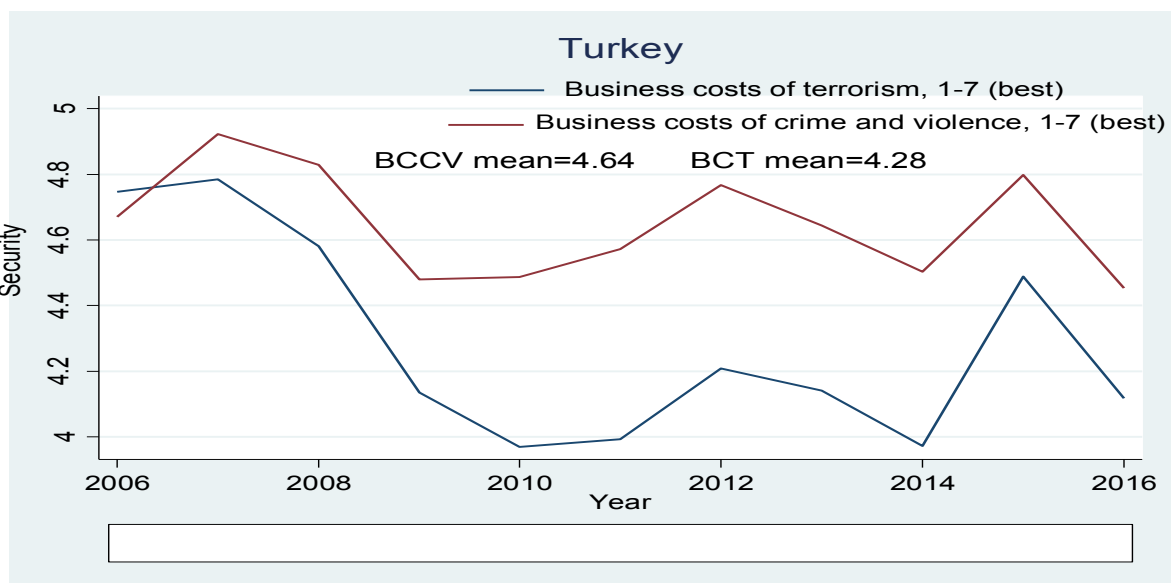
6. Conclusion

This study analyzes the determinants of the venture capital availability for the Upper middle income countries and Lower middle income countries using fixed effect models on a data set covering 57 countries for the period from 2006 to 2016. The empirical model differently from the literature not only interested in economics variable but also the security perceptions of

business environment, the strength of legal structure and judicial independency, governments intention and support of the innovation investments, ease of doing business, exporting capacity and innovation capacity of the countries.

The importance of the government purchasing of advanced technology products is obvious in the case of Pakistan. Whereas in Turkey it is seen that the demand creation of government

does not work well, this may happen because of the subjective decisions of procurement officials. The inefficient policies and distortion of the competition process might be the reason of having negative impact on venture capital availability.

The number of procedures to start a business found as an obstacle for the venture capital availability for Pakistan. Number of days to start business has a positive impact on venture capital availability. The reason might be that the need of time is found to be necessary for best matching of venture capitalist and innovators, whereas the number procedures to start a business makes it more prone to face bribery and corruption on the way of starting the business in Pakistan.

Learning by doing variable which is foreign market has different signs for Pakistan and Turkey. Pakistan's high portion of exporting products consists of textile products which are mainly house linens. Pakistan is the producer of the pure cotton and pure woven cotton, which are the raw material of the textile sectors. Any attempt of the Pakistani businesses for producing advanced technology products creates the willing of VCs supporting the business. Turkey's exporting status is based on the specialization. The trade partners of Turkey are the ones who produce advanced technology products. This causes the lower intensity of the VCs in the country.

An interesting result is that none of the investor protection variable has positive effects on the availability of VC, which suggests that the level of trust of the judiciary system has broken in the country. There might be two reasons. The perception of the judicial independency has been broken within the countries which have higher corruption rates. Especially State capture could be one of the main reasons, which "*refers to the actions of individuals, groups, or firms both in the public and private sectors to influence the formation of laws, regulations, decrees, and other government policies to their own advantage as a result of the illicit and non-transparent provision of private benefits to public officials.*" [45] The second reason might be related with the acculturation. The business environment trust their methods of solve the problems rather than believing in the judiciary sys-

tem. The cultural connection and family owned business structure is only a few samples.

While other countries venture capital availability faced with the negative effect of the costs of terrorism on business, Pakistani business environment affected with terrorism more than any other country. One point change (in a positive manner) of the perception of the threat of terrorism impose costs on businesses makes the venture capital available for the country. On the other hand the perception of the incidence of crime and violence found to have an increasing effect on venture capital availability, which is very low. Differently from the case of Pakistan it is founded that when the perception of terrorism has lower effect on the business cost, it is difficult to obtain venture capital in the country. It is same for the second security variable, which is the incidence of crime and violence, is not affecting the cost of business, venture capital availability increases.

The result of the security variables related to the historical view and past security experiences of the countries. The perception of violence and terrorism in the country base seems to behave differently. Businesses in Pakistan deal with terrorism more than any other kind of violence. This makes the country risk even higher for the VCs, whereas in Turkey the violence or the terrorism are not the on the top of the list when the VCs having the decision of investing.

This study differentiates in the case of both variables and countries. The existing literature is interested in the developed countries. Those countries are already the leader of the competitive world and the innovation. On the other side of the world, developing countries are challenging with their existing rather than making shine their growths. Innovation starts with the idea creation, which does not need a nice place to think or good salary to be creative. It needs to be funded in anywhere of the world. VCs gives an opportunity, governments and policy makers should be thinking about how the country would be attractive.

As a summary, according to results VCs' priorities are different for both countries. Pakistani government should show more effort on the security of businesses and corruption. The enterprises in the country are still concerned of sharing their equities with the VCs, which causes less attractiveness. Starting a business

seems to be effected by the corrupt government officers, which makes the enterprises' lose the competitive advantages even before the starting the business. Turkish government should be following a different strategy for export. The products should be more advanced technology based, otherwise country's attractiveness going to lose more than expected. For Turkey another important point is that the asymmetry on the government procurement of advanced technology products should be controlled carefully.

For further researches Pakistan and Turkey could be investigated in a micro level for both VC and innovative activities.

References

[1]   D. Hain, S. Johan, and D. Wang, "Determinants of Cross-Border Venture Capital Investments in Emerging and Developed Economies: The Effects of Relational and Institutional Trust," *J. Bus. Ethics*, 2015.

[2]   P. Gompers and J. Lerner, "What drives venture capital fundraising?," *Brookings Pap. Econ. Act. Microeconomics*, vol. 1998, pp. 149–204, 1998.

[3]   B. S. Black and R. J. Gilson, "Venture capital and the structure of capital markets: banks versus stock markets," *J. financ. econ.*, vol. 47, no. 3, pp. 243–277, 1998.

[4]   R. L. A. Porta, F. Lopez-de-silanes, A. Shleifer, and R. W. Vishny, "Legal Determinants of External Finance," *J. Finance*, vol. LII, no. 3, pp. 1131–1151, 1997.

[5]   E. G. S. Félix, C. P. Pires, and M. A. Gulamhussen, "The Determinants of Venture Capital in Europe - Evidence Across Countries," *J. Financ. Serv. Res.*, vol. 44, no. 3, pp. 259–279, 2013.

[6]   S. N. Kaplan and P. Strömberg, "How Do Venture Capitalists Choose Investments?," *Work. Pap. Univ. Chicago*, vol. 121, pp. 55–93, 2000.

[7]   P. Gompers, W. Gornall, S. N. Kaplan, and I. A. Strebulaev, "How Do Venture Capitalists Make Decisions ? ," 2016.

[8]   P. Gompers and J. Lerner, "The Venture Capital Revolution," *J. Econ. Perspect.*, vol. 15, no. 2, pp. 145–168, 2001.

[9]   Frontier Economics, "Rates of return to investment in science and innovation," no. July, 2014.

[10]   E. Brynjolfsson, L. Hitt, and S. Yang, "Intangible assets: Computers and organizational capital. Brookings Papers on Economic Activity," *Brookings Pap. Econ. Act. ;Macroeconomics*, p. 137–199.

[11]   C. Corrado, J. Haltiwanger, and D. Sichel, "Measuring Capital in the New Economy," no. August, 2005.

[12]   C. Corrado, C. Hulten, and D. Sichel, "Intangible Capital and Economic Growth," *Rev. Income Wealth*, vol. 55, no. 3, pp. 661–685, 2009.

[13]   "Peter Goodridge , Jonathan Haskel , Gavin Wallis Spillovers from R & D and other intangible investment : evidence from UK industries Discussion paper 2012 / 9 August 2012 Spillovers from R & D and other intangible investment : evidence from UK," no. August, 2012.

[14]   B. Aschhoff, E. Baier, D. Crass, T. Doherr, M. Hud, P. Hünermund, C. Köhler, B. Peters, C. Rammer, E. Schricke, S. T, and S. F, "Innovation in Germany results of the German Innovation Survey 2006 -2010," *Innovation*, no. September, 2013.

[15]   H. Sameen and G. Quested, "Disrupted Innovation : Financing small innovative firms in the UK," no.

September, 2013.

[16]   A. P. C. and J. H. Albert Bravo-Biosca, "No FINANCING BUSINESS INNOVATION A Review of External Sources of Funding for Innovative Businesses and Public Policies to Support ThemTitle," pp. 2–64, 2014.

[17]   E. Ughetto, "Does finance matter for R&D investment? New evidence from a panel of Italian firms," *Cambridge J. Econ.*, vol. 32, no. 6, pp. 907–925, 2008.

[18]   E. Ughetto, "Industrial districts and financial constraints to innovation," *Int. Rev. Appl. Econ.*, vol. 23, no. 5, pp. 597–624, 2009.

[19]   D. Rivaud-danset, "Innovation and New Technologies : Corporate Finance and Financial Constraints," no. November, pp. 1–30, 2002.

[20]   V. Hajivassiliou and B. De France, "Novel Approaches to Coherency Conditions in LDV Models with an Application to Interactions between Financing Constraints and a Firm ' s Decision and Ability to Innovate," 2011.

[21]   A. Mina and H. Lahr, "The pecking order of innovation finance," *Acad. Manag. Proc.*, vol. 2015, no. 1, pp. 12786–12786, Jan. 2015.

[22]   F. Knight, R. Of, and E. Classics, "Risk, Uncertainty and Profit," in *Climate Change 2013 - The Physical Science Basis*, vol. XXXI, Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, Ed. Cambridge University Press, 1921, pp. 1–30.

[23]   M. Mazzucato, "Financing innovation: Creative destruction vs. destructive creation," *Ind. Corp. Chang.*, vol. 22, no. 4, pp. 851–867, 2013.

[24]   W. R. Kerr, W. R. Kerr, and R. Nanda, "Financing Innovation Financing Innovation," 2014.

[25]   A. Grandi, B. H. Hall, and R. Oriani, "Chapter 4 R & D and financial investors," pp. 1–40.

[26]   J. Weigand, "Innovation, Investment, and Corporate Finance," in *Competition, Efficiency, and Welfare*, Boston, MA: Springer US, 1999, pp. 27–56.

[27]   OECD, *Frascati manual 2002*. 2002.

[28]   P. Kumar and N. Langberg, "Corporate fraud and investment distortions in efficient capital markets," *RAND J. Econ.*, vol. 40, no. 1, pp. 144–172, 2009.

[29]   B. H. Hall and J. Lerner, "The financing of R&D and innovation," *Handb. Econ. Innov.*, vol. 1, no. 1 C, pp. 609–639, 2010.

[30]   W. A. Sahlman, "The structure and governance of venture-capital organizations," *J. financ. econ.*, vol. 27, no. 2, pp. 473–521, 1990.

[31]   P. Gompers and J. Lerner, "The Use of Covenants: an Empirical Analysis of Venture Partnership Agreements," *J. Law {&} Econ.*, vol. 39, no. 2, pp. 463–498, 1996.

[32]   R. W. Masulis and R. Nahata, "Financial contracting with strategic investors: Evidence from corporate venture capital backed IPOs," *J. Financ. Intermediation*, vol. 18, no. 4, pp. 599–631, Oct. 2009.

[33]   D. W. Hughes, K. Mallory, and M. A. Szabo, "Factors Influencing Venture Capital Availability in Rural States : Possible Lessons Learned from West Virginia," 2004.

[34]   F. Dotzler, "What do venture capitalist really do, and where do they learn to do it?," *J. Priv. Equity*, vol. 5, no. 1, pp. 6–12, 2001.

[35]   S. Kortum and J. Lerner, "The RAND Corporation Assessing the Contribution of Venture Capital to Innovation Assessing the contribution of venture capital to innovation," *J. Econ.*, vol. 31, no. 4, pp. 674–692, 2000.

[36]   S. Samila and O. Sorenson, "Venture capital as a catalyst to commercialization," *Res. Policy*, vol. 39, no. 10, pp. 1348–1360, Dec. 2010.

[37]   S. Samila and O. Sorenson, "VENTURE CAPITAL, ENTREPRENEURSHIP, AND ECONOMIC GROWTH," *Rev. Econ. Stat.*, vol. 93, no. 1, p. 338, Feb. 2011.

[38]   W. D. Bygrave and J. A. Timmons, *Venture Capital at the Crossroads (Hardcover)*. 1992.

[39]   J. M. Wooldridge, "Econometric Analysis of Cross Section and Panel Data," *Book*, 2010.

[40]   C. N. Halaby, "Panel Models in Sociological Research: Theory into Practice," *Annu. Rev. Sociol.*, vol. 30, no. 1, pp. 507–544, Aug. 2004.

[41]   M. Praptiningsih, "Corporate Governance and Performance of Banking Firms: Evidence from Indonesia, Thailand, Philippines, and Malaysia," *J. Manaj. Dan Kewırausahaa*, vol. 11, no. 1, pp. 94–108, 2009.

[42]   W. H. Greene, *ECONOMETRIC ANALYSIS Senior Media Project Manager : Victoria Anderson Production*

[43]   *Editor : Michael Reynolds*. 2003.

[43]   B. J. Jaworski and A. K. Kohli, "Market Orientation: Antecedents and Consequences," *J. Mark.*, vol. 57, pp. 53–70, 1993.

[44]   H. Ünlü and A. K. Çetin, "The Impact of Learning Processes on Radical Innovation in Less Successful Innovator Countries: Turkey, Macedonia, Slovenia, and Serbia," *J. Entrep. Innov. Manag.*, vol. 4, no. 2, pp. 123–145, 2015.

[45]   World Bank, *Anticorruption in Transition A Contribution to the Policy Debate*. 2000.

The Impact of Education on Female Labor Force Participation in Sub-Saharan Africa Countries: A Dynamic Panel Data Analysis[1]

Dr. Banu Demirhan
Afyon Kocatepe University
Afyon Vocational School, Department of Business Administration
bdemirhan@aku.edu.tr.

Abstract. This study examines the effect of education on female labor force participation in Sub-Saharan Africa countries for the period of 1990-2014. Dynamic panel model is constructed, and first-difference GMM estimator proposed by Arellano and Bond [24] and system GMM estimator proposed by Arellano and Bover [26] and Blundell and Bond [25] are used in the econometric estimations. Empirical results from first-difference GMM technique suggest that improvement in education level has a positive effect on female labor force participation in Sub-Saharan Africa countries. Empirical results from the system GMM technique, however, show that there is no empirical evidence suggesting a positive effect of education level on female labor force participation in these countries.

Keywords: Female labor force participation, education, dynamic panel data analysis

1. Introduction

Today, an increase in female employment in developing countries has become an important research topic for academicians. The reason for this tendency is that labor force is considered as the main production factor in the production process and therefore is regarded as the main determinant of economic growth. In other words, increase in female labor force participation (FLFP) increases the supply of female labor and therefore enhances labor inputs and contributes economic growth. Moreover, with skilled female labor participate in labor markets, economic growth will accelerate because of increasing productivity.

This contribution has vital importance in developing countries because the main feature of these countries is the lack of resources. Therefore, the policies towards enhancing female labor force participation should be implemented in developing countries. Especially, these policies should be directed to remove obstacles to female participation in labor markets and to diminish male dominant structure of labor markets. Implementing the policies aiming at increasing FLFP requires considering the determinants of factors affecting FLFP, leading to an increase in policy effectiveness by allowing policy makers to select the primary tools to increase women's employment.

Figure 1. Female Labor Force Participation Rates in Sub-Saharan Africa (1990-2014)
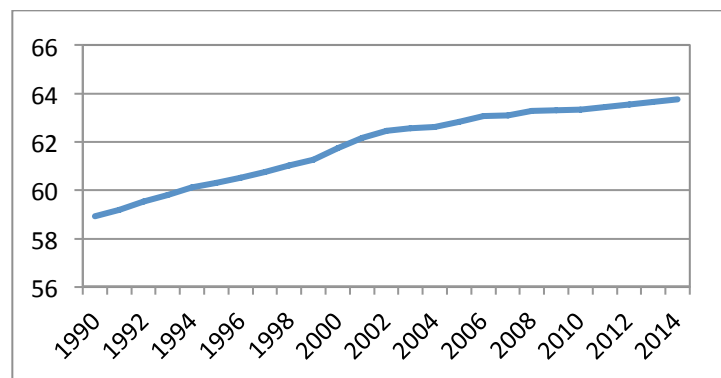
Source: World Bank [1]

In this study, the data of developing Sub-Saharan Africa countries is used in the econometric estimations. In Sub-Saharan Africa countries, the female labor force participation rate has increased in recent years and has reached 63.7% in 2014 (Figure 1). The female labor force participation rate is higher than the ratio in other developing countries. In the econometric estimations, dynamic panel data method is employed for the period of 1990-2014. The paper is organized as follows: Section 2 provides theoretical considerations. Section 3 describes the econometric methodology and the data. Section 4 presents the empirical estimations and Section 5 sets out conclusion.

2. Theoretical Considerations

In this section, the theoretical considerations on the determinants of female labor force participation are explained. Economic growth

is one of the main factors affecting FLFP; the relationship between FLFP and economic growth may be u-shaped, meaning that the negative effect on FLFP turns to positive in the later development periods [2, 3]. If an economy transforms to industrialized structure, female employment is lower than male employment; it is demonstrated in the declining part of the u-shaped curve. Nevertheless, in the later economic development stages, a shift from industrial to services sector increases FLFP; it is demonstrated in the increasing part of the u-shaped curve [3, 4]. Therefore, the negative relationship between economic growth and FLFP disappears in the later stages of economic development. Haghighat [4] and Tansel [5] have empirical findings that support the u-shaped relationship between economic growth and female labor force participation.

Education may encourage women to work in the labor markets instead of homemaking [6]. If the higher education level leads to higher earnings, then an increase in the education level increases the losses from unemployment and this leads to an expansion in female employment [7]. It is worth noting that reservation wage determines women participate in the labor market; individuals decide to work if reservation wage is higher than market wage [8]. Moreover, although an increase in educational attainment leads to a drop in female labor force participation because of the youngest female in the educational system, it may provide the standard knowledge for the labor markets, which leads to an increase in the participation

in the later periods. Tansel [5] and England et al. [7] find that education has a positive impact on female employment.

Fertility may have a negative effect on FLFP [9, 10] since fertility makes it difficult to balance between work and parenting duties, which is called incompatibility hypothesis [11]. The fertility can be measured by the existing number of children [12] or the number of births [13]. On the other hand, if women workers have the income to pay childcare services, fertility is not a barrier to women's employment. In the empirical literature, several studies such as [14] find a negative effect of fertility on FLFP; however, the studies such as [15] find mixed results that both effects are valid for different countries. It is worth noting that an increase in the level of female education may decrease fertility. Black et al. [16] and Kırdar et al. [17] argued that compulsory-schooling reduces fertility at young ages.

The health conditions of women may have an effect on FLFP because it affects the workers' preferences between leisure and work. Since deterioration of health causes the need of more leisure, labor supply reduces [18]. Deterioration of mental health has also a negative effect on FLFP; the inverse relationship between mental illness and productivity [19, 20, 21] is the main reason of this negative effect. Therefore, deterioration of mental health leads workers to out of the labor market due to decreasing of the labor productivity [22].

3. Methodology and Data

In this study, dynamic panel data method is employed to investigate the factors affecting FLFP. Dynamic panel data models consist of

lagged dependent and explanatory variables, which is different from static panel data models. The following panel regression equation is estimated in this study:

$$flfp_{it} = \alpha + \gamma flfp_{i,t-1} + \beta' X_{it} + v_i + \varepsilon_{it} \qquad (1)$$

where the subscript i ($i=1,...N$) denotes countries; the subscript t indicates the time ($t=1,...,T$), ε_{it} is a stochastic error term, X_{it} is the vector of explanatory variables (primary, secondary, and tertiary school enrollment rates, real GDP, square of real GDP, male labor force

participation rate, fertility rate, and age dependency ratio.) β is the vector of coefficients, v_i are the unobservable country characteristics. On the other hand, in case the lagged value of the dependent variable, OLS estimators become inconsistent and biased due

to endogeneity of explanatory variable. Therefore, in the econometric estimations, first-difference General Method of Moments (GMM) estimator is applied, which is used in Holtz-Eakin et al. [23] and Arellano and Bond [24]. In this technique, the differences of the explanatory variables are included in the model and lagged values of the explanatory variables are used as an instrumental variable. On the other hand, first-difference GMM estimator may perform poorly when the instruments are weak [25]. Therefore, the system GMM estimator proposed by Arellano and Bover [26] and Blundell and Bond [25] is used. The models are designed for 35 Sub-Saharan Africa countries over the period of 1990-2014. All variables are obtained from the World Bank. The definitions of the variables and their descriptive statistics are displayed in Table 1.

Table 1. Variable Definitions and Summary Statistics

Variable	Definition	Obs.	Mean	Std. Dev.	Min	Max
flfp	Labor force participation rate, female (% of female population ages 15+)	465	62.54	17.05	23	87.90
fert	Fertility rate, total (births per woman)	465	4.93	1.43	1.43	7.73
pri	School enrollment, primary, female (% gross)	427	93.77	26.02	26.56	148.24
scnd	School enrollment, secondary, female (% gross)	374	38.19	26.01	4.59	110.69
tert	School enrollment, tertiary, female (% gross)	286	8.53	12.61	.17	54.76
age	Age dependency ratio (% of working-age population)	465	84.64	15.33	40.79	112.68
mlfp	Labor force participation rate, male (% of male population ages 15+)	465	79.05	7.65	59.4	91
hlth	Health expenditure, total (% of GDP)	465	5.68	1.90	1.44	12.05
gdp	GDP (constant 2005 US$) Expressed in logarithmic form.	462	22.69	1.24	20.41	26.51

The countries in the sample are as follows: Benin, Botswana, Burkina Faso, Burundi, Cabo Verde, Cameroon, Central African Republic, Chad, Comoros, Congo, Dem. Rep., Congo, Rep., Eritrea, Ethiopia, Ghana, Guinea, Kenya, Lesotho, Madagascar, Malawi, Mali, Mauritania, Mauritius, Mozambique, Namibia, Niger, Rwanda, Senegal, South Africa, Sudan, Swaziland, Tanzania, Togo, Uganda, and Zimbabwe. The period used in the empirical models covers the 1990-2014.

4. Empirical Estimations

The empirical findings from first-difference GMM technique are reported in table 2, where various models that are constructed by using different education levels (primary, secondary, and tertiary school enrollment rates) are estimated. Moreover, in the econometric estimations, Arellano-Bond robust VCE estimator is used for the one-step estimator.

Empirical findings demonstrate that the sign of *mlfp* variable positive and statistically significant for model 1 and model 2, indicating that an increase in male labor force participation rate increases female labor force participation rate in Sub-Saharan Africa countries. The variable of *age* has a negative and statistically significant sign in model 1 and model 2. This finding shows an increase in age dependency ratio decreases female labor force participation rate in Sub-Saharan Africa countries.

The education variables have a positive effect on *flfp* in model 2 and model 3. Therefore, an increase in secondary and tertiary school enrollment rate lead women to participate in the labor market. Although the signs of *gdp* and *gdp2* are negative and positive, respectively, they are not statistically significant, indicating that u-shaped hypothesis

does not hold for Sub-Saharan Africa countries.

Arellano-Bond test for zero autocorrelation in first-differenced errors shows evidence against the null hypothesis of zero autocorrelation in the first-differenced errors at order 1 but no significant evidence of serial correlation in the first-differenced errors at order 2. Therefore, the test results do not present evidence that the model is misspecified.

Table 2. Dynamic Panel Data Estimation Results (First-Difference GMM Technique)

Variable	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3
flfp (-1)	.666***	.579***	.819***
flfp (-2)	-.0534	.02	-.0854
fert	.273	.608	.0733
pri	.00842		
mlfp	.332**	.331*	-.0165
gdp	-4.66	-1.94	-9.36
gdp2	.115	.052	.203
hlth	.0244	.032	.0619
age	-.049***	-.0462***	-.02
scnd		.0256**	
tert			.0338*
constant	46.3	15.7	126
AR (1) p-value	0.051	0.175	0.028
AR (2) p-value	0.615	0.834	0.456

*, **, and *** indicate levels of statistical significance at 10%, 5%, and 1%, respectively.

The empirical findings from the system GMM technique are reported in table 3, where various models that are constructed by using different education levels (primary, secondary, and tertiary school enrollment rates) are estimated. Moreover, in the econometric estimations, Arellano-Bond robust VCE estimator is used for the one-step estimator.

Empirical findings show that *fert* has a positive impact on *flfp* for model 1 and model 2, indicating that an increase in fertility rate increases female labor force participation rate in Sub-Saharan Africa countries. Also, *mlfp* has a positive impact on *flfp* for all models, indicating that an increase in male labor force participation rate increases female labor force participation rate in Sub-Saharan Africa countries. The variable of *hlth* has a positive and statistically significant sign, different from the estimations in table 2, and this finding indicates that the improvement of health conditions leads women to participate labor market. The estimations from system GMM technique show that education variables have no statistically positive effect on *flfp*, which is different from estimations in table 2. Moreover, although the signs of *gdp* and *gdp2* negative and positive, respectively, they are not statistically significant, indicating that u-shaped hypothesis does not hold for Sub-Saharan Africa countries. This finding is the same as the finding from the table 2.

Arellano-Bond test for zero autocorrelation in the first-differenced errors shows evidence against the null hypothesis of zero autocorrelation in the first-differenced errors at order 1 but no significant evidence of serial correlation in the first-differenced errors at order 2. Therefore, the test results do not present evidence that the model is misspecified.

Table 3. Dynamic Panel Data Estimation Results (System GMM Technique)

Variable	Model 1	Model 2	Model 3
flfp (-1)	.906***	.922***	.922***
fert	1.06*	1.22*	.133
pri	.00649		
mlfp	.107**	.159*	.139***
gdp	6.54	-2.25	-.559
gdp2	-.127	.0595	.0125
hlth	.139***	.131**	.0791
age	-.0195	-.0281	.0264
scnd		.0131	
tert			.0172
constant	-90.2	7.83	-3.4
AR (1) p-value	0.021	0.044	0.099
AR (2) p-value	0.838	0.618	0.249

*, **, and *** indicate levels of statistical significance at 10%, 5%, and 1%, respectively.

5. Conclusion

In this study, the factors affecting female labor force participation are examined for 35 Sub-Saharan Africa countries over the period of 1990-2014. In the econometric estimations, first-difference GMM and system GMM techniques are used to estimate dynamic panel data model. Empirical findings from first-difference GMM technique show that male labor force participation rate and education levels (secondary and tertiary) have a positive effect on the female labor force participation rate. However, an increase in age dependency ratio decreases female labor force participation. Econometric results from the system GMM technique imply that male labor force participation rate and health expenditures have a positive effect on the female labor force participation rate.

In this study, the econometric estimations from both techniques show the positive relationship between male labor force participation and female labor force participation; according to the empirical results, an increase in male labor force participation rate leads women to participate in labor markets. This finding implies that an increase in male labor force participation may change attitudes in women's work in the labor market. Moreover, empirical results reveal that the policies that provides the improvement in education levels contribute to women's employment in Sub-Saharan Africa countries. These findings verify the findings from Tansel [5] and England et al. [7].

References

[1] World Bank (2016). *World Development Indicators 2016*.
http://databank.worldbank.org/data/reports.aspx?source=world-development-indicators

[2] S.Tsani, L.Paroussos, C. Fragiadakis, I. Charalambidis and P. Capros (2013). Female labour force participation and economic growth in the SouthMediterranean countries. *Economics Letters, 120*, 323-328.

[3] E. Lechman and H. Kaur (2015). Economic growth and female labor force participation- verifying the u-feminization Hypothesis. New evidence for 162 countries over the period 1990-2012, *Economics and Sociology, 8*(1), 246-257.

[4] E. Haghighat (2002). Culture, development and female labor force participation: Disaggregating different sectors. *International Review of Sociology, 12*(3), 343-362.

[5] A. Tansel (2001). *Economic development and female labor force participation in Turkey: Time-series evidence and cross-province estimates*. ERC Working Paper, 01/05.

[6] J. Besamusca, K. Tijdens, M. Keune and S. Steinmetz (2015). Working women worldwide. Age effects in female labor force participation in 117 countries. *World Development, 74*, 123-141.

[7] P. England, J. Gornick and E.F. Shafer (2012).Women's employment, education, and the gender gap in 17 countries. *Monthly Labor Review, 13*(4), 3-12.

[8] P.J. Devereux (2004). Changes in relative wages and family labor supply. *The Journal of Human Resources, 39*(3), 696-722.

[9] R.K. Willis (1987). What have we learned from the economics of the family? *American Economic Review,77*(2), 68-81.

[10] V.J. Hotz, J.A. Klerman and R.J. Willis (1997). The economics of fertility in developed countries. In M.R. Rosenzweig& O. Stark (Eds.), *Handbook of population and family economics* (pp. 275-347). Amsterdam: Elsevier.

[11] J.M. Stycos and R.H. Weller (1967). Female working roles and fertility. *Demography, 4*, 210-217.

[12] L. Smith-Lovin and A. Tickamyer (1978). Nonrecursive models of labor force participation, fertility behavior, and sex role attitudes. *American Sociological Review,43*, 541-557.

[13] S. Desai and L. Waite (1991). Women's employment during pregnancy and after the first birth: Occupational characteristics and work commitment. *American Sociological Review, 56*, 551-566.

[14] S. Rica and M.D. Ferrero (2003). The effect of fertility on labor force participation: The Spanish evidence. *Spanish Economic Review,5*(2), 153-172.

[15] J.D. Vlasbom and J.J. Schippers (2004). Increases in female labor force participation in Europe: Similarities and differences. *European Journal of Population, 20*, 375-392.

[16] S. Black, P. Devereux and K. Salvanes (2008). Staying in the classroom and out of the maternity ward? The effect of compulsory schooling laws on teenage births. *Economic Journal,118*, 1025-1034.

[17] M.G. Kırdar, M.D. Tayfur and İ. Koç (2009).*The impact of schooling on the timing of marriage and fertility: Evidence from a change in compulsory schooling law*. Department of Economics, Middle East Technical University, Ankara.

[18] L. Cai (2010). The relationship between health and labour force participation: Evidence from a panel data simultaneous equation model. *Labour Economics, 17*, 77-90.

[19] P. Chatterji, M. Alergria, M. Lu and D. Takeuchi (2007). Psychiatric disorders and labor market outcomes: Evidence from the national Latino and Asian American study. *Health Economics,16* (10), 1069-1090.

[20] R. Kessler and R. Frank, R. (1997). The impact of psychiatric disorders on work loss days. *Psychological Medicine, 27*, 861-873.

[21] M. French and G. Zarkin (1998). Mental health, absenteeism and earnings at a large manufacturing worksite. *Journal of Mental Health Policy and Economics,1*, 161-172.

[22] N. Vecchio, G. Mihala, J. Sheridan, M.F. Hilton, H. Whiteford and P.A. Scuffham, (2014). A link between labor participation, mental health and class of medication for mental well-being. *Economic Analysis and Policy,44*, 376-385.

[23] D. Holtz-Eakin, W. Newey and H.S. Rosen (1988). Estimating vector autoregressions with panel data. *Econometrica, 56*, 1371-1395.

[24] M. Arellano and S. Bond (1991). Some tests of specification for panel data: Monte Carlo evidence and an application to employment equations. *Review of Economic Studies,58* (2), 277-297.

[25] R. Blundell and S. Bond (1998). Initial conditions and moment restrictions in dynamic panel data models. *Journal of Econometrics, 87*(1), 115-143.

[26] M. Arellano and O. Bover (1995). Another look at the instrumental variable estimation of error-components models. *Journal of Econometrics, 68*(1), 29-51.

A kind of short-handedness: A research about hidden unemployed looking for a job at their workplace, their characteristics and what they think about their institutions

Mehtap Aracı
Nevşehir Hacı Bektaş Veli University, Gülşehir Vocational School
aracimehtap@gmail.com

Abstract. Short-handedness behaviors, which is one of the most important problems that all institutions are faced to regardless they are public or private institutions, may take the form of voluntary absenteeism, presenteeism, malingering and hidden unemployment. Unplanned delays, which may result from short-handedness, that occurs in non-existence of employee at work physically or not contributing to work even though being at work physically, brings important costs herewith. Hidden unemployed, discussed within the scope of this study and creating short-handedness, has a job and being at work physically, but doesn't devote himself/herself to his/her job because he/she looks for other jobs. It is seen that hidden unemployment concept is generally dealt with macroeconomic evaluations and within unemployment types, employees being at work but not contributing to work are emphasized, but looking for a new job while being at work is not mentioned. As things stand, hidden unemployed look for a new job because of individual or organizational reasons and his/her hope to find a new job is high. A comprehensive study about hidden unemployed, characteristic, probable individual or organizational reasons for hidden unemployment behaviors and potential for effecting institutional productivity is not encountered in literature. The purpose of this study are; to set up a substructure including enumerated headings, supporting this substructure with a field study aiming to reveal tendency of hidden employment of employees, thereby to guide human resources researches to be done in this field.

Keywords: Short-handedness, hidden unemployed, human resources, productivity of work force, management.

1.Introduction: Concept and literature information

Non-existence of an employee at work physically or non-contribution to work productivity for various reasons even though he/she is at work is called short-handedness and since this situation does not serve to productivity goal, it brings important costs to businesses [22].

Employees may exhibit behaviors, which does not serve to business goals or makes difficult to reach business goals with the impact of various elements. These behaviors, could be named as short-handedness, may occur as unexcused absenteeism/voluntary absenteeism,

being at work when employee is not suitable to work in physical and physiological terms/ presenteeism, acting as if he/she is sick/malingering and looking for a new job who is physically at work and not devoting himself/herself to his job or other similar forms of absenteeism [22].

Absence behavior is an important human resources problem to be monitored and taken measures by businesses. Many researches were encountered throughout literature review about absenteeism and voluntary absenteeism made by [1, 3, 6, 7, 11, 18, 19, 23, 31] and also about presenteeism made by [4, 5, 10, 12, 14, 15, 17, 20, 21, 24-29]. Even though it seems that malingering hasn't drawn attention as much as absenteeism and presenteeism, some definitions and findings were reached [2, 16, 30]. On the contrary, no researches have been encountered about hidden unemployed within the context of human resources in literature by this time.

Hidden unemployed who is disregarded in human resources area are discussed in this study. The purpose of this study is to set up a theoretical substructure about hidden unemployed who may influence productive employees negatively, their characteristic, probable individual, organizational, work-related or sectoral causes of hidden unemployment and their potential to influence organizational productivity negatively and along with that, to support this substructure with a field study aiming to reveal tendency of employees for hidden unemployment. We hope that approach of this study on hidden unemployment in human resources will shed light on other studies to be done in this field.

2. Hidden unemployment: Characteristics, probable causes and impacts on institutional productivity

Hidden unemployment in human resources is that an employee, who is at work physically, is not able to devote himself/herself to his/her present work because s/he looks for another job.

It is observed that hidden unemployment is discussed within unemployment types and defined as "if removing one labor unit from economic activity area doesn't result any change in total production, it is hidden unemployment" [9]. However "hidden unemployed looking for another job while working" is not mentioned in studies made in human resources area. Although employees not contributing to work are underlined in this definition, it is not emphasized that implied hidden unemployed in mentioned studies looking for a new job.

A research on employee commitment made by Hay Group in 2014 [13] shows that one forth of employees in whole World would change their jobs until 2018. It is revealed in the research that there will be a sudden increase in labor exchange in coming five years and only %61 of employees in Turkey intend to continue to their present jobs. In that case, employees who intend to change their jobs are %39 of all employees.

It is likely that this rate is consisted of employees saying, "I am not looking for a new job, but if I find a better job, I will leave" and employees who has been already looking for jobs. In this case, hidden unemployed within the context of human resources look for a new job for certain, because of personal or institutional reasons, with a high hope. At that, definition of underemployed defines employees who don't feel commitment to business, shows up only physically, have given up their jobs mentally and have started to look for a new job. These employees do not or cannot focus on their jobs with the thought of "I will leave anyway". Even though these employees exhibit presenteeism behavior, the reason for not focusing their jobs is not being at work despite having a serious physical or mental discomfort

2.1. Characteristics of hidden unemployed

It is likely for hidden unemployed to avoid making an effort requiring long and busy shift for their jobs and business, as tenants, who find a new house and are about to move, give up the idea of dealing with problems (like necessary repair work, renewal of some parts of apartment, paint and white wash, and detailed cleaning). Thus, characteristics of hidden unemployed can be listed as follows:

- Hidden unemployed looking for a job can make voluntary absenteeism for job interviews made out of organizations where s/he works, can come to work late or leave early. They can make slanderous statements about business or revealing wrongdoings within their colleagues
- They may lie in order to hide that they are searching a job

- They can mistreat business tools allocated to them, refrain from protecting them appropriately
- They can make time for them to look for a job by malingering
- They can postpone making their tasks with the thought of leaving job
- They can sift out difficult tasks among others assigned to them; they can be uninterested and avoid responsibility
- They may tend to disagree with their employers or colleagues more, when their hope to find a new job is higher
- It is very likely that employer or replacing personnel will encounter briefs, receipts or similar documents to be processed, when they leave after finding a new job

Their performance will not disappear completely, but they will try to hinder their performance decrease with their own effort to prevent the employer to terminate the contract in an undesirable time for them.

2.2. Probable individual, institutional and occupational/sectoral causes of hidden unemployment and its impact on productivity

It is possible to categorize hidden unemployment behaviors, which can be characterized as physical or actual absenteeism, as employee-related, business-related and work/sector-related reasons.

Individual (employee-related) reasons;
- Not having a profession/not having adequate education,
- Not having adequate income to live on,
- Desire to change region or city where s/he works for personal reasons,
- Personal conflicts with colleagues, superiors or subordinates,
- Thought of not being able to reach to projected career point in present work,
- Difficulties of working in a job different than his education,
- Thought of deserving a better job/wage/position,
- Pressure from family, spouse and friends,
- Desire to change job resulting from weariness of working in the same job for long years.

Organizational (business-related) reasons;
- Disagreements and problems experienced with management/leadership style in workplace (authoritativeness, democratization, transparency, flexibility, participatory approach, proactive approach, reliability, justice and supportiveness level etc.),
- Problems and disagreements experienced about organizational structure (horizontal and vertical size, scope of delegation of authority, organizational communication etc.),
- Inadequate work space, work equipment and hardware, administrational services, ergonomic conditions and threat level resulting from working environment provided to employee,
- Inadequacy, inequality, injustice and etc. in human resources management activities such as recruitment, business analysis and business valuation, wage policy, performance evaluation, educational administration, motivation implementations.

Business or sector-related reasons;
- Attractiveness or copiousness of employment opportunities in sector,
- Need to back up another job as a result of scarcity of employment opportunities in sector,
- Need to chance sector for sectoral wages inequality and bad working conditions,
- Unsuitableness of job to employee for way of performing, expected qualifications, difficulty and responsibility level of job,
- Unclear job descriptions,
- Work partners that cannot be changed by its nature,
- Unsuitable working hours by its nature etc.

Aforementioned reasons can be increased by taking into consideration of other similar consequences. It is probable that institutional productivity is negatively affected when an employee looks for a new job, despite his/her presence at work. Decreased work performance may cause productivity loss and cost increase, which is explained below with the mail lines, in businesses trying to find solutions to compensate performance

gap and to get additional workforce performance.

- Customer loss because of extension in work completion periods
- Increase in operational costs because of extension in work completion periods
- Decrease in production standards
- Decrease in customer satisfaction
- Increased cost for sick leave
- Increased labor turnover
- Training cost of newly recruited personnel,
- Reserve/temporary staff employment costs,
- Increase in overtime wage
- Productivity loss of other personnel with increased workload

Necessity of proactive human resources management process is obvious to prevent productivity losses and cost increases of this kind. The most important and necessary steps for human resources practitioners are determining most probable reasons for hidden unemployment behaviors and bringing a preventive human resources policy into life.

3. A Research on characteristics of hidden unemployed and what they think about their workplace

A field study, aiming to reveal characteristics of hidden unemployed, their evaluations about their workplace and tendency for hidden unemployment of employees, is made to support substructure of this study. Mainframe of field study consists of goal, method, assumptions and research findings.

3.1. Goal, method and assumptions of field study

A field study was made to reveal characteristics of hidden unemployed, their evaluation about their workplace and hidden unemployment tendency of employees by gathering data with surveys in Nevşehir, which is positioned in Central Anatolian Region of Turkey and within the borders of Cappadocia. Theoretical substructure is used in preparation of survey questions and selection is made from created question pool by taking into account of this study's goal. There are 21 close-ended questions with two options in this survey which is consisted of 3 sections. 6 definitive questions are about sur-

vey participants, 11 questions are about characteristics of hidden unemployed and 10 questions are about what hidden unemployed think about their workplace. Questions about participators are evaluated in general, 21 close-ended questions (serving to main goal of this research) with two options are handled separately in research findings.

Answers of employees, who are not hidden unemployed, to 10 questions, which is asked to reveal thoughts of hidden unemployed for their workplace, are also considered. This question is also used for revealing hidden unemployment tendency in employees who are not hidden unemployed by this means. It is assumed that answers of survey participants will reveal data for the purpose of this study. Other assumptions are; participants understood the questions correctly, results represent all hidden unemployed, and employees having a job at present who don't make job applications are not hidden unemployed.

All hidden unemployed working in private sector in Turkey comprises of main body. However, since it wasn't possible to reach all individuals, sampling had to be done. Nevşehir is preferred considering its proximity to researcher because of pro rata reason about research period (2016, August). Judgment sample is used among non-random sampling methods in determination of sampling units from main group to be included in research. Employees who are older than 18 years old, having a permanent and salaried jobs are sampled, employees working for public institutions and self employed are not included in sample. No discrimination was made between production or service sector in sampling.

150 survey forms were used in total, 14 % survey forms were eliminated because survey participants did not answer most of the questions or basic variables were not answered and surveys with absent answers did not exceed over % 10 of reached participants, and 136 of them (%90,6) were found suitable for analysis, percentage for each expression was found out and findings to serve to research goal were revealed. Participants were contacted face to face or by phone out of office hours, received answers are assessed by using SPSS 16.0 Statistical Package Program. Basic Frequency Analysis and definitive statistical tables were used in assessment of data received by survey.

3.2. Research findings

It is thought that giving research findings in four separate groups will simplify comprehensibility of results. Finding groups are; characteristics of hidden unemployed, what hidden unemployed think of their workplace and hidden unemployment tendency of employees who don't apply for a new job while working one job.

3.3. Findings about participant profile

46 out of 136 (%34) are between 18-25 years old, 53 out of 136 (%39) are between 29-39 years old, 28 out of 136 (%20,5) are between 40-50 years old, 9 out of 136 (%6,5) are over 51 years old. (Participants over 40 years old are 37 in total -%27-). 52 participants (%38) are female and 84 participants (%62) are male.

To give an idea, it is asked to participants how long they have been working in their present jobs. 33 participants (%24) have been working in their last jobs between 0-1 year, 55 participants have been working in their last jobs between 1-6 years (%41), 19 participants (%14) have been working their last jobs between 6-11 years, 15 participants (%11) have been working their last jobs between 11-16 years old and 14 participants (%10) have been working their last jobs over 16 years. Participants working over 6 years in their last jobs consist of %35 of all participants. Most of the participants (64 people-percent47) are educated in secondary educational level and food sector has the biggest share (58 people-percent 42,5) among studied sectors.

Table 1. Findings about educational level

Education	Primary education	Secondary education	Two year degree
N - %	20- %15	64-%47	24-%17,5
Education	Bachelor Degree	Graduate	Total
N - %	28-%20,5	0	136-%100

%69 of females, %56 of males said, they look for another job, while working in another job. In this case, %61 of respondents (83 people) look for another job, %39 don't attempt to apply for a job to work.

Table 2. Findings about studied sectors

Sector (production and service)	N - %	Sector	N- %
Automotive	7-%5	Plastic	6-%4
White Appliances	12-%9	Electronic	11-%8
Iron and Steel	3-%2	Textile	28-%20,5
Food	58-%42,5	Other	11-%8
Grand Total	N:136 %100		

Table 3. Findings about looking for a job while working in another job

Employees applying for another job	Yes	No	Total
Female	36-%69	16-%31	52%38
Male	47-%56	37-%44	84-%62
Total	83-%61 (%43 female, %57 male)	53-%39 (%30 female, %70 male)	136%100

It is accepted that, situation where 83 participants (% 61) look for a new job, reveals hidden unemployed behaviors. 11 questions, which were prepared fastidiously by taking into consideration of conceptual framework, were directed to hidden unemployed to learn what kind of behavioral characteristics they have (Table 4)

According to the findings in Table 4;
Fate of % 59 of all hidden unemployed;
- is high in finding a new job
- %66 don't avoid tasks requiring busy and tiring overtime even though they look for another job, %70 don't run away from responsibilities, %65 don't neglect their duties, approximately %64 don't malinger and %61 continue to use business tool-appliances in line with workplace rules. There might be some personal reasons for this situation, as well as it might happen to hide behaviors to look for a new job
- Besides that, hidden unemployed don't avoid criticizing negativity in work-

place when they are with their colleagues (%78) or out of workplace (%89). It is obvious that these behaviors may hurt institutional reputation

- %85 lie to their boss to make an interview for another job, %73 make absenteeism for these interviews. %54 mentioned their interest for their job decreased

Table 4. Findings about revealing characteristics of hidden unemployed

While looking for another job;	N	Yes	No
Do you believe you can find a new job as soon as possible?	83	49-% 59	34-% 41
Do you continue to spend necessary effort for some work requiring busy and tiring overtime?	83	55-% 66,2	28-% 33,73
Have you been avoiding to criticize negativeness in workplace when you are with your colleagues?	83	18-% 21,68	65 % 78,32
Have you been avoiding to criticize negativeness out of workplace?	83	9-% 10,85	74-% 89,15
When you go for a job interview, do you say the truth to your boss/manager?	83	12-% 14,45	71 % 85,55
Are you being meticulous to use business equipments/appliances/devices that are allocated to you, in line with workplace rules?	83	51-% 61,4	32-% 38,56
Have you ever avoided difficult tasks by malingering?	83	35-% 42,15	53-% 63,85
Did you need to be absent from work to make a job interview?	83	61-% 73,49	22-% 26,51
Have you been neglecting your tasks with the thought of leaving your job?	83	29 % 34,94	54-% 65,06
Is there any decrease in your interest for your job?	83	45 % 54,22	38 % 45,78
Do you continue to fulfill your responsibilities in full?	83	58-% 69,88	25-% 30,12

Questions placed in section 3 of survey are for revealing thoughts of hidden unemployed about their workplace and hidden unemployment tendency of employees who are not hidden unemployed. Findings about both situations are mentioned in Table 5 and Table 6.

Table 5. Findings about what hidden unemployed think of their workplace

	N	Yes	No
Do you think, what you do is not proper to your educational level?	83	24-% 28,91	59-% 71,09
Do you think your salary is inadequate for your living standards?	83	52-% 62,65	31-% 37,35
Do you think your salary is inadequate considering hardship, responsibility and danger conditions it requires?	83	47-% 56,62	36-% 43,38
Would you like to live in another region/city and work there?	83	33-% 39,75	50-% 60,24
Do you think working in the same workplace for long years make employees unproductive?	83	62-% 74,69	21-% 25,31
Do you think you have to be in a better position in your workplace?	83	63-% 75,90	20-% 24,10
Do you experience problems/conflicts, which is difficult to solve, with your colleagues?	83	43-% 51,80	40-% 48,19
Do you experience problems/conflicts, which is difficult to solve, with your boss?	83	49-% 59,03	34-% 40,96
Do you have family problems (mother-father, spouse, kids-related) requiring job switches?	83	26-% 31,32	57-% 68,68
Would you like to work in another sector if you have a chance?	83	12-% 14,45	51-% 61,45

Thoughts of hidden unemployed about their workplace and job are also remarkable. % 71 of hidden unemployed thinks that;

- his/her job is not appropriate to his/her education
- %62 thinks that his/her salary is not appropriate for his/her living standards, %56 thinks that his/her salary is not appropriate for responsibility, hardship and danger conditions of his/her job
- %75 thinks that they need to be in a better position. That is to say, most of hidden unemployed thinks that their career expectations are not met in workplace

- %74 thinks that working in the same workplace for long years make people unproductive, %60 want to work in a different city or region, %61 want to work in another sector. Approximately %69 don't experience a family problem or pressure requiring job switches
- %51 mentioned that they had problems and conflicts, which is difficult to solve, with their colleagues, %59 mentioned that they had problems and conflicts, which is difficult to solve with their bosses

Table 6. Findings about hidden unemployment tendency of employees who haven't applied to another job while having a job

	N	Yes	No
Do you think, what you do is not proper to your educational level?	53	19-% 35,85	34-% 64,15
Do you think your salary is inadequate for your living standards?	53	45-% 84,90	8-% 15,10
Do you think your salary is not inadequate considering hardship, responsibility and danger conditions it requires?	53	45-% 84,90	8-% 15,10
Would you like to live in another region/city and work there?	53	21-% 39,62	32-% 60,38
Do you think working in the same workplace for long years make employees unproductive?	53	15-% 28,30	38-% 71,70
Do you think you have to be in a better position in your workplace?	53	39-% 73,58	14-% 26,42
Do you experience problems/conflicts which is difficult to solve with your colleagues?	53	7-% 13,20	46-% 86,80
Do you experience problems/conflicts, which is difficult to solve, with your boss?	53	10-% 18,86	43-% 81,14
Do you have family problems (mother-father, spouse, kids-related) requiring job switches?	53	13-% 24,53	40-% 75,47
Would you like to work in another sector if you have a chance?	53	17-% 32,07	36-% 67,93

Within this context, it is quite difficult to measure hidden unemployment tendency of employees having a job, but not applying for a new job. However, when answers of employees, who are not hidden unemployed, are evaluated one by one, it seems impossible to get an idea about existence of this tendency. Main reasoning to use same questions, revealing what hidden unemployed think about their workplace and work, for employees not looking for a new job is that their negative thoughts about their workplaces and work have the potential to push them to hidden unemployment.

According to the findings of basic frequency analysis;

- %85 of employees not looking for a new job while working in a job think that their salaries are not adequate for their living standards, for hardship, responsibility and danger conditions of their job's. It is remarkable that this rate is higher than rates of hidden unemployed
- %64 think that they don't work in a job appropriate to their educational level, %74 think that they deserve to be in a better position
- %60 don't want to work in another region/city, %67 don't want to work in another sector, %72 believe that working in the same workplace for long years makes people unproductive
- Only %13 mentioned they had problems, which is difficult to solve, with their friends, %18 had problems, which is difficult to solve with their bosses and only %25 have a family problem requiring a job shift

Some other new characteristics can be added to characteristics of hidden unemployed, on the condition that it is in the scope of this study, which is mentioned in substructure of this study, when we look at common findings about hidden unemployed and employees with hidden unemployment tendency. In that case, hidden unemployed or employees with that tendency believe that working in the same workplace for long years makes people unproductive, want to work in a different region, city or sector, they have family related problems requiring job switch and they have problems or conflicts with their colleagues and bosses, which are difficult to solve.

4. Result and suggestions

In this study, hidden unemployed is given place, which has been neglected among behaviors named short-handedness in human resources area. It is seen that %61 of 136 participants look for another job participating in field study, which is given place in 3rd section of this study. Namely, hidden unemployment rate is %61 according to the results of this study. It should be mentioned that rate of %61 is quite high when taking into consideration that this employee type, which is mostly overlooked in both private sector and public sector, may cause major productivity losses. Hidden unemployment rate among women (%69) is higher than men (%56). This shows that satisfaction level of female employees is not met sufficiently.

This study bases on behaviors of employees, who apply for another job to other institution/s perceptively while working in another workplace, determination of numbers or ratio of employees, who haven't applied for a job, but think of applying in a short term, is kept out of the scope of this study. It is probable that this measurement will be done in another similar study.

This is the first study made in this field. It evaluates the rate of hidden unemployed in present sample, characteristics of them, what they think of their workplaces and tendency of employees, who is not hidden underemployed, in general and makes situation identification. It is possible to say that this study is a definitive study with this aspect. It is thought that profiling hidden unemployed not only by their genders like in this study, but by their ages, marital status, educational level, working time, sectors they work for and questioning the relation of hidden unemployment behavior with these variables, would deepen and increase the explanatoriness of topic.

Management of hidden unemployment, which is a type of short-handedness, requires a strategic approach necessitating constant supervision. In developing of this approach, determination of factors resulting in hidden unemployment, categorizing these factors and developing solution alternatives for methods to follow are required. Bekiroğlu in his study [8], defines hidden unemployment as "non contribution of a person to production even though s/he is not unemployed apparently. If we don't take into account whether employee look for a job,

employees showing involuntary absenteeism, presenteeism and malingering behaviors are also hidden unemployed according to this definition and similar definitions. Yet, hidden unemployment has been specified by starting off hidden unemployment definition and discussing it within the scope of human resources management. Hidden unemployment is a type of short-handedness, which hurts management policies of human resources units and discussed within the scope of human resources area for that reason. It is suggested that hidden unemployment should be noticed as a serious short-handedness problem requiring to take precautions and should be subject to new studies to be done in human resources area.

References

[1] A. Çelik, A.B. Çakıcı and M. Fındık, Çalışma ilişkilerinde algılanan adaletsizlik ile örgütsel bağlılık, işe devamsızlık ve işten ayrılma niyeti arasındaki ilişkilerin belirlenmesine yönelik bir araştırma: Sağlık kurumları örneği, Kahramanmaraş Sütçü İmam Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F. Dergisi 4(2) (2014), 159–169.

[2] A. Çoban, Temaruz, http://www.adnan coban.com.tr/temaruz.htmlletişim, 2016.

[3] B. Bacak and Y. Yiğit, İşe devamsızlığın nedenleri, ekonomik sonuçları ve azaltılması için alınması gereken önlemler, Girişimcilik ve Kalkınma Dergisi 5(1) (2010), 29–44.

[4] B. Çiftçi, İşte var ol(ama)ma sorunu ve işletmelerin uygulayabileceği çözüm önerileri, Çalışma ve Toplum 1 (2010), 153–174.

[5] B. Gilbreath and L. Karımi, Supervisor behavior and employee presenteeism, International Journal of Leadership Studies 7/1 (2012), 114–131.

[6] B.J.Punnett, D. Grenidge and J. Ramsey, Job attitudes and absenteeism: A study in the English speaking Caribbean, Journal of World Business 4(2) (2007), 214–227.

[7] B. Şenel, Devamsızlık nedenleri ve maliyetinin araştırılması, Marmara Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi 3 (2012), 1–17.

[8] C. Bekiroğlu, Türkiye'de işsizlik sorununun çözümlenmesinde uygulanan ekonomi politikalarının analizi, Yayımlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Kadir Has Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İstanbul, 2010.

[9] C.O. Kanca, Türkiye'de işsizlik ve iktisadi büyüme arasındaki nedenselliğin ampirik bir

analizi, Çanakkale Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi 21(2) (2012), 1–18.

[10] E. Arslaner and Y. Boylu, İş hayatında presenteeism: Otel işletmeleri açısından bir değerlendirme, İşletme Araştırmaları Dergisi 7(4) (2015), 123–136.

[11] F. Şahin, İşe devamsızlığın nedenleri, sonuçları ve örgütler için önemi, Niğde Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F. Dergisi 4(1) (2011), 24–39.

[12] G. Johns, Presenteeism in the workplace: A review and research agenda. Journal of Organizational Behavior 31 (2010), 519–542.

[13] HayGroup, Çalışan bağlılığında oyunun kuralı değişti, https://www.haygroup.com/downloads/tr/ calisan_ bagliligi.pdf, 2014.

[14] H. Yıldız, B. Yıldız, C. Zehir and M. Aykaç, The antecedents of presenteeism and sickness absenteeism: A research in turkish health sector, Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences 207 (2015), 398–403.

[15] İ.A. Baysal, G. Baysal, G. Aksu and N. Aksu, Presenteeism (işte varolmama sorunu) ile örgütsel bağlılık arasındaki ilişki: Adnan Menderes Üniversitesi akademik personeli üzerinde bir uygulama, Electronic Journal of Vocational Colleges -Ağustos- BÜROKON Özel Sayısı (2014), 134–152.

[16] İ. Türkçüer, M. Serinken, C. Sengül and M. Özen, Munchausen Sendromu mu? Yoksa temaruz mu?, Türkiye Acil Tıp Dergisi 10(1) (2010), 38–40.

[17] J. Cullen and A. McLaughlin, What drives the persistence of presenteeism as a managerial value in hotels? Observations notes during an Irish worklife balance research project, International Journal of Hospitality Management 25(3) (2006), 510–516.

[18] J.J. Martocchio and D.I. Jimeno, Employee absenteeism as an affective event, Human Resource Management Review 13 (2003), 227–241.

[19] J.J. Ramsey, D. Grenidge and B.J. Punnett, A social psychological account of absenteeism in barbados, Human Resource Management Journal 18(2) (2008), 97–117.

[20] J.R.B. Halbesleben, M.V. Whitman and W.S. Crawford, A dialectical theory of the decision to go to work: Bringing together absenteeism and presenteeism, Human Resource Management Review 24 (2014), 177-192.

[21] K. Dew, V. Keefe and K. Small, 'Choosing' to work when sick: Workplace presenteeism, Social Science&Medicine 60 (2005), 2273–2282.

[22] M. Aracı, Çalışan yokluğunun yönetimi: Nedenleri ve yokluk sorunlarına çözüm önerileri, Eurosian Academy of Sciences, Social Sciences Journal S1 (2016), 365–378.

[23] M. Demir, İşgörenlerin çalışma yaşamı kalitesi algılamalarının işte kalma niyeti ve işe devamsızlık ile ilişkisi, Ege Akademik Bakış 11(3) (2011), 453–464.

[24] M.K. Murray, H.M. Pontes, M.D. Griffiths ve C. Biron, Sickness presenteeism determines job satisfaction via affective motivational states, Social Science & Medicine 139 (2015), 100–106.

[25] N. Caverley, J.B. Cunningham and J.N. McGregor, Sickness presenteeism, sickness absenteeism and health following restructuring in a public service organization, Journal of Management Studies 44(2) (2007), 304–319.

[26] Ö. Çoban and S. Harman, Presenteeism: Nedenleri, yarattığı örgütsel sorunlar ve çözüm önerileri üzerine bir alanyazın taraması, SÜ İİBF Sosyal ve Ekonomik Araştırmalar Dergisi 12(23) (2012), 157–178.

[27] Ö. Şahin, İstidamın yeni trendi presenteeism, http://ozgesahinn.blogspot.com.tr/2015/10/istid amn-yeni-trendi-aslnda-yeni.html, 2015.

[28] Ö.G. Demirbulat and D. Bozok, Presenteeism (işte varolamama) ile yaşam doyumu, fiziksel ve ruhsal iyilik halinin etkileşimine yönelik seyahat acentası işgörenleri üzerinde bir araştırma, KMÜ Sosyal ve Ekonomik Araştırmalar Dergisi 16 (27) (2015), 7–13.

[29] Q. Zhou, L. Martinez, A. Ferreira and P. Rodrigues, Supervisor support, role ambiguity and productivity associated with presenteeism: A longitudinal study, Journal of Business Research, https://pure.york.ac.uk/portal/en/ publications/supervisor-support-role-ambiguity-and-productivity-associated-with-presenteeism (b4fca874-ef64-4c57-91c8-1438f401dcba).html Acceptance Date:2016.

[30] S. Atay, İş yaşamında temaruz olgusu (Malingering), Marmara Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F. Dergisi XXIII:2 (2007), 1–10.

[31] Y. Aksu Sarier, Çalışan devamsızlığını yönetmek mümkün, Kariyer-Net, http://www.kariyer.net/ik-blog/isyerinde-devamsizlik-yonetimi/, 2013.

An Evaluation On The Entrance Of Foreign-Owned Banking In The Turkish Financial System

Necip Dündar
Muş Alparslan University- Department of Accounting and Finance
n.dundar@alparslan.edu.tr

Abstract. The process of integration of global financial markets has been inevitable with neoliberal policies. In 1970's, global financial order has evolved into a new process. Policies on the liberalizing of financial markets especially have been offered to developing countries as a prescription in this period. With the 1980s, the liberalization of financial markets has been led to massive capital inflows to developing countries. Investors who are willing to be a part of the international financial system have begun to enter the banking sector of developing countries for the potential of big profits.

As a developing country, Turkey has begun to liberalize its financial markets with 1980's and has started to develop an appropriate environment for the entry of the foreign banking. Foreign banks have entered to the Turkish Banking Sector in different ways with this period. Although there have been periodic fluctuations in the number of foreign- owned banks in the Turkish banking sector, many positive contributions of foreign-owned banks have been observed.

1. Introduction

With the spread of globalization, especially foreign-owned banks are observed to enter into developing the countries that are requesting funds for their financial markets. Developing countries have become attractive in terms of being high profit and investment targets for these banks. Because these countries have begun to integrate the international financial system by removing obstacles on the financial markets with the 1980s. At the same time, this term is known as the period of development of massive capital flows.

Developing countries quickly made their liberalization efforts in order to integrate of global markets. After massive capital flows to these countries, many foreign-owned banks also have entered and started to have a big share in their financial systems. Although developing countries have experienced many positive results of capital movements, they have experienced also many negative results as having some kind of

financial crisis. Mexico and Turkey (1994), Asia (1997), Russia (1998), Brazil (1999), Argentina and Turkey (2001) have experienced a number of financial crises. There was not only single or same reason of financial crisis in these developing countries. They were all developing countries, had liberalization effort quickly for integration of international markets but insufficient and weak financial infrastructure made them fragile in front of any attack. So having crisis have been inevitable for these countries at the end.

The experienced financial crisis has led to the need to fix or control of structural weaknesses of the financial system of these countries. Domestic politic stability, confidence and a strong financial system attract foreign investment and foreign-owned banking in particular. These are considered as effective factors for the development of financial systems, so it has been required to give importance to this case.

The aim of this study is to analyze how global financial order enables the development of

foreign-owned banking, and in this context, to analyze Turkish banking sector from 1980's to the present, to show the share of foreign-owned banking, to assess the dimension of the current situation in the banking sector and to examine the effect of entrance of foreign-owned banking in the Turkish banking sector.

2. Global financial order in the transition of foreign-owned banking

2.1. Global financial order

The world economy has entered a new process as named financial liberalization that has become effective in the international markets with the policies implemented under the leadership of the Reagan government of the USA and Thatcher government of the UK. IMF and World Bank as Bretton Woods corporations, have proposed liberal policies that may be considered excessive to developing countries in this period, but most countries have acted hasty, have taken rapid steps towards opening up financial markets without establishing main macroeconomic balance, and creating the necessary infrastructure, so developing countries have experienced some financial crises accompanied by increasing capital mobility after 1990's. [11].

The liberalization of capital markets in developing countries has caused global investors to flock since the 1980s. Because developed countries keep their domestic interest rates low in general and provide investors to be part of developing countries' financial system where interest rates are relatively high.

Capital flows to developing countries have had a major role in the growth of investment and the volume of the country's economy. Although there have been some positive aspects of the capital flow in these countries, the capital flow could occur economic, social or political destruction as being the reason for a possible speculative attack on the currency of the country.

The causes of the crisis in developing countries were generally similar. Fixed exchange rates were implemented in developing countries and it was observed that the real exchange rate was appreciated before the financial crisis. In addition, high debt, current account deficit, and fragile financial structures were observed in these countries. And in general, these countries have been suffered from an attack on their cur-

rencies and they have been shown to switch from fixed exchange rate to floating exchange rates after the crisis.

Foreign-owned banking has been developed in parallel with the flow of capital to developing countries in new global financial order. The entrance of foreign-owned banking into developing countries' financial systems have fluctuations according to politic, social or economic situation. If there have been strong laws, regulations, controlling system in the financial system, foreign capital will be willing to invest in the financial system. On the other hand, it has been observed that foreign capital can be reversed under politic risks or in the absence of an atmosphere of trust.

3. Foreign-Owned Banking

3.1. Features and Effects of foreign-owned banks

Foreign-Owned Banks are advanced, rich and high capital accumulation countries banks that enter into a foreign financial market as merging with a national bank, opening a new branch, establishing a new bank or purchasing a bank for the purpose of execution of specific activities. Due to having advanced technology, they have the capacity to offer new services to the customers. These banks are in or have close cooperation with the major financial centers. In addition, they change the competitive nature of the country they entered with facilities such as low-interest loans or credit card [13].

There are different perspectives for the entrance of foreign-owned banking in the national banking sector. The most important benefit of foreign-owned banking is to develop and help the local banking system to be more competitive. It facilitates international capital access into the country. In addition, it ensures widespread use of modern banking skills and technology in banking sector [10].

Bringing of modern banking methods and their own technological infrastructure of foreign-owned banking do develop and make the banking sector stronger. Foreign-owned banking attracts foreign capital to flow into the country, so they contribute positively to the balance of payments. They can take a leading role towards ensuring the financial stability of the country in this context.

As foreign-owned banking provides competition and efficiency to the sector, it has a capacity of finding funds from the international community as well. All these features make foreign banking very important for national markets.

The entrance of foreign-owned banking to the sector has many positive aspects, but it has some negative aspects as well. For instance, it is seen that they may apply some restrictions on credit supply and create fragility risk in times of crisis that these may cause serious consequences.

In addition, it is likely to be of foreign domination of resource allocation in the sector. Foreign-owned banking may act as reluctant to extend credits to small businesses that may adversely affect both the financial sector and the real sector. Also, capital and deposit outflows may occur in the case of political risks or global reasons.

4. Turkish banking sector

4.1. From 1980's to the present

There has been constructed a new global order after 1970's. Developing countries were advised to apply neoliberal policies. With the1980's, Turkey has not been insensitive to new global developments also. Turkey has begun to open its financial markets to foreigners. And for this purpose, it has emerged developments in its financial markets.

Turkey has made some improvements in the foreign capital with liberal policies implemented by legislation in 1980, and this policy has created an attractive environment for the entry of foreign capital. The reforms about financial sector have created a positive impact on the banking sector and has resulted in the execution of a more competitive environment in the banking sector [5].

On 24th January 1980, the Turkish government has made some crucial decisions and this was the first step of the process of transformation in the financial system. Deposit and lending rates have been released with these decisions, the restrictions on foreign exchange transactions of banks and the owner of deposits have been abolished, it has been recognized possession of foreign currency to individuals, the costs of brokerage services have been decreased compared to the previous periods, restrictions related to participation in financial systems of

domestic banks and foreign-owned banks have been reduced [17].

The result of financial liberalization, Turkey has opened its financial markets to the rest of the world. Turkey has been started to deepen its financial system, and needed to attract more foreign investors with the aim of economic growth. So Turkey has taken concrete steps in the legal as well as institutional dimensions. As a result, it has seen an increase of the entry of foreign banking.

Turkey's economy in 1990, has some of the structural problems that have adversely affected banking sector. The increase in public sector savings gap has led to demand more resources in the public sector. This has created a great pressure on domestic interest rates. With domestic or overseas borrowing and appreciation of the Turkish lira, short-term capital has quickly started to flow [8].

On the other hand, Turkey's current account deficit reached nearly $ 6.5 billion in late 1993. Devaluation expectations have caused a large amount of capital flight, this flight has upset the money market and the stock market [9]. Capital flow in 1994 was reversed sharply, a serious rise has occurred in domestic interest rate and inflation rate. A stabilization program is explained on 5 April 1994, in order to describe the origin of this crisis.

As a result, the negative effects of the crisis have been overcome in a short period of time, the banking sector is also affected positively with the momentum that the economy caught. In addition, it was observed that banking sector's growth rate was higher than national income's in 1995, 1996 and 1997 [8].

However, due to the financial crisis in developing countries in subsequent periods and the earthquake in 1999, the Turkish economy has experienced a significant contraction and Turkey's banking sector has also experienced. By the law that enacted in 1999, the Banking Regulation and Supervision Agency (BRSA) was established and officially began operations in 2000. BRSA has set goals as to protect the rights and interests of the savings owner, to increase the efficiency of the banking sector and competitiveness, to minimize damage to the economy, to make lasting confidence in the sector, improve the sector's stability and economy [14].

During this period, the Turkish economy has depended on short-term capital. Weak banks that have acted as an intermediary for short-

term capital flow have led to large fiscal deficits. In November of 2000, the first speculative attack on the Turkish lira has occurred but this episode was eliminated. In February of 2001, a new attack has been on Turkish lira by a political turmoil, exchange rate regime has been abandoned, the Turkish lira was allowed to fluctuate. This result has caused company and bank crisis, credit crunch and a fall of 7.5% in Gross Domestic Product in 2001 [12].

After the crisis of 2001, "The Transition to Strong Economy Program" has been implemented. The banking system and the economy have been restructured and structural problems of the sector that led to the crisis have been eliminated. Depending on the demand for loans in the banking system, the financial structure of banking has been empowered, the rate of loans in total assets have increased and profitability performance has improved [16].

Structural reforms that support the free market economy and budgetary discipline were applied in the post-2002 period in Turkey. It has been carried out legal and institutional arrangements in order to improve the effectiveness of supervision and control, to provide the sector more efficient and competitive structure. Due to these effective measures, the impact of 2007 global crisis has been relatively limited on Turkey's financial markets. Because Turkey has imposed tight restrictions and regulations about the foreign exchange open position, liquidity and capital adequacy ratio after 2001 financial crisis that has led to being prepared for this crisis [2].

Although taking measures in favor of protection against shock and the crisis, it has been observed that the Turkish financial system has been small and shallow. On the other hand, Turkey is a developing country and the financial sector has been in the growth phase. But the low level of savings, due to the taxation of high rates of financial instruments and services, the demand for the financial assets has remained at the low level, on the other hand, inflation has been at a high level for many years. So these can be listed as factors limiting the growth of the financial sector [15].

4.2. Reasons of entrance of foreign-owned banking

Turkey is known as a developing country that has applied important policies for removing obstacles against capital flow since 1980's. In addition, Turkey is a good profit, and a market for the investors of developed countries so has become attractive to foreign-owned banking.

The liberalization of the exchange regime with 1980, Turkey has followed the free market conditions and a policy that facilitated foreign capital inflows, so foreign capital flow has increased from this period [21]. In parallel, as a result of regulations to facilitate entry into the banking sector and removed the strict rules for the entry of foreign capital, a significant increase in the number of foreign banks have been occurred [3].

It has been taken place some financial regulation and innovation as Capital Markets Board (CMB) (1982), the Banking Law of 3182 and the Savings Deposit Insurance Fund (1985), Interbank Money Market (interbank) and Istanbul Stock Exchange (ISE,1986), Open Market Operations (1987), Currency and Foreign Market (1988), The Market for Gold Currency (1989) established to enhance the efficiency and competition in the financial markets [18]. Undoubtedly entry of foreign banks has begun to increase after these settlements and Turkish banking system has been formed on a more solid infrastructure.

Foreign banks are willing to invest that have been in a search for new markets as a result of saturation and competitive pressures on their national markets. In this context, Turkey has become a lucrative market for these banks with the regulations [7].

Furthermore, Other factors that are attracting the attention of foreign banks are listed as the accession process of the European Union, improvement in Turkey's macroeconomic indicators and corporate governance, improvement in regulation and supervisory framework of the banking system, the volume of the economy, having a potential as developing country [4].

The Political stability of the country is another factor that is very important on the entry of foreign banks into the national market. Because, the owners of capital's investment decisions in a foreign country are not only affected by expectations of higher profits but also politic regime, ethnic conflict, military coup, the embargo imposed on the country, etc. Since 1980, the capture of political stability in Turkey has increased the activities of foreign banks [1].

4.3. The effects of entrance of foreign-owned banks on the Turkish financial system

The entry of foreign-owned banking into the Turkish banking sector has largely positive effects but it may also have some negative effects.

The entry of foreigners into the Turkish banking sector has lead to some positive externalities. New financial products such as repurchase agreements, swaps, futures, options and so on have become widespread and Turkish banking system has met new technologies. The increase in the foreign share has brought competition and efficiency in the industry as well. All these developments are thought to affect economic growth and each component of the financial sector positively [6].

The most positive aspect of foreign capital in the sector of banking is bringing more efficient working environment with the small number of staff and intensive technology and is to add great progress on banking mentality or techniques [21]. There has been also positive impact of foreign capital on the deepening and the transformation of the financial system. On the other hand, the banking sector is generally focused on collecting deposits and lending function but foreign-owned banking has caused the banking sector to reconsider their strategy of banking. Especially after the entry of the foreign banking to the sector, there have been significant developments in areas such as financial and operational planning, credit analysis, marketing and human resources capital. This situation has led the local banks to be more resistant to possible crises [19].

To summarize the above-mentioned effects, the entrance of foreign capital into the banking Turkish banking system was found in the following effects:

- Deepening and transformation of the financial system
- Transparency and risk management
- Transformation in corporate infrastructure
- Competitive sectorial structure
- The variety of financial products
- General costs and profitability.

It is considered that foreign-owned banking has some negative impacts as well. Since the liberalization of its markets in 1980's, Turkey has experienced two important financial crises in 1994 and 2001. And it is known that foreign-owned banking did not use their sources to eliminate the effects of the crisis, in contrary,

they deepened the crisis with the purpose of obtaining more profits. Furthermore, they had a prepared position to leave the country that did not contribute to the growth of the country and stable banking system [21]. On the other hand, foreign-owned banking led to the increase of the competition but it may result in the loss of market share of the national banks, the decrease of profitability and the increase in financial fragility.

4.4. Foreign-Owned banking in the Turkish banking system

As it is seen in Table 1, there have been thirty-four deposit banks, thirteen investment and development banks and six participation banks as the total of fifty-three banks in Turkish Banking System in March 2016. The number of branches and number of employees was recorded as 12.276 and 216.532 (Table 2).

Table 1. Basic Indicators for The Turkish Banking System

	Number
Deposit Bank	**34**
Public Deposit Bank	3
Banks at Fund	1
Private Deposit Bank	30
Domestic Private Deposit Bank	9
Foreign Private Deposit Bank	21
Participation Bank	**6**
Domestic Private and Public Participation Bank	3
Foreign Private Participation Bank	3
Development and Investment Bank	**13**
Public Development and Investment Bank	4
Private Investment Bank	9
Domestic Investment Bank	5
Foreign Investment Bank	4
Turkish Banking System	**53**

Source: BDDK

According to Table 1, The Turkish banking system is dominated by deposit banking that has a rate of 64.1%. Twenty-one of the total thirty-four deposit banks in the sector that proportionally 61.7% is owned by foreign banking. Three of the total six participation bank that proportionally 50% and four of the total thirteen development and investment banks that proportionally 30.7% are owned by foreigners. So in March of 2016 the share of foreigners in the whole banking sector has reached 52.8%.

According to Table 2, the amount of assets of the Turkish banking sector has been 2.407.551 billion TL (Turkish Lira) in March of 2016. Total assets of the sector by the end of 2015, has increased 50.119 million TL in March of 2016, Loans are the largest component of assets that have been 1.511.537 billion TL, Securities has been 330.811 million TL. Assets of the sector have increased 2.1%, Loans have increased by 1.8% by the end of 2015. Deposits are the largest source of funds of the banks that have increased by 2.3% compared to the year of 2015 and have been 1.274.180 billion TL, while the net profit of the sector has been 8.192 million TL (BDDK).

Table 2. Indicators of The Turkish Banking Sector (Million TL)

	Foreign Bank	Sector
Asset	724.794	2.407.551
Loans	446.033	1.511.537
Deposit	395.247	1.274.180
Equity	78.081	273.021
Net Profit	1.984	8.192
Branch	4.023	12.276
Employee	75.678	216.532

Source: BDDK Mach 2016 Report, TBB

Foreign banking may be involved in several ways into the domestic banking market. For instance, foreign banks do enter the sector by purchasing a bank, buying bank shares or establishing a branch, with the fulfillment of the necessary procedures. But it has been seen that foreign entry into the Turkish banking sector has as cyclical ups and downs.

According to Table 3, the Turkish banking sector has consisted of only four foreign banks of the total operating forty-three banks in 1980, the number of banks in the sector and foreign banks have reached sixty-six and twenty-six, respectively in 1990. The number of banks in the sector has reached seventy-nine but the number of foreign banks has declined to twenty-one in 2000. Even if the total number of banks in the sector has fallen to forty-nine in 2010, the number of foreign banks has increased to twenty-four. In addition, the number of banks in the sector was fifty-two, and twenty-eight of the total banks was made up of foreign banks in December of 2015. The ratio of the number of foreign banks to all banks in the sector was 9% in 1980, in 1990 increased to 39%, it fell 26% in 2000 and rose 48.9% in 2010. This ratio has continued to increase after

2010 as well and rose to 53.8% in December of 2015.

Table 3. Number of Foreign Banks in Turkey

	Foreign Bank	Sector	Foreign/Sector(%)
1980	4	43	9
1990	26	66	39
2000	21	79	26
2010	24	49	48,9
2015	28	52	53,8

Source: TBB, BDDK

It is observed that the rate of foreign banks in the total sector is over 50% in the developing countries of the European Union. For instance, the ratio of foreign banks in the sector is 80% in the Czech Republic, 70% in Hungary, over 60% in Poland. Nonetheless, this ratio is realized between 5-20% in advanced countries of the European Union such as Germany, Netherlands, France, Italy, Spain, Austria and Denmark that foreign banks in other union members constitute the most important part of the rate of foreign banks in these developed countries. In other words, the share of foreign banks from foreign countries is very low. On the other hand, the rate of foreign banking in Argentina is 50%, while in Brazil is around 30% [20].

Table 4. Sector Share of Foreign Banking (%

	1980	1990	2000	2010	2015
Asset	2,9	3,5	5,4	16,5	30,3
Loans	1,8	3,5	2,8	19	29,5
Deposit	2,3	2,4	3,2	15,2	31,0
Equity	2,2	3,8	7,6	16,7	28,7
Branch	1,8	1,7	1,5	25,1	32,8
Employee	1,5	1,9	2,2	26,5	35,0

Source: TBB, BDDK

According to Table 4, although there have been some fluctuations in some periods, the balance sheet size of the foreign-owned banking seems to be the general upward trend from 1980 to 2015. Asset ratio of foreign-owned banking is realized 2,9% in 1980, which increased to 30.3% in 2015. At the same years, loans have increased from 1.8% to 29.5%, deposits from 2.3% to 31%, while equity seems to rise from 2.2% to 28.7%. The branches of the foreign bank in the sector and employee ratio have remained relatively limited from 1980 to 2000 but reached the ratio of one in three of all sector in 2015. But here is an interesting point that there has been an increase in the number of the foreign banks since 1980's but there had not been

a grow at the same rate in the size of components of balance sheet during these years.

Table 5. Equity/Total Assets (%)

	Foreign Bank	Sector
1980	4,2	5,5
1990	11,1	10,1
2000	9,6	6,9
2010	13,5	13,3
2015	10,5	11,1

Source: TBB, BDDK

According to the selected ratios in Table 5, the rate of equity in total assets for foreign banking was lower than sector in 1980 but was higher than sector in 1990, 2000 and 2010 years. This rate was close to each other in 2010 as being for foreign banking is 13.5% and the sector is 13.3%. In addition, there has been a decrease in both ratios in 2015. And the rate of equity in total assets for the total sector was realized higher than the rate of equity in total assets for foreign banking.

Table 6. Total Loans/Total Assets (%)

	Foreign Bank	Sector
1980	33,3	53,8
1990	48,2	47
2000	17,1	32,9
2010	60,2	52,2
2015	61,3	63

Source: TBB, BDDK

According to Table 6, the rate of loans in total assets for foreign banking was lower than total sector in 1980 but was higher than total sector in 1990. There has been a dramatic decrease in this rate for foreign banking from 48,2% to 17,1% in 2000. Total loans/ Total assets ratio for foreign banking was realized as 60,2% and for the total sector was 52,2% in 2010. As it is seen that this ratio for the total sector (63%) was realized higher than foreign banking (61,3%) at the end of 2015.

Table 7. Net Profit(Loss)/Total Assets (%)

	Foreign Bank	Sector
1980	2,1	1,3
1990	2,7	2,3
2000	0,6	-3,0
2010	1,5	2,2
2015	0,9	1,1

Source: TBB, BDDK

Table 8. Net Profit(Loss)/Equity (%)

	Foreign Bank	Sector
1980	50,0	24,2
1990	24,5	22,5
2000	6,2	-43,7
2010	11	16,4
2015	9,4	11,2

Source: TBB, BDDK

On the other hand, according to Table 7 and 8, the profitability of assets and equity for foreign banking was greater than total sector since from 1980 to 2010. But the profitability of the total sector was realized greater than profitability for foreign banking in both years, 2010 and 2015. There have been fluctuations and decline in this ratio for both sides as selected years but the ratios have been close to each other after 2010. In addition, the decline in the ratio of profitability for the total sector is seen greater than the decline for foreign banking proportionally from 2010 to 2015.

The main reason for the decline in profitability of whole banking system is considered that regulations to increase the costs of the banks and to limit their incomes and the increase in specific provisions allocated to troubled loans (TBB).

5. Conclusion

With the 1970's, a new economic approach has emerged with the change and transformation of the global financial system. The global markets were needed to be fully integrated with each other, hence, all kinds of barriers to trade must be removed, as this is a key factor to the mobilization of labor and capital.

In order to cause development and growth of these countries, the liberalization of financial markets is presented as a formula to developing countries. Most of developing countries have started to open their markets to international investors with the 1980's. A large amount of capital flow has been observed at the end of this process. On the other hand, as a result of massive capital inflows, developing countries have been more fragile to international or domestic shocks and developing countries have experienced several financial crises after 1990's.

Large amounts of capital inflows have accelerated the entry of foreign banks in the financial market as well. Foreign-owned banks usually are technologically advanced banks of developed countries and thus have the ability to provide new services to customers. These banks are in close cooperation with major financial cen-

ters, able to change the country's competitive structure of the banking system as bringing a lot of innovations.

There were only four foreign-owned banks in Turkey in 1980. After opening its markets to international investors and doing a lot of financial, structural and legal regulations with this year, many foreign banks have started to enter Turkey's financial sector. The number of foreign banks has reached twenty-six in 1990. In 2000, there were twenty-one foreign banks but, this number dropped to fifteen after the crisis of 2001. The Turkish banking sector has experienced a restructuring process after the crisis of 2001. And it is clear that the Turkish banking sector has not been adversely affected by 2007 global financial crisis after restructuring process since 2001.

The number of the foreign bank in the Turkish financial sector was realized as twenty-four in the total of forty-nine banks in 2010 and as twenty-eight in the total of fifty-two banks of the sector at the end of 2015.It is also seen that the rate of foreign banks in the total sector has been increasing from 1980 (9%) to 2015(53,8%).

Foreign-owned banking has contributed to the Turkish banking system by providing sectoral competition. It has been a positive contribution to productivity with less staff. It has increased the diversity of financial products and services in the industry by bringing new technologies and applications. it has been a contribution in terms of increasing profitability and reducing overall costs in the markets as well.

On the other hand, the increase of foreign banks in the sector may create a number of risks and situations. For instance, foreign banks have not used their sources to eliminate the effects of the crises, in contrast, they have been with the purpose of obtaining more profit and kept their resources in a position of outflow. Taking this position was seen as a risk factor for the Turkey's economy during the crises of 1994 and 2001 in Turkey.

Although foreign banks have an important role and big potential for national markets, the entry of foreign banks to the Turkish financial sector should not be unlimited and uncontrolled that some restrictions and regulations should be done in terms of negative experiences. So the domination of foreign banks in the sector should not be unlimited while the competitiveness of local banks should not be limited and

some regulations should be implemented to increase competition in the sector.

References

[1] A. Kaynarcalı, Gelişmeleri, özellikleri ve katkılarıyla yabancı bankacılık ve Türk bankacılık sistemi içindeki yabancı bankalar, Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, İstanbul üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü,1992.

[2] BDDK, Krizden istikrara Türkiye tecrübesi, Ankara, 2009.

[3] B. Güloğlu and A.E. Altunoğlu, Finansal serbestleşme politikaları ve finansal krizler: Latin Amerika, Meksika, Asya ve Türkiye krizleri, İstanbul Üniversitesi Siyasal Bilgiler Dergisi, 2002, 27, 1-29.

[4] B. Tatari, Yabancıların bankacılık sektörüne ilgisi, İzmir Ticaret Odası, İzmir, 2005, http://www.izto.org.tr/NR/rdonlyres/B942D EAC-917E-4200-81F5-2D065/74DF75/4914/YabBanka1.pdf. (15.12.2015).

[5] C. Kuyucundan D. Şahin, Türkiye'de yabancı bankaların varlığının yatırım ve büyüme üzerine etkisinin analizi, Dumlupınar Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 2011, 30, 259-270.

[6] Ç. Karacaoğlan, Yabancı sermayeli bankaların Türk bankacılık Sektörüne girişi, Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Kadir Has Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, 2011.

[7] E. Akçaoğlu, Bankacılıkta yabancı sermaye, 2008. http://www.eminakcaoglu.com/2008/07/ban kaclikta-yabancı-sermaye.html. (15.12.2015).

[8] G.G. Yağcılar, Türk bankacılık sektörünün rekabet yapısının analizi, BDDK Yayınları, 2011.

[9] G. Kazgan, 1990 sonrası yıllarda Türkiye'de krizler ve işsizlik: Çalışanlar ve sosyal güvenlikleri için çözümler açısından bir irdeleme, 2002. kazgan.bilgi.edu.tr/docs/1990_sonrasi_yillar da_Turkiye.doc (15.03.2015)

[10] H.A. Ata, Banka yabancılaşmasının Türkiye'deki yerli ve yabancı bankalar açısından karşılaştırılması, Atatürk Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F Dergisi, 2009, 14(2), 109-124.

[11] H. Seyidoğlu, Uluslararası mali krizler, IMF politikaları, az gelişmiş ülkeler, Türkiye ve dönüşüm ekonomileri, Doğuş Üniversitesi Dergisi, 2003, 4(2), 141-156.

[12]   J. Williamson, Reference rates and the international monetary system, Peterson Institute for International Economics, Washington D.C., 2007.

[13]   K.K.A. Sönmez, Türkiye'de yabancı sermayeli bankaların gelişimi ve yabancı sermayeli altı bankanın öz sermayeye serbest nakit alımları yöntemi ile değerlemesi, Başkent Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Bankacılık ve Finans Anabilim Dalı Yüksek Lisans Tezi, 2014.

[14]   M.A. Boyacıoğlu, 1980 sonrası Türk bankacılık sektöründeki gelişmeler, krizlerin sektör üzerindeki etkileri ve iyileştirici öneriler, Selçuk Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 2003, 9, 501-532.

[15]   M. Afşar, Küresel kriz ve Türk bankacılık sektörüne yansımaları, Eskişehir Osmangazi Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F Dergisi, 2011, 6(2), 143-171.

[16]   M. Akbalık and İ. Sırma, Türkiye'de yabancı bankaların etkinliği: Veri zarflama analiz uygulaması, Finansal Araştırmalar ve Çalışmalar Dergisi, 2013, 4(8), 1-16.

[17]   R. Soyluoğlu, Türkiye'deki yabancı banka girişleri ve etkileri, Ankara Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Finans Yüksek Lisans Bölümü Dönem Projesi, 2008.

[18]   S. Oksay, Finansal piyasalarda yeni yasal düzenlemeler ihtiyacı ve Türk finans sistemi, Öneri Dergisi, 2000. http://www.econturk.org/Turkiyeekonomisi/oksay4.pdf. (15.12.2015).

[19]   T. Akgeyik and A. Yavuz, Türk bankacılık sektörü yabancı girişi: Risk mi? Fırsat mı?, İstanbul Üniversitesi, İktisat Fakültesi Mecmuası, 2009, 59(2), 25-60.

[20]   TBB, Türkiye'de yabancı bankalar, Bankacılar Dergisi, 2005, 52, 3-9.

[21]   V. Çakar, Yabancı sermayeli banka girişleri ve ulusal bankacılık sektörü üzerindeki etkileri, Uzmanlık Yeterlilik Tezi, Bankacılık ve Finansal Kurumlar Genel Müdürlüğü, TCMB, 2003, Ankara.

Facebook Use Of The Brands As A Marketing Communication Tool

Şıker, Perihan
Omer Halisdemir University School of Communication
Department of Public Relations and Advertising
perihanskr@ohu.edu.tr

Abstract. The number of the individuals who spend a significant portion of the time on internet have been rising day by day in parallel to the expansion of social media. As a result of the increasing interest to the social media, companies need to implement their marketing strategies on social media environment to meet the requests and expectations of the consumers. Companies have been developed strategies for social media and have been tried to measure the impact of their brands. In this study which is about social media use, Facebook usage patterns of the brands which have the most liked websites in different sectors in Turkey have been analyzed. It might be said that marketing applications which were made by the companies on Facebook and other social media environments were very effective in strengthening to increase the brand loyalty and mutual communication with customers. Impact of the campaign has been understood from the increase in the number of "likes" during the campaign period. Total participation to the organized competitions and comments on the websites are the sings of the positive perception of the Facebook on brand images of the companies. As a result of the study, it might be said that applications of the brands which are active on Facebook have positive effects in the context of the numbers and continuation of the followers.

Keywords: Facebook, Marketing Communication, Social Media

Introductıon

In today's intense competitive environment, the brands are obligated to show their creativity features in order to maintain diversity with respect to their competitors with whom they constantly compete. Otherwise it is a matter time that they would lose in the competition. Businesses, while creating the brand image, should include their target audience into the brand, should acknowledge their preferences and behaviors and should create a strong bond between the brand and the consumers. Throughout the phase of including the customers into the brand, social media is rather effective in the context of considering suggestions and criticism from the customers, easily measuring customer satisfaction and gaining customer trust. One-way communication takes place in traditional media, while social media offers a bidirectional communication between the brand and the customers. By courtesy of social media, consumers can have one on one contact with the firms in order for their suggestions and demands to be noticed by them and in return, those firms can send feedbacks to consumers by carrying out studies in compliance with their proposals. Successful businesses maintain the long-term awareness and attention for their brands by adapting social media facilities into their existing marketing strategies. Information gained through social media is thought to be more

effective than the one gained from traditional media for consumers in making purchasing decisions about the brand [15].

Social media is a potential tool in generating viral or rapid dissemination of experiences and opinions about products and services or in creation of attention and awareness [1].

Whenever customers view the brand's page in social media, they tend to obtain information about other clients and can even contact them about the brand. Hudson et al. (2016) have demonstrated that the customers who interact with their favorite brand in social media are likely to develop more powerful ties with the brand than the customers who do not utilize social media tool of their favorite brand [13].

Porter and Donth (2008) have reached a conclusion that consumer trust towards businesses which respond to customers' comments, resolve their potential problems and establish effective communication with them tend to increase. Thanks to its numerous features such as on-site video, music and photo sharing, instant messaging, video chat, advanced search, following of friends profiles, fast update facilities, and game playing, Facebook is the most popular network in the world [16].

Facebook has announced that the number of its monthly active users has reached up to 1.49 billion with a 13 percent annual increase rate as of the second quarter of 2015. The number of monthly active mobile Facebook users, on the other hand, has reached to 1.31 billion with a 23 percent annual increase rate [12].

Facebook has also the most number of user base in Turkey among the other social media platforms. The number of daily active users on Facebook in Turkey is over 27 million. Each month, more than 34 million people have been visiting Facebook via mobile devices. According to E-marketer, the number of people with internet access in Turkey is over 44 million. This means that more than 88 percent of people with internet access have Facebook accounts [3].

Facebook usage ratio of younger people especially between 15-24 years of age is quite high. Facebook is currently being used by various companies for marketing purposes throughout the world including Turkey due to its large user base. Like individuals, brands also share photos, videos, contests and surveys via their own Facebook accounts. Users can evaluate the contents those brands' shares by liking or commenting on them and can recommend the related pages to their friends. Businesses conduct campaigns, organize amusement activities and try to attract the consumers' attention by distributing prizes via Facebook. According to Facebook, its average user has 130 friends who are 15 percent more likely to become the customer of a brand upon hearing about the related products or services from their online friends than being aware of the brand in other ways [2].

One of the most useful features of Facebook for businesses is insights (statistics) by which they can monitor the demographics of the users that like, share and comment on the contents of the brand's page [17].

1. Facebook Use of The Brands in Turkey

In this study, the most acclaimed Facebok-based marketing studies of some domestic brands selected on voluntary basis operating in Turkey have been examined. Facebook pages of Turkish Airlines in the commercial air transportation, LC Waikiki in the apparel industry, Ülker in the food industry, Turk Telekom and Turkcell in GSM operators, Garanti Bank in the financial industry, and Teknosa among the major retailers in technology products industry are analyzed.

1.1. Turkish Airlines

Turkish Airlines(THY), as a globally accepted air transportation company, is one of the most acclaimed brand in Turkey with 8,631,235 followers on Facebook [8]. Turkish Airlines actively operates on its Facebook page with the name "https://www.facebook.com/turkishairlinestr/" which contains destinations, campaigns and contests. Besides Facebook, THY indicates the importance it has given to social media by actively taking part also in Instagram,

Facebook, Twitter, Google+, YouTube and LinkedIn.

Turkish Airlines has awarded the winner of the competition held on March 28, 2016 called "How Well Do You Know The Balkans?" with free flight to the Balkans within its travel destinations. Requirements and results of the competition conducted at the webpage "http://4mevsimbalkanlar.com/ilkbahar/yarisma" are announced via Facebook and Twitter in order to provide integrated communication. The video stream pertaining to the competition is viewed 2.2 million times, has received 35,000 likes and has been shared 4,948 times.

Figure1: "How Well Do You Know the Balkans?" Campaign

THY has officially sponsored the blockbuster movie "Batman v Superman: Dawn of Justice" released in March 25, 2016. It announced on its Facebook page that Miles & Smiles members are entitled to receive collection series cards designed specifically for this movie until the end of 2016. The related video stream has been viewed 179,000 times and has been shared 2,800 times on Facebook. Turkish Airlines is continuously announcing the advantages offered to Miles & Smiles members on its Facebook page. THY has also signed a sponsorship agreement with UEFA as "the first official airline partner" of UEFA Euro 2016. The brand also shares its job listings with the users through Facebook. It uses bi-directional communication effectively by giving instant responses to questions and suggestions of the users who perform at least one share per day.

1.2. LC Waikiki

Upon examining the domestic brands in the apparel industry, LC Waikiki's Facebook page is seen to receive 3,255,225 likes [5]. The steady increase in the number of the brand's fans within the last 6 months is noteworthy. The brand promotes its product collection and announces its campaigns to the users on its Facebook page. Besides Facebook, it also actively uses its Instagram and Twitter accounts. LC Waikiki has attracted attention by organizing contests through social media. The contest named "mymomisbeautiful" held for the Mother's Day was conducted through Facebook and Instagram pages. 20 people selected among the users who participated in the contest with their mother-child themed photos are awarded with gift certificates. Yet again, in the contest named "My April 23rd Costume" conducted through its Facebook and Instagram pages in April 23, 2015, every 23rd photos shared with the hashtag #23nisankostümüm (my april 23rd costume) have won 50 TL worth of gift voucher. Even on the occasion of the Father's Day, LC Waikiki has given its followers who would share their fathers' "Way to go, Dad!" style younger-age photos with comments and messages to win combined clothing for their fathers and themselves. The related video stream has been viewed 345,000 times and has received 1,500 likes on Facebook.

1.3. Ülker

Ülker brand among the food brands operating in Turkey takes place with 1,972,831 likes on Facebook [10]. Separate Facebook accounts for different product groups of the brand are also available. Ülker brand also actively uses other social media platforms such as Twitter, Instagram and YouTube. Ülker has organized many campaigns via social media. In its most recent campaign, Facebook, Twitter and Instagram users are asked to either post comments or share photos in response to #Sengitbahargelsin (you go come spring) short films. The participants are required follow up Instagram, Facebook and Twitter accounts in order to enter the contest. 1 fortunate user has been awarded with 1 night stay at Casa Lavanda Hotel Şile for 2. The campaign video stream has been viewed 413,000 times on Facebook. Ülker provides free feature

presentations for children in many provinces within "Ülker Children's Cinema Festival" announced in social media on the occasion of April 23rd National Sovereignty and Children's Day for 9 years in a row. The video stream shared by Ülker on Facebook about the cinema festival has been viewed 539,000 times and has received 3,100 likes.

1.4. Turk Telekom

Turk Telekom among all GSM operators takes first place with 3,399,671 likes on Facebook [9]. The brand also actively uses other social media tools such as Twitter, LinkedIn and YouTube. Turk Telekom provides information on its tariff campaigns and shares its ads on its Facebook page. Users are given responses for their questions and remarks in a short time. The brand has requested Twitter users to tweet with the hashtag #fibereverywhere at https://twitter.com/Turk_Telekom within the competition organized between 23.02.2016 - 02.25.2016. 3 persons chosen by the jury among the most creative tweets are awarded with TT175 model smart phone.

1.5. Turkcell

Following Turk Telekom, Turkcell has the second place among all GSM operators with 2,922,451 fans on Facebook [7]. Besides Facebook, the brand is also actively involved in other social media such as Twitter, Google+ and YouTube. The brand, being established since 1994, has been sharing its ads, campaigns, sponsorships and social responsibility projects on Facebook. The brand has shared the video about its communication and technology sponsorship for The 52nd Presidential Cycling Tour of Turkey on Facebook. Turkcell has prepared the platform called "www.canakkaleyemektuplar.com" for anyone to respond to the letters written by the soldiers in frontlines who could not receive any response from their loved ones during the Battle of Çanakkale in 1915 and announced it with a video stream on Facebook.

Figure 2: "Letters to Çanakkale" Campaign

The video stream has been viewed 2.5 million times and has been shared 11,482 times.

Turkcell has also revealed its sensitivity towards social phenomena by announcing certain emergency measures to provide its customers in the areas affected by the terrorist attacks in Ankara with their urgent communication needs including mobile internet and SMS on Facebook.

1.6. Garanti Bank

Considering the financial sector, it is seen that Garanti Bank's Facebook page has received 1,555,082 likes [4]. The video prepared by the brand with the participation of its employees for the March 8th International Women's Day has received 11,000 likes and has been shared 2,959 times. Again, the campaign organized by the brand through Facebook for February 14th where the users could prepare their own Valentine's Day gifts on http://birsarkidirask.garanti.com.tr has received 8,600 likes.

Figure 3: "Valentine's Day" Campaign

Garanti Bank has selected 3 lucky basketball fans among the users who shared their short footage with "Turkey" cheering as a support to 12 Giant Men in their own Facebook, Twitter, Instagram or Vine social media accounts with the hashtag #GarantiyleBerline (To Berlin by Garanti) and has offered them the chance to be spectators for the first tournament match of 12 Giant Men that will be played at European Basketball Championship between September 5-10 in Berlin.

Figure 4: "To Berlin by Garanti" Campaign

Many other campaigns shared by the brand have been effective on the increase of the number of likes for the page. Garanti Bank, achieving a phenomenal success in social media, has been selected as the most social brand among other brands in Turkey as a result of the research named Social Brand 100 held by a platform named Diplomacy.Live associated with Digital Research Association [11].

1.7. Teknosa

Facebook page of Teknosa as one of the largest retailer stores that sell technology products is appreciated by 2,432,039 users [6]. Besides Facebook, Teknosa also uses Instagram and Twitter pages. The company often shares campaign related products on its Facebook page. The company has sent private greetings messages by analyzing follower profiles through the application performed for the New Year celebration. In another embodiment, the brand has offered the chance to win smart phones and tablets for the user

who would share their mothers' face photos altered with the Snapchat face feature changing application along with their Mother's Day message in "My Present to My Mother" competition on Facebook and Instagram with the hashtag #AnnemeHediyem (My present to my mom).

Figure 5: "My Present to My Mom" Campaign

The impact of marketing studies performed by the brand names considered in this study through Facebook and other social media platforms in strengthening mutual communication with customers is noteworthy. Numerical increase in the number of users during the campaign period indicates how effective the campaign is conducted. Total participation in the contests, the comments made and the contest information shared by the users with their friends reveals that Facebook has created a positive brand image.

2. Conclusions

Many businesses effectively utilize various social media tools such as Facebook, Twitter, Instagram and LinkedIn in order to create brand awareness, to reinforce their commitment to the customer and to reach the target audience. Social media offers unlimited possibilities to brands such as mutual interaction with their customers, ability to follow up suggestions and criticism and strengthening of the brand image. With the help of their marketing studies conducted in social media, the brands can strengthen their communication with the customers and can

also perform reliable and accurate promotional activities towards their target audience.

Facebook, having the largest user base in social media in Turkey, is one of the platforms where the businesses which do not wish to stay behind in the competition perform their marketing strategies. By utilizing Facebook, businesses tend to avoid unilateral information flow in which customers appear as traditionally passive users and adapt a communication that included customers into their business activities. Facebook can also be effective in the process of creating a new product besides being an environment in which users merely share their thoughts about the products. In this context, the users can be asked questions about the new products in order to receive their comments or they can be presented with different products to vote for them. Organizing a raffle to reward some of the users who would participate in the voting will be effective in increasing the number of followers. Thus, the number of followers of the page is increased while the products would be improved in line with the comments made by the followers. Lottery campaigns organized on Facebook are also easy methods for drawing the attention of target audience and for increasing the number of fans. The campaign named "#Yougocomespring" organized by Ülker on the Facebook page is quite effective for increasing the number of followers. Contests of photo sharing are rather interesting for the followers. Either by sharing photos of the brand's products or by voting on those photos, the followers would also allow the brand to appear in their own timeline. Thus, the viral access rate of the page will also increase. In that sense, LC Waikiki's contest named "April 23rd My Costume" is a successful effort. Particularly, brands can take advantage of the photo sharing contest in order to draw attention to new their products. Besides, the followers can be encouraged to speak up by asking questions about these products or general topics. Obtained responses to these questions can provide important information about what customers are mostly interested in. The quality of the interaction carried out with the followers who liked the page is rather important than quantitative size of them. The followers would be quite attracted by the involvement of individuals who actively respond to their questions on time. High levels of expertise and experience of those individuals in social media management would increase productivity. By sharing interesting, entertaining and environment-friendly pictures, videos and links, the followers should be ensured to like and share the page. Responses of the users to sharing should be measured and sharing should be done accordingly. Sharing on a regular basis is essential for the continuity of the users' follow-up. Sharing should be performed according to on which days and hours the users who tend to like the page are mostly active. Social media environments are assigned to act as bridges in communication of businesses with their customers.

In utilizing those tools, businesses should carefully and meticulously prepare and organize visual design of the page, the content shared, contests and campaigns. Brands have better chance of being accepted by the user if they choose to express themselves more clearly and sincerely in social media.

References

[1] Berger J. and K.L. Milkman, What makes online content viral?, Journal of Marketing Research, 2012,49(April), pp.192–205

[2] comScore (2011), The comScore 2010 mobile year in review. (Retrieved January 7, 2014 from http://www.comscore.com/Press_Events/Presentations_Whitepapers/2011/2010_Mobile_Year_in_Review).

[3]http://www.btnet.com.tr/teknoloji-ekonomisi/facebook-un-kuresel-ve-turkiye-deki-kullanici-istatistikleri/1/19147

[4] https://www.facebook.com/Garanti/?fref=ts (21.06.2016)

[5] https://www.facebook.com/lcwaikiki/?fref=ts (18.07.2016)

[6] https://www.facebook.com/teknosa/?fref=ts (13.06.2016)

[7] https://www.facebook.com/Turkcell/?fref=ts (13.07.2016)

[8]https://www.facebook.com/turkishairlinesTR/?fref=ts (18.05.2016)

[9]https://www.facebook.com/TurkTelekom/?fref=ts (13.06.2016)

[10] https://www.facebook.com/Ulker/?fref=ts (27.06.2016)

[11]   http://teknoyo.com/sosyal-medyayi-en-iyi-kullanan-markalar-2016

[12]   http://webrazzi.com/2015/09/03/facebook-turkiye-aylik-kullanici-sayisi/

[13] Hudson S., L. Huang, M. S. Roth, T. J. Madden,   The influence of social media interactions on consumer–brand relationships: A three-country study of brand perceptions and marketing behaviors, International Journal of Research in Marketing, 2016, 33, pp. 27–41

 [14] Porter, C.E.and N. Donthu, Cultivating Trust and Harvesting Value in Virtual Comminities, Management Science, 2008, 54 (1), pp.113-128.

[15] Olbrich, R., and C. Holsing, Modeling consumer purchasing behavior in social shopping communities with clickstream data. International Journal of Electronic Commerce, 16, 2 (Winter 2011), pp.15–40.

[16] Mavnacıoğlu, K., Kurumsal İletişimde Sosyal Medya Yönetimi, İstanbul: Beta Yayıncılık.2015.

[17] Thomsett-Scott, B. C., Marketing with Social Media : Chicago: The American Library Association.2014.

The Relationship between Person-Organization fit, Organizational Idendification and Job Satisfaction: A Research on the Public Employees

Alev Sökmen[1]
Vocational School of Social Sciences
Office Management and Executive Assistance Program
Baskent University, Ankara, Turkey.
alev@baskent.edu.tr

Yunus Bıyık
Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences,
Department of Business Administration, Gazi University, Ankara, Turkey.
yunusbiyik@gazi.edu.tr

Abstract. We encounter the concepts of **t**he person-organization fit which is described by the harmony between the individuals and the organizations and based on the relationship between the fundamental characteristics (culture, climate, norms, values, objectives, personality and attitude) of an organization and of a person; the organizational identification which is resulted from the development of the perception of the integrity with the organization or the perception of belonging to the organization upon the congruence in the employees of the personal and organizational values, and finally the job satisfaction which is explained as a pleasurable or positive emotional state resulting from the appraisal of one's job or job experiences, as key notions in the literature. These concepts were used as research variables in a sample of public employees due to the fact that the person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction have important impact on employees, organizations and the managers in respect of different aspects, and the objective of the research is to reveal the relationships among them. A total of 294 public employees that are working in a general directorate in Ankara, were participated in the study. The data obtained from the questionnaires employed in the research, were evaluated via SPSS 20 package software. The Correlation Analysis was used to define the direction and degree of the relationships among the variables. The results obtained from the analysis demonstrate that there is a positive significant relationship between the person-organization fit and organizational identification and as well as job satisfaction. On the other hand, above the average degrees of organizational identification, person-organization fit and job satisfaction for the public employees are observed in this study.

Keywords: Person-organization fit, organizational identification, job satisfaction.

1. Introduction

The success of the organization is the result of the employees' overall job performance. Due to the fact that the employees are social being, understanding and being knowledgeable about the attitudes and behaviors of the employees is an issue which should be seriously considered in achieving the performance desired and expected by the organization.

The concepts of person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction

---

[1] Corresponding Author

related to the attitudes and behaviors of the employees are among the significant topics of the management discipline in general and of the organizational behavior discipline in particular.

Even though said concepts have long been established in the literature, the interest of the researchers in the same has always remained warm and they are still the subject of various researches with regard to their new aspects due to their significance from the perspective of the organizations and the employees.

The results obtained from these studies continue to guide the managers and organizations on their methods related to the way of working.

The fit of the employees with their organization, identifying themselves as part of their organization and the degree of job satisfaction influence the individual success and performances and thus the organizational effectiveness and efficiency.

Within this scope, the organizations and managers are expected to better understand the attitudes and behaviors of the employees by providing support to increase their morale and motivation.

In addition, the organizational systems or structures should be established for the alignment of the organizational goals and objectives with those of the employees and appropriate conditions should be created as well.

In this study, first the concepts of person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction were discussed, then the hypotheses were developed based on the relevant literature and the hypotheses were tested in a sample of the public employees working in a general directorate in Ankara.

2. Theoretical Framework

2.1. Person-Organization Fit

The person-organization fit is commonly described by many researchers as the harmony between the individuals and the organizations.

According to a more comprehensive definition, the person-organization fit relies on the relationship between the fundamental characteristics of an organization and people. From the perspective of the organization, these characteristics are traditionally the culture, climate, values, goals and norms. The characteristics considered for the person are the values, goals, personality and attitude. The fit emerges when similarity forms between these characteristics of the organization and the person [1].

The person-organization fit has been associated with several organizational behavior concepts and has been the subject of many studies. In one of these studies, the results were obtained suggesting that the person-organization fit is a significant factor for the job satisfaction level of the employees as well as the level of organizational commitment and the turnover rates [2].

On the other hand, in a study investigating the determinants for the employees' subjective perception of person-organization fit and the influence of the perceptions of the person-organization fit on the job preference decisions and the attitude related to the job or the organizational factors, the results were found suggesting that the perceptions of the person-organization fit have a significant influence on the job satisfaction and the turnover intention, but the same do not have a significant influence on the organizational commitment and the willingness of the individuals to recommend their organization to others [3].

The relationship between the organizational identification and the person-organization fit has been studied by the researchers as well. For example, a positive and significant relationship was found between the organizational identification and the person-organization fit in a study in which the relationship among the servant leadership, organizational citizenship behavior, person-organization fit and organizational identification was investigated.

Moreover, the findings were obtained suggesting the mediating effect of the organizational identification and person-organization fit

in the relationship between the servant leadership and organizational citizenship behavior [4]. The hypothesis developed based on this information is as follows:

Hypothesis 1. *There is a significant relationship between the person-organization fit and the organizational identification.*

2.2. Organizational Identification

The organizational identification is based on the social identity theory. According to this theory, organizational identification is a form of the social identity by which the individuals describe themselves in terms of their membership to an organization in particular. In this context, the identification reflects the development of the social identities of the employees that he or she perceives him or herself as psychologically intertwined with the success and failure of the organization [5].

Organizational Identification can be conceptualized as a cognitive construct, in particular, as the congruence of individual and organizational values, as the ''perception of oneness with or belongingness to'' the organization, or as the process of incorporating the perception of oneself as a member of a particular organization into one's general self-definition [6].

The organizational identification is important for the individuals and also for the organizations. It is important for the individuals since it is a process related to the people's self-description; they communicate with others through this description and steer their private life and business life by the use of this description [7].

The organizational identification is also quite important for the organization. The reason is that it involves the organizational outcomes such as collaboration, effort, participation, decision for the benefit of the organization, internal motivation, task performance, information sharing, coordinated action, turnover and turnover intention, job satisfaction, job adaptation, organizational citizenship behaviors, creative behavior, improved social support, supportive be-

havior at times of work stress and positive assessment of the organization [8].

In literature, the organizational identification has been associated with many organizational behavior concepts such as the organizational commitment, organizational citizenship behavior and the person- organization fit and has been the subject of many studies [9-10-4].

On the other hand, the relationship between the organizational identification and the job satisfaction has been studied by the researchers and in general, a positive and significant relationship was found between the organizational identification and the job satisfaction [11-10].The hypothesis developed based on this information is as follows:

Hypothesis 2. *There is a significant relationship between the organizational identification and the job satisfaction.*

2.3. Job Satisfaction

The job satisfaction is explained as a pleasurable or positive emotional state resulting from the appraisal of one's job or job experiences [12]. The job satisfaction is also described as a pleasurable emotional state resulting from the appraisal of one's job, which expedites the work performance or makes one successful [13].

Nevertheless, the job satisfaction refers to the general attitude of the individual towards his/her job where an employee with a high level of satisfaction has a positive attitude towards the job, while an employee with a low level of satisfaction has a negative attitude towards the same [14].

There are three fundamental relationships that influence the job satisfaction of the employees. The first is the employee-organization relationship, the second is the employee-manager relationship and the third is the employee-coworker relationship. The employee-organization relationship highlights the importance of the factors of identification with and commitment to the organizational strategy and organizational goals and also includes the organizational support for the employees regarding the work-family bal-

ance. The employee-manager relationship has a key role in the job satisfaction, where the manager's transfer of authority or grant of autonomy is rather influential on the employees' appraisal of their job. Lastly, the relationship between the employees and their coworkers is also a significant source for the job satisfaction [15].

The employees with low level of job satisfaction may react in different ways to this state of dissatisfaction. For instance, even though such an employee may not leave his/her job, he/she may come to the job late or may retard his/her work or may have absenteeism, may complain about the work, may fail to make full effort when fulfilling his/her duty, may evade responsibility or may damage the organization in which he/she works [16], [17].

In literature, the congruence of the job satisfaction and person-organization fit has been associated with many organizational behavior concepts and has been the subject of the studies. For example, the results were obtained suggesting that the person-organization fit is a significant factor for the job satisfaction level of the employees as well as the level of organizational commitment and the turnover rates [2].

On the other hand, in a study investigating the determinants for the employees' subjective perception of person-organization fit and the influence of the perceptions of the person-organization fit on the job preference decisions and the attitude related to the job or the organizational factors, the results were found suggesting that the perceptions of the person-organization fit have a significant influence on the job satisfaction and the turnover intention, but the same do not have a significant influence on the organizational commitment and the willingness of the individuals to recommend their organization to others [3].

The hypothesis developed within the context of the relationship between job satisfaction and person-organization fit is as follows:

Hypothesis 3. *There is a significant relationship between the person-organization fit and the job satisfaction.*

3. Research

3.1. Research Model

Because of the important impacts of the person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction on employees, organizations and the managers in respect of different aspects; these concepts were used as research variables in a sample of public employees and the objective of the research is to reveal the relationships among them.

Thus, a model has been generated within the scope of the study in order to exhibit the relationships among the variables in line with the theoretical framework including the research hypotheses (Figure 1).
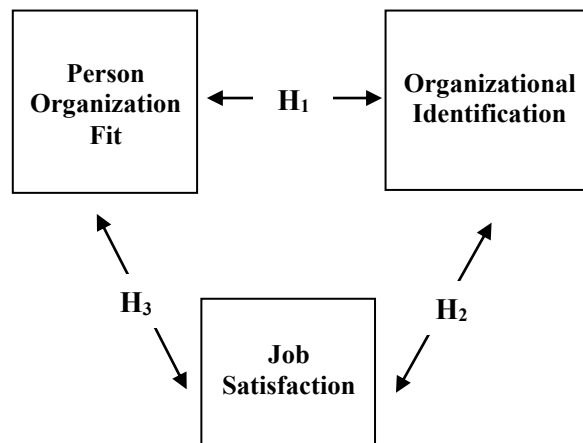
Figure 1: Research Model

3.2. Sample

The research was conducted with the public employees working in a general directorate in Ankara during January and February 2016.

During these dates, the number of employees working in the general directorate was 403 and the complete count was targeted, but the employees who were on leave and who were on duty outside the locality during the respective period could not be reached.

Moreover, some of the employees refused to fill up the questionnaire forms. As a result, a total of 294 useable questionnaire forms were

obtained. In this context, the selected sample may be said to represent 73% of the population.

3.3. Measures

In the study, the organizational identification was evaluated with the 6-item organizational identification questionnaire developed by Mael and Ashforth (1992), the person-organization fit was evaluated with the 9-item person-organization fit questionnaire developed by Mitchhell et al. (2001), and the job satisfaction was evaluated with 6-item job satisfaction questionnaire developed by Agho, Price and Müller (1992).

The items in the questionnaires were evaluated with 5-point Likert scale (1. strongly disagree– 5. strongly agree).

3.4. Analyses and Results

The data obtained from the study were evaluated via the program SPSS 20 and the data concerning the demographic variables were described with frequency analyses and the percentage values (See Table 1).

Cronbach's Alpha reliability analysis was performed for the questionnaires. The correlation analysis was used to test the hypotheses.

Table 1: Demographic characteristics of the participants

Gender	Frequency	%	Marital Status	Frequency	%
Male	156	53.1	Single	96	32.6
Female	138	46.9	Married	198	67.4
Total	294	100	Total	294	100
Age Groups	Frequency	%	Educational Status	Frequency	%
19-28	78	26.5	High School	48	16.3
29-38	122	41.5	Bachelor	162	55.1
39 and above	94	32	Master	84	28.6
Total	294	100	Total	294	100

A total of 294 employees were participated in the study and 53,1% are male of the employees.

Regarding the marital status, 67,4% are married and concerning the age groups, 26,5% are

between 19-28 years of age, 41,5% are between 29-38 years of age, 32% are 39 years of age and above., 55,1% are bachelors and 28,6% are masters.

Table 2. Mean, standard deviation, reliability and correlation values of variables

	M	SD	1	2	3
Organizational Identification	3.86	0.68	[0.83]		
Person-Organization Fit	3.41	0.81	0.33**	[0.91]	
Job Satisfaction	3.29	0.67	0.28**	0.51**	[0.92]

** The correlation is significant at the level of 0.01 (two-way) [values in brackets are Cronbach's Alpha reliability coefficients].

When the levels of organizational identification, person-organization fit and job satisfaction are examined for the public employees participating in the study (Table 2), the values above the average are observed in each of the three variables.

Accordingly, the public employees may be said to have good person-organization fit, identify with their organization and have high job satisfaction.

The reliability values are as follows for the questionnaires employed in the research: person-organization fit 0.91, organizational identification 0.83, and job satisfaction 0.92. These values indicate that all the questionnaires have high and acceptable coefficients of reliability.

According to the results obtained from the correlation analysis (Table 2), one can see a positive significant relationship between the person-organization fit and organizational identification (r=0.33).

A positive significant relationship between the organizational identification and job satisfaction (r=0.28) was determined. On the other hand, there is a positive significant relationship between and the job satisfaction and the person-organization fit (r=0.51).

As a result, Hypotheses 1, 2 and 3 were accepted. These findings are also supportive for the results of the similar studies in literature.

4. Conclusion and Evaluation

In order to be successful in today's growing competitive business world, almost all organizations desire and search for employees who are accomplished their person-organization fit, identified with their organizations and satisfied with their jobs, have been increasing.

It has become quite important that organizations which are aware of this phenomenon should establish the organizational systems or structures for the alignment of the organizational goals and objectives with those of the employees and should set appropriate conditions and survive by providing employees with necessary organizational and administrative support as well as understanding the attitudes and behaviors of the employees within an organization.

Particularly organizational identification, person-organization fit and job satisfaction are topics addressed to many empirical studies due to their importance for employees individually as well as organizational effectiveness and efficiency in organizational behavior area, which aims to discover the attitudes and behaviors of the employees and tries to understand the reason why and how the employees behave.

The person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction, which are the subjects of our study, are used as research variables on a selected sample composed of public employees working in a general directorate in Ankara and the relationship among them is demonstrated associated with the results due to their importance in respect of three distinct per-

spectives such as employees, organizations and managers.

According to the results of the study, it is observed that there is a positive significant relationship between person-organization fit and organizational identification and as well as job satisfaction. In other words, there is a strong and positive correlation among all three variables.

Accordingly, we can reach a conclusion that once an employee's person-organization fit achieved, his/her identification with the organization can easily be realized and will have a high degree of job satisfaction accordingly.

On the other hand, the levels of person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction are examined for public employees participating in the study, and the values above the average are observed.

Thus, we may make a conclusion that the public employees have a good person-organization fit, be identified with their organization and have a high degree of a job satisfaction.

In conformity with the results of the study, it is suggested that the managers and organizations should consider the significant and strong relationship between person-organization fit, organizational identification and job satisfaction.

Hence, both individual and organizational performance can be increased. It is also suggested that the researchers should investigate the variables examined in this study for different samples groups for their future studies and should address different variables refer to employee' attitudes and behaviors as a research topic as well. This may contribute to the validity and reliability of our study.

5. References

[1] Kristof, A. L. (1996). Person‐organization fit: An integrative review of its conceptualizations, measurement, and implications. Personnel Psychology, 49(1), 1-49.10.

[2] Silverthorne, C. (2004). The impact of organizational culture and person-organization fit on organizational commitment and job satisfaction in Taiwan. Leadership & Organization Development Journal, 25(7), 592-599.

[3] Cable, D. M., & Judge, T. A. (1996). Person–organization fit, job choice decisions, and organizational entry. Organizational Behavior and Human Decision Processes, 67(3), 294-311.

[4] Vondey, M. (2010). The relationships among servant leadership, organizational citizenship behavior, person-organization fit, and organizational identification. International Journal of Leadership Studies, 6(1), 3-27.

[5] Kong, D. T. (2016). The pathway to unethical pro-organizational behavior: Organizational identification as a joint function of work passion and trait mindfulness. Personality and Individual Differences (93), 86-91.

[6] Riketta, M. (2005). Organizational identification: A meta-analysis. Journal of Vocational Behavior, 66(2005), 358-384.

[7] Myers, K. K., Davis, C. W., Schreuder, E. R., & Seibold, D. R. (2016). Organizational Identification: A Mixed Methods Study Exploring Students' Relationship with Their University. Communication Quarterly,64(2), 1-22.

[8] Ashforth, B. E., Harrison, S. H., & Corley, K. G. (2008). Identification in organizations: An examination of four fundamental questions. Journal of Management, 34(3), 325-374.

[9] O'Reilly, C. A., & Chatman, J. (1986). Organizational commitment and psychological attachment: The effects of compliance, identification, and internalization on prosocial behavior. Journal of applied psychology, 71(3), 492-499.

[10] Feather, N. T., & Rauter, K. A. (2004). Organizational citizenship behaviours in relation to job status, job insecurity, organizational commitment and identification, job satisfaction and work values. Journal of Occupational and Organizational Psychology, 77(1), 81-94.

[11] Van Dick, R., Christ, O., Stellmacher, J., Wagner, U., Ahlswede, O., Grubba, C., ... & Tissington, P. A. (2004). Should I stay or should I go? Explaining turnover intentions with organizational identification and job satisfaction*. British Journal of Management, 15(4), 351-360.

[12] Locke, E. A. (1976). The nature and causes of job satisfaction. In M.D. Dunnette (Ed), Handbook of industrial and organizational psycology (1297-1343). Chicago. Rand McNally.

[13] Schwepker Jr., C.H. (2001). Ethical climate's relationship to job satisfaction, organizational commitment, and turnover intention in the salesforce. Journal of Business Research, 54(1), 39-52.

[14] Robbins, S. P., & Coulter, M. (2012). Management.11th Edition. New Jersey, Pearson Education Inc.

[15] Alegre, I., Mas-Machuca, M., & Berbegal-Mirabent, J. (2015). Antecedents of employee job satisfaction: Do they matter?. Journal of Business Research., http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.jbusres.2015.10.113

[16] Robbins, S. P., &Langton, N., (2005), Fundamentals of Organizational Behavior, Pearson Prentice Hall, Second Canadian Edition, Canada.

[17] Vecchio, R. P., (1995), Organizational Behavior, The Dryden Press, Harrcourt Brace Collage Publishers, Third Edition, Orlando.

Persons Entitled to Limit Liability in Respect of LLMC 1976

Nihal Koşer
Çankaya University Faculty of Law, Commercial Law
nihalgungelen@cankaya.edu.tr

Abstract. Convention on Limitation of Liability for Maritime Claims, 1976 (1976 LLMC) was adopted in London with the participation of 34 states. The mentioned convention includes the cases, in which the responsibilities can be limited against the maritime claims, persons, who may benefit from this opportunity and the responsibility limits arranged on the basis of ship's tonnage. Persons entitled to limited liability who are arranged in the first article of LLMC 1976, are only listed and no definition is contained. Therefore, these persons are defined according to national law in practice. This study will attempt to determine the applicability of the LLMC and the persons whose liabilities can be limited according to the Turkish Law and will focus on how the responsibility limits of these persons are determined.

1. Introduction

Two thirds of the goods in the world is carried by sea and international maritime plays a vital role in global trade. Functioning of the maritime industry rising gradually and having a volume of trillion-dollar without transnational legal differences is among the requirements of today's global world. Eliminating the uncertainty in the law to be applied and the unification of the law can be possible only through international agreements.

In response to this need, the International Maritime Organization (IMO) established under the roof of United Nations has prepared a series of agreements and guidelines to determine the international maritime standards. Convention on Limitation of Liability for Maritime Claims, 1976[1] (LLMC 1976), which can be considered as one of the most important amongst them, was signed with the attendance of 34 states under the leadership of the IMO in London on November 19, 1976.

LLMC, which has become binding for Turkey since July 1, 1998 was conflict with the current Turkish Maritime Law. Indeed, while the shipowner's liability was limited to ship and freight (*value system*) in accordance with Article 948 of the Turkish Commercial Code[2] No.6762, a limited liability system proportional to the tonnage of the ship is considered in the mentioned international convention. Although it can be said that the principle of real responsibility is left with the entry into force of LLMC for Turkey, this situation has continued to be in dispute. Fortunately, this contradiction was resolved with entry into force of the new Turkish Commercial Code[3] No. 6102 on July 1, 2012 and the applicability of the LLMC has

---

[1]   See the Official Register no 17007 dated 04.07.1980.

[2]   See the Official Register no 9353 dated 09.07.1956.
[3]   See the Official Register no 27846 dated 14.02.2011.

been clarified with references made in the relevant articles of the limited liability (TCC, Articles 1328/1, 1062/2). At this point, determining the persons with the right to limit the liability, who are listed in the Article 1 of the LLMC, but not defined under the Convention, is even more important in terms of Turkish Law.

Therefore, first of all, the LLMC 1976 will be discussed in general terms in this study, then it will be examined that the persons entitled to the limit liability, who are listed in the Article 1 of the Convention are corresponding to which persons in the Turkish Law. Here it should be noted immediately that *"Protocol of 1996 to amend the Convention on Limitation of Liability for Maritime Claims of 19 November 1976"* that modified the LLMC 1976 will not be mentioned since it does not contain any amendment on the persons with the right to limit the liability.

2. LLMC 1976

2.1. General

The LLMC 1976 is intended to replace the *"International Convention relating to the Limitation of the Liability of Owners of Sea-Going Ships, and Protocol of Signature"* dated 1957, the Brussels Convention shortly. At the end of 1970's, high inflation and rapid changes in currency market experienced worldwide has led the liability limits to became very law and cause the need of abandonment of the gold franc basis, which was foreseen in 1957 Brussels Convention [4] . Furthermore, the calculation of the limited liability with a certain amount per tonnage in accordance with the Brussels Convention has increased the liability to high amounts and created an unfair situation for the high-tonnage ships[5]. The LLMC was adopted on 19.11.1976 with the intend of being a solution to all these problems, hindering the

development of maritime trade by raising the premiums of liability insurances, and came into force on 01.12.1986 after the approval of 12 states as indicated in the Article 17.

In accordance with the Article 15 of the LLMC; the Convention shall apply whenever any person referred to in Article 1 seeks to limit his liability before the Court of a State Party or seeks to procure the release of a ship or other property or the discharge of any security given within the jurisdiction of any such State[6]. As it is seen; in order to be able to claim the application of the Convention by the person with the right to limit his liability, the request on one of the issues stated in the provision of article from the signatory states is sufficient and not any further requirement demanded. By accepting this provision, it is intended that the Convention would be adopted by more states and would be made applicable in a wider area[7]. However it should be noted in scope of the same article that the State Party may exclude wholly or partially from the application of this Convention[8].

2.2. The Assessment in Terms of Turkish Law

Turkey has become a party by participating in the LLMC with the Decision of Council of Ministers dated 28.02.1980 published in the Official Register No. 17007 dated 04.07.1980. However, since the approval documents were not sent to the General Secretariat of IMO as the lodgment authority, the requirement in Article 16 of the Convention was not fulfilled and, Turkey could not have been party to the Convention for many years[9]. Turkey has gained the title of party only after the lodgment of the

---

[4] Ataol, H.: "Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin 1976 Londra Konvansiyonu'nda Öngörülen Sınırlı Sorumluluk Sistemi", Prof. Dr. Tahir Çağa'nın Anısına Armağan, İstanbul 2000, p. 62; Çağa, T.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku I: Giriş, Gemi, Donatan, Kaptan*, Tenth Edition, İstanbul 1995, s. 125.

[5] Ataol, s. 62; Çağa, T.: "Enternasyonal Deniz Hususi Hukukunda Yeni Bazı Gelişmeler", 9/2 Batider, 1977, p. 293.

[6] For some court decisions in which the LLMC has been applied, see: http://www.comitemaritime.org/Jurisprudence-on-Interpretation-of-Maritime-Conventions.html, (access date: 01. 02. 2015)

[7] Çetingil, E.: "Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlanmasına Dair 1976 Tarihli Milletlerarası Sözleşmenin Uygulama Alanı", Deniz Hukuku Dergisi, 1998, V. 1-2, p. 5.

[8] For detailed information on these cases see: Çetingil, s. 4 vd.

[9] Bayamlıoğlu, E.: .: "1976 Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına Dair Konvansiyon Üzerine Notlar", Deniz Hukuku Dergisi, 1999, V. 1-2, p. 129; Ilgın, S.: "LLMC (Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin Sözleşme) Hakkında", Deniz Hukuku Dergisi,, 1998, V. 1-2, p. 67.

approval documents on 06.03.1998 and the confirmation of these documents by General Secretariat of IMO on 10.03.1998[1]. The LLMC has come into force for Turkey on 01.07.1998, which was the first day of the first month following the expiry of 90 days period from the date of lodgment as indicated in the Article 17[10].

However, since the Turkish Commercial Code No.6762, which entered into force on the same date, had adopted the in real liability system on limitation of the liability a dichotomy was created between the domestic law and international law[11]. As mentioned Article 90 of the Constitution of Turkey Republic; the ratification of treaties concluded with foreign states and international organisations on behalf of the Republic of Turkey, shall be subject to adoption by the Turkish Grand National Assembly by a law approving the ratification. However, any law was not prepared in relation the approval of the LLMC 1976. Entering into force of the Turkish Commercial Code No. 6102 could solve this problem. In accordance with the Article 1328 of the Turkish Commercial Code No. 6102; *"The liability arising from the maritime claims can be limited according to the Convention on Limitation of Liability for Maritime Claims dated 19.11.1976 which was published in Official Register No.17007 dated 04.06.1980 and Protocol of 1996 to amend the Convention on Limitation of Liability for Maritime Claims of 19 November 1976 dated 02.05.1996 or substituent international conventions prepared and adopted by the Republic of Turkey".*

In addition, with the Article 1329; since the provisions of the Convention will be applied directly as the national law, it is stated that the

factor of foreignness will not be sought. In this context, the courts will apply the provisions of the Convention without any further disposition in the event comes to the front of court.

3. Persons Entitled to Limit Liability

3.1. Shipowner

3.1.1. Concept

In accordance with the Article 1(1) of the LLMC, the shipowner may limit his liability against the claims stated in the Article 2 of the Convention. In the text of the Article or within the context of Convention, the shipowner is not defined but the people who will be included in this term are listed. Accordingly, the term of shipowner shall mean the owner, charterer, manager and operator of a seagoing ship[12].

Naturally, the person who has the right of property on the ship shall be understood with the term of shipowner. As it understood from the Convention, it is sufficient to have only the right of property, in order accepted as the shipowner; how and for which purpose the ship is used does not matter[13].

It is not clear from the text of Article that the issue of whether the term of "owner" included in the LLMC covers only the registered owner or the non-registered economical owner as well. However, in the preamble[14] of LLMC, it is mentioned that both the registered owner and the non-registered owner of the ship will be included within the term of "owner".

3.2.2. Charterer

According to the LLMC one of the persons entitled to limit the liability is charterer. The term of charterer is not defined either in the Convention. However, if the definition is to be made; charterer is the person who receives allocation of ship and has the opportunity to

[10]   For the view that the LLMC has not entered into force to Turkey, see; Can, M.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku*, Ankara 2000, C. I, s. 156-157; Can, M.: Donatanın Sorumluluğu Bakımından 19 Kasım 1976 tarihli Deniz Alacaklarından Doğan Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin Londra Konvansiyonu'nun Yürürlüğe Girip Girmediği Meselesi, Ticaret Hukuku ve Yargıtay Kararları Sempozyumu, Ankara 2000, p. 191.

[11]   Ataol, s. 63; Sümer, Ö.: *Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılması Hakkında 1976 Tarihli Londra Konvansiyonu'nun Türkiye Tarafından Tasdik Edlimesinin Hukuki Sonuçları*, İstanbul University, Master Thesis, İstanbul 2007, p. 72.

[12]   LLMC Art. 1/2; *"The term shipowner shall mean the owner, charterer, manager and operator of a seagoing ship."*

[13]   Sözer, B.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku: Gemi, Donatan, Taşıyan ve Deniz Hukuku'nda Sorumluluk Rejimi*, Second Edition, İstanbul 2012, p. 462.

[14]   For the preamble of LLMC see; Fogarty, A.: *Merchant Shipping Legislation*, Second Edition, 2000, s. 354.

operate it, and therefore, has the liability and should limit this liability.

In English law, the term of charterer is used under the scope of three different contracts contracts and these are called as bareboat charter, time charter and voyage charter[15]. Since the voyage charterer and time charterer cannot have the technical management of the ship in any time, no liability can be attributed to them because of the operation of the vessel. In this case, only the charterer who charters the ship in the tenant position in accordance with the charter agreement has the liability and entitled to limit this liability.

3.2.3 Manager

The term manager is used as the equivalent of the expression of manager in the original English text of the LLMC. If the Convention is examined it will be seen that the manager is not defined. This concept must be determined also according to the domestic law of the states party to the Convention[16].

The ship manager undertakes the management of the ship on the account of possession of the ship in the field of commercial, technical, personnel management of the ship or in terms of one or more of them[17]. In respect to the ability of the manager to limit his liability, there is no explanation on the issue which management fields of the ship should be undertaken. As there is no special arrangement in this issue, an opinion is formed that undertaking the technical, commercial and personnel management of the vessel and undertaking one or more of them shall not

create a difference in terms of using the right to limit the liability[18].

3.2.4. Operator

One of the persons entitled to limit the liability in the LLMC is the people who are called as operator. However, what does the concept of operator signify is not disclosed under the Convention.

Although there is no clear definition of the term operator in the English Law, according to the general view, the person related to the ship or the ship possessor is intended to be referred with this term[19]. However, the ship possessor is not operator but charterer. Therefore, in order not to lead more concept chaos in this point, considering the overall objective of the LLMC, it shall be accepted that, regardless of the capacity, each person plays a part in the operation of the ship is entitled to limit the liability.

3.2. Salvor

One of the persons listed in the Article 1(1) of the LLMC salvor and it is arranged in the Paragraph (3) that; salvor shall mean any person rendering services in direct connexion with salvage operations. In the same article, with reference to the Article 2(1)(d, e and f) of the Convention, it is adopted that the activities like raising, removal, destruction or the rendering harmless of a ship or cargo of a ship and measures taken in order to avert or minimize loss will be considered as the salvage operations. Therefore the persons who serve directly in performing these activities will be included into the definition of the salvor.

Essentially, the issue of the limitation of the liability of the salvor has gained importance with the case in 1971 called as *"Tojo Maru"*[2]. Then, a regulation was made in the form that the liabilities of the persons who carry out the services directly linked to the salvage operations can be limited by considering that

---

[15] Griggs, P. - Williams, R. - Farr, J.: *Limitation of Liability For Maritime Claims*, Forth Edition, London 2005, p. 9.

[16] In opinion of Aydın, the term of manager in the LLMC corresponds to the concept of bareboat charterer in the Turkish Law, see. Aydın, U.: *Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılması Hakkındaki 76 Tarihli Londra Konvansiyonu'nda Düzenlenen Sorumluluğu Sınırlama Hakkı ve Sorumluluğun Sınırları*, İstanbul University, Master's Thesis, 1996, p. 29.

[17] Şeker/Öğüz, Z.: *Gemi Yönetim Sözleşmesi*, İstanbul 2003, p. 7.

[18] Ertan, S.: *1976 LLMC Hükümlerine Göre Sınırlı Sorumluluğa Tabi Borçlular ve Alacaklar*, İstanbul Bilgi University, Master's Thesis, İstanbul 2010, p. 45.

[19] Griggs, Williams, Farr, p. 11-12.

most of the salvage activities within the scope of LLMC are provided from outside of the ship. Thus, it has been provided that the persons who are directly linked to the salvage operations, such as divers in submarine services or the persons who provide ship rescue services without using the ship such as the people who undertake to extinguish the fire on the ship with helicopter, the firefighters involved in firefighting services from land are entitled to limit their liabilities under the LLMC.

3.3. Seafarer and Other Persons

In accordance with the Article 1(4) of the LLMC, it is also accepted that any person for whose act, neglect or default the shipowner or salvor is responsible, such person shall be entitled to avail himself of the limitation of liability provided in Convention. Accordingly, the persons who are employed by the shipowner, charterer, manager, operator, salvor and all other persons who are responsible for acts, negligence or faults of these people will be entitled to limit their liabilities when one of the claims under the Article 2 of the Convention is alleged against them.

In the mentioned article, what is meant by the concept of "being responsible" is not very clear. In the British doctrine; it is accepted that if the article is interpreted with the narrow meaning, the corresponding people will prove that he was the auxiliary people of the shipowner before limiting the liability; if the article is interpreted with the wider meaning, the corresponding person will prove that the shipowner is responsible for him [20]. Since who will be included in coverage of the Article 1(4) of the LLMC is not defined clearly, the persons who will be included in this coverage should be determined according to the domestic law in every individual case.

3.4. Insurer

Another group of people who have the opportunity to limit their liabilities with the

Convention is the insurers. The LLMC has clearly authorized the insurers to demand the implementation of the provisions of the Convention same as the insured with a clear statement. One of the reasons for authorizing the insurer to limit his liability is the protection of ship-owners against very high insurance premium paid to insurers as the insurer has the unlimited liability compared to the shipowner[21].

It can be said that another reason to give a right to the insurer for limiting his liability with regard to the Convention is, tried to be provided right and interest balance to ensure the insurer and insured at the equal position[22]. Because, in cases where the fact that the insured has no right to limit the liability of the insurer, even though the limited liability of the insured, will direct the claimants to make a request directly from the insurer and this constitutes a breach of fairness nature[23].

The insurer is entitled to limit his liability only in the cases where the insured is entitled to limit his liability and at that ratio. In other words, the insurer will not be able to limit his liability in the cases where the insured cannot limit his liability[24].

If the insured refrain from using the right to limit the liability, this behavior must be accepted as contrary to good faith and the insurer who insured the liability shall be protected and shall continue to be benefitted from the limitation right given by the Convention. It is obvious that the limitation right here will be applied only for the compensation for the damage of the sufferer and it will not be applied in the applications to the insurer by the insured based on the liability insurance.

4. Conclusion

Being party to the Conventions adopted as a result of the studies carried out in order to respond the needs of the day in the marine trade and to ensure the establishment of a uniform

---

[20] Griggs, Williams, Farr, s. 13; Jackson, D.C.: *Enforcement of Maritime Claims*, Fourth Edition, London 2005, p. 271; Guattiierez, M. A.: *The Relation Between Global Limitation Conventions and Particular Liability Regimes*, New York 2011, p. 30.

[21] Seward, R.C.: *The Insurance Viewpoint in The Limitation of Shipowners' Liability,* London 1968, s. 161-186.
[22] Seward, p. 173.
[23] Aydın, p. 34-39.
[24] Hill, C.: Maritime Law, Sixth Edition, London 2003, p. 122.

application on the maritime law in the international area allow us to follow the legal and economic development in the world closely. What is more LLMC is an important development in the field of limitation of the responsibility in our maritime law and has played an vital role in the development of our maritime trade.

Indeed, in the periods, which liability limitation systems had not arisen in the field of maritime trade, shipowners had undertaking the unlimited liability they cannot meet with the insurance against the case that unlimited liability is not insured. LLMC has been arranged against this situation contrary to equity and therefore the Special Drawing Right (SDR) and flexible scale system has been adopted in calculation of the liability amount with the limited personal liability system in the form of limiting the liability with a limited amount of money.

In terms of Turkey, completely abandoning the limited real liability system projected in the abolished Turkish Commercial Code No. 6762 and adopting the liability system foreseen in the LLMC has been realized with the entry into force of the Turkish Commercial Code No.6102. With this code, the aim of application of unity has pursued and only referred to the general provisions of the LLMC, special provisions are regulated separately. With the Turkish Commercial Code No. 6102, the persons who are entitled to limit their liability under the Convention has become even more important.

In this respect, according to the Article 1 of the LLMC, which is the subject matter of this study, the persons entitled to limited liability are shipowner, salvor and any person for whose act, neglect or default the shipowner or salvor is being responsible. The last people subject to the limited liability included in the Article 1 of the Convention are the insurers who are in a special position compared to the shipowner.

Although the persons entitled to limit liability in accordance with the LLMC have been listed in the text and examined under the titles, as the definitions of these persons are not included in the Convention and a general expression is used especially for the persons who will be included into the Paragraph (4) of the Article 1, it is concluded that the persons who will benefit from the opportunity of limited liability must be determined by considering the general purpose of the LLMC an a case by case basis and in accordance with the domestic law.

Endnotes

(1) The reason for inability to be sent the approval documents to the lodgment authority was the emergence of major environmental damages due to the collisions on the vessel named "*Independenta*" in the period of approval process and the concern that the outcomes may occur against Turkey in terms of the liability rising from this event in case of being party to LLMC.

(2) In this event, during the rescue activities for the tanker named *"Tojo Maru"* which have been exposed to maritime peril, the divers caused the fire and then explosion while they were trying to close a hole on the vessel. The ship-owner filed a lawsuit against the salvor and the salvor requested to limit his liability in the scope of 1957 Brussels Convention. The court accepted the request to limit the liability of the salvor on the grounds that the faulty diver provided the rescue service under the water, he was not on the vessel, and therefore the salvor cannot be considered as the operator or manager of neither the rescued ship nor the rescuing ship. The case was discussed at the Supreme Court, and with the decision given by the Supreme Court it was stated that the faulty act of the diver is not related to management of the salvor towboat or this faulty act has not been done on the towboat. For this reason the opinion that the diver acting separately from the vessel cannot be qualified as the person who controls the vessel physically was adopted.

References

(1) Ataol, H.: "Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin 1976 Londra Konvansiyonu'nda Öngörülen Sınırlı Sorumluluk Sistemi", Prof. Dr. Tahir Çağa'nın Anısına Armağan, İstanbul 2000, p. 57-85.

(2) Aydın, U.: Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılması Hakkındaki 76 Tarihli Londra Konvansiyonu'nda Düzenlenen Sorumluluğu Sınırlama Hakkı ve Sorumluluğun Sınırları, İstanbul University, Master's Thesis, 1996.

(3) Bayamlıoğlu, E.: "1976 Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına Dair

Konvansiyon Üzerine Notlar", 4/1-2 Deniz Hukuku Dergisi, 1999, p. 129 – 149.

(4) Can, M.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku*, Ankara 2000, V. I.

(5) Can, M.: "Donatanın Sorumluluğu Bakımından 19 Kasım 1976 tarihli Deniz Alacaklarından Doğan Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin Londra Konvansiyonu'nun Yürürlüğe Girip Girmediği Meselesi", Ticaret Hukuku ve Yargıtay Kararları Sempozyumu, Ankara 2000, p. 191 – 217.

(6) Çağa, T.: "Enternasyonal Deniz Hususi Hukukunda Yeni Bazı Gelişmeler", 9/2 Batider, 1977, p. 289 – 324.

(7) Çağa, T.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku I: Giriş, Gemi, Donatan, Kaptan*, Tenth Edition, İstanbul 1995.

(8) Çetingil, E.: "Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlanmasına Dair 1976 Tarihli Milletlerarası Sözleşmenin Uygulama Alanı", 3/1-2 Deniz Hukuku Dergisi, 1998, p. 3 – 13.

(9) Ertan, S.: *1976 LLMC Hükümlerine Göre Sınırlı Sorumluluğa Tabi Borçlular ve Alacaklar*, İstanbul Bilgi University, Master's Thesis, İstanbul 2010.

(10) Fogarty, A.: *Merchant Shipping Legislation*, Second Edition, 2000.

(11) Guattiierez, M. A.: *The Relation Between Global Limitation Conventions and Particular Liability Regimes*, New York 2011.

(12) Griggs, P. - Williams, R. - Farr, J.: *Limitation of Liability For Maritime Claims*, Forth Edition, London 2005.

(13) Hill, C.: Maritime Law, Sixth Edition, London 2003.

(14) Ilgın, S.: "LLMC (Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılmasına İlişkin Sözleşme) Hakkında", 3/1-2 Deniz Hukuku Dergisi, 1998, p. 67- 69.

(15) Jackson, D. C.: *Enforcement of Maritime Claims*, Fourth Edition, London 2005.

(16) Seward, R. C.: *The Insurance Viewpoint in The Limitation of Shipowners' Liability,* London 1968.

(17) Sözer, B.: *Deniz Ticareti Hukuku: Gemi, Donatan, Taşıyan ve Deniz Hukuku'nda Sorumluluk Rejimi*, Second Edition, İstanbul 2012.

(18) Sümer, Ö.: *Deniz Alacaklarına Karşı Sorumluluğun Sınırlandırılması Hakkında 1976 Tarihli Londra Konvansiyonu'nun Türkiye Tarafından Tasdik Edlimesinin Hukuki Sonuçları*, İstanbul University, Master Thesis, İstanbul 2007.

(19) Şeker/Öğüz, Z.: Gemi *Yönetim Sözleşmesi*,

İstanbul 2003.

Leisure Time Use of University Youth within the Campus: Duzce Example

Metin Kilic
Duzce University
Department of Sociology
metinkilic@duzce.edu.tr

Abstract. In today's complex social structure, institutionally, individuals' recreational activities have become a problematic issue. Research found that positive use of leisure time has a huge contribution to the development of the character. Thus, it is thought to be vital that studies must be done in order to create spaces for recreational activities for the integration of young people with the existing social structure and increase the participation level in these activities. This research was carried out on the students who studied in different faculties of Duzce University in 2016. The sample of research was determined according to the random sampling technique, compliant with the criteria's of the level of representing the population. The study is a descriptive field research in which 450 questionnaires were conducted. As a result of the research, it was determined that the college students' recreational opportunities, which are the factors in the process of socializing and affect their personalities, are inadequate. Besides, striking results were gained regarding their expectations from university.

Keywords: Leisure time, Life Style, Recreation, University, Youth,

1. Introduction

According to the survey titled 'Problems of Adolescents in Turkish Family' conducted by Family Research Institute (1997), youth is the most important factor influencing community development and improvement potential in Turkey [1]. Baran (2013) claimed that "while a young person establishes her aims and dreams of the future; the society sees youth as its future and continuation" [2].

In reference to TUIK 2013 data, young population constitutes 16.6% of the total population in Turkey, 38.5% of this population has been studied at higher education institutions. Young people having a good future, hence a good future for society is directly related to the education they receive and personality development.

Along with education, young people need to be stimulated in many different ways in order them to have fun and reveal their creativity for personality development [8]. Not only private sphere, but also public sphere must be functionally used to encourage stimulation.

In today's complex social structure, institutionally, individuals' recreational activities have become a problematic issue. Thus, it is thought to be vital that studies must be done in order to create spaces for recreational activities for the integration of young people with the existing social structure and increase the participation level to these activities [10].

These types of recreational spaces are essential for young people in universities. Variety of recreational activities with qualified education is effective to gain a corporate identity. Spaces like gyms, theatres, cafés, library, walking trails, green fields, and clubs are some examples of places where students can spend their leisure times. Apart from the formal education young people receive, places for leisure time activity is crucial for their mental and emotional health [13, 21, 23, 25], cognitive development, personality development [18, 19], socialization [11,

328

12], esthetics, spirituality and adventure [4]. Although college youth creates a certain type of social and cultural group, family of each student, his social environment, life spaces and socialization processes are distinct from each other which makes him a world apart from the other and they are under the influence of these social factors [9, 24].

To put it simply, every young person has his/her own life style. Young people do call upon their lifestyles to construct who it is they are precisely, because lifestyles provide them with the flexibility they need [3]. Young people use their lifestyles to navigate the structural-cultural dilemmas of social change [22].

Universities are the leading places for the change. Young people that overcome the discrepancies and difficulties in social, cultural and economic life and reach the level of higher education, bear the characteristics of the structures they live and socialize. According to Tekin and his colleagues' study (2007), while recreational spaces and programs that universities prepare improves the communication among young people having different life styles, they also satisfy other reasons of attendance [17]. Utting (1996) has found out similar results. In his study, he showed that in order this type of recreation programs to be effective they should meet these criteria:

- A decrease in impulsive behavior and risk taking behavior
- An increase in self-esteem and self-respect
- An increase in the opportunities of education and employment [5].

The notable finding of Utting study among others is that leisure time activities do not only support personality development but also they provide professional support. When free time is positively utilized on campus, one can conclude that students benefit from the activities in terms of increasing the opportunities of education and employment.

Recently, a lot of researches have been carried out on the leisure time practices of the young people in the universities to reveal this benefit. Without doubt, the basic reason behind gravitating towards these kinds of researches is experiencing a revolutionary change in the rate of universalization after 2006. Opening at least one university in every province, which is regarded as government policy, is based on economical, socio-cultural and political founda-

tions [10]. Most of the researches carried out are on determining the restrictors for the students to the students' attendance to the recreation activities and the critics on the universities' not being sufficiently institutionalized [6, 7, 14, 15, 16, 20].

In our study, we aimed to present how the type of leisure time activity influences the students' tendency to the practices of personality construction rather than the limitations to participation in recreational activities.

2.Method

This research was carried out on the students who studied in different faculties of Duzce University in 2016. This study took place in a 12 month participation period. The sample of research was determined according to the random sampling technique; compliant with the criteria's of the level of representing the population. The study is a descriptive field research in which 450 questionnaires were conducted.

In the research, in which survey technique was used, a pilot scheme took place for 30 different students in order to increase the validity of the research questions. After final adjustments were made as a result of the pilot scheme, the survey was finalized. Researchers gave clear information during the application process in order to conduct the research properly.

In this study, we selected 15 of the questions for use. Data analysis was done in SPSS version 22 after the data entry completed. In the context of related questions, the relationships between the dependent and independent variables were analyzed. In data analysis, chi square test was used to investigate relationship between categorical variables. Mann-Whitney U test and Kruskal Wallis were performed to evaluate the significance of differences for non-parametric continuous variables.

3.Findings

The first set of questions aimed to obtain some demographic information about students and their families. 40,4 % of them are female and 59,6 % of them are male. 0,9 % are 17; 18,9 % are 18; 30,1 % are 19, 25,2% are 20; 24,9 % are 21 years and upper.

Students' mothers are 70,6 % housewifes, and 8,3 % are workers. Other occupations like teachers and polices have around %6 each. Stu-

dents' fathers are mostly workers (21,9 %), and followed by retired (%19,6) and 10,6 % are shopkeepers. Farmer fathers are 4, 7% and percentage of state officers are 4,1 %.

It is better to tabulate some findings to comprehend the essence of the topic after demographic data is presented:

Table 1: Pairwise comparison between gender and the place where they feel the happiest on campus

Where do you feel the happiest in the campus?		Gender		
		Famale	**Male**	**Total**
Nowhere	Count	44	58	102
	Expected	41,5	60,5	102,0
Dining Hall	Count	11	26	37
	Expected	15,0	22,0	37.0
Class	Count	18	25	43
	Expected	17,5	25,5	44,0
Gyms	Count	12	36	48
	Expected	19,5	26,5	48,0
Library	Count	17	11	28
	Expected	11,4	16,6	28,0
Cafe	Count	58	80	138
	Expected	56,1	81,9	138,0
Auditorium	Count	14	8	22
	Expected	8,9	13,1	22,0
Lab	Count	0	6	6
	Expected	2,4	3,6	6,0
Other	Count	9	17	26
	Expected	10,6	15,4	26,0
Total	Count	183	267	450
	Expected	183,0	267,0	450,0
Pearson Chi-Square	21,088[a]	***Sd:8***	***P<,007***	

In Table 1, considering where students feel the happiest on campus, 41.5 % of female students and 21.7 of male students reported they feel the happiest in "nowhere". Another supporting factor is that 80% of the students without gender difference do not find social facilities of university satisfactory. The students,

who feel happy, feel happier at cafeteria and gyms (p<.007).

According to Kruskal Wallis analysis, among grade levels, there are differences on the places where they feel happy (H (8) =42,241, p= .000). Students who feel the happiest in the gym are at a higher grade level than students who respond as "other" for the place he/she feels the happiest (p=.00), students who feel the happiest in the canteen and cafeteria are at a higher grade level than students who feel the happiest in the gym (p=.00), students who feel the happiest in the library are at a higher grade level than students who feel the happiest in the gym (p=.010), students who feel the happiest in the classroom are at a higher grade level than students who feel the happiest in the gym (p=.001), students who feel the happiest in nowhere are at a higher grade level than students who feel the happiest in the gym (p=.00).

The amount of pocket money which students get is changed according to where they feel happy (H (8) =33,239, p= .000). Pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who feel happy nowhere get more pocket money compared to students who feel happy in the classroom (p=.038); students who feel happy in the gym get more money compared to students who feel happy in the classroom (p=00) and students who feel happy in the library.

Table 2: *Comparison between place where student happy and increasing of their social activities*

Where do you feel the happiest in the campus?		After attending university, do your social activities increase?		
		Yes	**No**	**Total**
Nowhere	Count	34	66	100
	Expected	50,4	49,6	100
Dining Hall	Count	16	20	36
	Expected	18,1	17,8	36.0
Class	Count	23	19	42
	Expected	21,2	20,8	42
Gyms	Count	32	16	48
	Expected	24,2	23,8	48,0
Library	Count	19	9	28
	Expected	14,1	13,9	28,0

Cafe	Count	74	63	137
	Expected	69,1	67,9	137,0
Auditorium	Count	12	11	23
	Expected	11,6	11,4	23
Lab	Count	3	3	6
	Expected	3,0	3,0	3,0
Other	Count	12	14	26
	Expected	13,1	12,9	26,0
Total	Count	225	221	446
	Expected	225,0	221,0	446,0
Pearson Chi-Square	***30,553[a]***		***Sd:16***	***P<,015***

The relation between increasing of social activities after attending university and the place where students feel happiest is shown on table 2. According to the analysis, there is a relation between when students feel happy nowhere in the campus and the increase in their social activities. And, when they feel happy in the sports saloons, there is a change in their leisure activities according to chi-square test (p <.05) .

Table 3: The relation between gender and leisure activities on campus

Leisure which are in campus	activities conducted	Gender		
		Famale	**Male**	**Total**
Sport	Count	14	80	94
	Expected	38,4	55,6	94,0
Cinema	Count	35	20	55
	Expected	22,5	32,5	55,0
Theater	Count	2	3	5
	Expected	2,0	3,0	5,0
Music	Count	11	8	19
	Expected	7,8	11,2	19,0
Sitting with friend	Count	102	122	224
	Expected	91,6	132,4	224,0
Other	Count	18	30	48
	Expected	19,6	28,4	48,0
Total	Count	182	263	445
	Expected	182,0	263,0	445,0
Pearson Chi-Square	***42,557[a]***		***Sd:5***	***P=,000***

In the research, it is shown that girls tend to attend "doing sport", "going to cinema", "sitting on a cafe", boys tend to "doing sport", "sitting on a café" types of leisure activities and these variables' relations are significantly related according to chi-square test (p=.000).

According to Kruskal Wallis analysis;

Students' age are changed according to their leisure activities (H (5) =23, 45 p= .00). Pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who do sports are older than students who sits with their friends (p=.00). There is no significant difference between cinema, theatre, music, and sport group comparisons.

Student's feeling of religiosity is changed according to their leisure activities (H (5) =16,113 p= .007). Pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who do sports feel more religious than students who choose "other" (p=.029) and students go to cinema (p=.016).

Students' prevalence of playing lottery games is changed according to their leisure activities (H (5) =16, 113, p= .007). Pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who do sports play more lottery compared to students who choose "other" (p=.023) and students sits with their friends (p=.031)

Students' visiting prevalence of mosque or djemevi is changed according to their leisure activities (H (5) =17, 57, p= .004). Pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who do sports visit mosques or djemevis more compared to students who go to cinema (p=.002) and students who sit with their friends (p=.030).

Students who consider social activities of university are enough (Mdn= 270, 35) evaluate senato of the university more positively compared to students who consider social activities of university are not enough (Mdn= 213, 70), (U= 9636, z=-3, 785, p= 00).

4.Discussion

When it is considered the process of instutalization of new universities, students are the most influenced people by campus life. In Turkey, because of score system, low and middle class students are not able to go high ranked universities [10]. Therefore, in order to obtain cultural aims, some students can only prefer new universities. Because of socio-economic reasons, students tend to prefer universities

around the city which they live in. In the literature, this point usually is highlighted by the researchers [7,15].

In this research, variation of students' leisure activities is shown. After attending university, most of students said that the prevalence of their leisure activities are increased. However, students evaluate that the university's social capacity is not enough.

When students' happiest place in the university is analyzed, %30 of the students do not feel happy "anywhere" in the campus. So, it can be said that students' feeling of belonging to university is low. Students who consider the university's social capacities are not enough compared to students who thins university's social capacity is enough, are not satisfied the university's presidency's' attitudes towards students' problems(U= 9636, z=-3,785, p= 00), consider professors' proficiencies' not enough (U= 9859, z=-3,638, p=.00) and their majors' future job capacities are not enough (U=11378,500, z=-2,166, p=.030). These results are the indicator of their low sense of belonging to the university.

34% of the students have more social activities compared to past, also they do not feel happy anywhere in the university. In this aspect, it can be concluded that they spend their leisure time outside of the university. This situation can show that students who do not spend their leisure time in the university, spend their leisure time in the city center. Students who feel happy in the university, for both gender, spend most of their time in sports center and cafes. Girls and boys spend most of their leisure time with their friends. And most of boys tend to do sports and girls tend to go to cinema. The relation between other variables are not found low.

With regards to economical situation and happiest place, pairwise comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who feel happy nowhere get more pocket money compared to students who feel happy in the classroom (p=.038); students who feel happy in the gym get more money compared to students who feel happy in the classroom (p=00) and students who feel happy in the library (H (8) =33,239, p= .000). This situation shows us that students who spends their leisure time outside of campus have more pocket money. Students who feel happy in the campus have less pocket money, even though most of them are not satisfied with schools' leisure activities.

Students' leisure time activities are changed according to their religious activities. Pairwise

comparisons with adjusted p-values showed that students who do sports feel more religious than students who choose "other" (p=.029) and students go to cinema (p=.016) (H (5) =16,113 p= .007). Also students who do sports compared to choose "other" tend to religious places more (H (5) =17,568, p= .004. This indicates religious values and leisure participations are related.

While students who do sports tend to be more religious, they also tend to play more lottery compared the ones who choose "other" and sit with their friends (H (5)= 16,113, p= .007). This makes us think how religious judgments are shaped. To clarify this point, students' values and prevalence of lottery games playing need to be compared. Adjusted comparisons with two paired groups, students who give value to money (p=.001) compared to students who give value to undefined things, and have religious values (p=.001) and give value to success (p=.029) play more lottery games (H (6)= 28,169, p=.00) showed that students who do sports have various religious believes and judgements.

University's clubs are needed to be mentioned while evaluating students' leisure activities. Clubs have an important function on students' socialization and personality development. In this research, it is depicted that students' club membership is low. Students who are enrolled a club read more book compared to students who are not enrolled a club (U=19,816, z=-3,025, p=.002) and play less lottery (U=27,334, z=-2,539, p=.011). This shows that how leisure activities shape student's personality development.

5. Conclusion

As a result, it is wrong to judge universities only an educational place. In order to increase students' sense of belonging to university, universities should give more possibilities to students. New universities are not enough to provide leisure activities except education. In order to have institutionalised places, these places are needed to be organized at the maximum level.

Artistic and cultural occasion which contributes personality development of students and allow students to socialize are needed to be carefully planned and should be made attractive for students. Also, in order to make students realize themselves and spend their energy, number and function of social clubs are needed

to be increased. How much these students canalize social clubs and how much these clubs are supported, that much students' life quality get higher.

Leisure places in the university should be considered in therapeutic, artistic, cultural and sporty aspects and grounded according to them.

With paying attention to leisure activities' aspect of making people free, new places which help young people to adapt their environment should be created [10].

For current and future occasions of the university, -under supervizion- indoor and outdoor places are needed to be organized to allow students, young people, socialize and improve their critical thinking abilities.

Acknowledgments

References

[1] Aile Araştırma Kurumu, Türk Ailesinde Adolesanların Sorunları, Başbakanlık Aile Araştırma Kurumu Yayınları, Ankara, 1997.

[2] A.G. Baran, Genç ve Gençlik, iç. Gençlik Araştırmaları Dergisi, (1)1, 2013: 6-24.

[3] A. J. Veal and R. Lynch, Austalian Leisure, 2nd edn. Sydney, Longman, 2001.

[4] A. Tekin, Rekreasyon, Ata Ofset Matbaacılık, 2009.

[5] D. Utting, Reducing Criminality Among Young People: A Sample of Relevant Programmes in the United Kingdom, London, Home Office Research and Statistics Directorate, 1996.

[6] E. Karaçar ve M. M. Paslı, Turizm ve Otel İşletmeciliği Programı Öğrencilerinin Rekreasyonel Eğilimleri ve Rekreasyonel Etkinliklere Katılımına Engel Olan Faktörler, Turizm Akademik Dergisi, 01, 2014, 29-38.

[7] E. Sağlık, İ. Morçin ve S. E. Morçin, Üniversite Öğrencilerinin Kırsal Rekreasyonel Faaliyetlere Katılımını Etkileyen Kısıtlayıcılar: Çıldır Meslek Yüksekokulu Örneği, Electronic Journal of Vocational Colleges-December/Aralık, 2014, 86-92.

[8] K. Çelik, Genç Olmak Zor İş: Türkiye'de Genç Olmayı Etkileyen Bazı Unsurlar, Gençlik Araştırmaları Dergisi, 1(1), 2013, 26-45.

[9] M. Kılıç ve E. Öztürk, Yükseköğretim Çerçevesinde Öğrenci Konseylerinin Fonksiyonalist-Çatışmacı Yaklaşımlar Açısından Değerlendirilmesi, Uluslararası Yükseköğretim Kongresi: Yeni Yönelişler ve Sorunlar (UYK-2011), 3(14), 2011, 2097-2103.

[10] M. Kılıç ve G. Şener, Üniversite Öğrencilerinin Rekreasyon Etkinliklerine Katılımlarındaki Sosyolojik Etkenler ve Yapısal Kısıtlamalar, Journal of Higher Education & Science/Yükseköğretim ve Bilim Dergisi, 3(3), 2013, 220-227.

[11] M. Kılıç, Gençlik Şiddet ve Serbest Zaman, Doğu Kütüphanesi Yayınları, İstanbul, 2016

[12] M. Kılıç, Gençliğin Şiddet Algısı: Düzce İli Örneği, iç: Düzce'de Tarih ve Kültür, A. Ertuğrul, Edt., Gaye Kitabevi, Bursa, 2014, 216-224.

[13] M. Kılıç, Rekreasyonun Suçu Önlemedeki İşlevinin İncelenmesi, Sıtkı Koçman Üniversitesi, Yayınlanmamış Yükseklisans Tezi, Muğla, 2008.

[14] M. Özşaker, Gençlerin Serbest Zaman Aktivitelerine Katılmama Nedenleri Üzerine Bir İnceleme, Selçuk Üniversitesi Beden Eğitimi ve Spor Bilimleri Dergisi, 14(1), 2012, 126-131.

[15] M. Paksoy, F. Çalık, F. Türk ve K. Çimen, Abdullah Gül Üniversitesi Öğrencilerinin Rekreasyon Etkinliklerine Katılımını Etkileyen Faktörler, Special Issue on the Proceedings of the 5th ISCS Conference – Part A August 2016, 39-50.

[16] M. M. Paslı and M. Harbalıoğlu, Factors Hindering University Students From The Participation on in Recreational Activities And Trends, International Journal of Research In Social Sciences, July, 4(3), 2014, 37-44.

[17] M. Tekin, M. Yıldız, M. Akyüz ve A.O Uğur, Karaman Yükseköğrenim Kredi ve Yurtlar Kurumunda Kalan Üniversite Öğrencilerinin Rekreatif Etkinliklere Katılım ve Beklentilerinin İncelenmesi, Erzincan Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, 9(1), 2007, 121-135.

[18] N. Gedik, Gençliğin Serbest Zamanları Değerlendirme Sorunları, Türk Hemşireler Dergisi, XXXV, 2, 1985, 33-38.

[19] Ö. Aytaç, Boş Zamanın Değişen Yüzü: Yaşam Deneyimleri ve Kimlik İnşaı, Sosyoloji Dergisi S. 15, 2006, 57-91.

[20] Ö. Serpil, Selçuk Üniversitesi Öğrencilerinin Rekreasyonel Eğilim ve Taleplerinin Belirlenmesi Üzerinde Bir Araştırma, S.Ü. Ziraat Fakültesi Dergisi 17 (32):2003, 31 -38.

[21] R.G. Kraus, Recreation Today, Program, Planing and Leadership, Goodyear Publishing Company, inc., Santa Monica, California, 1977.

[22] S. Miles, Youth Lifestyles in a Changing World. Open University Press, Buckingham, 2000.

[23] S.R. Lieber and D.R. Fesenmaier, Recreation Planning And Management, E&F.N.

[24] V. Bayhan, Gençlik Kimliği: Üniversite Gençliğinin Sosyolojik Profili, İnönü Üniversitesi Yayınları, Malatya, 2003.

[25] Y.S. Ağaoğlu, Türkiye'deki Üniversitelerin Rekreasyon Programlarının Geliştirilmesi, Yayınlanmamış Doktora Tezi, Ondokuzmayıs Üniversitesi, Samsun, 2002.

Evaluation Of Early Childhood Education Teachers' Qualifications: Mothers' Perspectives With Ministry Of National Education Standards

Perihan TUNÇ perihantunc@nevsehir.edu.tr

Sema Öngören semaongoren@nevsehir.edu.tr

Abstract: Education system's success and the level of attaining its goals are related to the quality of elements constituting the system and the interaction between them. Therefore, the behaviors and qualities of teachers who are able to affect students inside and outside the school are very effective in the system's functioning. The objective of this study is to find out whether the qualities of teachers giving early childhood education according to mothers' views overlap the field-related proficiency standards set by the Ministry of National Education (MEB). For this reason, in this research, the principal questions for which answers are sought are what the preschool teacher proficiency is according to mothers and whether this proficiency corresponds to the proficiency set by the MEB. In the study, case study design, a qualitative research method is used. While constituting the working group, the criterion sampling method among the purposive sampling methods is selected. According to this principal criterion, an online survey was shared in two groups on a social media site between January-May 2016. The data collection is based on voluntary participation. In the constitution of the survey, the literature and the specialist views are referred. The "opinion collection form" with eight open-ended questions are replied by 88 mothers but only 78 mothers' views who filled their demographic information and replied all the questions are included in the research. The data is treated by the content analysis method and interpreted in comparison with the MEB special field proficiency standards.

Introduction

In the 0-6 age period which is the starting point of human development, the child is having the fast development period. Between 0-4 years, a big part of brain development is completed. The experiences that the child has in these years have a decisive effect on their development. The child being in an environment in a supporting environment which they can be in interaction with others and their environment is as important as their proper nutrition (AÇEV, 2007).

Furthermore, the preschool education that is referred as early childhood period in the literature is the keystone of child's academic success in the coming years. The basis of reading, writing and mathematical skills that the child would need after childhood for academic success is acquired in these years. According to the study results, children with early childhood education have higher cognitive skills and orientation to education compared to children with no such education. The children who have the chance to participate in high quality education programs have a higher success rate and motivation for learning, lower rate of dropping out or failing in class. It is known that the childhood education is effective in skills such as using language efficiently, being adapted to technology easily, professional status and age of participation to the workforce which are important in accommodating in the modern life. With the help of this education, the children who can activate their dynamics in a high level, communicate productively, with high self-confidence and mental-physical health constitute the backbone of country's qualified human resource (AÇEV, 2007; Camlan and Tarr-Whelan; 2005; Kılıç, 2010). The early childhood education (ECE) services may be considered to be interventions to the physical and mental development of children in the first years of their lives. Studies made in a global scale show that the high quality interventions in early childhood are low-cost investments to the child, family, society and economy which bring important results. Among these benefits; there is the increase in teachers'

productivity, lower mortality rates, decrease in education costs, increase in production and workforce quality, decrease in crime rates, decrease in inequalities due to social gender roles, and resolution of social and demographic problems created by the massive migration from rural areas to urban areas in the last few decades (Kaytaz, 2005; Ellen and Noreen, 2004).

Currently, ECE services are categorized per children's age and the institution providing the service. The 0-36-month period is covered by day care centers providing care and education, and the 36-72 month period is covered by kindergartens and MEB's "application classes" run by technical education departments. 6-year old group is covered by public and private schools' nursery classes Kaytaz, 2005).

One of the principal elements setting the quality level in preschool education services is the quality of teachers. Teaching, as a profession of ideals and devotion, also requires some special qualities regarding communication. Teachers function as guides directing people to peace, happiness, kindness, unity, compromise, solidarity, hope and trust. Therefore the quality of teachers should be especially emphasized as an essential element defining the quality in preschool education services (İnanlı, 2003).

Teachers take an important role in the well-functioning of the relationship between home and the preschool education institution as they are people with primary importance in the planning and execution phase of family participation works. Therefore, they need to pay a great personal effort. A preschool education institution may not meet child's versatile development and personal needs in case they are isolated from the environment and home. For preschool educators, education cannot be only personal and institutional. They should also try to improve the educational experiences the children acquire from their parents (Kandır et al., 2004).

Education system's success and the level of attaining its goals are related to the quality of elements constituting the system and the interaction between them. Therefore, the behaviors and qualities of teachers who are able to affect students inside and outside the school are very effective in the system's functioning. Teachers are the executers of education programs in primary level. They have the utmost responsibility of defining education services' quality and the system's success (Mahiroğlu, 2009). The teacher has an important role in the learning and character formation of children with their attitude towards their profession (Küçükahmet, 1976). Therefore, teacher giving early childhood education should be proficient of the principal elements of their profession, in other words required knowledge, skills and behaviors.

Proficiency is defined as "a real or legal person having rights, to be able exercise rights, function, and undertake responsibilities (capacity, ability)' (Turkish Language Institution-Arts and Science Terms Main Dictionary).

General Directorate of Teacher Formation of the MEB, within the Support for Primary Education Project (TEDP), started a five-element work in 2002, comprised of Teacher Formation, Education Quality, Management and Organization, Mass Education and Communication. These works "primarily aiming at defining general and specific proficiencies that the teachers should have, then raising the level of teaching profession by these proficiencies are acquired by teachers and teacher candidates through pre-service and during service formation programs" cover 6 main proficiency, 31 sub proficiency and 233 performance indicators (TEDP Öğretmenlik Mesleği Genel Yeterlikleri, 2006: 1, 8-9). Additionally, with a new study featuring stakeholders on defining primary education teachers' required knowledge, skills and approach, with the approval of the Ministry of National Education, "Special Field Proficiencies" are defined (MEB, 2008).

The qualities of the preschool teacher who has a primary function in the orientation of children who are going through the most important development period of their lives concern specifically individuals and the society in general. Therefore, the proficiencies that the preschool teachers should possess are defined by specialists. Whether families could understand the proficiencies that the teachers, who undertake the education of their children of that period, should have, they are aware of these proficiencies, and whether their views overlap with the specialists' are deemed to be an important research field as it would create a different point of view regarding proficiencies.

Objective

The objective of this study is to define the proficiencies of teachers giving early childhood education according to mothers' views and to find out whether these standards overlap the special field proficiencies set by the MEB.

Therefore, responses to the following questions are being sought:

1. What are the teacher proficiencies according to the parents' point of view?

2. Are these proficiencies overlaps the proficiencies set by the MEB?

Method

In this section, specifications on the research model, working group, data collection and treatment are given.

Research Model

In this study, Case Study, a qualitative research design is used. Case studies research the actual situations in order to understand and explain them (Hays, 2004: 218).

Working Group

Constituting the working group of this study, the criterion sampling method among purposive sampling methods is used. Purposive sampling enables an in-depth research of situations with rich data. The researcher tries to understand the natural or social events or phenomena that they relate to the selected cases and to find out and explain the relations among them. The principal approach in the criterion sampling method is to work with a sample group that meets a number of predefined criteria (Büyüköztürk et al., 2009;

Patton, 2002). In this study, it is predefined that the participating parents are at least high school graduates and they should be mothers with at least one child who was/is in kindergarten. In the definition of these predefined selection criteria, it is considered that the awareness on needs and expectations would be strong and they would be able to express these orally and in a written manner with a clear Turkish. According to these principal criteria, data was collected between January-May 2016 from two groups of "Preschool" on a social network website. One of these groups is founded for data collection from mothers with children in preschool education institutions and 71 mothers subscribed to this group. The other group is the "Gülçin Öğretmenim" (My Teacher Gülçin) group with 5000 members, founded on Facebook by a kindergarten teacher. The data collection is based on voluntary participation. 78 mothers who filled the questions and the demographic information completely constituted the working group. The demographic features of the working group are given in Table 1.

Table 1: Demographic Data on Participants

		f	%
Age Groups	26-30	10	12,8
	31-35	45	57,6
	36-40	18	23,3
	41-45	3	3,8
	45+	2	2,5
	Total	**78**	**100**
Educational status	High school	4	5,1
	Associate degree	6	7,7
	Undergraduate	60	76,9
	Master	5	6,4
	Phd	3	3,8
	Total	**78**	**100**
The sex of the child	Girls	28	35,8
	Boys	50	64,2
	Total	**78**	**100**
Area	Akdeniz	8	10,25
	Doğu Anadolu	4	5,1
	Ege	14	17,9
	Güneydoğu Anadolu	4	5,1
	İç Anadolu	17	21,8
	Marmara	22	28,2
	Karadeniz	9	11,5
	Total	**78**	**100**

DATA COLLECTION AND ANALYSIS

Data is collected by a semi-structured interview form. In the constitution of the form, questions are prepared by the help of the literature and specialist opinions. Questions are

shared on social networking sites through an online survey system by sharing a hyperlink, and 88 mothers replied to the questions. The opinions of 78 mothers who answered all the questions constitute the research data. The in-

terview form is comprised of the six questions given below. These questions listed below are formed per first sub-objective of this research, which is to define teacher proficiencies according to the mothers' opinions.

1. Why did you send your child to the kindergarten?
2. What do you expect from your child's teacher?
3. What does your child expect from their teacher?
4. Does your child's teacher meet your expectations?
5. If the personal features of a kindergarten teacher were listed, in your opinion, how would this list be?
6. If the professional features of a kindergarten teacher were listed, in your opinion, how would this list be?

The collected data is treated by the content analysis method used in qualitative research. Content analysis is conducted through four stages comprised of "Codification of data, finding of common themes, organization of codification and themes, definition and interpretation of findings." (Yıldırım and Şimşek, 2005). The research findings are analyzed specifically per each question. In this study, while codes are cataloged separately, the codes constituting the themes are given as quotes and under the quali-

tative data section as they are short, concise and not too detailed. The goal is to facilitate the reading. Frequency and percentage values featured in the tables are above 100%. The reason for that is mothers expressed views that could be categorized under more than one theme.

Validity and Credibility: Kirk and Miller define validity in qualitative research as the researcher observes the phenomenon researched as it is and as neutrally as possible (cit. by Yıldırım and Şimşek, 2005). Additional methods such as variation and participant confirmation help increasing the validity of qualitative research. For this reason, it is aimed to increase the validity by directly quoting participant expressions under the qualitative data section. Additionally, the research model, data collection tool and the data analysis are explained in a detailed manner (Yıldırım and Şimşek, 2005).

Limitations

This research is limited to;

1. the views of 78 participant mothers within the research, ,

2. and the MEB Preschool Teachers' Special Field Proficiencies.

FINDINGS

In this section, the research findings are given as tables with explanations.

Table 2: The reason for sending the child to kindergarten

Why did you send your child to kindergarten	f	%	Qualitative Data
Preparation for School, receiving education for their age	48	37.44	For them to receive necessary education. As required by age, to get to know the school and be accustomed with the rules, preparation for primary education, to acquire handcraft and motor skills
Working mother	24	18.72	Because we don't trust caregivers. I started working and I don't want caregiver at home.
Socialization	24	18.72	To prepare them for social life. To be accustomed to specific rules and orders. To make them feel they can accomplish things on their own without their mother and father. To make them have a separate life space of their own
Mother feeling inadequate	7	5.46	I feel inadequate as a mother as I cannot contribute with something educative at home
Other	10	7.8	Because of late talking, behavioral disorders, born of the second child, to reduce fraternal jealousy, to prevent too much television viewing

Research findings reveal more than one reason for families to send their children to preschool education. For this reason, the list is given in order of priority. The majority of participants by 37.44% send their children to preschool to make them receive education appropriate for their age and prepare them for primary school, while 5.46% feel themselves inade-

quate to respond their children's educational needs. Mothers working, children's socialization and learning with their coevals having fun are also among reasons for sending the child to kindergarten. Apart from these reasons, Table 2 suggests that 7.8% send their children to school because of reasons like fraternal jealousy, and child's behavioral disorders.

Table 3: Mother's Expectation From Child's Teacher

What do you expect from your child's teacher?	f	%	Qualitative Data
Attention-love-affection-understanding-mercy-justice	52	40.56	I want the teacher to show love and attention to my child, briefly to fill the void, to establish a bond with my daughter. I want them to approach with love as my child is of small age.
A good education	32	24.96	A good education with love and respect to be given, to learn good things sharing things with their coevals, to have fun while learning
Guidance and orienta-tion	22	17.16	I expect them to prepare my child mentally and emotionally for school, help their development of self-confidence, not to curb their enthusiasm for school.
Supporting the child	14	10.92	Firstly help our family to prepare my children for the future and then support them in line with their skills. Support them for lingual development.
Other	5	5.46	To respond our questions with attention. Brainstorming, inventions, cognitive development games, setting an example. Be attentive about their allergy.

In line with the sub-objectives of the research, mothers are asked about their expectations from their children's teacher and by 40% the most frequent response is that they expect attention, love, affection, understanding, mercy and justice. Respectively 24% expect a good education, %17 guidance to their children and proper orientation, 10% support for their children. The other views which occupy 5% can be observed in Table 3.

Table 4: Child's Expectations From The Teacher

Çocuğunuz öğretme ninden neler bekliyor?	f	%	Qualitative Data
Love-Affection-Attention-Trust	52	40.56	Affection. It suffices if they would be close like a mother. I guess love. If they don't love, they don't hug. They expect their teacher loves them and not to get mad, also expect attention.
Playing-entertainment	20	15.6	Lots of games, especially outdoor games and music lessons, constant fun and games, to play games, paint pictures, play and to sing.
To be understood	10	7.8	When they face some behavior they don't like, they develop disappointment about that person and become distant. They remember the past very negatively because of them, they are in first grade and they are scared of school now.
To be recognized-appreciated	7	5.46	Expects to be validated, appreciated, feels happy when praised especially by the teacher, I can say that. My son expects support and respect for his ideas and discoveries.
Other	10	7.8	Expects being allowed for everything. Maybe because there are more rules at home. Wants everything to be done.
No opinion	6	4.68	

As another sub-objective, participants are asked what their children expect from their teacher. A vast majority of 40% among mothers prioritize love, affection, attention and trust, while 5% think their children expect appreciation and praise. Among other reasons; games, fun, being understood and also being free and devoid of rules may be given.

Table 5: The Level Of Teachers Meeting Mothers' Expectations

The level of teachers meeting mothers' expectations	f	%	Qualitative data
Does not meet at all	7	5.46	She cannot understand the details because she is not a mother. We left her because she could not meet our expectations. We weren't happy because she was not a teacher loving children. She did not meet our expectations but fooled us by saying everything was fine.
Meets partially	5	3.9	Cannot meet too much. I do not find it enough. We have ongoing problems on socialization. But they are very attentive about the allergies.
Meets in average level	17	13.26	Meets in an average level. Too normative and rigid. My child does not tell me if it does not repeat or creates a problem in class. We can say average level as not all demands are met.
Meets well	34	26.52	In a class of 20 persons, they do whatever a teacher can do. I am generally satisfied but individual differences are being disregarded.
Meets completely	15	11.7	Our teachers are attentive and they love their job. Just like we wanted. They identify our children's level and approach with love. They meet our demands better than our expectations. Meets fully.
Total	78	100	

The level of teachers meeting the parents' expectations is among the research questions. 27% of mothers respond that teachers meet their expectations well. 13% say in an average level, 12% say they meet fully. 5% respond they do not meet at all and 4% say partially.

Table 6: Personal Features To Be Found In A Kindergarten Teacher

If the personal features of a kindergarten teacher were listed, in your opinion, how would this list be	f	%	Qualitative data
Patience-Tolerance-positive approach	56	43.68	Should be patient; want a teacher with unlimited patience and who professes with tolerance. Their approach should be positive towards events.
Love	52	40.56	Should live children to be able to love their profession, should be someone who can appreciate love, who should love children unconditionally, love love love
Consistent- Honest-Fair–Credible-Self-Confident	28	21.84	Honest, who does not lie, keeps their promise, I think they should be consistent, should be honest, fair, consistent, should treat everyone equally, should be able to give the child self-confidence, trustable, with high self-confidence
Good humor	26	20.28	Should be good-humored, should be smiling all the time, face expressions, smiling
Cheerful -Energetic- Sincere - Sympathetic	21	16.38	Cheerful, should be energetic, vigorous, healthy, lively, moving, young, childlike, full of life, entertaining, witty, warm, sincere, sympathetic, should not be phony
Empathy – Communication	17	13.26	Should do exercises to improve empathy skills. Should be someone with strong communication with children, with good communication skills
Understanding	14	10,92	Someone with understanding, who can teach understanding
Mercy- Affection-Self-sacrifice	12	9.36	Should be affectionate, should have a conscience, should be merciful, should be giving, should be self-sacrificing, should be able to self-sacrifice if needed
Attention	8	6.24	Should be possessive, should be attentive
Appearance-courtesy-sensitivity	8	6.24	Should care for appearance, well-groomed, polite, courteous, sensitive
Respect	5	3.9	Should be respectful, respectful for the kid and the parent
Other	6	4,68	It would be better if she were a mother, being practical, cool headed in resolving problems, intuitive

The mothers were asked to list the personal features that should be in a kindergarten teacher and several features were mentioned. In order to facilitate reading, similar features are grouped together. 44% expect the teacher to be patient and tolerant, to approach the children positively; this is followed by consistency, honesty, being fair, credibility and self-confidence. Mothers expect a kin-

dergarten teacher to be cheerful, joyous, energetic, sincere and sympathetic; and to communicate with the child and the parents in a healthy manner. Understanding, mercy, affection, self-sacrifice, being attentive to students, being attentive to self-appearance, courtesy and sensitivity also exist in this list. Other features may be seen in Table 6.

Table 7: Professional Features To Be Found In A Kindergarten Teacher

If the professional features of a kinder-garten teacher were listed, in your opinion, how would this list be?	f	%	Qualitative Data
Visionary	37	28.86	With high-culture, a good reader, with a wide range of interests, exemplary, team player, with good foreign language, good at observing students, humanistic, versatile, creative, active, social, who can stimulate children
Exploring-Self-improving-Open to innovations	32	24.96	Exploring, innovative, open to innovations, curious, someone who feels insufficient and tries to research and learn new things and enjoys it.
Adequate in their field	24	18.72	Should know child development (physical-psychological) well and should be able to apply this knowledge, adequate knowledge in their field, should know everything about child development
Pedagogical formation Child psychology	15	11.7	Has child pedagogy knowledge. Should be sufficient if they can identify children's talents. Should understand child psychology. Should know every single kid, should know child and adult psychology well
Communication Empathy	14	10.92	Strong communication skills, good communication with children and parents, communication, right communication with the kids. Good communication with the family
Love for children and the profession	13	10.14	Enthusiastic for learning, should love children and their profession a lot, loving their profession
Effective teaching method Class management-Teaching profession knowledge	13	10,14	Good education and clear expression, should have authority over class, should be able to incite curiosity and attention, should have solid teaching, who can use time productively, teaching skills
Experience-being solution-oriented	7	5.46	Education, age, experienced
Who can use technology	6	4.68	Good level of new technology use, who can use education technologies actively, who can technological tools improving material in class, should be able to develop different materials

Table 8 lists mothers' views on professional features to be found in a kindergarten teacher. 28% of mothers demand teachers to be visionaries. About 5% expects them to use new technologies. Other features are teacher being exploring, self-improving, knowledgeable in their field and adequate. The list also features understanding child psychology, having empathy skills, having good communication with children and family, loving children and the profession. Furthermore, according to mothers, the teacher should have an efficient teaching method, be good at class management, have knowledge on profession, experience and should be solution-oriented.

CONCLUSION AND DISCUSSION

The main objective of this research is to define the proficiencies of teachers who give early childhood education according to mothers and to see whether these features overlap MEB's special field proficiencies. According to the research findings, families send their children to kindergarten for a number of reasons. Among these, there is children having a suitable education for their age, to be prepared for school, mother working, socialization of children by spending quality time with coevals, mothers feeling inadequate in fulfilling children's needs and distrust against caregivers. According to the research results, mothers expect from kindergarten teachers core values such as attention, love, affection, understanding, mercy and justice. Also, they demand that teachers should give a good education, proper guidance and orientation, and also support children on things they can do. Mothers' priorities on their expectations from teachers are love, affection, attention and trust, games, fun, being understood, being appreciated and

praised. Only 5.46% of mothers sending their children to kindergarten claim that their expectations were not met at all. On the list of personal features that mothers expect from kindergarten teachers; patience, tolerance, positive approach, love, consistency, honesty, justice, credibility and self-confidence stand out. Also, mothers think teachers should be cheerful and energetic, sympathetic and warm, empathetic, be able to communicate with children and parents. The same list features being understanding and attentive, caring about self-appearance, being polite, respectful and sensitive. On the list of professional features a kindergarten teacher should have according to mothers; teacher having a vision, being exploring, open to innovations, self-improving, having sufficient pedagogical formation and understanding child psychology, communicating with children and parents, loving children and their profession are present. Also, having an efficient teaching method, having a command of class management, having experience on fields related to teaching profession are deemed to be important. Besides, mothers think that teachers should be able to use new technologies.

MEB's General Directorate of Teacher Formation defined Preschool Teacher Special Field Proficiencies and it was put into effect on 25 July 2008 (MEB, 2008:42). These proficiencies are categorized as field of proficiency, scope, proficiencies and performance indicators (MEB, 2008:107-118). The research findings on fields of proficiency are discussed below.

1. Fields of Improvement: This field of proficiency includes necessary skills to maximize psycho-motor, social-emotional, linguistic, cognitive skills and self-care skills of the 3-6 year old child. The scope of this field features four sub-elements; to be able to plan the education process to support fields of improvement, to be able to choose and use material, to be able organize education environment and to be able to conduct education activities. According to the research results, themes of expectation for mothers that overlap these proficiencies are a good education, support for the child, guidance and orientation. These proficiencies overlap the personal feature of creativity and the professional features of proficiency in field, teaching profession knowledge, to be able to develop material, class management, and having an efficient teaching method.

2. Communication with Families, Family Participation and Training: This field of proficiency includes communicating with families, ensure family participation and conduct family training activities. According to the research results, mothers emphasize communication with family regarding expectations, as well as personal and professional features. Mothers think that teachers should be in a communication with them, based on information, feedback and correction. While some mothers draw attention to family participation, views on family training do not appear among research findings.

3. Assessment: This field of proficiency features the education program to support child development and ensure permanence of education and assessment of child development. Among research results, there has been no data on the assessment of education programs. Meanwhile, being able to assess child development overlaps views on being visionary regarding professional features.

4. Communication: This field of proficiency covers effective listening, developing empathy, expression through words, body and art and being able to communicate effectively by using information technologies. According to the research results, mothers demand communication regarding expectations, personal and professional features. Also views on the use of technology overlap sub-proficiencies.

5. Creativity and aesthetics: This field of proficiency includes exploration-discovery and teaching alternative observation methods, forming original products, improving aesthetic awareness and distinction skills. Research findings include creativity and being an art-lover among personal features and being exploring, self-improving and open to innovations among professional features, which are closely related to these codes.

6. Cooperation with School and Society: This field includes cooperation with families to support preschool teaching process, social leadership, school being a cultural and learning center, and the ceremonies and events in schools. The sub-proficiencies of this field are ensuring children's awareness and participation to national holidays and their meanings, conducting national holiday ceremonies and cooperating with society in order to render the school a cultural and learning center. No mother has expressed opinions on this field.

7. Create professional improvement: This field of proficiency covers professional im-

provement application to support children's development and ensure the permanence of education. In the sub-proficiency, there is to be able to define professional improvement. According to the research results, mothers' expectations of guidance, orientation and support for their children overlap with the content of this field.

As a result of this research, it can be said that the mothers' opinions and the kindergarten special field proficiencies set by the MEB overlap to a large extent.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

AÇEV (Anne ve Çocuk Eğitim Vakfı), (2007). *Ekonomik Ve Toplumsal Kalkınma İçin Erken Çocukluk Eğitimi: Önemi, Yararları Ve Yaygınlaştırma Önerileri*, Şubat 2007. http://www.acev.org/kaynaklarimiz/arastirmalarimiz-ve-yayinlarimiz, Erişim Tarihi, 10.05.2016.

AÇEV (Anne ve Çocuk Eğitim Vakfı), (2008). *Erken Çocukluk Eğitiminin Önemi Üzerine Düşünceler ve Öneriler* http://www.acev.org/kaynaklarimiz/arastirmalarimiz-ve-yayinlarimiz

AÇEV (Anne ve Çocuk Eğitim Vakfı), Ankara. http://www.acev.org/kaynaklarimiz/arastirmalarimiz-ve-yayinlarimiz, Erişim Tarihi, 10.04.2016.

Camlan, Leslie.J. ve Whelan Linda Tarr, (2005). *Early Childhood Education for All A Wise Investment*. Legal Momentum, April 2005 New York, NY

Feinberg, Ellen S. Peisner, Yazejian, Noreen (2004). The Relation Of Preschool Child Care Quality To Children's Longitudinal School Success Through Sixth Grade. *Child Care Research Policy Consortium*. http://www.fpg.unc.edu, Washington, DC s.7

Hinnant J. Benjamin , O'Brien Marion , Ghazarian Sharon R.(2010). The Longitudinal Relations of Teacher Expectations to Achievement in the Early School Years . *J Educ Psychol*. 2009 Jan 1; 101(3): 662–670.

İnanlı, Remzi (2003). *Erken Çocukluk Eğitimi Politikaları: Yaygınlaşma, Yönetişim Ve Yapılar Toplantısı Raporu*,

2006. Kandır, A., Ulus Kalender, U. "Öğretmenlerin Aile Katılım Etkinliklerinin 5-6 Yaş Çocuklarının Kavram Gelişimlerine Etkisine İlişkin Düşünceleri", 3. Uluslararası Çocuk ve İletişim Kongresi & 3. Uluslararası Çocuk Filmleri Festivali ve Kongresi, 6-8 Kasım, İstanbul.

Kaytaz Mehmet, (2005). *Türkiye'de Okulöncesi Eğitiminin Fayda-Maliyet Analizi*, AÇEV (Anne ve Çocuk Eğitim Vakfı) 2005. http://www.acev.org/docs/default-document-library/3-turkiye'de-okul-oncesi-egitiminin-fayda-maliyet-analizi-.pdf?sfvrsn=2, Erişim Tarihi:15.06.2016

Kılıç, Çiğdem(2010). Aile Eğitim Programları Ve Türkiye'deki Örnekleri *Abant İzzet Baysal Üniversitesi Dergisi Cilt:10 Sayı:1 Yıl:10 Haziran-2010.(100-111)*.

Küçükahmet, Leyla (1976). ***Öğretmen Yetiştiren Öğretmenlerin Tutumları .*** A. Ün. Eğitim Fak Yay. Ankara.

Mahiroğlu, Ahmet,(2007*).Eğitim Bilimine Giriş,Öğretmenlik Mesleği ve Öğretmen Yetiştirmede Gelişmeler ve Yenilikler*,PegamA Yayıncılık,2007 Ankara. (373-419)

(MEB)*Milli Eğitim Bakanlığı Öğretmen Yetiştirme Ve Eğitimi Genel Müdürlüğü,Özel Alan Yeterlikleri*, **Say.** : B.08.0.0EG.0.13.01.04, http://otmg.meb.gov.tr/YetOzel.html, Erişim Tarihi:17.05.2016

Patton ,Michael Q.,(2002). *Qualitative Research & Evaluation Methods, Sage Publications, London*. https://people.ucsc.edu/~ktellez/Patton2003.pdf. Erişim Tarihi,20.05.2016

TDK,*Türk Dil Kurumu-Bilim ve Sanat Terimleri Ana Sözlüğü* http://www.tdk.gov.tr/19.05.2016

TUİK (Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu), www.tuik.gov.tr/PreIstatistikTablo.do?istab_id=135,Erişim Tarihi 10.06.2016.

The Effect of Preschool Education on Students' Obedience to Classroom Rules and Their Basal Reading and Writing Process

Fatma SUSAR KIRMIZI, Emel SALGUT
Pamukkale University, Faculty of Education, Department of Elementary Education, Denizli, fsusar@pau.edu.tr
Pamukkale University, Graduate School of Educational Sciences, Program in Elementary Education, Denizli, slgt_emel@hotmail.com

Abstract. In order to be an individual within a society, people need to socialise, obey the rules of the community, and gain its acceptance. Schools have a vital role in facilitating this acceptance, learning and applying the rules, and shortening the adaptation process. This study that was conducted to determine the effect of preschool education on students' obedience to the classroom rules and their basal reading and writing process is based on teachers' views on this issue. Accordingly, qualitative research method was preferred (Kuş, 2003; Ekiz, 2009; Büyüköztürk et al. 2012; Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2013; Christensen, Johnson & Turner, 2015). Case study design was employed in the scope of qualitative research method. The study was conducted with elementary school teachers working in schools in the central district of the Denizli province in the 2015-2016 school year (n=75). The sample was selected based on the maximum variation sampling method (Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2013). An open-ended question form developed by the researchers was used for data gathering. According to the data obtained, the students who had received preschool education started elementary school by knowing the school and classroom rules. Since they knew about the concepts of school, classroom and teacher, they did not have any adaptation problems. They are more social and active compared to those who had not received preschool education. Therefore, the students who had received preschool education did not cause the teacher lose time in the basal reading and writing process and were more successful in this process.

Keywords: Basal reading and writing, elementary school teacher, preschool education, classroom rules

1. Introduction

Being an individual within a society requires people to socialise, obey the rules of the community, and gain its acceptance. Schools have a vital role in facilitating this acceptance, learning and applying the rules, and shortening the adaptation process. Individuals who are in an educational process at schools beginning from very young ages learn the written language, culture and rules of the society they live in, and also being helpful, cooperation, sharing and many other things in educational institutions. The first stage of these educational institutions is preschool education. Considering that children who are in the period between 0-6 years old, which is described as the critical period, or the period in which the foundations of personality are laid by the educators, it cannot be ignored how important this education is. Preschool is the preparation period to reading and writing. Children are enabled to acquire the cognitive, physical and affective skills necessary for reading and writing. Those who gain these skills do not have an adaptation problem in the basal reading and writing process.

Preschool education provides children sufficient models for the change and development of adaptive

behaviours, and whether they adapt to social life or not is the focus of this period. Behaviours that form the basis of daily life relations such as working individually or within a group, sharing certain materials and toys, helping each other, waiting for one's turn, acting in accordance with oral instructions when necessary, and taking responsibility are the competencies that come with the school environment. When preparing for elementary school, children should be equipped cognitively, and be experienced and adaptable socially and emotionally. In the case where children cannot adapt to the environment, behavioural problems are observed, and these problems affect their whole school life (Odom, 2000, Diener & Kim, 2003, cited in Karaca et al., 2011; Spache-Spache, 1986, cited in Turaşlı & Zembat, 2013).

Starting elementary school becomes an important milestone with children's new environment. If they have not received preschool education and not acquired the necessary social skills, various problems emerge with regard to their adaptation to school (Ülkü, 2007, p.19). School significantly contributes to the socialisation of children. From this perspective, it is thought that children who have difficulty with the rules at school can fall behind their peers in terms of both the socialisation process and academic skills (Barrow & Barrett.1998, cited in Kuş & Karatekin, 2009, p.184). Being maladaptive that is described as not following the rules at school, or a discipline problem may sometimes disrupt the instructional process.

The aim of this study was to determine the effect of preschool education on students' obedience to the classroom rules and their basal reading and writing process based on the views of elementary school teachers. In line with this aim, the research questions of the study are as follows:

1. What skills should students who have received preschool education have in the basal reading and writing process according to teachers' views?
2. What is the reflection of the child-parent relationship of those who have, and have not, received preschool education to the basal reading and writing process according to teachers' views?
3. Does the state of obeying the school and classroom rules affect the basal reading and writing process in students who have received preschool education and those who have not according to teachers' views?

2. Method

This study that was conducted to determine the effect of preschool education on students' obedience to the classroom rules and their basal reading and

writing process is based on teachers' views on this issue. Accordingly, qualitative research method was preferred (Kuş, 2003; Ekiz, 2009; Büyüköztürk et al. 2012; Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2013; Christensen, Johnson & Turner, 2015). Case study design was employed in the scope of qualitative research method.

2.1. Population and Sample

The study was conducted with first, second, third and fourth grade teachers -only if they taught basal reading and writing in first grade- working in the central district of the Denizli province in the 2015-2016 academic year (n=75). The sample was selected based on the maximum variation sampling method (Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2013). All elementary schools in Denizli were categorised as having low, middle and high socio-economic status, and four schools from each level were randomly selected. The schools were visited individually, and voluntary teachers were asked to answer the questions in the open-ended survey form.

2.2. Data Gathering Tool

An open-ended question form developed by the researchers was used for data gathering. A literature review was conducted while preparing the form, and the questions were formed accordingly. These questions were presented to two faculty members who were experts in their field, an inspector and five elementary teachers for their feedback. The final form of the survey consisted of three open-ended questions and a personal information form.

2.3. Data Analysis

The qualitative dataset obtained through administering the survey form was transferred to the computer environment, and read by both researchers line by line. The data were evaluated in accordance with content analysis, and codes were separately identified by the researchers. The codes that were revealed were compared, and then, Miles and Huberman's (1994) reliability formula (i.e. Güvenirlik = Görüş Birliği / [Görüş Birliği+Görüş Ayrılığı]) was used to calculate the agreement percentage. The agreement percentage for all questions were found to be 84,60. The codes were then combined into themes (i.e. categories). The codes and themes revealed in the analysis are presented in Table 1.

Table 1. Themes, Codes and Sub-Codes Revealed from the Data

Themes	Codes	Number of Statements That Relate to the Codes (f)	%
1st *Theme*: Expectations Regarding the Devel-	1.Physical development	77	102.6

		f	%
opmental Levels	2.Cognitive development	50	66.6
	3. Social development	45	60
	4.Affective development	20	26.6
2nd Theme: Effects on Parent-Child Relationship	1.Differences in parents' approaches	40	53
	2.Reflections of parent-child relationships to the process	33	44
3rd Theme: Effects of Knowing About the Rules on the Reading and Writing Process	1.Contributions to the skill of obeying the rules	58	77.2
	2.Conveniences due to knowing about the rules	21	28

3. Findings and Interpretation

In this section, the codes included under the themes, the interpretations about these codes, and the related quotations from the participants' statements are presented.

With respect to the first research question "What skills should students who have received preschool education have in the basal reading and writing process according to teachers' views?", the theme "Expectations Regarding the Developmental Levels" was revealed. The codes that were combined in this theme included: 'Physical development', 'Cognitive development', 'Social development', 'Affective development'.

The teachers' views related to the code "physical development" are presented in Table 2.

Table 2.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Physical Development' Under the Theme "Expectations Regarding the Developmental Levels"

Teacher Views	f	%
The fine motor skills of students who receive preschool education should be developed	26	34.6
Students who receive preschool education should be able to do activities such as cutting, bonding and colouring paper without any difficulty.	5	6.6
The fine motor skills of students who receive preschool education should be developed	5	6.6
Students who receive preschool education should have the skill of holding a pencil properly.	41	54.6
TOTAL	77	102.6

*The study was conducted with 75 teachers, but since a teacher could state more than one view about an issue, the number of views exceeds the number of teachers.

As is seen in Table 2, 26 of the teachers (34,6%) stated that they expected the students who received preschool education to have completed their fine motor development when they started elementary school. Some of the quotations from the teachers'

views on this issue are as follows: '(…) They should have completed their fine motor development.' *(13, F).* '(…) Their fine motor hand muscles should be developed. The play-doh that they play with at preschool helps a lot.' *(15, F).* '(…) Fine motor skills should have developed at the maximum level.' *(64, M).*

Five of the teachers (6.6%) wanted the students who received preschool education to do activities such as cutting paper, colouring, bonding and using scissors without any difficulty. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) I expect them to have developed fine motor skills, and do tasks like cutting and bonding paper by themselves.' *(3, F).* '(…) I would expect first graders who received preschool education to be good at skills such as using scissors, cutting and colouring paper, holding a pencil and writing.' *(25, F).*

Five of the teachers who participated in the study (6.6%) asserted that students who received preschool education should have developed a hand-eye coordination. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '(…) Having developed the hand muscles and eye coordination necessary for reading and writing activities.' *(54, F).*

Forty-five of the participants (54.6%) stated that students who received preschool education should start elementary first grade by having the skill of properly holding a pencil. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) I expect them to have acquired the skill of holding a pencil.' *(11, F).* '(…) They should know how to hold a pencil. They should also know how to draw things like a child, a cloud or a tree.' *(14, F).* '(…) Their finger muscles should be developed so that they can hold a pencil.' *(32, M).*

All of the teachers (100%) thought that preschool education should support the physical development of students. In overall, the teachers expected students who received preschool education to have completed their development of fine motor skills, have the skill of properly holding a pen, easily doing activities such as cutting, colouring and bonding paper, and drawing over a line, and have the hand-eye coordination necessary for reading and writing activities when they start elementary first grade. According to the data gathered, the teachers wanted students who received preschool education to start elementary school as having developed the psycho-motor skills necessary for basal reading and writing activities.

The teachers' views related to the code "cognitive development" are presented in Table 3.

Table 3.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Cognitive Development' Under the Theme "Expectations Regarding the Developmental Levels"

Teacher Views	f	%
Students who receive preschool education should be able to recognise numbers.	15	20
Students who receive preschool education should be able to write numbers properly.	15	20
Students who receive preschool education should be able to do rhythmic counting.	5	6.6
Students who receive preschool education should be able to simple addition and subtraction.	2	2.6
Students who receive preschool education should know the names of colours.	10	13
Students who receive preschool education should know the concepts of place-direction.	2	2.6
Students who receive preschool education should have the skill of reading, comprehending and interpreting visuals.	9	12
The attention span of students who receive preschool education should be developed.	4	5
Students who receive preschool education should be able to recognise sounds, and know about the writing direction of letters.	3	4
TOTAL	50	66.6

As is seen in Table 3, 15 of the teachers (20%) stated that they expected the students who received preschool education to recognise and write numbers properly when they started elementary school. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) *They should definitely know how to read and write numbers from 1 to 10*' *(14, F).* '(…) *I would expect them to recognise and properly write numbers (33, M).* '(…) *I would expect them to know how to write numbers (1-10)*' *(36, M).*

Five of the teachers (6.6%) wanted children who received preschool education to do rhythmic counting. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *Children who had the knowledge of numbers and could do rhythmic counting forward and backward would be great*' *(56, M).* '(…) *They should be able to count from 1 to 100*' *(7, M).*

Two of the teachers (2.6%) wanted students who received preschool education to do simple addition and subtraction. The following quotation is presented with respect to this view: '(…) *They should be able to do simple addition and subtraction*' (67, M).

Ten of the participants (13%) asserted that students who received preschool education should know about colours. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *Knowing about colours.*' *(62, F).* '(…) *I would expect them to recognise colours, and have the necessary skills for drawing and painting.*' *(71, F).*

Nine of the teachers (12%) indicated that students who receive preschool education should be able to read, comprehend and interpret visuals. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *I would expect them to have developed visual reading skills.*' *(21, M).* '(…) *I would expect them to have visual reading skills.*' *(28, M).*

Four of the teachers (5%) asserted that the attention span of students who received preschool education should be sufficient in basal reading and writing activities. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *I would want them to be individuals who can concentrate on the lesson easily*' *(17, F).*

Three of the teachers (4%) said that students who received preschool education should recognise sounds and know how to write letters when they started elementary first grade. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *The writing of letters should be taught through the end of preschool.*' *(22, M).* '(…) *As a preparation to reading and writing, they should be able to write all sounds with adjacent italic letters?*' *(57, E).*

As can be inferred from the data in Table 3, 50 participants (66%) thought that students who received preschool education should know about colours and numbers, do rhythmic counting, be familiar with the concepts of place-directions, and have visual reading skills. According to the data, preschool education should support cognitive skills including the knowledge of letters, numbers, and visual reading skills that are necessary for basal reading and writing activities.

The teachers' views related to the code "social development" are presented in Table 4.

Table 4.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Social Development' Under the Theme "Expectations Regarding the Developmental Levels"

Teacher Views	f	%
Students who receive preschool education should not experience school phobia.	5	6.6
Students who receive preschool education should know the school and classroom rules.	27	36
Students who receive preschool education should be helpful and sharing.	7	9
Students who receive preschool education should not experience problems in group work.	4	5
Students who receive preschool education should not experience problems in their relationships with friends.	4	5
Students who receive preschool education should be informed about teacher-student relationship.	2	2.6
TOTAL	45	60

As is seen in Table 4, five of the teachers (20%) stated that they expected the students who received

preschool education not to experience school phobia when they started elementary school. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) At least, they should not be afraid of the school…' (13, F). '(…) I would expect them to beat the school phobia.' (6, M).

Twenty-seven of the teachers (36%) stated that children who received preschool education should know about the school and classroom rules, and should obey these rules. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) They should follow the classroom-school order and rules.' (30, M). '(…) I would expect them to adapt to the classroom and school rules. (20, F). '(…) I would expect them to follow the classroom and school rules. (36, M).

Seven of the teachers (9%) expressed that they expected students who received preschool education to be sharing and helpful in the basal reading and writing process. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '(…) I would want them to be sharing, not selfish.' (2, F). '(…) *, being helpful and sharing in social relations…' (39, M).

Four of the participants (5%) wanted students who received preschool education not to have problems in their relationships with friends and group work when they started elementary school. Some of the quotations on this view are as in the following: '(…) They should not have problems with their communication with friends in the class.' (74, F). '(…) I would expect them to engage in group work, follow the classroom rules, and have developed the ability to take responsibility.' (71, F).

Two of the teachers (2.6%) touched upon the necessity that students who received preschool education should be informed about the teacher-student relationship at the beginning of the basal reading and writing process. Some of the quotations regarding this view are as in the following: '(…) They should love school, and have a good rapport with the teacher.' (54, F).

According to the teachers, students who received preschool education should not be afraid of school, act in accordance with the rules, not have problems in their relationships with friends, and be sharing. According to the data gathered, preschool education should help students who start elementary school develop social relationships and awareness of rules.

The teachers' views related to the code "affective development" are presented in Table 5.

Table 5.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Affective Development' Under the Theme "Expectations Regarding the Developmental Levels"

Teacher Views	f	%
Students who receive preschool education should be able to express themselves clearly.	18	24
Self-confidence of students who receive preschool education should be developed.	2	2.6
TOTAL	20	26.6

As is seen in Table 5, 18 of the teachers (24%) stated that they expected students who received preschool education to express themselves clearly when they started elementary school. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) They should be good at expressing themselves.' (26, F). '(…) I would expect them to be individuals who could express themselves.' (29, F). '(…) I would expect them to express themselves.' (55, M).

Two of the participants (2.6%) said that the self-confidence of students who received preschool education should be developed when they started elementary first grade. Some of the quotations on this view are as in the following: '(…) I would expect them to be self-confident.' (6, M).

Besides, eight of the teachers (10.6%) stated that students who received preschool education should start elementary school by having the self-care skills, whereas according to four teachers (5%) these students should know how to use classroom tools. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) I would expect them to meet their own self-care needs.' (73, F). '(…) Students should be self-sufficient regarding their needs, and come to elementary first grade by knowing about this.' (74, F). '(…) I would expect students who start elementary first grade to have skills such as holding a pencil, using a notebook, using the classroom tools properly, and cutting paper. (1, M).

According to 20 teachers (26%), students who received preschool education should be able to express themselves properly and be self-confident. In this regard, preschool education should support the development of self-confidence and expression skills in individuals.

With regard to the second research question "What is the reflection of the child-parent relationship of those who have, and have not, received preschool education to the basal reading and writing process according to teachers views?", the theme 'Effects on Parent-Child Relationship' was revealed. The codes that were combined in this theme included: 'Differences in parents' approaches', 'Reflec-

tions of the student-parent relationship to the process'.

The teachers' views related to the code "differences in parents' approaches" are presented in Table 6.

Table 6.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Differences in Parents' Approaches' Under the Theme "Effects on Parent-Child Relationship"

Teacher Views	f	%
Parents of students who receive preschool education are experienced about school culture.	5	6.6
Parents of students who receive preschool education are more interested in their progress.	4	5
Parents of students who does not receive preschool education are restless during the basal reading and writing process.	5	6.6
Parents of students who does not receive preschool education struggle more during the basal reading and writing process.	6	8
Students who receive preschool education and their parents go through a more effective process of basal reading and writing.	20	26.6
TOTAL	40	53

As is seen in Table 6, 5 of the teachers (6.6%) stated that parents of students who received preschool education were more knowledgeable and experienced about school culture.. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) *Parents of children who receive preschool education are more experienced in school relations. This positively contributes to the reading and writing process.*' (8, M). '(…) *Parents of those who received preschool education were more caring, and had more knowledge of the school courses. They even knew about the methods used in teaching reading and writing.*' (15, F). '(…)*Parents of students who received preschool education are more familiar with the classroom environment beforehand, as well as the teacher-parent relationship. So, they have a more positive attitude. This attitude positively affects students' basal reading and writing process.*' (73, F).

Four of the teachers (5%) stated that parents of students who received preschool education were more interested in the basal reading and writing process. One of the quotations regarding this view are presented below: '(…) *Parents of students who received preschool education are usually more interested in what is going on at school.*' (18, M).

Five of the teachers who participated in the study (6.6%) said that parents of students who did not received preschool education were restless in the basal reading and writing process. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '(…) *Both parents and students (who did not receive preschool education) panic, and have a low level of motivation.*' (50, F). '(…) *Parents of children who did not*

go to preschool are more anxious. Children's adaptation to school, and to reading and writing can be delayed due to these parents. Actually, we can say that preschool education also prepares parents to elementary school.*' (56, M).

Six of the participants (8%) asserted that parents of students who did not receive preschool education struggled more during the basal reading and writing process. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *I think parents of children who do not receive preschool education make more efforts. They struggle more to address the weaknesses of their children who are not ready.*' (4, M).

According to twenty of the teachers (26.6%), students who received preschool education and their parents go through a more effective process of basal reading and writing. The quotations regarding this view are given below: '(…) *Because students who received preschool education pass to reading and writing more easily, they do not have any problems in their relationships with their parents.*' (13, F). '(…) *Parents who send their children to preschool have a better process of basal reading and writing.*' (27, M). '(…) *There are no problems between students and parents.*' (28, M).

According to forty of the teachers (53%), students who receive preschool education and their parents experience a trouble-free process. These parents are more interested in their children's progress. On the other hand, the parents of those who do not receive preschool education are restless during the process, and struggle more to address their children's weaknesses. Based on the data obtained, it can be stated that preschool education enables a healthy relationship between students and parents, and help them experience a process free of problems.

The teachers' views related to the code "reflections of the student-parent relationship to the process" are presented in Table 7.

Table 7.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Reflections of the Student-Parent Relationship to the Process' Under the Theme "Effects on Parent-Child Relationship"

Teacher Views	f	%
The healthy relationship of students who receive preschool education with their parents in the basal reading and writing process leads to academic success.	9	12
The healthy relationship of students who do not receive preschool education with their parents in the basal reading and writing process leads to academic failure.	5	6.6
Students who do not receive preschool education worry to be abandoned in the basal reading and writing process.	3	4
Students who do not receive preschool education adapt to school late.	2	2.6
Students who do not receive preschool education	4	5

	f	%
experience school phobia.		
Students who receive preschool education do not need help from their parents in the basal reading and writing process.	4	5
There are no differences between the relationships of students who receive preschool education and those who do not with their parents in the basal reading and writing process.	6	8
TOTAL	33	44

As can be seen in Table 7, nine teachers (12%) stated that an healthy relationship between students who received preschool education and their parents contributed to their academic success in the basal reading and writing process. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) Those who receive this education become more successful.' (36, M). '(…) Students who receive preschool education express themselves better at school as well as at home. Since their relationships with family are better, this reflects to their school success.' (44,F).

Accoring to five of the teachers (6.6%), the relationship between students who did not receive cause their academic failure in the basal reading and writing process. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) In children who did not receive preschool education, illnesses like stomachache or headache when they sometimes cannot do what they are asked to do. Negative relationships appear between children, and parents who see this as a result of failure.' (1, M).

Three of the teachers participated in the study (4%) stated that students who did not receive preschool education worried to be abondened when they started elementary first grade. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '(…) In children who did not receive preschool education, adapting to school becomes challenging. We even see children who insist that their parents should wait in the classroom, or in the garden. They think they would be abondaned.' (2,F).

Two of the participants (2.6%) said that students who did not receive preschool education adapted to school late. The quotations regarding this view are given below: '(…) Students who do not receive preschool education adapt to school a little late.' (38, M).

Four of the teachers (5%) asserted that students who did not receive preschool education were anxious in the basal reading and writing process, and had school phobia. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) Because those who did not receive preschool education are anxious and feared of school, this is negatively reflected to their relationships with parents.' (6, M). '(…) When stu-

dents who did not receive preschool education start elementary first grade, they come to school with a fear.' (47, F).

Four of the teachers who participated in the study (5%) said that students who received preschool education did not need help from their parents in the basal reading and writing process. One of the quotations on this view is as follows: '(…) Since children's hand muscles are developed, they don't receive help from their families during the basal reading and writing activities.' (23,M).

According to six of the teachers (8%), there was no difference between the parental relationships of students who received preschool education and those who did not. The quotations regarding this view are given below: '(…) I don't think there would be much difference in the reading and writing process.' (10, F). '(…) I didn't see much difference between the relationships of those who received preschool education and those who did not with their parents.' (25,F).

According to 33 teachers who participated in the study (44%), a healthy relationship between parents and students positively affects the basal reading and writing process. For these teachers, if there is such a healthy relationship, students do not have school phobia, their anxiety levels are low, they do not feel that they will be abandoned, and they go through a successful academic process. Based on the data obtained, it can be argued that preschool education leads to academic success in the basal reading and writing process if there is a healthy relationship between students and parents.

As for the third research question "Does the state of obeying the school and classroom rules affect the basal reading and writing process in students who have received preschool education and those who have not according to teachers' views?", the theme 'Effects of Knowing About the Rules on the Reading and Writing Process' was formed. The codes that were combined in this theme included: 'Contributions to the skill of obeying the rules', 'Conveniences due to knowing about the rules'

The teachers' views related to the code "contributions to the skill of obeying the rules" are presented in Table 8.

Table 8.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Contributions to the Skill of Obeying the Rules' Under the Theme "Effects of Knowing About the Rules on the Reading and Writing Process"

Teacher Views	f	%
Students who receive preschool education know and apply the school and classroom rules.	18	24
Students who receive preschool education easily and quickly adapt to the school and classroom	23	30.6

rules.		
Students who do not receive preschool education have problems in adapting to the school and classroom rules.	11	14.6
Students who do not receive preschool education are more successful in adapting to the school and classroom rules.	3	4
Students who receive preschool education do not want to obey the school and classroom rules.	3	4
TOTAL	58	77.2

As is seen in Table 8, 18 of the teachers who participated in the study (20%) stated that students who received preschool education knew and applied the school and classroom rules. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) *Students who receive preschool education come to the classroom by being used to the school and classroom rules.*' (9, F). '(…) *Students who receive preschool education adapt the school and classroom rules better, and follow these rules without any problems.*' (13, F).

According to 23 teachers (30.6%), students who received preschool education quickly and easily adapted to the school and classroom rules. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *Students who receive preschool education are familiar to the classroom rules and can easily adapt to them.*' (8, M). '(…) *Those who receive this education are observed to perform great progress in adapting to the school and classroom rules, and almost of them fully adapt to these rules.*' (60, M).'(…)*They adapt to the rules more easily, and this has an influence on the reading and writing process.*' (21, M).

Eleven of the teachers who participated in the study (14.6%) stated that students who did not receive preschool education had problems in adapting to the school and classroom rules when they started elementary first grade. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '(…) *A new environment, and new friends, rules, they have difficulty in terms of adaptation. Like hitting their friends, throwing rubbish around, anger, jealousy, not packing up their belongings. Those who cannot adapt to school become alone and unhappy. This unhappiness may diminish the desire to go to school.*' (39, M). '(…) *Well, those who didn't go to preschool can't adapt to the classroom rules for a long time.*'(58, M).

Three of the participants (4%) asserted that students who did not receive preschool education were more successful in adapting to the school and classroom rules. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: *(…) I think those who didn't receive*

preschool education perform better in listening to the instructions and adapting to the rules.' (24, M).

Three of the teachers (4%) said that those who received preschool education did not want to follow three school and classroom rules when they started elementary first grade. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '(…) *Children who went to preschool can be too comfortable in the classroom. They acquire behaviours such as walking around the classroom and studying while standing up during the lessons.*' (46, F). '(…) *Students who received preschool education are more spoiled when it comes to rules. They don't obey the rules since they are used to the school environment.*' (47, F).

As is seen in Table 8, 58 of the teachers who participated in the study (77.2%) stated that students who received preschool education did not have any problems in obeying the school and classroom rules. These students adapt to elementary first grade more quickly and easily, and play an important role in ensuring the class order. On the other hand, those who have not received preschool education experience problems in obeying the school and classroom rules.

The teachers' views related to the code "conveniences due to knowing about the rules" are presented in Table 9.

Table 9.
Teachers' Views on the Code 'Conveniences Due to Knowing About the Rules' Under the Theme "Effects of Knowing About the Rules on the Reading and Writing Process"

Teacher Views	f	%
Because students who receive preschool education know about the school and classroom rules, they pass to reading and writing quickly.	5	6.6
Because students who do not receive preschool education do not have any problems in adapting to the school and classroom rules, they learn reading and writing late.	1	1.3
Students who receive preschool education perform positive behaviours in the basal reading and writing process such as listening to the teacher carefully, raising their hand to ask for permission to speak, and coming to the class in time.	7	9
There are no differences between students who receive preschool education and those who do not in terms of adapting to the school and classroom rules.	8	10.6
TOTAL	21	28

As can be seen in Table 9, 5 of the teachers who participated in the study (6.6%) stated that students who received preschool education learned reading and writing more quickly because they knew about the school and classroom rules. Some of the quotations from the teachers' views on this issue are as follows: '(…) *Students who received preschool education start elementary school by knowing the school and classroom rules. Since the period of*

adapting to the school and class is shorter, we can quickly pass to the basal reading and writing process.' (50,F).

Seven of the teachers (9%) said that students who received preschool education applied the classroom rules such as raising their hands to ask for permission to speak, coming to the class in time, and listening to the teacher carefully during the basal reading and writing process. The quotations regarding this view are as follows: '*(…) Students who receive preschool know about listening to the teacher carefully, raising their hand to ask for permission to speak and coming to the class in time. And this has an influence on the reading and writing process.' (14, F). '(…) Yes, sure. They know about the class times.' (38,M).*

Eight of the teachers who participated in the study (16.6%) stated that there were no differences between students who received preschool education and those did not in terms of obeying the school and classroom rules. Some of the quotations on this issue are as in the following: '*(…) I don't think there would be a difference between those who receive this education and those who do not regarding their obedience to the school and classroom rules.' (25, F). '(…) There isn't much difference in this respect. Their individual characteristics come to fore here as well.'(35,F).*

According to 21 teachers who participated in the study (28%), the awareness of students who receive preschool education regarding the school and classroom rules enables passing to reading and writing quickly. Those who have received preschool education come to elementary school by knowing about the classroom rules to a certain extent and do not have any difficulty in obeying them. This clearly leads to the acquisition of proper behaviours in the classroom and school, facilitates teachers' job, and increases the quality of the instructional process.

4. Results and Discussion

According to the teachers participated in the study, the basal reading and writing instruction is conducted more effectively and easily when the preschool education process supports students' physical development (all of the teachers, 100%), cognitive development (50 teachers, 66%), and social development (45 teachers, 60%). The elementary school teachers expected students who received preschool education to have completed their fine motor development, not have any problems in the hand-eye coordination, have the skill of holding a pencil properly, can successfully achieve activities such as cut-

ting, bonding and colouring paper, recognise numbers, do rhythmic counting, not have any problems in simple addition and subtraction, distinguish between colours, have the skill of comprehending visuals, have a developed attention span, not experience school phobia, get along well with their friends, be sharing and cooperative, obey the rules, be confident, and meet their self-care needs without any help. These results are consistent with the conclusion, which reads as "preschool education should enable individuals' development socially, and children should be aware of themselves, establish friendship with others and cooperate with them. Besides, activities towards ensuring students' fine motor development should be done, numeric skills, problem solving skills and ordering skills should be taught to them", reported in Senemoğlu's (1994) study titled "What Competences Should Preschool Education Provide?". The results also overlap with the finding "Developing fine motor skills, knowing the school and classroom rules, teaching drawing skills, knowing how to hold a pencil, colouring and pattern skills, the ability to express one's self, recognising letters, comprehending numbers, developing social skills, being reading emotionally, developing the listening skill, knowing addition-subtraction" reported in Yapıcı and Ulu (2010) in their study titled "Elementary First Grade Teachers' Expectations from Preschool Teachers".

According to forty of the teachers (53%) who participated in the study, there is a healthy relationship between parents and their children whom they send to preschool, which leads to a more effective basal reading and writing process. On the other hand, for 33 teachers who participated in the study (44%), this healthy relationship between parents and students also affects the basal reading and writing process positively. The results showed that parents of children who have received preschool education are interested in their children's progress in the basal reading and writing process. They are experienced in school culture, and have a healthy relationship with their children during this process. These results are in parallel with Pehlivan's (2006, p.59) finding that students who received preschool education shared about what they did at school with their parents more than those who did not receive preschool did. Since children who receive preschool education are in a healthy relationship with their parents, they are more successful in the basal reading and writing parents. Those who have not received preschool education are anxious to be abandoned, and adapt to school late, which cause them to fail academically.

Fifty-eight teachers who participated in the study (77.2%) stated that students who received preschool education performed more effectively with regard to obeying the school and classroom rules. As a result of the analyses, it was found that students who re-

ceived preschool education knew and applied the school and classroom rules, and did not have any problems in adapting to the school and classroom; thus, they learned reading and writing more quickly and free of problems. These findings are also consistent with what Kılıç (2008, p:95) reported as "Students who receive preschool education perform better in being willing to come to school, obeying the school and in-class rules, and following the rules of courtesy and good manner".

Students who have received preschool education start elementary school by knowing the school and classroom rules. Since they know about the concepts of school, classroom and teacher, they do not have any adaptation problems. They are more social and active compared to those who have not received preschool education. Therefore, students who have received preschool education do not cause teachers lose time in the basal reading and writing process in which these students are more successful as well. On the other hand, students who have not received preschool education exhibit introverted, shy and hesitant behaviours, have problems in obeying the rules, and have difficulty in adapting to school in the basal reading and writing process.

Based on these results, the following suggestions can be offered:
1. Considering that preschool education is preparation to elementary school, the outcomes of the curriculum should have the aim to prepare students to the next stage of education.
2. Preschool education should take into account the preparation to the basal reading and writing process while developing students physical, cognitive, affective and social behaviours. Curriculum development studies should be conducted in this respect.
3. Parents' awareness should be raised with regard to the importance of preschool education. How important parental support is in the basal reading and writing process should also be reflected to the preschool curriculum.
4. Teaching basal reading and writing should not seem as if it is merely the duty of elementary school teachers, and it should be kept in mind that preschool teachers also play an important role in this process. The Ministry of National Education should provide in-service training support to teachers working in preschool institutions on preparing children to the basal reading and writing process.

References

Büyüköztürk, Ş., Kılıç, Çakmak, E., Akgün, Ö. E., Karadeniz, Ş. ve Demirel, F. (2012). Bilimsel Araştırma Yöntemleri. Ankara: Pegem Akademi yayıncılık.

Christensen, L. B., Johnson, R. B. ve Turner, L. A. (2015). Araştırma Yöntemleri Desem ve Analiz (A. Aypay, çev.). Ankara: Anı yayıncılık (2014).

Ekiz, D. (2009). Bilimsel Araştırma Yöntemleri. Ankara: Anı yayıncılık.

Karaca, N. H., Gündüz, A. ve Aral, N. (2011).Okul Öncesi Dönem Çocuklarının Sosyal Davranışının İncelenmesi. Kuramsal Egitim Bilim, 4 (2), 65-76.

Kılıç, Z. (2008). İlköğretim Birinci Sınıf Öğretmenlerinin Görüşlerine Göre Okul Öncesi Eğitim Alan ve Almayan Öğrencilerin Gelişim Becerilerinin Karşılaştırılması, Yayınlanmamış yüksek lisans tezi, Beykent Üniversitesi, İstanbul.

Kuş, E. (2003). Nicel-Nitel Araştırma Teknikleri-Sosyal Bilimlerde Araştırma Teknikleri Nicel Mi? Nitel Mi? Ankara: Anı Yayıncılık.

Kuş, Z. ve Karatekin, K. (2009). Öğrencilerin Okul Ortamında Kurallara Uygun Davranma Yeterliklerinin Çeşitli Değişkenler Açısından İncelenmesi, Ahi Evran Üniversitesi Kırşehir Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, 10(1),183-196.

Ülkü, B. Ü. (2007). Anasınıfı Ve İlköğretim 1. Sınıfa Devam Eden Çocukların Velileri Ve Öğretmenlerinin, Çocukların Okul Olgunluğu Hakkındaki Görüşlerinin İncelenmesi, Yayınlanmamış yüksek lisans tezi, Çukurova Üniversitesi, Adana.

Pehlivan, D. (2006). Okul Öncesi Eğitim Alan Ve Almayan Öğrencilerin İlkokuma Yazmaya Geçiş Sürecinin, Öğretmen Ve Öğrenci Görüşleri Doğrultusunda Değerlendirilmesi (Nitel Bir Araştırma), Yayınlanmamış yüksek lisans tezi, Çukurova Üniversitesi, Adana.

Senemoğlu, N. (1994). Okul Öncesi Eğitim Programı Hangi Yeterlikleri Kazandırmalıdır?, Hacettepe Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, 10, 21-30.

Turaşlı, N. K. ve Zembat, R. (2013). 6 Yaş Grubu Çocuklarda 'Benlik Algısını Desteklemeye Yönelik Sosyal-Duygusal Hazırlık Programı'nın Etkililiğinin İncelenmesi. Nevşehir Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi, 2(2), 1-207.

Yapıcı, M. ve Ulu, F. B. (2010). İlköğretim 1. Sınıf Öğretmenlerinin Okul Öncesi Öğretmenlerinden Beklentileri, Kurumsal Eğitim, 3(1), 43-55.

Yıldırım, A. ve Şimşek, H. (2013). Sosyal Bilimlerde Nitel Araştırma Yöntemleri (5. Baskı). Ankara: Seçkin Matbaası.

Analysis Of Pre-School Children's Pictures In Terms Of Parents Attitude

Asst. Prof. Dr. Sema ÖNGÖREN and Asst. Prof. Dr. Perihan TUNÇ
Nevşehir Hacı Bektaş Veli University and Department of Early Childhood Education
semaongoren@nevsehir.edu.tr
perihantunc@nevsehir.edu.tr

Abstract. One of the tools with which pre-school children express themselves best is, undoubtedly, the pictures they have drawn. In pre-school period, pictures emerge as a stronger expression and communication tool than some behaviours and words that children have learned previously. Conducted studies indicate that children's pictures are parallel with universal development stages. Drawing, painting and three-dimensional figure activities are the concrete indicators of children's feelings, thoughts, perceptions, concepts, reactions and abilities. Since each child interprets his environment differently, varied culture, nurture and individual characteristics naturally cause differences in their pictures. This study, conducted with the aim of analysing children's pictures in terms of parent attitudes, was carried out in phenomenological design of qualitative research and children's pictures were analysed by using descriptive analysis method. Participants consisted of 30 children attending pre-school educational institutions in the centre of Nevşehir in 2015-2016 academic year. In the study, drawings about "family" were used with the purpose of collecting data. Pictures drawn by pre-school children about family were evaluated and interpreted by forming categories according to the results of conducted analyses.

Keywords: Pre-school, parent attitudes, children pictures

1. Introduction

Pictures have been considered as the signs and mirrors of people for years. For children, painting is a process gathering different experiences with the intent of creating something personal, unique and new. Painting process requires for a child to choose and organize colours, shapes and drawings by synthesizing many components such as content, style, shape and composition in order to convey a thought, feeling, event or observation (Yavuzer, 1993). Given that pictures are more meaningful than words and texts for pre-school children, painting may be considered as an ideal technique for the studies related to children in this period (Yavuzer, 2010).

Impact of subconscious is seen in children's drawings, especially in pre-school period. It is tried to be revealed what the drawings mean for the child beyond the figures by making him tell what he tries to express in his drawing. A child reflects his perception about himself, life, people and environment unconsciously in a human, tree or house picture which he draws by free association, without any preparation beforehand. This perception reflects the feelings stored in the subconscious of the child such as happiness, joy and trust and also feelings such as unhappiness, pain and mistrust depending on the experiences of him (Çankırılı, 2012). Drawings of the children express more things than it is thought. They are considered as the indicators of children's development, mental maturity, environment in which they grow up, problems, personal preferences, feelings and thoughts along with making them happy. All the children draw pictures; however, subjects and features reflected on their pictures vary because of the differences in their environment and culture (Ekinci, 2008).

Prepare your paper in the same style as used in this sample document. Unfortunately we cannot give technical support on the template. These instructions also contain the necessary information for manual editing. Authors should realize that once the accepted paper is submitted for publication in the book, the print and online version will be almost identical to the paper submitted for publication, except for the

pagination, volume, and copyright year information.

Drawings of the children not only give information about them but also reflect their frame of minds and relationships with their peers and adults. It is stated in the literature that family drawings reflect the attitude of the child towards the individuals in his family and how he perceive the family members and his role. Family drawings of the children are important to understand their interpersonal relations. Professionals working with children ask them to draw their family to understand their relations with family members. Family drawings help us to understand not only children's thoughts about themselves but also how they perceive themselves in their relations with the people important to them in their life (Malchiodi, 2005).

Making use of family drawings to understand children has been used since 1930s. Appel in 1931, for the first time, and then Wolff in 1942 emphasized that family drawings were helpful in understanding the personalities of children. Hulse compared the family drawings of normal and emotionally disturbed children in 1952. He realized that the children reflected their feelings about their parents and siblings and interpersonal relations in the family. Signs and symbols in the pictures where children express their family have gained more importance recently (Malchiodi, 2005). Researchers examining the family pictures drawn by children emphasize that family drawings involve features of form and content symbolizing the feelings and behaviours of the children apart from the ones clearly stated. A child may express these features subconsciously while drawing the family members (Di Leo, 1983: 72).

Children see their parents, siblings and relatives from their own point of views and draw accordingly; they convey their thoughts about them. Children reveal the interpersonal relations by drawing themselves and their family. Drawings of the children have the power to reveal the feelings of the social support and bonding areas in the family, changes in their perception of belonging to the family in time, communication in the family and development in the relations (Malchiodi, 2005).

Even though how the children place the figures and visual boundaries in their pictures while drawing their families enables us to form an opinion about their perceptions of family relations, it is difficult to reach a certain conclusion. For instance, while drawing a figure in separate place from the others, locking it in boundaries is considered as the expression of escaping, for some children it means independence. In the families where abusive behaviours are seen, the child may create a boundary in the picture with a sense of protection and escape (Malchiodi, 2005). When children having a healthy relation with their family are asked to draw their family, they draw their parents, siblings and themselves extremely well with their individual characteristics and details in a creative way (Malchiodi, 2005). On the contrary to children having a healthy relation, the ones with family problems who feel under pressure, think that domestic life comprises of violence and chaos and have the negative family opinion may resist to draw a family picture (Di Leo, 1983).

Children express more things than what is clearly seen in their pictures. In addition to the advantages to analyse the individuals, drawing also enables to evaluate the cultural and social determinants playing a role in choosing the topic and figures. Family drawings obtained in this study are considered as a tool to understand the feelings and thoughts that the children have difficulty in expressing and their relation with their family and also it is considered that they will lead the way for the families, teachers and individuals interested in this area to detect and solve the problems and to establish relations with the family. Additionally, they will be useful to obtain information about the child and establish a healthy relation with the child.

Purpose

Main purpose of this study is to analyze the parent attitudes in the family drawings of 48-72 months old children. Within the frame of this purpose, answers to the following questions were sought:

1. How is the use of colour in the children's family drawings?

2. What are the human figures in the children's family drawings?

3. What are the objects in the children's family drawings?

4. What is the size of the figures in the children's family drawings?

5. How did the children place themselves in their family drawings?

6. What are the subjects in the children's family drawings?

2. Method

2.1. Design of the Study

The study was carried out by using phenomenological design of qualitative research. Phenomenological studies aims at understanding the perception, knowledge and behaviours of the individuals about a phenomenon and assumes that every individual has an opinion about phenomenon (Fraenkel and Wallen, 2009). Phenomena may be things that we encounter frequently in our everyday lives. However, it does not mean that we have enough knowledge about the phenomenon. Phenomenological studies are ideal to explain the words that are not entirely unfamiliar to the individual but cannot be comprehended completely (Yıldırım and Şimşek, 2008).

2.2. Participants

In this study, purposeful sampling method of non-probability sampling methods was used. Purposeful sampling is frequently used in qualitative research in order to reach the appropriate sampling for the purpose of a study. This sampling involves suitable, reachable and ready human groups for the study (Cohen, Manion & Morrison, 2007). Participants of this research were comprised of easily accessible children attending pre-school educational institutions according to the purpose of the study (Yıldırım & Şimşek, 2008). Random approach in the selection of the schools and children was adopted and voluntary basis was taken into consideration. Within this context, family-themed picture of 48-72 month-old 30 children attending three private nursery schools in Nevşehir were involved in this study. Of the children participated in the study, 40 % (n:12) was female and 60 % (n:18) was male. With respect to age group, 56 % of the children (n:17) was 48-60 month-old and 43 % of them (n:13) was 61-72 month-old.

2.3. Data Collection

Data of the study consisted of children drawings. Data related to the drawing of the child were collected through information obtained from children's pictures. Data were collected within the scope of art activity which was in the flow of daily training of each school during the spring term of 2015-2016 academic year. In the stage of collecting data, permission was obtained by consulting to administrators of the institutions respectively. In the next process, teachers of the children that would attend the study were consulted and informed about the research and the process for individual study was planned. Children who were willing to draw pictures worked with the drawing materials individually in an environment where there was a table and chairs suitable for the physical features of them. Primarily, a brief conversation was carried out with the children with the intent of making them feel comfortable with the researchers and get used to different environment. Drawing paper of the same size (A4), crayons in 12 different colours, a pencil and an eraser were given to each child. Thereafter, the children were asked to draw "family" pictures. The children were informed that they could draw as how long they want until they complete their work and they were encouraged to draw pictures. From the moment of application guideline was given, reactions to the guideline and observations including the responses as well were recorded in black and white. These observations recordings included the drawing order of the figures in the pictures, whether they used eraser and asked questions, reactions and excitement they showed while drawing the figures and the sentences they uttered while drawing. Afterwards, the children were asked to explain their pictures and all the expressions of each child were written down.

2.4. Evaluation and Analysis of Data

The pictures collected from the children were analysed through content analysis method. Content analysis, used frequently in social sciences, can be defined as a systematic, repeatable technique in which words of a text such as a book, chapter of a book, letter, historical documents, newspaper headings and articles are summarized with its smaller content categories through coding depending on certain rules. Study is conducted in order to determine the presence of certain words or concepts in a cluster consisting of a text or texts (Büyüköztürk et.al, 2009). 30 pictures drawn by children were passed through a pre-selection first and whether the children draw the pictures in accordance with the guide-

line was evaluated. Later on, the pictures were analysed by three researchers separately in terms of semantics so as to ensure the coding reliability and explanations of the children about their pictures were analysed by making use of a coding list prepared beforehand on the basis of related literature. After this stage, data were organized and grouped according to the codes, and they were presented numerically when appropriate. Finally, the findings obtained were interpreted.

3. Results

The results of the study comprise of 6 themes and the sub-themes of them which were obtained through analysing family drawings of the children. The results of the study are shown in the tables below.

Table 1. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Colours Used by Children in their Family Drawings

Colours		f	%
1.	Red	20	15.38
2.	Blue	20	15.38
3.	Green	16	12.30
4.	Yellow	15	11.53
5.	Orange	15	11.53
6.	Brown	15	11.53
7.	Black	12	9.23
8.	Pink	8	6.15
9.	Purple	7	5.38
Total		**130**	**100**

When table 1 is examined, it is seen that the children used red (15.38 %) and blue (15.38 %) most while drawing family pictures. These colours were followed by green (12.30 %), yellow (11.53 %), orange (11.53 %) and brown (11.53 %) respectively. When children pictures were analysed, it was determined that some children gave priority to the use of single colour. The least used colour by the children was purple (5.38 %). Brown (11.53 %) and black (9.23 %) were determined to be used quite a lot by children, as well. It was observed that female children used vivid colours like red, yellow, orange and pink more compared to male children, male children preferred colours like blue, brown and black more and some children used different colours according to the gender of the figures they drew in their family pictures; for

instance, using blue while drawing the father and red for the mother.

Table 2. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Human Figures in Children's Family Drawings

People		f	%
1.	Mother	27	24.55
2.	Father	27	24.55
3.	Himself/Herself	27	24.55
4.	Sibling	19	17.27
5.	Other Family Members	10	9.09
Total		**110**	**100**

When Table 2 is examined, it is realized that the children drew their mother (24.25 %), father (24.55) and themselves (24.55 %) most in their family drawings. Sibling figure was 17 % and other family members (9.09) were the least drawn human figures. Other family members that were drawn consisted of grandmother, aunt, grandfather, cousin and uncle. The reason why sibling figure was less may be because most of the children were the only child. Some children did not draw their brothers and sisters although they had them. When children's drawings were examined, it was found out that only three of the children had not drawn the mother figure. It was determined that one of the children who did not draw the mother figure was from Social Services and Child Protection Agency and he was living with his foster-parents. When children's drawings were examined, it was realized that two of the children did not draw the father figure. While drawing her family, one of the female children said "I will draw my mother. Teacher, look! This is you and this is the sun! My father is a policeman".

Table 3. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Objects in Children's Family Drawings

Objects		f	%
1.	Sun	12	16.90
2.	House	9	12.67
3.	Door	9	12.67
4.	Window	8	11.26
5.	Vehicle	5	7.04
6.	Chimney	3	4.22
7.	Animal	3	4.22
8.	Cloud	2	2.81
9.	Television	2	2.81
10.	Roof	2	2.81
11.	Carpet	1	1.40
12.	Coffee Table	1	1.40
13.	Sofa	1	1.40

		f	%
14.	Vase	1	1.40
15.	Tree	1	1.40
16.	Flower	1	1.40
17.	Bush	1	1.40
18.	Grass	1	1.40
19.	Ladder	1	1.40
20.	Balcony	1	1.40
21.	Flowerpot	1	1.40
22.	Pool	1	1.40
23.	Sea	1	1.40
24.	Moss	1	1.40
25.	Rain	1	1.40
26.	Necklace	1	1.40
27.	Mosque	1	1.40
Total		**71**	**100**

When Table 3 is examined, it is seen that the children draw the Sun (16.90 %) most in their family drawings. Other objects drawn by the children were respectively house (12.67 %), door (12.67 %), window (11.26 %), vehicle (7.04 %), chimney (4.22 %), cloud (2.81 %), television (2.81 %) and roof (2.81 %). The children drew vehicles such as automobile, bus, tramway and bicycle as well as animals such as alligator, shark and octopus. There were many different objects evoking home and family life in children's drawings such as tree, flower, pool, flowerpot, sea, moss, vase, bush, grass, necklace, ladder, balcony, carpet, coffee table, sofa, rain and mosque.

Table 4. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Figure Dimension in Children's Family Drawings

Drawings		f	%
1.	Realistic	14	46.66
2.	Bigger than normal	12	40
3.	Smaller than normal	4	13.33
Total		**30**	**100**

Table 4 is examined, it is seen that realism (44.66 %) was at the forefront in children's family drawings. Children drew human figures and objects in accordance with their actual size mostly. 40 % of the children drew the figures bigger than their actual size and 13.33 % of them drew the figures smaller than their actual size in their family drawings. When family drawings by the children participating in the study are examined, it can be said that the children drew pictures which showed typical period features.

Table 5. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Place of the Child in Children's Family Drawings

Place		f	%
1.	Distant to father	15	23.80
2.	Distant to mother	12	19.04
3.	Close to mother	11	17.46
4.	Distant to sibling	8	12.69
5.	Close to father	7	11.11
6.	Close to sibling	7	11.11
7.	Not drawn	3	4.76
Total		**63**	**100**

When Table 5 is examined, it is seen that the children drew themselves distant to their father (23.80 %) most in their family drawings. The rates of the children drawing themselves distant to their mother (19.04 %) and close to their mother (17.46 %) are very close to each other in the table. Being distant to sibling (12.69 %) and close to sibling (11.11 %) are at very close rates. Three of the children (4.76 %) did not draw themselves in the family drawings. When children drawings were examined, it was determined that family members were close to each other in the pictures. Some children drew figures between the family members such as a house, coffee table, and door. Some children drew especially their siblings distant to family members.

Table 6. Frequency and Percentage Values Regarding the Subjects in Children's Family Drawings

Subject		f	%
1.	Activities done outside home	20	66.66
2.	Activities done at home	10	33.33
Total		**30**	**100**

When Table 6 is examined, it is seen that 66.66 % of the children drew their families doing various activities outside home. These activities were expressed by children as hiking, going home, going out, shopping, swimming, taking photos, hanging outside. 33.33 % of the children drew their family at home. Activities done at home were expressed by the children as watching TV, watching outside, sitting in the balcony, tidying up the messy home and eating.

4. Conclusion and Discussion

Pictorial representation has an important place as an expression tool enabling the intelligence, personality, qualities of immediate envi-

ronment and inner world of the children to be conveyed to us along with it is a database for the recognition of children in the psycho-pedagogical process. Drawing is also a projective technique used in psychology to determine family problems, communication problems and emotional problems that children experience (Serin, 2003).

When the family drawings of the children were examined, it was seen that the children used colours of red and blue most. It was determined that they generally preferred using primary and accent colours such as red, blue, green, yellow and orange more. It can be stated that the children were happy while drawing their families and that's why they drew them by using vivid colours and that there was not a problem between children and parents reflected in the drawings in terms of parents attitude. Malchiodi (2005) realized that yellow was predominant in happy drawings and brown was predominant in sad drawings and that red was the most preferred colour in the drawings of the children of all ages as a result of his studies. According to him, if the red is used predominantly in the drawings, it may represent assertiveness and aggression. Children preferring warm colours such as pink, yellow and orange are affectionate, well-adjusted and cooperative. Pure yellow is associated with energy, light and a positive feeling while blue is associated with calmness, depression, water and sky. Children preferring cool colours such as black, blue, green and brown may represent that they grow up in an oppressive family environment, they are assertive, shy, barely controlled, and divergent and that they suppress their real feelings. Predominant use of black reflects negative feelings. Burkıtt et.al (2009) determined that the children in the good/bad group used blue, yellow, red and purple for good people and brown and black for bad people in their study conducted with the aim of determining good/bad and happy/sad situations according to the colours. The children in happy/sad group chose red, pink and green in the beginning while they used orange, purple and yellow in their drawings.

The children preferred black and brown for sad and bad people.

When human figures in the family drawings of the children were examined, it was seen that they drew elementary family consisting of mother, father and the child. When it was realized that their family consisted of mother, father and siblings, it can be accepted as normal why they drew these figures. Akgün and Ergül (2015) found out in their study conducted with the intent of determining family perception in the drawings of pre-school children that children drawings were mostly attractive, cheerful, happy and enjoyable and that they generally drew the elementary family. When children drawings were examined in the study, it was determined that father figure was specifically bigger than other figures and that the children drew the parents that they felt close first and close to themselves. It was realized that the children drew the family members together, with compatible clothes for gender and in a positive activity.

Children's family drawings involve more than one human figure. Children place the family member in different ways and sizes. Children draw the person whom they found strong and establish identification with and who represents the authority so big that it can attract the attention at first glance. Some children draw themselves first and bigger than others. These children need their personality to be accepted and supported by their parents (Gillespie, 1994). When children's drawings in this study were examined, it was determined that some children did not draw their siblings or drew them away from their family. This situation may be the sign of jealousy between siblings and need of feeling close to the parents. Parents' discriminating between the siblings may also be the factor for children in determining to which parent they should draw his sibling close.

The family member drawn very small or last may be the person that child ignore or is disturbed by the presence of him. The person that is not drawn in the pictures is generally the sibling whom they are jealous of or in conflict. Children drawing themselves in a better position than their sibling in the family place themselves closer to their parents. Apart from that, a child feels different or isolated from his sibling; he will draw himself in a distant corner as not participating in the family activity. A child drawing himself close to his mother may ex-

press that he indulges his desires by drawing the person whom he thinks his mother love more out of the family circle (Gillespie, 1994).

When the objects in the drawings of the children in this study were examined, it was found that the children drew objects such as sun, house, door, window and vehicle most. People, houses and trees are the important factor in children's life because they are all around them. While children are drawing them, they express more things about themselves than it seems (Di Leo, 1983). The children's drawing the sun most as an object and drawing it on the corner of the paper as shining in the study may arise from the feeling that they are happy, comfortable and safe in the family. Most of the children's drawing of a house when the instruction of drawing a family picture is given may be interpreted as its evoking family life.

A house represents the place where compassion and safety are sought in family life. Animal are generally added in the drawing as they are part of a family. Trees, flowers and the sun is the expression of the need of a world that is limited by the house (Di Leo, 1983). When the house figures were examined in the study, it was found out that the children drew the house transparent and people and objects in the house could be seen. In some pictures, they drew chimney and smoke; this can be considered as the reflection of the aliveness in their homes on the pictures. When the children's drawings in the study were examined, it was determined that some children drew various figures between the family members and separated them from each other. The objects like a wall, table, TV and etc. drawn by a child between himself and family members may be the indicator of isolating himself from his family (Di Leo, 1983). Drawing an object between the mother and the father may mean incompatibility between parents and drawing an obstacle such as a tree road, bridge and river may mean the indifference of parents (Savaş, 2014). In the study, it was determined that male children drew vehicles such as automobile, bus and bicycle in their pictures. Including these vehicles in their pictures can be expected from them as a result of their developmental features when their interest in vehicles is taken into consideration. In today's society, automobile is the sign of power; therefore, automobiles are frequently seen in the pictures of male children. According to the researchers, children's drawings cars often and reflecting themselves as driving them indicates how much

they are dependent on technology, outside world and mechanical life style. In this study, one of the children drew wild animals such as an alligator, shark and octopus.

When children's family drawings were examined in terms of the size of the figures, it was found out that the children gave importance to originality and their pictures were realistic. The figures were mostly drawn in accordance with their original size and details like drawing a mouth, nose, ear, fingers and nails while they were drawing humans attracted the attention. In some pictures, there was exaggeration and the children used transparency, as well. This may mean that there is a positive relationship between the children and their parents. It was determined in the study that some children drew the human figures without arms and hands and some drew such big figures that they covered the whole paper. Additionally, some children drew human figures really small.

Pictures in a few centimetres size are mostly the products of coward, shy and introverted children. Small size is the sign of their lack of confidence. These children think that they are insecure, inadequate and underrated. Though it is rare, some aggressive children draw small figures due to their weak self-conception (Yavuzer, 2010). As a result of the study conducted by Tas, et.al (2006), it was stated that as the children grew older, the details in the drawings increased. Most of the 5-year-old children draw intentional pictures. They know what to draw beforehand. When children get closer to 6, the sizes in their pictures become more realistic; an improvement in placing the objects also draws the attention. Details in drawings increase, the figures placed randomly in the pictures begin to be gathered around a centre or they are placed on the bottom line, called ground line, more meaningfully. As a result of a research carried out by Cherney, et. al (2006) with 109 children at the ages of 5-13, it was detected that females drew clothes more than males and added typical figure details (for example, nail, arranged hair and jewellery) and that they drew human figures proportionally.

When children's placement in their family drawings was examined, it was seen that they mostly drew themselves distant to their father. This may result from a stronger bound between the children and mothers and especially children's spending more time with their mother at this age. In the pictures, the children drew the family members together and without any ob-

stacles among them. Three of the children did not draw themselves in their family pictures; this may be because of feeling isolated and inconsistent attitude of the parents between siblings.

In family drawings, a child expresses his own value and the feeling of belonging to the family through their place in the pictures; they may not include themselves in the picture. This reflects that the child perceive himself out of the group. In addition, they may not include family members in the pictures, as well. This may express that the child feels alienated, angry or rejected towards a parent. Not including a sibling in the pictures may be the expression of the wish of getting rid of that sibling and rejecting. On the contrary, if the child includes someone who is not in his family in the picture, this is generally associated with the close relationship and adoption (Chandler, Johnson, 1991).

When the subjects in the children's drawings were examined, it was found that most of the children drew their families outside home doing an activity. When the children were asked to explain the activities, they used positive expressions. While the interactions between family members are revealed through activities, at the same time it is thought that roles in the family can change according to different cultures. That gender difference affects the roles in the family was found out in the study conducted by Burns and Kaufman (1972). Female children drew their father as they were reading at 7 % rate and male children drew their father as they were cutting the grass at 8 % rate. On the other hand, female children drew the mother figure as she was cooking at 14 % rate and male children drew the same at 16 % rate. In the study, one of the children stated that his/her mother was angry with him/her and s/he was crying. This may indicate that children reflect the problems they have with parents on their drawings.

When the results of this study are generally examined, it is seen that family perception of the children is in the form elementary family structure consisting of mother, father and children, there is a positive relation, aliveness and happiness in their family life and when the results are examined in terms of parent-children relations, it is seen that democratic parent attitude is reflected mostly in the pictures. When the features of the children's developmental stages are taken in to consideration, they drew pictures as well as they are expected.

In this study, information and evaluations related to parent attitudes were presented based on the data obtained from children's drawings. In the further stages, studies can be carried to know the children by using different methods and techniques with a large sampling group and perceptions of children about different subjects can be analysed. Information and analysis related to the features of the families were not presented in this study. In further research, studies where family features and children drawings are compared with different variables such as divorce, parent conflict, violence or abuse in the family can be conducted. Additionally, when the importance of parent-child relation in the life of a child is taken into consideration, making use of family drawings can be suggested in the studies supporting this relation. Evaluating the drawings of the children periodically in terms of their developmental stages and informing the pre-school teachers about using these drawings as an evaluation tool are also important.

References

Akgün, E., ve Ergül, A. (2015). 55-74 Aylık çocukların resimlerinde aile algısının değerlendirilmesi, *Çukurova Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, Cilt: 44 Sayı: 2,* 209-228.

Bahçıvan-Saydam, R. (2004). Çocuk çizimlerinin klinik değerlendirmedeki yeri, *Yansitma Psikopatoloji Ve Projektif Testler Dergisi, Sayı: 1, No:1-2,* 111-124.

Burns, Robert C. & Kaufman, S. (1972). Actions, styles and symbols in kinetic family drawings. New York: Bruner/Mazel.

Burkitt, E., Barrett, M. & Davis, A. (2009). Effects of different emotion terms on the size and colour of children's drawings, *International Journal of Art Therapy, 14,* 74-84.

Büyüköztürk, Ş., Çakmak, E. K., Akgün, Ö. E., Karadeniz, Ş. ve Demirel, F. (2009). Bilimsel araştırma yöntemleri. (4. Baskı). Ankara: PegemA.

Chandler, L. A., & Johnson, V. J. (1991). Using projective techniques with children: a guide to clinical assessment. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas Publisher.

Cherney, I. D., Seiwert, C.S., Dickey, T.M. & Flichtbeil, J.D. (February, 2006). Children's drawings: a mirror to their minds, *Educational Psychology, 26 (1),*127-142.

Cohen, L., Manion, L. & Morrison, K. (2007). Research methods in education. (Sixth Edition). New York: Routledge.

Çankırılı, A. (2012). Çocuk resimlerinin dili. (3. Baskı). İstanbul: Zafer Yayınları.

Di Leo, J. H. (1983). Interpreting children's drawing. New York: Brunner/Mazel.

Ekinci, B. (2008). Göçe maruz kalmış 9-11 yaş çocukların kendilerini dışa vurma açısından resimlerin yorumlanması (Diyarbakır örneği). Yayımlanmış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, İnönü Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü.

Fraenkel, J. R. & Wallen, N. E. (2009). How to design and evaluate research in education. (7th Edition). New York: McGraw-Hill.

Gillespie, J. (1994): The projective use of mother-and-child drawings: a manual for clinicians. New York: Psychology Press.

Malchiodi, C. A. (2005). Çocukların resimlerini anlamak. (T. Yurtbay, Çev.). (1. Baskı). İstanbul: Epsilon Yayıncılık.

Savaş, İ. (2014). Çocuk resmi ve bilinçaltı. Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, İstanbul Arel Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü.

Serin, A. Y. (2003). Bir iletişim aracı olarak çocuk resimleri, *Çağdaş Eğitim Dergisi, Sayı: 28*, 17-23.

Tas, Y., Aslan, D. ve Sayek, İ. (2006). Doktorluk mesleğini resimlerinde nasıl yansıtıyorlar? 7-12 yaş grubu çocuklar arasında yapılmış bir örnek, *Sürekli Tıp Eğitimi Dergisi, Cilt 15, Sayı 11,* 184-191.

Yavuzer, H. (1993). Resimleriyle çocuk. (4. Baskı). İstanbul: Remzi Kitabevi.

Yavuzer, H. (2010). Çocuğu tanımak ve anlamak . (8. Basım). İstanbul: Remzi Kitabevi

Yıldırım, A. ve Şimşek, H. (2008). Sosyal bilimlerde nitel araştırma yöntemleri. (6. Baskı). Ankara: Seçkin Yayınları.

Negative Effects of Domestic Migration on Children

Asst. Prof. Veda Bilican Gökkaya*
Assoc. Prof. Gülay Ercins**

*Cumhuriyet University, Faculty of Letters; e-mail: bilican76@gmail.com

**Cumhuriyet University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences; e-mail:gercins58@gmail.com

Abstract

The migration phenomenon which has emerged due to various reasons throughout history and engraved deep traces on the socio-economic and cultural structures of societies is, in the most general sense, the "transition of people from a settlement area to another settlement area within a certain dimension of time" (İçduygu and Ünalan, 1998:38).

The migration movements which had started in the industrialized countries towards the end of the 18th century gained momentum in our country, especially in the 1950s. As it is in every country, the domestic (internal) migration is an important type of migration which has to be dwelled on with respect to its reasons and consequences, especially in our country which encounters many types of migration (such as internal, external, compulsory, voluntary, temporary and long-term migrations, etc.)

The domestic migration which is a dynamic process does not always create positive results as expected but since it creates a sudden and rapid change in the lives of individuals and societies, it deeply influences all individuals and especially children who experience this process. Therefore, the objective of this study which has the quality of a compilation is to draw attention to the problems which are encountered in the urban life (child labor, street children, juvenile delinquency, etc.) of the children who have migrated together with their families to cities for a better life.

Keywords: Migration, child, child labor, street children, juvenile delinquency

1. Introduction

Migration which has emerged due to various reasons throughout history and engraved deep traces on the socio-economic and cultural structures of societies is defined as the "transition of individuals or social aggregations from a settlement area to another one" (Ozankaya, 1984, p.56).

The migration movements which had started in the industrialized countries towards the end of the 18th century gained momentum in our country especially in the 1950s and especially the city and urbanization have gained dynamism with domestic migrations. "Changing the living environment of individuals (or communities) within the borders of a country, on condition that it is less than a year" which is called domestic migration (Pazarlıoğlu, 2007, p.121) is realized in our country generally from rural areas towards the city.

In the general sense, the process of domestic migration which starts as a result of the push factors of rural areas and pull factors of cities, though it is a tough experience for everybody (children, young, woman, man, elderly people) who experience this process, affects all individuals at different levels.

The migration which is not only a change of locations does not always give birth to positive results as expected but since it creates a sudden and rapid environment change, it

also deeply influences the children from those individuals who experience this process.

2. Migration

Migrations are dynamic events which leave deep traces on the socio-economic and cultural structures of societies. "Migration, which was in the field of interest of only geography among social sciences for a long period, but because of its reasons and the consequences it has created, which constitutes the interest and study area of various sciences and disciplines like; sociology being in the first place, demographics, economics, environmental sciences, urban sciences, jurisprudence, socio-psychology and architecture nowadays (Erkan, 2010, p.119) and because of different points of view, is a concept which is also hard to define. However, in the most general sense, migration is defined as the "transition of people from a settlement area to another settlement area within a certain dimension of time" (İçduygu and Ünalan, 1998, p.38).

Since it is a result because it has emerged in relation to social and economic changes and it is a cause because it contributes to social and economic changes (İçduygu and Sirkeci, 1999:250), another definition of migration is "moving from the main place to a place which is desired to be reached" (Karpat, 2003, p.3).

Some researchers have separated/classified migration which does not present a static characteristic according to its direction, some researchers according to its duration, some according to its form of realization and some according to the willingness or unwillingness of the ones who migrate. That is to say;

*Migrations are divided into five groups according to the duration of migration, as "temporary migrations (seasonal, daily and short-term), transfers (of those who migrate because of assignation and duty reasons), long-term migrations (of those who migrate because of business/working reasons, and the migrations of those who are forced to migrate because of various reasons like zoning for housing and of those who are not really migrants (those who never migrate, potential migrants)" (Özcan, 1998, p.83)

*Migrations are divided into five groups according to the form of realization as controlled, compulsory, primitive, free and forced (Gündüz and Yetim, 1996)

* They are divided into two groups according to the willingness or unwillingness of those who migrate as compulsory and voluntary migrations (Erder, 1997, p.144)

*They are divided into two groups according to the direction of the migration as internal (domestic) and external migrations (Akkayan, 1979, pp.22-23).

The term "domestic migration" which is in the focus of our subject and which causes many reasons and consequences is used to mean "changing the living environment of individuals (or communities) within the borders of a country, provided that it is less than a year". Depending on the size of countries, economic development levels, and settlement dates, the domestic migration generally occurs from rural areas towards cities, from rural areas towards rural areas, from cities towards rural areas and from cities towards cities (Pazarlıoğlu, 2007, p.121)

As it is in every country, in our country which encounters many types of migration, especially the domestic migrations are an important type of migration which has to be dwelled on with respect to their reasons and consequences. The reasons of the domestic migrations which are generally realized in our country from the countryside to cities are the push factors of the countryside and the pull factors of the city. "The reasons for the push factors of the countryside are situations such as the rapid increase in population, agricultural lands becoming narrow, increase in mechanization in agriculture, decrease in agricultural labor force, climate conditions being bad in some places, economic insufficiency and social problems, natural disasters and wars, terrorism threatening human security, insufficient off-season economic activities, limited working possibilities and insufficiency of education and health services. The reasons for the pull factors of the city are factors such as the urban life which seems attractive, extensiveness of the services like education, health, etc., transportation possibilities, developed industry and service sectors in cities, excessiveness of employment/business possibilities, etc." (Keleş, 1996:113-114).

"However, besides the positive consequences of the migration from the point of view of the one who migrates like being a new lifestyle, increasing opportunities which will be benefited from, providing occupational and social dynamism, there are also various negativities like the badness of the financial situation, unemployment and psychological problems" (Taş and Özcan, 2013:291).

In other words, the domestic migration which individuals realize for a better life also brings many problems with itself or if we put it differently, it also becomes a source of many problems (unemployment, settlement, dwelling, environment, infrastructure, transportation, health, education, crime, security, etc.) The domestic migration which deeply influences especially women and children also causes children to encounter labor, street, crime and drug problems.

3. Domestic Migration and Child

Though migration influences the individuals who migrate (adult, young, child, woman, man) differently, it influences especially women and children much more. Moreover, many studies support this idea and determine that "children and adolescents are under risk during the migration process much more than adults and they explain the reason for this as the necessity to cope with the sudden change and physical-mental growth which come with migration at the same time" (Kalkım and Toraman, 2014:292).

In urban centers, newcomer families who have come because of various reasons and especially because of economic reasons (poverty, unemployment, etc.) gather together with other irregular communities which are left outside the current social structuring and which themselves are newcomers to the city and they constitute the most sensitive section of the society. The difficulty to find a job outside the informal sector which is based on unskilled labor, and even if they have found one, the wages/salaries being rather low and the income levels of such families mostly being pretty low mean that they lead a life below the poverty line (Polat, 2008:152-153).

In other words, individuals who have come to the city by migration but could not have integrated with the city and with the impossibilities which poverty brings, who cannot sufficiently benefit from the rights like education, health, social security, etc. and since their training levels are low, who do not have proper jobs come up against poverty in the city.

UNICEF (2006) determines the characteristics of the children who come up against the risk of poverty as; "the children who are born in multi-child families, children who grow in rural areas, children who grow up in single-parent families, children whose families have migrated to the city, children of parents who do not have regular incomes, disabled children or children who have disabled individuals in their families" (Quoted by: Kurnaz, 2007:50).

The individuals who have migrated from the countryside to the city generally because of poverty, in order to deal with the poverty in the city and continue their lives, direct the children in the family to working in order to contribute to the family budget.

As it is in many countries, the problem of a child taking place in the working life at early ages is one of the principal problems which are experienced in our country.

3.1. Domestic Migration and Child Labor

One of the most important problem areas which come up against us with migrations is the child labor/labor force. According to the definition which the International Labor Organization (ILO) has made, the child labor force is employing children in works which debar children from their childhoods, potentials, and honors and damage their physical and mental developments. …while ILO accepts the 15-24 years of age group as young, it calls those who are under 15 years of age and who work with the purpose of contributing to the family budget or earning their livings as 'child workers' or 'children who work' (quoted from ILO by: Kulaksız, 2014:97).

The principle factors which cause child labor are "migration, unfair income distribution, insufficient education, the inequality of opportunities in education, increase in population, unemployment, poverty, unemployment of adults, lacking regulations which cannot be implemented effectively, demands of employers for child labor force, unpaid family labor and employment in agriculture" (Gülçubuk, 2012:79).

One of the most important factors which cause the child labor to be used in the social sphere is surely the economic factors. "In cases when poverty and unemployment have become chronic for families, it is seen that children are mostly pushed towards the work life" (Bilgin, 2009:238). "Actually, the children who work step in the process especially in those periods when their fathers are unemployed and do not participate in the social production" (Ekin, 2000:260).

Children who enter the work life actively at young ages because of the economic insufficiency of their families or labor requirements, since they have not received vocational training, are employed as unskilled workers with low salaries or for free or without social security. Among the children actively participating in the working life; while a big part of those who are employed without a salary in the agricultural sector work in enterprises which belong to their own families, another part work as day-laborers or salaried employees under difficult conditions away from their families and deprived of social security. Children who work in cities are generally employed in small-sized enterprises, in unhealthy environments, in heavy works, receiving low wages, for long periods and without being availed of social security opportunities (Polat, 2008:153-154).

According to the 2015 data of the Turkish Statistical Institute (TÜİK), 29% of the Turkey's population consists of the children population. In the year 2015, the rate of participation of children in the 15-17 years of age group in the labor force is 21%. In the participation of children in the labor force, differences according to the gender have been observed. While the rate of participation in the labor force among boys was 29.4% in the year 2014, this rate decreased to 28.6% in 2015. While this rate among girls was 12.1% in 2014, it increased by 0.9 points up to 13% in 2015 (www.tuik.gov.tr).

The data of the Turkish Statistical Institute (TÜİK) for children working in economic activities between the years 2006-2012 according to the age group, gender and sector are as follows:

While the working child population within the 6-14 years-of-age range is 890 thousand within the total population in the

year 2006, it is 893 thousand in 2012. While the working child labor force in the agriculture sector is 326 thousand in the total population in the year 2006, it is 399 thousand in 2012. While this rate in the industry section is 275 thousand in the year 2006, it is 217 thousand in 2012. In the service sector, while this rate is 289 thousand in the year 2006, it is 277 thousand in 2012. While the total child population within the 6-14 years-of-age range is 285 thousand in the year 2006, it is 292 thousand in 2012. While the population working in the agriculture sector in the year 2006 is 152 thousand, this rate is 200 thousand in 2012. While it is 50 thousand in the industry sector in the year 2006, it is 40 thousand in 2012. While it is 83 thousand in the service sector in the year 2006, it is 52 thousand in 2012. The labor force rates within the 15-17 years-of-age range are as follows; while the total population is 605 thousand in the year 2006, it is 601 thousand in 2012. While the population working in agriculture is 174 thousand in the year 2006, it is 198 thousand in 2012. While the labor force rate in the industry sector is 225 thousand in the year 2006, it is 178 thousand in 2012. While this rate is 206 thousand in the service sector in the year 2006, it is 225 thousand in 2012 (www.tuik.gov.tr).

While the rate of the children who are wage workers or casual employees within the 6-14 years-of-age range in the total child population is 103 thousand in the year 2006, it is 70 thousand in 2012. While the rate of the children working on their own account is 6 thousand in the year 2006, it is 1 thousand in 2012. While the rate of unpaid family workers is 176 thousand in the year 2006, it is 222 thousand in 2012. While this rate for wage workers and casual employees within the 15-17 years-of-age range is 402 thousand in the year 2006, it is 400 thousand in 2012. While the rate of those working on their own account is 18 thousand in the year 2006, it is 9 thousand in 2012. While the rate of the children who are unpaid family workers is 186 thousand in the year 2006, it is 191 thousand in 2012 (www.tuik.gov.tr).

"Hence, thousands of children who are still at the age to play games, who do not yet completely know themselves and their environments and who have not reached edictal sufficiency work in jobs which do not conform to international standards and where training

and health services are insufficient. Therefore, those children workers whose rights to play games and be educated have been taken from their hands cannot complete their physical, biological and mental developments and they grow up as unhealthy individuals in the future" (Yüksel, Adıgüzel and Yüksel, 2015:23).

In the study which was conducted in the city center of Eskişehir by Şişman (2006:252), it was mentioned that these individuals who are actually the future of societies come up against the heavy and dangerous conditions of the work life at early ages and for a lot of children, working is transformed into an implementation which shakes the foundation of the human rights and therefore, working most of the time causes children to remain uneducated, their physical and intellectual development to be negatively affected and finally, with respect to the society, many negativities which are difficult to be repaired.

Furthermore, Lordoğlu and Etiler (2014:129) who address the effect of the child labor on children argue that one of the effects of the child labor on the child body is the physical stress and load which the child body that still continues to grow faces during working and with this physical loading, the energy which the child spends daily increases and if the increasing energy requirement of the child cannot be rearranged and put in its place with the nutrition, the growth and development of the child who is still growing up will slow down and therefore, the child will fall behind his/her peers. This situation in children is put forth with the criteria like the stature according to age and weight according to age. The studies show that working children fall behind their peers with respect to both stature and weight.

Standing on feet for long hours in cold and in an environment which is not airy and working unprotected with dangerous machines have a negative effect on the body health of the working child and it also causes the impairment of his/her social and psychological health (Kaştan, 2015:222).

Briefly, "how the child concept is perceived by societies is as important as the definition of the child concept. According to the traditional understanding in underdeveloped economies, beyond the family phenomenon, the child means the potential labor force which can contribute to the economic development of the family and at later ages of the family a tool for social security. In this understanding, the child is a free labor force and the only capital of poor people. In families which have adopted the urban lifestyle, the child is a being which is kept away from the working life while he/she is giving the feeling of being a family to the family members and preparing for the future" (Kulaksız, 2014:97).

3.2. Domestic Migration, Street and Child

The other one of the important problem areas which domestic migration puts up against us is that the street is seen as a working and living area for children. "Poverty, migration, irregular urbanization and unhealthy settlement areas which migration brings with itself, fragmented family, violence in the family, different husbands and wives and their children, sexual and emotional abuse, lack of education and all kinds of abuse and neglects push children outside the family towards aimlessness and consequently, towards the street" (Polat, 2008:154-155).

Children who are pushed towards streets due to various reasons show, with their lives and purposes, differences also among themselves. Since the street child phenomenon carries a wide meaning content, it may be used incorrectly most of the time. For this, UNICEF defines the street children concept in three categories according to the level of children's relationships with their families:

Group 1: Children who are in the continuous contact with their families are 'children who work on the street'. Even if they spend their days working on the street, they are children who are under their families' protection and inspection.

Group 2: These are 'children on the street' who get in contact with their families from time to time. Even though their family bonds are weakened, they are not broken completely. They still identify themselves with their mothers, fathers, brothers and sisters. They are children who spend their days on the street selling something or wandering around but who spend their nights mostly at their home.

Group 3: Children who never get in contact with their families are 'children of the

streets (street)'. In general, they are the children of the poorest section of the society and fragmented families. These children who have left their families on their own accord or by force spend 24 hours of the day on the street (Quoted from UNICEF 1998 by Güngör, 2013:423; Erkan and Erdoğdu, 2006:83; İçli, 2009:13).

In Şişman's study conducted on the subject (2006:261-267), it is seen that 89% of the children working on the street have started working on their own accord, 8.1% of them at the instance of their families and 2% of them with the effect of the environment; 93.4% of the children working on the street are boys and a percentage like 6.6% which can be considered to be low are girls; 18.2% of the children working on the street do not receive education; mothers of 92.4% and fathers of 16.7% of them do not work and 69.7% of the working fathers are workers, construction workers or hawkers.

In the study of Atauz (2001:171), it was determined that children working on the street are mostly boys and at 7-15 years of age and they give their income to their families so, they contribute to the family budget by working.

When the distribution of the jobs which children working on the street perform is examined, it is seen that a clear majority (30.8%) of the children working on the street are "simit" (kind of bagel) sellers. The reason for this is that simit selling does not require any capital, vocational knowledge or experience. However, besides this, there are also those who sell goods like chewing gums, flowers, paper tissues, water, etc. and there are "weighers" (who weigh people with scale devices) and those who sell lottery tickets, wipe windshields of cars, distribute leaflets and flysheets, carry water to visitors in cemeteries, collect recyclable waste material (paper, cardboard, metal, etc.) and there are also beggars (Şişman, 2006:266-267).

Children working on streets due to many reasons mentioned before and poverty face various dangers with respect to health too. These dangers are: upper respiratory tract infections and skin problems which arise because of dirt, pollution and weather conditions; the risk of inclining to alcohol and drug use for children who work near places where alcohol is served and sold and for those who shine shoes the risk of being exposed to paint and polish materials; and in those who collect waste materials and do cleaning, the risk of being exposed to the effects of chemical materials like lead and mercury, the risk of heavy load lifting, and parasite infection risks, etc. (Okumuş, 2009:20).

In other words, "working on streets at first glance, especially in the fields like paper tissue, book, vegetable/fruit, etc. selling, seems like it does not contain very heavy and dangerous conditions. But when it is deeply investigated, besides the direct negative effects like working hours up to 7 days of the week and 14 hours per day, insufficient nutrition and malnutrition, being exposed to physical violence, sexual assault, lack of education and compassion, and when the indirect effects like the ease of switching to living on the street from working on the street and the ease of picking up bad habits like using addictive substances are added, working on the street influences the physical, mental and psychological developments of children in the negative direction" (Polat, 2008:156).

According to Karatay et al. (2003), working on the street causes children to be on the street for long hours, have nutrition problems, encounter health problems and their education to be disturbed or hindered (Quoted by: Kurnaz, 2007:53).

As it is clearly indicated in the Research Report of the Grand National Assembly of Turkey (2005), "A lot of factors such as squatting, migration, unemployment, economic insufficiency, cultural values which encourage the child to work on the street and earn money, sexual assault in the family, rape and violence, freedom and attraction of streets, uneducatedness of the child, families neglecting and exploiting their children, friend groups, negative publications and telecasts of the media, attraction of uninspected game arcades, adults giving money to street children with humane sentiments, which are formed with the rapid urbanization process in Turkey, cause these children to increase in number" (Quoted by: Alptekin, 2011:26).

3.3. Domestic Migration and Juvenile Delinquency

The other one of the important consequences of the migration from rural areas to the city with respect to children is crime and delinquency. Crime is "action which the law inflicts punishment on" (Bayındır et al., 2007:96). With another definition, crime is "actions which exceed personal space and enter public space and break rules which are forbidden by the laws and therefore legal penalties are imposed on and which require intervention of the public authority (state or local organization)" (quoted from Gordon 1998 by: Güngör, 2013:422; Yıldız, 2009:1105-1112). In the criminology literature, crime is defined as "all kinds of actions which are clearly forbidden by the laws and for which a penalty is stipulated in return" (Dolu, 2012:34).

In our country, according to the Turkish Criminal Law, everybody under 18 years of age is accepted as a child and therefore, the concept of "juvenile delinquency" contains both childhood and adolescence periods (Kocadaş, 2007).

At the moment when the child is born, it is neither a 'good' nor a 'bad' being and it is in interaction with its environment like adults and it keeps on developing every moment. What determines if it is good or bad are its experiences. Family, environment, economic structure, and education constitute the determiners of these experiences. The introduction of the crime to the child is a social problem (Güngör, 2013:422).

Korkmaz and Erden (2010:77-78-79) predicate the risk factors of juvenile delinquency which is a social problem on three factors. These are familial factors, factors in relation to the child and environmental factors. Namely;

Familial Factors; It is indicated that familial factors have a very powerful effect on children's positive and negative behaviors. It was put forward that the relations between parents and children play an important role in juvenile delinquency and in the families of the children who have turned to crime, much more family violence (spousal abuse, child abuse, elderly abuse, physical and emotional abuse), a weaker bond with parents and much more insufficiency in family functionality are observed and it was detected that children perceive their parents more negatively with respect to various variables. On the other hand,

the socio-economic status of parents and their educational levels are also risk factors. It was indicated that as the education levels of parents increase, the probability for children to get involved in crime decreases and well-educated parents reduce this probability with different experiences and points of views they have acquired in child rearing. Furthermore, the low economic income was found to be associated with juvenile delinquency and when children were questioned what it was that pushed them towards crime, it was seen that they indicated 'economic difficulties' in the first place. It is thought that the socio-economic situation of the family determines the school and environment conditions which children are in and this has an effect on the peer groups with which the child spends time and therefore whether the criminal behavior will occur or not will play an important role in such cases.

Factors in Relation to the Child; It is set forth that many variables like the working status of the child, his/her drug and alcohol use, intelligence, psychological state, personal characteristics and gender may play a role in his/her criminal behavior.

Environmental Factors; Environmental factors play an important role in juvenile delinquency. It is indicated that especially economic conditions and external environmental-living conditions have an important effect on juvenile delinquency. Poverty, migration, the effect of peers who exhibit criminal behaviors and effect of media organs are important.

Furthermore, Işık (2006:287-299) has sorted the psycho-social risk factors in relation to juvenile delinquency as follows: coming face to face with violence either at home or in society, being exposed to violence in the family, drug habit, bad friend relationships, cognitive insufficiencies in using skills, being away from the competence to express their skills in the ways which the society accepts, being victims of violence, insufficiency of families' attention and single-parent families (Article of Zengin Kesgin).

Based on all these, it can be said that the family structure in which the child is present (or lives), relationships within the family, inspection and authority, economic power of the family, child's social environment/group

and the values of this environment are the factors which prepare the child for crime.

Many researchers who draw attention especially to migration and poverty among these factors argue that there is a very important relation between migration and poverty and juvenile delinquency. "In a study which was conducted in Ankara, it was detected that the majority of the children who are brought to the Courthouse of Ankara with allegations of crime have come to Ankara by domestic migration and suffered from economic difficulties and it was put forward that migration and squatting in big cities pave the way for conflicts and stresses between social groups and in relation, this causes children to turn especially into serious acquisitive crimes increasingly" (Korkmaz and Erden, 2010:81).

According to İçli (2007:314), the studies conducted give the result that juvenile delinquency is high in places where population increase is rapid, settlement conditions are bad and where there are poverty, disease and adult criminals.

"When the data which the Law Enforcement Agency recorded between the years 2003-2005 are examined, it is seen that, throughout the country, there was a meaningful increase in criminal events especially such as theft, robbery and snatch and a great majority of such crimes was committed by children under 18 years of age" (Kocadaş, 2007).

It was set forth with the studies conducted (Wolff, 1999:145) that the highest crime rate is observed in boys who live only with their mothers or who have lost their parents.

According to the data of TÜİK, the numbers of children who came or were brought to security units in the year 2014 are as follows; it was seen that 57.5% of the children were in the 15-17 years-of-age group, 24.5% of them were in the 12-14 years-of-age group and 17.9% were under 11 years of age. In the year 2014, 68.3% of the children who came or were brought to security units were boys and 31.7% of them were girls. 45.2% of the children were victims in the year 2014, 40.5% of them were brought to security units because of delinquency, 6.4% of them were lost (found) children, 3.5% of them came or were brought in order to be asked for infor-

mation and 4.5% came or were brought to security units due to other reasons. 45211 children out of 117.486 in total who were brought to security units because of delinquency were attributed the crime of physical injury. The crimes which follow this are theft with 30.498 children and drug use, selling or buying it with 8.855 children. Besides, 4.391 children were brought and charged with the offense of threat and 4.212 children were brought to security units and charged with property damage (www.tuik.gov.tr).

On the other hand, the risks which street children may encounter on the street also contain a large variety of high-level dangers. These risks are physical, sexual and emotional abuses, prostitution, accidents and physical injuries, volatile substance addiction, guilt, illegal amputation by organ mafia, impossibility to receive education, etc. (Meder, 2008:210).

Even though many of the children working on the street are not cigarette, alcohol, and drug users, however, since they live side by side with street children most of whom are known to be addicts of such materials, the risk of being influenced by them is highly probable (Şişman, 2006:271).

A part of the children who live/work on the street, as a consequence of the trauma they have experienced because of being exposed to intrafamilial violence, neglection, abuse and apathy and because of using volatile substances and drugs, try to suppress their fears, chilling/freezing feels, hungers and lovelessness (Güngör, 2013:423).

The other one of the dangers which children living on the street may encounter is child prostitution. In Turkey, the most important reason for child prostitution which means the child being used in sexual activities in exchange for material or other kinds of advantages (UN Supplementary Protocol, 2002) is indicated as the economic and social difficulties which families experience because of migration (Yücel, Karatay and Ögel, 2006).

Therefore, children who migrate with their families with different hopes from rural areas to cities come face to face with poverty in the city and some of them start working in factories and workshops and some on the street and in the meantime, they are drawn towards crimes because of individual, familial

and environmental factors and cannot keep pace with the city and live with the fear of being alienated and remain pressed between the cultural values which they have brought from the rural area and the cultural values in the city in which they live at the moment and this results in them in the form of many behavior disorders, lack of self-confidence, low academic success in education, failures in social relationships, depression and even suicide.

As a result, "the child who turns towards the crime is the one who pays the price for the disorders in the family and society, and afterward makes the society pay for them." For this reason, there is no child who commits a crime but there are children who are pushed towards crime" (Yıldız, 2009: 1105-1112).

General Evaluation and Conclusion

The migration which has a dynamic structure all throughout the human history – with its reasons and consequences – creates a sudden and rapid change in the social structure and influences the society and individuals sociologically, culturally, economically and physically. There is no doubt that it is children who are one of those who are directly or indirectly affected by this migration process.

Families who migrate from rural areas to cities due to reasons such as mechanization in agriculture, lands breaking into pieces, low incomes or imbalances in the distribution of the income, unemployment, poverty, terror, natural disasters, etc. also make their children work in order to hang onto the life and survive in the city. Children who do not have the physical and emotional proficiency yet and since they are unskilled because they are not educated or could not have completed their education because of poverty work with low salaries and under bad conditions and without social securities and this creates a lot of physical and emotional, etc. problems in them. Therefore, firstly, the elements which cause migration (imbalances in the distribution of the income, unemployment, poverty, etc.) should be resolved completely in order to eliminate the negative conditions of migration and especially of the domestic migration. For this purpose, the places from which migrations come should be determined and both the public and private sectors should make investments in such places and create and support employment areas and; the economic, political,

social and cultural reasons which lie behind the children who are forced to work and live on streets should be put forward and solutions should be produced. Thus, while the employments created make it possible for the parents to work, the children should be able to complete their education. "Because, it seems that it is the greatest help for children under any circumstances whatsoever that their education can begin, continue and they can be released from the negativenesses of the migration and the harmonization process can be implemented. From this point of view, the necessary measures should be taken in order to make the education more efficient and not to allow any interruptions in this implementation" (Bilgili et al., 1997: 337).

As Akarslan (1998: 26-27) has also indicated, there is no child who works on his/her own accord. The childhood is the age to play, grow up and be educated. When a child is forced to work all day long, it does not only negatively influence his/her education, health, and body development, it also has an effect on his/her personality development. The most productive years of education melt down away before the little income which enters the family. For this reason, making children work for long-term is an inefficient investment. It means that a child who could not have completed his/her education and who has remained half-finished is a slave to remain a worker for a lifetime.

On the other hand, taking the muchness of the factors like the "lack of parental love, rejection by parents, discipline matters (tough/hard parent discipline and abuse, loose discipline and rarity of discipline implementations), disharmony and violence in the family, quality of the relationship which is established with father/mother in single-parent families" (Çifci, 2009: 76) into consideration, in order to prevent children from drifting towards crime, the families should be supported from all aspects (socio-culturally, economically, etc.) and the children should spend time of good quality with their families and develop healthy relationships and be taken away from the street. In order to do this, more effective social policies which are directed to supporting good sides of children should be developed.

In short, starting from the principle that the child is an individual in the social life,

he/she should be approached not as an income source of a family which is fighting with poverty but as an individual who should benefit from his individual rights and freedoms completely since children are our future.

References

[1] A. Bilgili, F. Aydoğan, C. Güngör; Doğu Anadolu Bölgesi'nde Zorunlu Göç Olgusunun Sosyolojik Çözümlenmesi: Van Örneği *[Sociological Analysis of the Forced Migration Pehomenon in the Eastern Anatolia Region: Van Example]*, II. Ulusal Sosyoloji Kongresi (Toplum ve Göç) *[2nd National Sociology Congress (Society and Migration)]* Ankara: Sosyoloji Derneği Yayınları, 1997.

[2] A. İçduygu, T. Ünalan; Türkiye'de İç Göç Sorunsal Alanları ve Araştırma Yöntemleri *[Domestic Migration's Problematic Areas in Turkey and Research Methods]* Edit.: A. İçduygu et al., Türkiye'de İç Göç *[Domestic Migration in Turkey]* (iç.), İstanbul: Türkiye Ekonomik ve Toplumsal Tarih Vakfı Yayınları, 1998.

[3] A. İçduygu, İ. Sirkeci; Cumhuriyet Dönemi Türkiye'sinde Göç Hareketleri *[Migration Movements in the Period of Republican Turkey]* Edit.: O. Baydar, 75.Yılda Köylerden Şehirlere *[From Villages to Cities in the 75th Year]* (iç.), İstanbul: Tarih Vakfı Yayınları, 1999, pp. 249-260.

[4] A. Kalkım, A.U. Toraman; Göçmen ve Göçmen Olmayan Ergenlerin Riskli Sağlık Davranışlarının Belirlenmesi *[Determination of the Risky Health Behaviors of Adolescents who are Migrants and not Migrants]*, TAV Preventive Medicine Bulletin, 13 (4). 2014, pp. 289-294.

[5] B. Gülçubuk; Tarımda Çocuk Emeği Sömürüsü ve Toplumsal Duyarlılık *[Child Labor Explotiation in Agriculture and Social Sensitivity]* Çalışma ve Toplum Dergisi, (2), 2012, pp.75-93.

[6] B. Kocadaş; Düşük Sosyo-Ekonomik Yapı Suç İlişkisi *[Crime Relationship between Low Social and Economic Structures]*: Malatya'da Çocuk Suçluluğu *[Juvenile Delinquency in Malatya]*, Sosyoloji Araştırmaları Dergisi, (1), 2007, pp.157-186.

[7] E.G. Çifci; Kapkaç Suçundan Hüküm Giyen Yetişkinlerin Sosyo-Demografik Özellikleri ve Sapma Davranışlar Açısından İncelenmesi *[Examination of the Adults who are Found Guilty of Snatching in Terms of Socio-Demographic Characteristics and Strayed Behaviors]*, Aile ve Toplum Eğitim Kültür ve Araştırma Dergisi, Temmuz-Ağustos-Eylül, 2009, pp.73-85

[8] E. Okumuş; Sokak Çocuklarının Sosyolojisi; Diyarbakır Örneği *[Sociology of Street Children;* *Diyarbakır Example]*, Din Bilimleri Akademik Araştırma Dergisi, IX, Sayı: 1, 2009, pp.9-37.

[9] H. Işık; Çocuk Suçluluğu ve Okullarla İlişkisi *[Juvenile Delinquency and Its Relationship with Schools]*, Ahi Evran Üniversitesi Kırşehir Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi (KEFAD), Cilt: 7, Sayı: 2, 2006, pp. 287-299.

[10] H. Yücel, A. Karatay, K. Ögel; Türkiye'de Çocuklara Yönelik Cinsel Ticari Sömürüye Dair Durum Analizi: İstanbul-Diyarbakır *[Situation Analysis of Sexual Commercial Abuse Directed to Children in Turkey: Istanbul-Diyarbakır]*, İstanbul: Yeniden Sağlık ve Eğitim Derneği Yayınları, 2006.

[11] K. Alptekin; Sokakta Çalışan Çocuklar ve Aileleri: Düzce Örneği *[Children Working on the Street and Their Families: Düzce Example]*, Toplum ve Sosyal Hizmet Dergisi, Cilt: 22, Sayı: 1, 2011, pp.25-47.

[12] K. Lordoğlu, N. Etiler; Batı Karadeniz Bölgesinde Mevsimlik Gezici Tarım İşçiliğinde Çalışan Çocuklar Üzerine Sınırlı Bir Araştırma *[A Limited Research on the Children Working as Seasonal Travelling Agriculture Workers in the Western Black Sea Region]*, Çalışma ve Toplum Dergisi, (2), 2014, pp.115-133.

[13] K.H. Karpat; Türkiye'de Toplumsal Dönüşüm *[Social Transformation in Turkey]*, Ankara: İmge Yayınevi, 2003.

[14] M. Akarslan; Anahatlarıyla Çocuk Hakları ve Çocuk Hakları Mevzuatı *[Outlined Children Rights and Children Rights Regulations]*, Istanbul: Alfa Yayınları, 1998.

[15] M. Güngör; Risk Altındaki Çocukların Aile Yapıları ve Suça Yönelimleri (Mersin İli Örneği) *[Familiy Structures and Delinquency of the Children who are Under Risk (Mersin Province Example)]*, Mersin Üniversitesi Eğitim Fakültesi Dergisi, Cilt: 9, Sayı: 2, 2013, pp 421-434.

[16] M. Meder; Sokak Çocuklarının Sosyo-Kültürel ve Ekonomik Özellikleri Açısından İncelenmesi: Ankara, Sakarya Caddesi Örneği *[Examination of the Street Children in Terms of Socio-Cultural and Economic Characteristics: Ankara, Sakarya Street Example]*, H. Ü. Türkiyat Araştırmaları Enstitüsü, Sayı: 8, 2008, pp.201-218.

[17] M.N. Korkmaz, G. Erden; Çocukları Suç Davranışına Yönelten Olası Risk Faktörleri *[Probable Risk Factors which Direct Chidren to Criminal Behavior]*, Türk Psikoloji Yazıları, 13 (25), 2010, pp.76-87.

[18] M. V. Pazarlıoğlu; İzmir Örneğinde İç Göçün Ekonometrik Analizi *[Econometric Analysis of the Domestic Migration in Izmir Example]*,

Celal Bayar Üniversitesi İİBF Dergisi, Cilt: 14, Sayı: 1, 2007, pp.121-135.

[19] M. Yüksel, O. Adıgüzel, H. Yüksel; Dünyada ve Türkiye'de Sosyal Politika Temelinde Dezavantajlı Bir Grup Olarak Çocuk İşçiler Realitesi *[Reality of Child Workers as a Disadvantaged Group Based on the Social Politics in Turkey and in the World]*, Journal of Kastamonu University Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, January, No: 6, 2015, pp.23-33.

[20] N. Bayındır, A. Özel, E. Köksal; Çocuk Suçluluğu Demografisi, Kütahya Şehri Örneği *[Juvenile Delinquency Demography, Kütahya City Example]*, Polis Bilimleri Dergisi, Cilt:9 (1-4), 2007, pp.95.108.

[21] O. Dolu; Suç Teorileri *[Crime Theories]*, Ankara: Seçkin Yayıncılık, 2012.

[22] O. Polat; Türkiye'de Çocuk Haklarının Durumu *[Situation of the Children Rights in Turkey]*, Toplum ve Demokrasi Dergisi, 2 (2), 2008, pp.149-157.

[23] Ö. Ozankaya; Toplum Bilimler Terimler Sözlüğü *[Glossary of Social Sciences Terms]*, Ankara: Türk Dil Kurumu Yayınları, 1984.

[24] Ö. Yıldız; Toplumsal Değişme Sürecinde 'Çocuk Suçluluğunda' Yeni Boyutlar *[New Dimensions in the Juvenile Delinquency in the Process of Social Change]*, VI.Ulusal Sosyoloji Kongresi, Toplumsal Dönüşümler ve Sosyolojik Yaklaşımlar *[Social Transformations and Sociological Approaches]*, Adnan Menderes Üniversitesi Aydın, 2009.

[25] R. Bilgin; Diyarbakır'da Sokakta Çalışan Çocuklar Üzerine Sosyolojik Bir Araştırma *[A Sociological Research on the Children Working on Streets in Diyarbakır]*, Elektronik Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, Cilt: 8, Sayı: 27, 2009, pp. 232-244.

[26] R. Erkan, M.Y. Erdoğdu; Göç ve Socuk Suçluluğu *[Migration and Juvenile Delinquency]*, Aile ve Toplum Eğitim Kültür ve Araştırma Dergisi, Ocak-Şubat-Mart, 2006, pp.79-90.

[27] R.Erkan; Kentleşme ve Sosyal Değişme *[Urbanization and Social Change]*, Ankara: Bilimadamı Yayınları, 2010.

[28] R. Keleş; Türkiye'de Kent Planlamasının Sosyo-Kültürel Boyutları *[Socio-Economical Dimensions of the Urban Plannning in Turkey]*, İstanbul: İstanbul Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Yayınları, 1996.

[29] S. Atauz; Sokak Çocukları Çalışma Grubu Sunuş Bildirisi, Sosyal Hizmet Sempozyumu 99, Bölgesel Kalkınma Sürecinde Sosyal Hizmet *[Street Children Study Group Presentation Declaration, Social Service Symposium 99, Social Service in the Regional Development Process]*, Anka-ra: GAP İdaresi ve Sosyal Hizmetler Yüksek Okulu Yayınları, (2001).

[30] S. Erder; Kentsel Gerilim *[Urban Stress]*, Ankara: Uğur Mumcu Araştırmacı Vakfı Yayınları, 1997.

[31] S. Wolff; Problem Çocuklar ve Tedavi (Çocuk ve Stres) *[Problematic Children and Treatment (Child and Stress)]*, Transl.: A. Oral and S. Kara, İstanbul: Say Yayıncılık, 1999.

[32] Ş.A.Kurnaz; Çocuk Yoksulluğu *[Child Poverty]*, Aile ve Toplum Eğitim Kültür ve Araştırma Dergisi, Cilt: 3, Sayı: 12, 2007, pp.47-55.

[33] T. Akkayan; Göç ve Değişme *[Migration and Change]*, İstanbul: İ. Ü. Edebiyat Fakültesi Yayınları No: 2573, 1979.

[34] T.G. İçli; Kriminoloji *[Criminology]*, (7. Baskı), Ankara: Seçkin Yayıncılık, 2007.

[35] T.G. İçli; Çocuk Suç ve Sokak Sokakta Yaşayan Suç İşleyen ve Suça Maruz Kalan Çocuklar *[Child Crime and Children Living on the Street and Committing Crime and Exposed to Crime]*, Ankara: T.C. Başbakanlık Aile ve Sosyal Araştırmalar Genel Müdürlüğü Yayınları, 2009.

[36] Y. Kaştan; Türkiye'de Göç Yaşamış Çocukların Eğitim Sürecinde Karşılaşılan Problemler *[Problems Encountered in the Education Process of the Children who Experienced Migration]*, Uluslararası Sosyal ve Eğitim Bilimleri Dergisi, Cilt: 2, Sayı: 4, 2015, pp. 216-229

[37] Y. Kulaksız; Yoksulluk Bağlamında Çocuk İşgücü *[Child Labor Force in the Context of Poverty]*, ÇSGB Çalışma Dünyası Dergisi, Cilt: 2, Sayı: 3, 2014, pp.91-111.

[38] Y. Şişman; Sokakta Çalışan Çocukların Yaşam Koşulları ve Gelecek Beklentileri *[Living Conditions and Future Expectations of the Children Working on the Street]*, Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, (2), 2006, pp.251-276.

[39] Y. Taş, S. Özcan; Türkiye'de İç Göçün Yoksulluğa ve İstihdama Etkileri *[Effects of Domestic Migration on Poverty and Employment in Turkey]*, International Conference on Eurasian Economies, Session 1B: Büyüme ve Gelişme, Petersburg Russia, 2013, pp.289-298.

[40] Y.Z. Özcan; İçgöçün Tanımı ve Verileri ile İlgili Bazı Sorunlar. Türkiye'de İç Göç *[Some Problems About the Definition and Data of Domestic Migration. Domestic Migration in Turkey]* (iç.), İstanbul: Tarih Vakfı Yayınları, 1998.

[41] Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu (TÜİK) *[Turkish Statistical Institute]*, www.tuik.gov.tr/prehaverBultenleri.do?id=21521. Erişim Tarihi *[Access Date]*: 16.06.2016.

[42] Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu (TÜİK) *[Turkish Statistical Institute]*, www.tuik.gov.tr/pretablo.do?alt-id=1007, Erişim Tarihi *[Access Date]*: 16.06.2016.

[43] Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu (TÜİK) *[Turkish Statistical Institute]*, www.tuik.gov.tr/prehaberBultenleri.do?id=18525, Erişim Tarihi *[Access Date]*: 16.06.2016.

The Relationship between Emotional Intelligence and Negotiation Skills in Turkish Culture

Prof. Dr. Nihal Mamatoğlu
Abant Izzet Baysal University
Department of Psychology
mamatoglunihal@yahoo.com
mamatoglu_n@ibu.edu.tr

Abstract. The main purpose of the study is revealing the relationship between emotional intelligence and effective negotiation skills in Turkish culture. For this reason, 123 females and 36 males totally 159 university students participated in this study. Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire was used to assess four sub dimensions of emotional intelligence and Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire was used to measure seven sub dimensions of negotiation skills in this study. At the end of the study findings reveal some significant relationships between emotional intelligence and negotiation skills. The results show that emotional skill sub dimension of emotional intelligence predicts two sub dimensions of negotiation skills. These negotiation skills were negotiator's style and expressing oneself decisively. In addition, self-control skill sub dimension of EI predicts rationality and common sense skill sub dimension of negotiation skills. Moreover emotional and social skills sub-dimension of EI predict goal orientation dimension of negotiation skills. It was also found that social skill sub dimension of EI predicts planning dimension of negotiation skills. From the results it's interpreted that the person who have effective emotional intelligence also use effective self-focused negation skills in negotiation process.

Keywords: Emotional intelligence, negotiation skills,

1. Introduction

This study aims to search the relationship between emotional intelligence and effective negotiation skills in Turkish culture.

In the past, best negotiators have been described as poker faced, cool and self-controlled factual analyzer [1, 7]. In this description emotions thought to be weakness. Negotiators were advised to avoid emotions [4]. But very recently some studies have considered the emotions positively and insisted the importance of emotions in effective negotiation process.

As it is known negotiation is strongly related with interpersonal and intergroup conflict. Katz, Lawyer and Sweedler [13] defined negotiation as express struggle in which two or more parties are expressing strong emotion resulting from a perceived difference in needs and values.

From here it can be realized that when there is a conflict there is also emotion. And during the negotiation, opponents should consider emotionality in process to achieve their objectives. Recently, emotional intelligence taken account in negotiation studies as complimentary part of negotiation process [14].

Persons, groups and organizations interact with other, individuals, groups and organizations. During interaction, the conflict inevitably emerges due to struggle over scarcity of resources [5, 3]. Negotiation take place when two or more parties discuss how to share or distribute a limited resource. All parties that seek to achieve contradictory objectives in negotiation, try to agree "on the distribution or exchange of benefits or costs" [11].

Old belief stereotypically portrayed negotiators are as "calculating, calm, and in control" individuals. It was expected negotiators to behave rationally, intelligently and also expected to mitigate any emotional interference with the process of negotiation [15, 7].

Although the old stereotypes say the opposite, it can be said that negotiation process is not free from emotion or anxiety [7]. The counterparts in negotiation may experience positive or negative emotions depending on whether they anticipate an outcome that would serve their interests. The parties experience negative emotions when their goals blocked, they also experience positive emotions when their goals attained [7].

In here it can be said that, the role of emotions in negotiation is not refutable. Because, negotiators need emotional intelligence to collect information, make effective decisions, and deploy successful tactics in negotiation process [6]. That's why it is important to examine the relationship between emotional intelligence and negotiation skills.

In literature the studies with these two concepts is very recent [6]. Thus it is needed to search the relationship of emotional intelligence and negotiation skills deeply.

Moreover, in Turkey there are some studies on emotional intelligence and on negotiation. But there is not satisfying studies on relationship between two concepts. In Turkey, the studies on two concepts realized with adapted scales but not with original ones [2]. That kind of adaptation scales reduce the validity of generalization of the data to Turkish sample. In this study the original scale that derived from the Turkish culture was used to measure negotiation skills. This study is also a kind of reliability and also validity testing of the Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire [12]

2. Method

2.1. Participants

123 females and 36 males totally 159 university students participated in this study. Age of the sample was ranged from 18 to 33.

2.2. 2. Measures

In this study two measures were used. One of them is Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire Short Form (TEIQ-SF) and the other one is Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire.

Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire-Short Form (TEIQ-SF) was developed by Petrides and Furnham [8] The scale was adapted into Turkish by Deniz, Özer and Işık [10].

TEIQ-SF is 7 point Likert type scale. The scale ranged "I strongly disagree" to "I strongly agree". The questionnaire includes four sub-dimensions and it consists of 20 items. Four sub dimensions' names and descriptions [9] given below. The internal reliability of the each sub scales are given in parentheses.

Well-being: The people who have high score in well-being perceive themselves *"… successful and self-confident, cheerful and satisfied with their lives, confident and likely to «look on the bright side» of life"* [9] (Cronbach Alpha, .72).

Self-control skills: The people who have high score in self-control perceive themselves *"… capable of controlling their emotions, capable of withstanding pressure and regulating stress, reflective and less likely to give in to their urges"* [9] (Cronbach Alpha, .70).

Emotional skills: The people who have high score in emotional skills perceive themselves *"… clear about their own and other people's feeling, capable of communicating their feelings to others, capable of having fulfilling personal relationships, capable of taking someone else's perspective"* [9] (Cronbach Alpha, .66).

Social skills: The people who have high score in social skills perceive themselves *"… accomplished networkers with excellent social skills, capable of influencing other people's*

feelings, forthright, frank and willing to stand up for their rights" [9] (Cronbach Alpha, .70).

These 4 sub-dimensions explain 53% of the total variance of the scale.

Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire developed by Mamatoğlu [12]. It is 40 item, 5 points Likert type scale. And the questionnaire composed of 7 sub-dimensions. Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire is new Turkish questionnaire. To make sense, description of seven sub dimensions and item examples of each dimension of Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire are given below. The explained variance explained variance and internal reliability of the each sub scales are given in parentheses.

Negotiator's style: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves acceptable, clear and neutral in negotiation. Item example; *"I leave aside my ego in negotiation process."* (explained variance: 22.87; Cronbach's Alpha, .87).

Rationality and common sense: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves rational and calm in negotiation. Item example; *"I act rationaly in negotiation."* (explained variance: 10.41; Cronbach's Alpha, .74).

Sensitivity for opponents: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves sensitive to counterpart's emotions and social status at work. Item example; *"I act according to the position/status of the other side in negotiation."* (explained variance: 5.66; Cronbach's Alpha, .61).

Goal orientation: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves problem solver and result oriented. Item example; *"I try to be solution-oriented in negotiation."* (explained variance: 4,57; Cronbach's Alpha, .74).

Planning: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves good planer before the negotiation. Item example; *"Before a negotiation, I make a preliminary research on the subject."* (explained variance: 4.09; Cronbach's Alpha, .67).

Effective communication: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves have effective both verbal and nonverbal communication skills. Item example; *"I try to use well my body language and mimics in a negotiation."* (explained variance: 3.77; Cronbach's Alpha, .75).

Expressing oneself decisively: The people who have high score in this dimension perceive themselves make sure explicit, wright understanding between the counterparts. Item example; *"I try to express myself in a way to make sure that the opposite understands me."* (explained variance: 3.35; Cronbach's Alpha, .61).

The total variance explained by the scale was calculated as 54.7.

3. Results and Discussion

After the data collected, relevant statistical analysis have been realized. All dimensions of the two scales were taken into the analyses. The results of the regression analyses on effective negotiation skills' dimensions are given below. All of the emotional intelligence sub dimensions and total emotional intelligence (EI) score taken as predictors for each of the sub dimensions and total score of effective negotiation skills questionnaire in regression analysis.

Regression analysis was done for the emotional intelligence predictors of first dimension of Effective Negotiation Skill Questionnaire named negotiator's style. Results of regression analysis can be seen at Table 1. Results reveal that emotional skills sub dimension of EI predicts negotiator's style (β= .25, t=2.45, α < .02). It means that the person who have high emotional skills be careful about his/her styles in negotiation, try to not misunderstanding. He/she try to portraits him/herself as acceptable, clear and neutral in negotiation. It can be said that person who is aware of his/her own emotions easily regulate neutral, acceptable negotiator style in negotiation and prevent any misunderstanding in negotiation process.

Secondly regression analysis was proceed for rationality and common sense dimension of

Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire. The results can be seen in Table 2. At the end of the study it is realized that self-control skills predicts rationality and common sense skill dimension of negotiation skills (β= .29, t=2.45, α < .02). In here, it can be said that person who can control oneself, be rational negotiator in negotiation process.

Table 3 presents the regression analysis on sensitivity for opponent dimension of Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire. Findings showed that any of the emotional intelligence dimension do not predict sensitivity for opponent dimension of negotiation skills. The description of emotional intelligence claim that the person who have emotional intelligence is aware of both oneself and counterpart's emotions and perspectives. But if the items of Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire-Short Form (TEIQ-SF) are examined deeply, it can be seen that emotional intelligence dimensions generally about on negotiator's own emotions but not about counterpart's emotions. On the other hand if the items of sensitivity to opponent dimension of Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire are examined, it can be seen that they are related with opponent's emotions. In here it may said when a person focuses on his/her own emotions, it is difficult to be sensitive to opponent emotions.

The findings reveal that both emotional (β= .26, t=2.56, α < .01) and social skill (β= .25, t=2.49, α < .01) dimensions of emotional intelligence predict goal orientation dimension of negotiation skills (Table 4.). It means that person who is aware of his/her emotions and coop with others actively also involved on his/her negotiation objectives. Interesting point in here is that the definition of all three concepts (emotional, social and goal orientation skills) insist the active behavior of a person. Thus it is expected that a person who search deep emotions oneself and coop with others naturally try to achieve his/her own negotiation goals.

Table 5. Shows the regression analysis on emotional intelligence predictors of planning dimension of negotiation skills. As it can be seen from the table, social skill dimension of EI predicts planning dimension of negotiation skill (β= .23, t=2.28, α < .02). I means that person who have social skills, also have planning skills for negotiation process. In here socially skillful negotiators may be aware of the social steps of the negotiation and they may plan how they switch in process.

Table 6. Shows the regression analysis on emotional intelligence predictors of effective communication sub dimension of negotiation skills. As it can be seen from the table there is not any significant relationship between emotional intelligence dimensions and effective communication dimension of negotiation skills. In here it can be also refer the definition of sub dimensions of Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire-Short Form. As it is mentioned above emotional intelligence dimensions generally about on negotiator's own emotions but not about counterpart's emotions. On the other hand Effective communication dimension of Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire can be defined reciprocal process in communication. A person who have effective negotiation skill be careful about his/her own body language, his/her words and try to communicate face to face with the opposite. From here it can be understood that effective communication includes one's own emotions but it is more than knowing by oneself. It is also needed to deep analyze the opposite and regulate the effective behavior in process.

Table 7. Shows the regression analysis on emotional intelligence predictors of expressing oneself decisively sub dimension of negotiation skills. As presented in Table 7. The findings reveal that emotional skills predict expressing oneself decisively dimension of negotiation skill (β= .26, t=2.61, α < .01). It is not surprise that person who is aware of his/her own emotions also express oneself explicitly.

Regression analysis on emotional intelligence predictors of total effective negotiation skills score of the participants can be seen at Table 8. The findings showed that only emotional skills predict total effective negotiation skills score (β= .38, t=3, 74, α < .00). Emotional skill dimension of emotional intelligence predicts negotiator's style, rationality and common sense, goal orientation, planning, expressing oneself decisively

4. Conclusion

The results of the study insisted that the most predictive dimension of emotional intelligence on negotiation skill is emotional skill. Emotional skills predict negotiator's style skill, goal orientation skill, expressing oneself decisively skill and total effective negotiation skills.

Self-control skill dimension of EI predicts rationality and common sense dimension of negotiation skill. Self-control can be considered as the part of rationality somehow.

Five negotiation skills namely negotiator's style, rationality and common sense, goal orientation, planning, expressing oneself decisively are predicted by some sub dimensions of the emotional intelligence.

In addition, two negotiation skills namely sensitivity for opponent skills and effective communication skills are not predicted by any sub dimensions of emotional intelligence.

In general when all of the findings above examined it is realized that the definitions of sub dimensions of two measures that used in this study can explain the difference in results.

First of all when the sub dimensions of Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire reviewed, it can be realized that the only sensitivity for opponent and effective communication skills are related with the opponents. The other five sub dimensions namely negotiator's style, rationality and common sense, goal orientation, planning, expressing oneself decisively are related with negotiator oneself. In here negotiator's skills can be grouped in two like self- focused skills and opponents- focused skills.

Secondly, when items and the sub dimension of The Trait Emotional Intelligence Questionnaire-Short Form reviewed, it can be realized that generally all sub dimensions (well-being, emotions, social skills and also person's self-control skills) of the scale focus on person's own emotions but not focused on counterpart's emotions or moods.

Thus, it can be said that sub dimensions of emotional intelligence predicts only negotiation skills which are related with negotiator oneself. These negotiation skills are negotiator's style, rationality and common sense, goal orientation, planning, expressing oneself decisively. And from here it can be said that the person who have effective emotional intelligence also use effective self-focused negation skills in negotiation.

5. References

[1] A.H. Raiffa, the Art and Science of Negotiation (1982), Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press.

[2] C. Arslan, Kişilerarası Çatışma Çözme ve Problem Çözme Yaklaşımlarının Yükleme Karmaşıklığı Açısından ncelenmesi, (Yayınlanmamış Doktora Tezi), Konya Selçuk Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, (2005).

[3] D. Pruitt and S.H. Kim, Social conflict: Escalation, stalemate, and settlement, 3th ed., (2004), New York: McGraw-Hill.

[4] D. Shapiro, Untapped Power: Emotions in Negotiation, In Negotiation: Readings, Exercises and Cases, edited by R. Lewicki, B. Barry, and D. Saunders (2006), 163–70. New York: McGraw-Hill.

[5] E. Karayip, Çatışma Yönetimi (2000), Ankara: Pegem Yayıncılık.

[6] I. S. Fulmer and B. Barry, The Smart Negotiator: Cognitive Ability and Emotional Intelligence in Negotiation, International Journal of Conflict Management 15(2004), 245–72.

[7] J. R. Ogilvie and M. L. Carsky, Building Emotional Intelligence in Negotiations, International Journal of Conflict Management 13 (2002), 381–400

[8] K. Leary, J. Pillemer, and M. Wheeler, Negotiation with Emotion, In Negotiation: Readings, Exercises and Cases, edited by R. Lewicki, B. Barry, and D. Saunders (2013), 171–78. New York: McGraw-Hill.

[9] K.V. Petrides and A. Furnham, Trait emotional intelligence psychometric investigation with reference to established trait taxonomies, European Journal of Personality, 15 (2001),425-448

[10] M. Engin, E. Özer, E. Işık, Duygusal zeka ölçeği-Kısa formu: Geçerlilik ve güvenilirlik çalışması, Eğitim ve Bilim 38 (2013), 407-419

[11] M. Pulido-Martos, E. Lopez-Zafra, and J. Augusto-Landa, Perceived Emotional Intelligence and Its Relationship with

Perceptions of Effectiveness in Negotiation, Journal of Applied Social Psychology 43(2011), 408–17.

[12] N. Mamatoğlu. Effective Negotiation Skills Questionnaire. TUB TAK 1001 project no: 113K548 named Conflict and Negotiation in Turkish Culture. (2016) unpublished study.

[13] N. H. Katz, J. L. Lawyer and M. Sweedler, Communication and Conflict Resolution Skills, 2nd ed. (2011) Dubuque, IA: Kendall-Hunt.

[14] R. J. Lewicki, B. Bruce, and D. Saunders, Negotiation: Readings, Exercises and Cases, 7th ed. (2015), New York: McGraw-Hill.

[15] R. J. Lewicki, D. Saunders, and B. Barry, Essentials of Negotiation (2011), New York: McGraw-Hill.

Table 1. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Negotiator Style Dimension

| | Unstandardized Coefficients | | Standardized Coefficients | | |
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	25,61	3,32		7,71	,00
Well being	,13	,15	,10	,91	,36
Self-control skills	,25	,14	,22	1,80	,07
Emotional skills	,37	,15	,25	2,45	,02
Social skills	-,11	,13	-,08	-,84	,41
Total EI	-,18	,17	-,15	-1,07	,29

Table 2. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Rationality and Common Sense Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	11,43	2,55		4,49	,00
Well being	,13	,11	,12	1,15	,25
Self-control skills	,26	,11	,29	2,45	,02
Emotional skills	,12	,12	,10	,99	,32
Social skills	,09	,10	,09	,91	,37
Total EI	-,10	,13	-,11	-,79	,43

Table 3. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Sensitivity for Opponents Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	20,15	2,03		9,91	,00
Well being	,08	,09	,10	,86	,39
Self-control skills	-,11	,08	-,16	-1,25	,21
Emotional skills	,17	,09	,19	1,82	,07
Social skills	-,02	,08	-,03	-,27	,79
Total EI	,01	,10	,01	,05	,96

Table 4. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Goal Orientation Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	19,59	2,01		9,73	,00
Well being	,10	,09	,12	1,14	,26
Self-control skills	-,02	,09	-,04	-,29	,77
Emotional skills	,24	,10	,26	2,56	,01
Social skills	-,20	,08	-,25	-2,49	,01
Total EI	,10	,10	,13	,95	,35

Table 5. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Planning Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	10,10	1,79		5,63	,00
Well being	,08	,08	,11	1,01	,32
Self-control skills	-,05	,08	-,08	-,67	,50
Emotional skills	,06	,08	,08	,74	,46
Social skills	,16	,07	,23	2,28	,02
Total EI	-,03	,09	-,05	-,34	,74

Table 6. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Effective Communication Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	14,38	1,75		8,24	,00
Well being	,06	,08	,08	,78	,44
Self-control skills	-,07	,07	-,12	-,96	,34
Emotional skills	,15	,08	,18	1,84	,07
Social skills	,08	,07	,11	1,11	,27
Total EI	,09	,09	,13	,98	,33

Table 7. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Expressing Oneself Decisively Dimension

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	12,19	1,31		9,30	,00
Well being	-,00	,06	-,01	-,07	,95
Self-control skills	-,01	,06	-,01	-,08	,93
Emotional skills	,16	,06	,26	2,61	,01
Social skills	,03	,05	,06	,58	,57
Total EI	,05	,07	,10	,71	,48

Table 8. Regression Analysis on Emotional Intelligence Predictors of Total Effective Negotiation Skills Score

	Unstandardized Coefficients		Standardized Coefficients		
	B	Std. Error	Beta	t	Sig.
(Constant)	110,29	9,33		11,83	,00
Well being	,26	,41	,07	,63	,53
Self-control skills	,29	,40	,09	,73	,47
Emotional skills	1,66	,44	,38	3,74	,00
Social skills	,03	,37	,01	,08	,94
Total EI	,01	,48	,00	,02	,99

The Contradiction of The State and The Capital During The Development of The Economic Thought

Sema Yılmaz Genç and Furkan Tarık Kurt
Kocaeli University Social Sciences Institute

Abstract. This study analyzes power of the state in history of economic thoughts. This study is consisted of three parts. Introduction part reviews the history of states with different cultures. First part emphasizes the mercantile system and Thestate. The physiocracy and the powers of the statewill be stressed in part two and the third part is about the classical economy and goverments. The study includes to the thinking of economists in each section.

Key Words: Mercantilism, Physiocracy, Classical Economics, The State, Capital

1. Introduction

The State has been studied throughout the history, redefined as various ways and nominated differently by philosophers for thousands of years since Aristotle and Plato. The reason of it is that the fact of the state has taken form according to the cultures of societies. The states have been historically rebuilt behind particular crises and afterwards they have been reshaped differently. For instance the depressions of slavery have has an effect on bringing the feudal structure, the crises of the feudal system have brought the early capitalism, the deficiencies of the capitalist system have brought the liberal and socialist state form [12].

The more have people been located as soceities, the more frequently have the discussions about the realm of the existing state concept emerged. These discussions have lasted for thousands of years and they constantly continue at the present.

The division of labour and specialisation, which were important terms for Plato, have played a considerable role on the establishing process of cities. Plato who thought the reason that people hadn't been able to sustain themselves had affected the evolution of the state studied the matter of state in three phases. On the first phase, he says that the city-state makes constant wars in order to gain strength as on the second phase it occurs the professional military rank in order to protect the farmers, the crafters and the traders in societies. On the third phase the discrimination between the rulers and the governeAd ones among military services and producers appears. Likewise, Plato's student Aristo's perspective on the state is the same. Nevertheless while Plato has offered coownership for the ruling class, Aristo has stood up for the idea of the private ownership [3].

In Greece, the concept of the state has improved upon the moral values. The sense of the state has found place under these boundaries

in Roman period that has been impressed by the Greek history as well. It may observed the occurance of the state that has been incumbent on societies and acknowledged as authority even by the Hamurabi laws.

As an islamic philosopher, Farabi has mentioned the necessity of the division of labour associated with the diversity of human needs and its benefits on societies. According to Farabi, the primary duty of a state is to secure the justice. According to Gazali, who has similar thoughts as Farabi, the mission of providing the connection between the professions and organisations belongs to the state. On the other side, Ibni Haldun defends that the state should have no concern with the trades [6].

With the lapse of time the city-states have been replaced by the concept of the nation-state. The transition period is also termed as the transition of feudalism to capitalism. According as the position of economic actions in societies has expended, the states have begun to determine the economic rules besides the morals. By the power of the economical movements, the state's position in the economy has expanded and narrowed from time to time. The economic history has also been the history of the fight between those who had found the involvement of the state on economy useful and those who had not [15].

2. State-Capital Relations in Mercantilist Thought

During the medieval age the church and feudality had an irruptive role on the community. Renaissance and reform revivals have been quite effective in the elimination of this role. Besides, there has been a lack of a powerful state to urge the leave of medieval's feudal and agricultural system behind and transit to the system where trade and industry are fundamental.

Medieval society has been based on the church and feudality. The monarchs have taken the advantage of the internal disorder of the church's that has been caused by the reform movements. Most of the riots, which have been given a start in an attempt to remove the obscurantist, have found support by the monarchs.

Just as the monarchs had taken the authorization of the feudal lords, juridical unity has been provided along the countries and the constitution of the central states has begun to be established by the urge of the administrative organizations throughout the country and the army, as the king's courts. The power wanted to be kept by monarchs in order to gain money to sustain policies for this purpose. The modern state has been supposed to organize all movements of the kingdom and economy must have succored the monarch [8].

Mercantilisim is called the economic policies implemented in Western Europe between 1450 and 1750. Mercantilist policies are intented for strengthen the state. It aimed to fulfil that by accelerating the valuable mine flow to the country and increasing the stockpile. Thus the birth of the modern state, the rise of the economic activities, the start of the wealth sensation and the improvement of the frame of mind have played the key roles by the formation process of mercantilism.

The economic activities that have been increasing with the devoloping maritime have played an important role on calling this period as "Economic Capitalism". During this period it was also essential to the countries that native merchants were to be defenced against foreigner merchants and it was demanded a central power to accomplish that [11].

Mercantilism principles are based on the operation of establishing a powerful state. During the commercial capitalism, in other words the period of mercantilism, gold and silver were thought to be the main source of wealth. The more a country owned gold and silver, the stronger they were accepted. Therefore it was emphasized that the states or the rulers of the countries should have taken all measures. Thus the trade wasn't to be confined; contrary it was supposed to be extended. On the other hand, in order to ensure export leftovers there have been a bunch of import restrictions applied by the states. According to mercantilists, the authority was supposed to have a strict control mechanism on the customs. Furthermore it had to organize the industry of the country, establish industrial foundations when it has been needed and regulate the industry zone beneficial to increase the expert volume [2].

Despite the mercantilism principles have generally based on the powerful state concept, they varied by the countries because of the different cultural structures:

Spanish Mercantilism

In the 1600's Spain was the richest country in the gold reserves. Spanish mercantilism, also named as bullionist mercantilism, introduced the state to some regulations for precious mine import from America and Asia, and aimed to extend a hand for the merchants who took of the road to bring those precious mines from these areas. Nevertheless because of the fact that it could not fulfil the required speed-up as a concequence, the country fell behind Europe [18]

French Mercantilism

The French mercantilism, named after Colbertism, referred to a mercantilist system, in which it was concentrated on industrialization under the guidance of the state. The most important part of the state by the French mercantilism was to ensure industrialization [17]. The French philosopher Jean Bodin stood up for abolition of all obstacles that determined transaction and business in control of state. Moreover he urged upon the commonwealth in his best-known work "The Six Books of the Republic" and splitted it into [4]:

- the income that the state acquired from landed properties

- the war bride

- the taxes levied from the citizens

- customs duties

- other duties

Bodin also confronted the advance taxes and highlighted the eventuality of their continuity. He mentioned that not any war could cause more harm to the folk than the burdan of tax and warned the sovereign about the over raise of the tax load [7].

Another French philosopher Jean Babtiste Colbert had on the other hand paved the way for industrialization through the country during the period of his ministering in France. By means of his contributions he was named after the French mercantilism. While he was in his minister seat, Colbert implemented policies in order to strengthen the state and provided it senior authority beneficial to ensure that the state supervised all the economic activities. During the term when Colbert was the minister, the industry sector recieved quite a lot of help from the state. It's easily possible to deduce that the powerful state concept had been commonly held by the mercantilism policies thereby looking at nothing but the period of Colbert's at ministering in France. Colbert had also mentioned that the sole purpose of the trade was to impower the state [17].

British Mercantilism

British mercantilism had been a success considering other countries. That success brought the industrial revolution with it. By the accomplishment of mercantilist policies in Britain those reasons such as the development of maritime with the urge and support of the state or regarding manufacturing had been effective.

The British philosopher Edward Misselden is considered as the first philospher who paid an attention on the balance of trade and he defended the opinion that the state must have chosen the way to promote exportation, to define importation and to substantiate external trade.

Another British philosopher Thomas Mun also stood up for exportation to be supported. Mun noticed that the state could merely get wealth by foreign trade surplus.

Above these philosophers, such philosophers as Sir William Petty, Dudly North, John Locke, Richard Cantillion, David Hume, Sir James Steuart played an important role on the success of the British mercantilism. Futhermore all these aforecited philosophers had economical ideas besides mercantilist thoughts.

German Mercantilism

German mercantilisim, also named as Cameralism was based on the theories of state. Cameralism represents industrialization by paying attention on public finance and fiscal management. This flow which had lasted for three hundred years in Germany contributed national unity and industrialization.

Cameralist theorists had claimed the idea that the agriculture, mining and industry must have been provided by the state. J.J. Becher mentioned that the state was to play the biggest role on industrialization and increase exportation. On the other hand Hornick uttered that Germany's power was going to remain with its increasing population [3].

The wealth searching process through mercantilist principles has given acceleration to the colonialism progress. This situation has played an important role on the start of a universal competition. Between 1600 and 1667, there has been only one year that war hasn't occurred in Europe. In consequence of the fact that England has mostly been in the ascendant of the continual wars among England, Netherlands, French and Spain, the growth of the empire has shown parallelism with the development of the mercantile system [16].

As a result of the mercantilist principles, gold and silver have only been held by powerful countries. This situation caused the decline of the purchasing of some money losing countries and consequently the decrease in the external trade. At the same time the struggle against the inflation of those countries which were able to make money continued and they reached a stage where they were unable to trade with countries in financial strain. The mercantilist policies which pursued only the goal of single-sided benefits were not a success due to the fact that one nation's export depends on the other nations' import, and the other nations' import depends on their ability to pay. As a result of the mercantilist policies, the state caused the diminution of the external trade and the increase of the inflation. As the trade bourgeoisie gave place to the industrial bourgeoisie, so stood the natural order hypothesis for the protectionist state policy [14].

3. State-Capital Conflict in Physiocracy Thought

The term "physiocracy" comes from the French word "phyiocrate". That word introduces itself as "the rule of nature" from Greek translation. The physiocrats believed in a divine power that revelas a universal and excellent "natural order". The physiocrats, who had faith in the existence of a social order besides the materialist order, mentioned that to obey the rule of nature would provide the beatitude [9].

The reason that the interventionism of the French state's was stricter than the British mercantilism had caused the birth of physiocracy in France. Furthermore all the wars lost during the mercantilism and the exorbitant expenses of the palace had been the reason of the downturn of French economy. Therefore the burden of tax on the peasantry surcharged. The troubles about collecting taxes caused a deficit in the budget and it made the economy reach a serious impass. As a consequence of all these problems, it was created social unrest.

The implementation of mercantilism for three hundred years engendered severe ideological impulses. As to economy, the decrease of agricultural activities against industry caused the increase of valueless lands and rural depopulation. Also the founded internal customs stemmed interprovincial grain trade. Hereat the dissatisfactions against the interventionist states of mercantilism had started being experienced [1].

The physiocrats, who accepted manufacturing as the resource of wealth and stoop up for the abolition of the state interventions, have adopted the phrase for "laissez-faire".

Physiocracy is considered as the first ideological system. The system which lasted only for twenty years had affected such economists as Ricardo, Marx and Adam Smith.

The physiocrats, who claimed that the economical activities were to be determined by natural-divine laws, had strictly urged upon the necessity of the state's not to interfere the running of those laws and criticised the interferences of previous states. According to the physiocrats, the mission of the state was solely to protect human's life and wealth and to ensure domestic and exterior safety.

According to the principles of physiocracy, agriculture had to be propped for speed-up instead of the industry and trade. Physiocrats had classified the society into three categories as the social, the productive and infertile class. The agricultural laborers were accepted as the members of the productive class. Hence the state must have reduced the taxes on the agriculture community, further it had to cancel them entirely. The taxes supposed to be collected should have promoted by the landowners in order not to cause any slowdown on production [3].

Physiocrats interpreted the industry section in the manner of that it didn't promote any surplus production and thus the Colbertism policies had the avail deducted, damaged the husbandry owners and caused the prices of manifactured products to mark up. For this reason, the state had to give a free hand and ensure the competition conditions between the merchants

and industrialists. Physiocrats thought that the verification of these conditions would let the surplus of the soil productivity build up fully accumation of capital and wealth. Afterwards Adam Smith followed the same opinion [19].

François Quesnay, known as the founder of physiocracy, studied out the economic table which is accepted as a sum of the physiocratic economy. Quensay mentioned in his work "Natural Law" that the state's activities also should have adjusted the natural order system. He was antagonistic towards the state and contributed the invisible hand principle by standing up for the opinion of the self-improvement of economic activities. Futhermore it was Quensay who coined the term "laissez faire-laissez passer"

Another physiocrat Anne Robert Jacques Turgot says that the society is supposed to have a more free regime by releasing the pressure of the state with the reforms. This is because she realized that the folks were oppressed. Turgot had the opportunity of performing his ideas while he was on his minister seat. He liberalized wheat commerce in order to bring freedom to the market in this period yet afterwards he was suspended from his duty [3].

Otherwise Victor Riquetti explained the term of tax by referring to the taxation policies in one of his books. Some of the philosophers as Dupond de Nemours or La Riviere supported the natural order idea against the interventions of the state [20].

4. An General Overview of the State and Capital Concept in Classical Economic Thought

The work of "The Wealth of Nations", which was published by Adam Smith in year 1776, is accepted as the beginning of the classical economy. The classical economic flow had objected the interventions of the state and improved the invisible hand by pointing some morals from the physiocrats. Moreover the circumstances which had occured at the end of the 18th century all over the world foreshadowed the economic developments and the future of the economy. Such facts as misplacing the mercantilist colonial policies with America's arising as a sovereign, the rupture of relations through the medieval society via The French Revolution and the growing fund by the help of the industrial revolution have played an amazing role on the

occurence of the classical economic thoughts [10].

The libertarian mentality that renaissance and reform had revealed has pioneered many changes in technical and scientific areas. The geographical explorations and consequently ensued imperialist movements have played a great role on the enrichment of Europe. The industrial revolution which was born as a consequent of these movements have caused the bourgeoisie to strengthen and that strenghtened bourgeoisie class has defended a viable state concept by trying to provide freedom. The innovative class members funded in France and England via the industrial revolution have taken a stand against the commercial restrictions, the monopolization which occured under the mercantilism, the irresistable authority of the state's and the power of the aristocrats through their wealth. This class adopted the opinion of a minimum intervention of the state on the economy and an individual system where the economical and political freedom was consolidated. The basement of this opinion was laid by the classical economists.

The classical economists who wouldn't accept the state as a determinant in the economy believed that it was supposed to be a restricton on the state's power and thus it was to supply military, education and prosperity. The individuals must have felt free by the economy sector and look after and priorities must be looked after. The classicals, who thought that the natural order theory defended by the physiocrats would also bring balance to the economy, had mentioned that the natural order, in other words the invisible hand was going to determine the output and the type of production [13].

The opinion "Supply creates its own demand" known as the Say's law of the classical economists also claims that the supply and demand equilibrium is supposed to be brought by the natural laws and it emphasizes that there mustn't be and outer intervention on it. According to classicals the more assignments the state gets for the economy, the more would the borden of taxes be a problem for the folks. The increase of the borden of taxes would slow down the industrialization process because it would also cause a saving gap and to increase the expenses. That's why the classicals who cared about the private enterprise system made the state remove the obstacles from the entrepreneurs' way as much as it was possible.

For this reason they loaded it with the charge of "Gendarme State". The state which they considered as a cross to bear would never supposed to interfere the economy while it keptproviding its missions on the safety, defense, justice and diplomacy. It should have made productions inbetween a restricted area and therefore its expenditure would be reduced, too. For the financing of these expense, it was supposed to levy just a bunch of duty from the individuals and the private institutions [9].

The classicals have explained the job of the state in three ranks. Through this system where looking after an individual's benefits was fundamental, the state wasn't able to intervene directly in the economy, however providing national defense, raising a hand to all individual enterprises within the limits of the law and undertaking all the investments that individuals weren't able to afford even if the investments were not profitable enough were the three ranks of the state's mission.

Adam Smith who is known as the founder of the classical economy principle has required some conditions about the intervention of to state in economy. In his opinion there were no need any intervention by the state when people look after their own benefits. Yet in other cases there may be needed an intervention. Smith classified these cases as follows:

- It had to provide an army in order to defense the state against any exterritorial attacks.
- The state had to protect the individuals within securing the justice.
- The state had to step in the business which the individuals couldn't return any profit and build foundations and facilities.
- The state was supposed to take measure to competitions.
- It had to excise customs duty on the importees.
- The interest rates should have been followed by the state. It had to keep it under control.

Furthermore Marshall mentioned that the taxation needed to be directly proportionate to nationals' ability to pay. According to Marshall the tax rates weren't supposed to be arbitrarily as well as they must have been clear and stable [3].

Another economist David Ricardo also paid attention on taxation. According to Ricardo the taxes were to be provided by the capital or expenditure of a country. The taxation levied from the expenditure was normal but the one levied from the capital would harm the production power of a country [19].

Besides Ricardo sided with the external trade policies. The law of comparative advantage of Ricardo's in opposition to Smith's theory of absolute advantage contributed Britain to have been a country which imported food products and exported industrial goods. In Ricardo's opinion it shouldn't have intervented to the economy because of the fact that if the state increased money supply, it would cause inflution (Quantity Theory of Money).

Through the population theory, the famous classical economist T.R. Malthus would become pro-state when it comes to the benefits even if he was against the intervention of the state and stood for external trade. For this reason he supported protectionism braced by Britain's corn laws. These laws used to charge a substantial amount of taxation on corn. Malthus supported this policy consideringly that those increasing corn prices would help the capital boosting the production and improving productivity. Moreover Malthus supported raising the expenses in consideration of the weakness in demand and claimed an exception of the classical economists about being flexible in state interventions.

Just like Malthus, J.S. Mill came up with the same idea of the possibilty of the interventions when it was necessary. According to Mill, who was pretty effected by the poverty of his lifetime, the state was supposed to provide educational developments, bring solution to the income inequality with taxation policies and make organizations about limiting the working hours of the children. Besides Mill stood for levying higher taxes from wealthy people and thought that this regulation would avoil to public thus he defended increasing the annuity income [3].

5. Conclusion

After people had started living as a community, the period of placement from the city states to the nation state began with mercantilism and the mercantilism period caused the industrial revolution by providing the capital stock. The capital having been developed had protected by the state at first. The changes in politics, social and economic activities around 1800 made the state regulate

its limits. During the next periods the opinion of the state needed to be only the watcher of the capital was defended and any intervention by the state was considered as a restriction to the freedom.

Yet the placement of the state in economy was exposed to some limitation in the classical economy period, on next phases the capital stock kept gaining strenght and caused economic fluctiations. The lackness of a solution to all these impasses made new movements in the next century that strenghtened the charge of the state in economies.

References

[1] Adaçay, Funda Rana ve Hasan Islatince (2013), "İktisadi Düşünceler Tarihi" Bursa: Ekin Yayınevi

[2] Aydemir, Cahit ve Hüseyin Haşimi Güneş (2006), "Merkantilizmin Ortaya Çıkışı" Elektronik Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 5(15), 136-158

[3] Bocutoğlu, Ersan (2012), "İktisadi Düşünceler Tarihi", Ankara: Murathan Yayınevi

[4] Bodin, J. (1955). Six books of the commonwealth (Vol. 56). Oxford: B. Blackwell.

[5] Buğra, Ayşe (2013), "İktisatçılar ve İnsanlar, İstanbul: İletişim Yayınları

[6] Erim, Neşe (2011), "İktisadi Düşünce Tarihi", İstanbul: Umuttepe Yayıncılık

[7] Ersoy, Arif (2012), "İktisadi Düşünceler Tarihi", Ankara: Nobel Akademik Yayıncılık

[8] Ertuğruloğlu, Mehmet (1972), "Ekonomi Doktrinleri Tarihi" Ankara: Ayyıldız Matbaası A.Ş.

[9] Güngör, Kamil (1998), "İktisadın Tarihine Kısa Bir Bakış ve Merkantilizmden Günümüze İktisadi Düşünceler"

[10] Haftacı, Vasfi (2014), "İktisadi Düşünceden Yönetim Düşüncesine", Kocaeli: Umuttepe Yayınları

[11] Kazgan, Gülten (2009), "İktisadi Düşünce veya Politik İktisadın Devrimi" Ankara: Remzi Kitapevi

[12] Köktürk, Abdullah (2011), "Modern Öncesi Devletin Yönetim Anlayışı" Güvenlik Stratejileri Dergisi, 7(13), 73-85

[13] Küçükkalay, Abdullah Mesud (2014), "Dünya İktisat Tarihi" İstanbul: Beta Basım Yayım Dağıtım A.Ş.

[14] Öztürk, Nazım (2006), "Ekonomide Devletin Değişen Rolü", Amme İdaresi Dergisi, 39(1), 17-38

[15] Savaş, Vural (1998), "Politik İktisat", İstanbul: Beta Basım Yayım A.Ş.

[16] Savaş, Vural (2000), " İktisatın Tarihi" Ankara: Siyasal Kitapevi

[17] Schaeper, Thomas J. (1983). The French Council of Commerce, 1700-1715: a study of mercantilism after Colbert. The Ohio State University Press.

[18] Smith, Robert S. (1971). "Spanish mercantilism: A Hardy Perennial" Southern Economic Journal, pp: 1-11.

[19] Ulutan, Burhan (1978), "İktisadi Doktrinler Tarihi", İstanbul: Ünal Matbaası

[20] Turanlı, Rona (1988), "İktisadi Düşünce Tarihi Kronolojik Evrimi" İstanbul: Beta Yayın Dağıtım A.Ş.